



Gc  
973.74  
Aalev  
v.12  
Index  
1721575

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL  
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

GC

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01192 9566

Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2010 with funding from  
Allen County Public Library Genealogy Center



# CONFEDERATE MILITARY HISTORY

A LIBRARY OF CONFEDERATE  
STATES HISTORY, IN TWELVE  
VOLUMES, WRITTEN BY DISTIN-  
GUISHED MEN OF THE SOUTH,  
AND EDITED BY GEN. CLEMENT  
A. EVANS OF GEORGIA. . . . .

General History

V. 12

VOL. XII.

Atlanta, Ga.

Confederate Publishing Company

1899



## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE.
<b>CAPT. WILLIAM HARWAR PARKER.</b>	
THE CONFEDERATE STATES NAVY .....	I-115
CHAPTER I. Personnel of the Confederate Navy—Injustice of the Federal Naval Secretary—Sacrifices of the Confederate Naval Officers .....	3
CHAPTER II. The Genesis of the Confederate Navy—Organization of the Navy Department—Assignment of Officers—Early Operations in Virginia Waters .....	8
CHAPTER III. Hollins' Attack on the United States Vessels at the "Head of the Passes"—Hatteras Inlet—Hilton Head—Battle of Roanoke Island—Elizabeth City.....	15
CHAPTER IV. The James River Squadron—Evacuation of the Norfolk Navy Yard by the Federals—Construction of the Merrimac—Officers of the Merrimac—The Patrick Henry, Jamestown, Teaser, Beaufort and Raleigh.....	28
CHAPTER V. Battle of Hampton Roads—Sinking of the Cumberland—Destruction of the Congress—The Work of the Wooden Gunboats .....	36
CHAPTER VI. Battle of the Merrimac and the Monitor—The Monitor Declines a Renewal of Combat—Evacuation of Norfolk—Destruction of the Merrimac—Battle of Drewry's Bluff .....	47
CHAPTER VII. The Mississippi River Fleet—Defenses of New Orleans—Farragut Runs the River Forts—Part of the Navy in the Combat .....	55
CHAPTER VIII. The Ram Arkansas—Her Completion on the Yazoo River—Her Daring Dash through the Federal Fleet .....	63
CHAPTER IX. The Ironclads Palmetto State and Chicora—Their Fight off Charleston—Attack on Fort Sumter—Torpedo Expeditions—The Ram Atlanta.....	67
CHAPTER X. Capture of the Satellite and Reliance—Torpedo Attack on the U. S. Ironclad New Ironsides—Capture of the U. S. S. Underwriter—Torpedo Attack on the U. S. S. Minnesota—Capture of the U. S. S. Waterwitch .....	74
CHAPTER XI. The Ram Albemarle—Her Battles and Victories—Wreck of the Raleigh.....	81
CHAPTER XII. Defense of Mobile Bay—The Ram Tennessee—Her Gallant Battle with Farragut's Fleet—First Attack on Fort Fisher.....	86
CHAPTER XIII. Operations on the James River, 1864-65—Attempted Expedition against City Point—The Naval Brigade—The Ram Webb.....	92



	PAGE.
CHAPTER XIV. The Confederate Naval Academy—The Corps of Instructors—Splendid Service of the Midshipmen—Character of the Young Officers .....	96
CHAPTER XV. The Cruisers—Their Status in War .....	99
CHAPTER XVI. Conclusion—The Confederate States Iron-clad Fleet—Memorable Achievements .....	107
APPENDIX. Register of the Commissioned and Warrant Officers of the Navy of the Confederate States of America, to January 1, 1864. ....	110
J. WILLIAM JONES, D. D.	
THE MORALE OF THE CONFEDERATE ARMIES. ....	117-193
Enthusiasm of All Classes for the Southern Cause—College Students in the Front—Great Campaigns and Valorous Achievements—Humanity toward the Enemy—Religion in the Camp—Incidents of Personal Heroism—The Veteran in Civil Life .....	119
BRIG-GEN. CLEMENT A. EVANS.	
AN OUTLINE OF THE CONFEDERATE MILITARY HISTORY. ....	195-265
LIEUT.-GEN. STEPHEN D. LEE.	
THE SOUTH SINCE THE WAR .....	267-568
DOCUMENTAL AND STATISTICAL APPENDIX, 369—Constitution of the Confederate States, 371—Members of the Provisional and Regular Congresses of the Confederate States, 384—Chronological List of Engagements by States, 389—Statistics, 499—Index, 513—Illustrations. ....	547

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

	FACING PAGE
BARRON, SAMUEL .....	112
BROOKE, JOHN M. ....	112
BROWN, I. N. ....	112
BUCHANAN, FRANKLIN .....	112
COOKE, J. W. ....	112
FLAGS, CONFEDERATE .....	369
HOLLINS, GEORGE N. ....	112
INGRAHAM, D. N. ....	112
JONES, J. WILLIAM .....	117
LEE, STEPHEN D. ....	267
MAFFITT, J. N. ....	112
PARKER, WILLIAM H. ....	I
SEMMES, RAPHAEL .....	112
TATNALL, JOSIAH .....	112
TUCKER, JOHN R. ....	112
WOOD, JOHN T. ....	112





WILLIAM H. PARKER





# THE CONFEDERATE STATES NAVY

BY

CAPT. WILLIAM HARWAR PARKER,

Author of Naval Tactics, Naval Light Artillery, Recollections of a Naval Officer, Familiar Talks on Astronomy, Etc., Etc., Etc.



## CHAPTER I.

### PERSONNEL OF THE CONFEDERATE NAVY—INJUSTICE OF THE FEDERAL NAVAL SECRETARY—SACRIFICES OF THE CONFEDERATE NAVAL OFFICERS.

ON the 11th day of March, 1861, the delegates from the seceded States, in session at Montgomery, Ala., adopted the "Constitution for the provisional government of the Confederate States of America," and this Constitution, as well as the one afterward adopted as "the permanent Constitution of the Confederate States," empowered Congress to "provide and maintain a navy," and made the President commander-in-chief of the army and navy.

South Carolina seceded December 20, 1860, and was followed by Mississippi, January 9, 1861; Florida, January 10, 1861; Alabama, January 11, 1861; Georgia, January 19, 1861; Louisiana, January 26, 1861, and Texas, February 1, 1861.

As the different States seceded, many of the officers of the United States navy belonging to those States resigned their commissions and offered their services to the Confederacy. Although many of these officers were informed by Mr. Gideon Welles, the secretary of the United States navy, that their names were "dropped from the rolls," and up to the present time they are marked on the official documents as "dismissed," yet, as a matter of fact, when they resigned their commissions the President could not, in accordance with the custom of the navy, do otherwise than accept them. The right of an officer to resign has never been disputed, unless the officer is at the time under arrest and liable to charges. Many examples could be cited to establish this point;



but it is not necessary, as the Congress of the United States passed in 1861 an act to the effect that officers resigning would not be considered out of the service until their resignations were accepted by the President. This act is as follows:

Any commissioned officer of the navy or marine corps who, having tendered his resignation, quits his post or proper duties without leave, and with intent to remain permanently absent therefrom, prior to due notice of the acceptance of such resignation, shall be deemed and punished as a deserter. Passed August 5, 1861.

The necessity for passing such an act proves the point just stated. Before 1861 the waiting for an acceptance of a resignation was simply an act of courtesy.

The Southern army officers were better treated. All resignations from the army were accepted. But many navy officers, in consequence of this spiteful and illegal action on the part of Secretary Welles, are now marked on the official list as "dismissed"—not a pleasant thing for their descendants to contemplate—for which no atonement can ever be made these officers. It is only one of the many sacrifices of the Confederate navy. The Naval Academy Association of Alumni, with a higher sense of honor and justice than Mr. Welles manifested, ignores this action of his in dismissing officers. It cordially admits these officers to membership, though officers legally dismissed are not admitted.

According to Col. J. Thomas Scharf's valuable history of the Confederate States navy, the statistics show that by June 3, 1861, of 671 officers from the South, 321 had resigned and 350 still remained in the United States navy. As the war progressed, however, many more Southern officers resigned.

Whatever has been said or written since that time of the action of the Southern officers, it is unquestionably true that it was the general belief of the Southern officers in the navy in 1861, that allegiance was due the State, and



that when that State seceded, she withdrew her army and navy officers. It was, indeed, rather a matter of surprise to the better classes, even at the North, when a Southern officer failed to resign and join his friends and relatives at home. This action on the part of the naval officers who resigned must, and eventually will, stand forth as one of the most sublime instances in history of abnegation and devotion to principle.

In spite of all the censures in the Northern papers at that time and since, such as the talk of "bad faith, ingratitude, and treason," the fact remains that these officers—educated by their States, not at a royal or imperial academy, but at a United States academy—recognizing the right of a State to secede, heroically threw up their commissions, and offered their services to the States that claimed them. This sacrifice on the part of the Southern naval officers has never been properly appreciated. While at the close of the war the statesman returned to the Senate, the lawyer to his briefs, the doctor to his practice, the merchant to his desk, and the laborer to his vocation, the naval officer was utterly cast adrift. He had lost his profession, which was that of arms. The army officer was in the same category. Here it may be as well to explain to the general reader (too apt to confound the naval officer with the mere seaman) that the profession of a naval officer is precisely that of an army officer. They are both military men. So far as the profession goes, there is no difference between a lieutenant in the navy and a lieutenant of dragoons. One maneuvers and fights on shipboard, the other on horseback.

But there was this difference: The Southern officers of the United States army who came South were raised to high rank; young lieutenants, and even cadets, attained the rank of major or brigadier-general, and the close of the war left them with a national reputation. Far otherwise was it with the Southern naval officers. Men who,





like Rousseau, Forrest and Tatnall, had commanded squadrons, could now only aspire to command a few converted river steamers; while commanders and lieutenants of many years' service were risking their reputations in command of canal boats. They came out of the war with the rank they had first, for there were few promotions. Under the circumstances, this was unavoidable; but it should be borne in mind by the present generation.

These officers with unparalleled devotion cast their lot with their people. No class of men had less to do with bringing the war about, and no men suffered more. At the close of the war they had literally lost all save honor—and there was much honor. But the coming of peace found these gentlemen unknown, and almost unhonored. Yet they have stood shoulder to shoulder since the war with nothing but their "wants, infirmities and scars to reward them;" they have felt the "cold hand of poverty without a murmur, and have seen the insolence of wealth without a sigh," and not one of them has cried, *Peccavi*!

Some of the Southern officers were at the beginning of the war in command of United States vessels on foreign stations. Upon being ordered home, they honorably carried their ships to Northern ports, and then, throwing up their commissions, joined the South. And what was before the Confederate naval officer? A nation with absolutely no navy, and with almost no facilities for building one! Professor Soley, assistant secretary of the navy under President Harrison, well says in his work, "*The Blockade and the Cruisers*:"

Except its officers, the Confederate government had nothing in the shape of a navy. It had not a single ship of war. It had no abundant fleet of merchant vessels in its ports from which to draw reserves. It had no seamen, for its people were not given to seafaring pursuits. Its only shipyards were Norfolk and Pensacola. Norfolk, with its immense supplies of ordnance and equipment was indeed valuable; but though the 300 Dahlgren guns



captured in the yard were a permanent acquisition, the yard itself was lost when the war was one-fourth over. The South was without any large force of skilled mechanics, and such as it had were early summoned to the army. There were only three rolling-mills in the country, two of which were in Tennessee; and the third, in Alabama, was unfitted for heavy work. There were hardly any machine shops that were prepared to supply the best kind of workmanship; and in the beginning the only foundry capable of casting heavy guns was the Tredegar iron works [at Richmond, Va.], which, under the direction of Commander Brooke, was employed to its fullest capacity. Most deplorable of all deficiencies, there were no raw materials except the timber that was standing in the forests. Under these circumstances no general plan of naval policy on a large scale could be carried out, and the conflict on the Southern side became a species of partisan, desultory warfare.

In spite of all these difficulties, so plainly stated by Professor Soley, we shall see that the Southern navy was nevertheless built; and, incredible as it now appears, the South constructed during the war a fleet of ironclad vessels which, had they been assembled in Chesapeake bay, could have defied the navy of any nation in Europe. They were not seagoing vessels; but in smooth water the navy of Great Britain, at that time, could not have successfully coped with them.



## CHAPTER II.

### THE GENESIS OF THE CONFEDERATE NAVY—ORGANIZATION OF THE NAVY DEPARTMENT—ASSIGNMENT OF OFFICERS—EARLY OPERATIONS IN VIRGINIA WATERS.

AS the different States seceded from the Union, each sovereignty made efforts to provide for a navy, and conferred rank upon its officers. A few revenue cutters and merchant steamers were seized and converted into men-of-war. Thus, at the beginning, each State had its own navy. At Charleston several naval officers assisted in the capture of Fort Sumter; notably, Capt. H. J. Hartstene, in command of a picket boat, and Lieut. J. R. Hamilton, in command of a floating battery. General Beauregard mentioned the assistance rendered by these officers; also the services of Dr. A. C. Lynch, late of the United States navy. Mention is also made of Lieut. W. G. Dozier, and the armed steamers Gordon, Lady Davis and General Clinch. The keels of two fine ironclads, the Palmetto State and the Chicora, were laid, and Commodore Duncan N. Ingraham was put in command of the naval forces.

Upon the secession of Virginia, April 17, 1861, a convention was entered into between that State and the Confederate States of America, after which the seat of the Confederate government was removed to Richmond, and the Congress assembled there July 20th; from which time properly commences the history of the Confederate navy. The navy department was organized with Stephen R. Mallory, secretary of the navy; Commodore Samuel Barron, chief of the bureau of orders and detail; Commander George Minor, chief of ordnance and hydrography; Pay-



master John DeBree, chief of provisions and clothing; Surg. W. A. W. Spottswood, bureau of medicine and surgery; Edward M. Tidball, chief clerk. The Confederate government conferred commissions and warrants upon officers in accordance with their relative rank in the United States navy, and a more regular and satisfactory course of administration was entered upon.

By act of Congress, April 21, 1862, the navy was to consist of 4 admirals, 10 captains, 31 commanders, 100 first lieutenants, 25 second lieutenants, 20 masters in line of promotion, 12 paymasters, 40 assistant paymasters, 22 surgeons, 15 passed assistant surgeons, 30 assistant surgeons, 1 engineer-in-chief, and 12 engineers. But the Confederate navy register attached (see Appendix) gives the personnel of the navy on January 1, 1864.

Commodore Lawrence Rousseau was put in command of the naval forces at New Orleans; Commodore Josiah Tattnall, at Savannah; Commodore French Forrest, at Norfolk; Commodore Duncan N. Ingraham, at Charleston, and Capt. Victor Randolph, at Mobile. Commodores Rousseau, Forrest and Tattnall were veterans of the war of 1812, and the last two had served with much distinction in the war with Mexico. The name of Tattnall is a household word among all English-speaking people on account of his chivalry in Eastern waters while commanding the East India squadron. Commodore Forrest, who had in 1856-58 commanded the Brazil squadron, threw up his commission when his native State (Virginia), seceded, and joined the South with the enthusiasm of a boy. His reward was small.

The secretary of the navy, Mr. Mallory, immediately turned his attention to the building of a navy. He entered into innumerable contracts, and gunboats were built on the Pamunkey, York, Tombigbee, Pedee and other rivers; but as these boats were mostly burned before completion, it is not necessary to enumerate them.





The want of proper boilers and engines would have rendered them very inefficient at best.

The amount of work done was marvelous. "Before the war but seven steam war vessels had been built in the States forming the Confederacy, and the engines of only two of these had been contracted for in these States. All the labor or materials requisite to complete and equip a war vessel could not be commanded at any one point of the Confederacy." This was the report of a committee appointed by Congress, August 27, 1862. This committee further found that the navy department "had erected a powder-mill which supplies all the powder required by our navy; two engine, boiler and machine shops, and five ordnance workshops. It has established eighteen yards for building war vessels, and a rope-walk, making all cordage from a rope-yarn to a 9-inch cable, and capable of turning out 8,000 yards per month. . . . Of vessels not ironclad and converted to war vessels, there were 44. The department has built and completed as war vessels, 12; partially constructed and destroyed to save from the enemy, 10; now under construction, 9; ironclad vessels now in commission, 12; completed and destroyed or lost by capture, 4; in progress of construction and in various stages of forwardness, 23." It had also one ironclad floating battery, presented to the Confederate States by the ladies of Georgia, and one ironclad ram turned over by the State of Alabama.

The navy had afloat in November, 1861, the Sumter, the McRae, the Patrick Henry, the Jamestown, the Resolute, the Calhoun, the Ivy, the Lady Davis, the Jackson, the Tuscarora, the Virginia, the Manassas, and some twenty privateers.\* There were still others, of which a correct list cannot be given on account of the loss of official documents. It will be remembered that on the sounds of North Carolina alone, we had the Seabird, the Curlew, the Ellis, the Beaufort, the Appomattox, the

---

\* Scharf's History of the Confederate States Navy, p. 47.



Raleigh, the Fanny and the Forrest. At Savannah were the Savannah, the Sampson, the Lady Davis and the Huntress; at New Orleans, the Bienville and others..

Upon the secession of Virginia, followed in May by Tennessee, Arkansas and North Carolina, officers who had resigned from the United States navy were reporting in large numbers at the navy department, but as there were no ships ready for them, they were sent to the different batteries on the York, James, Potomac and Rappahannock rivers in Virginia, and to many other batteries on the Mississippi and other rivers. As a rule, officers were at first detailed to do service in the States that claimed them. In Virginia we find, at Aquia creek, Commodore Lynch, Captain Thorburn, and Lieuts. John Wilkinson and Charles C. Simms; on the Rappahannock, Lieut. H. H. Lewis; on the Potomac, Commanders Frederick Chatard and Hartstene, and Lieuts. William L. Maury and C. W. Read; on the James, Commodore Hollins, Commanders Cocke and R. L. Page, and Lieutenants Pegram, Harrison and Catesby Jones; at Sewell's point and batteries near Norfolk, Capt. Arthur Sinclair, Commanders McIntosh and Pinkney, Lieuts. Robert Carter and Pembroke Jones; on the York, Commanders T. J. Page and W. C. Whittle, and Lieut. William Whittle. Lieut. Charles M. Fauntleroy was sent with two medium 32-pounders to Harper's Ferry. As the guns at these batteries were necessarily manned by soldiers, these officers occupied rather doubtful positions, and in many cases were mere drillmasters.

In reference to the relative rank of navy and army officers, General Lee addressed the following order to the officers at Gloucester Point for the regulation of all mixed commands:

As there are no sailors in the service, it is impossible to serve river batteries by them, and artillery companies must perform this duty. Naval officers from their experience and familiarity with the peculiar duties connected



with naval batteries, their management, construction, etc., are eminently fitted for the command of such batteries, and are most appropriately placed in command of them. In a war such as this, unanimity and hearty co-operation should be the rule. Petty jealousies about slight shades of relative command and bickering about trivial matters are entirely out of place and highly improper, and when carried so far as to interfere with the effectiveness of a command, become both criminal and contemptible. Within the ordinary limits of a letter it is impossible to provide for every contingency that may arise in a command which is not centered in a single individual. It is therefore hoped that mutual concessions will be made, and that the good of the service will be the only aim of all.

In some cases, army rank was conferred upon naval officers in command of batteries; but in this anomalous state of affairs, jealousies were constantly arising, and the navy men were only too glad to be assigned to duty afloat.

At the navy department the work of preparing for the manufacture of ordnance, powder and naval supplies was very heavy, and most diligently pursued. Lieut. Robert D. Minor was conspicuous in this duty, as was also Commander John M. Brooke, whose banded guns proved so efficient. Indeed, all the navy officers were most enthusiastic in turning their hands to any work to help the cause. Commodore M. F. Maury, who had been a member of the governor's advisory board, organized the naval submarine battery service. Upon his departure for England he turned it over to Lieut. Hunter Davidson, an energetic, gallant officer, who, by his skillful management of torpedoes in the James river, contributed largely to the defense of Richmond. Engineer Alphonse Jackson established a powder-mill; Commander John M. Brooke devised a machine for making percussion caps; Lieut. D. P. McCorkle manufactured at Atlanta gun carriages, etc.; later in the war, Commander Catesby Jones established a foundry for casting heavy guns, at



Selma, Ala., and Chief Engineer H. A. Ramsay had charge of an establishment at Charlotte, N. C., for heavy forging and making gun carriages and naval equipments of all kinds.

On May 31 and June 1, 1861, several vessels belonging to the Potomac flotilla, under Commander Ward, U. S. N., cannonaded the battery at Aquia creek, under Commodore W. F. Lynch, but with no particular result. The object of the enemy, probably, was to develop the Confederate defenses. Commodore Lynch mentioned favorably Commanders R. D. Thorburn and J. W. Cooke and Lieut. C. C. Simms. On June 27th, Commander Ward was killed on board his vessel, the *Freeborn*, off Mathias point on the Potomac river. Lieutenant Chaplin, U. S. N., landed with a handful of sailors and attempted to throw up a breastwork. He was soon driven back, but he exhibited extraordinary courage in taking on his back one of his men who could not swim, and swimming to his boat. Batteries were at once constructed by the Confederates at Mathias point and Evansport, and put under the charge of Commander Frederick Chatard. As the river at Mathias point is but one mile and a half wide, the battery almost blockaded the Potomac river, and considerably annoyed, successively, the United States steamers *Pocahontas*, *Seminole* and *Pensacola*. Commander Chatard was assisted by Commander H. J. Hartstene and Lieut. C. W. Read, and others whose names are unobtainable.

The batteries on the Potomac and Rappahannock rivers were evacuated when the army retired from Manassas; those on the York when the army fell back on Richmond, and those on the Elizabeth when the Confederates evacuated Norfolk.

The steamer *St. Nicholas*, plying between Baltimore and Washington, having been taken possession of by Commodore Hollins and Col. Richard Thomas, June 29, 1861, was taken to Coan river, and there boarded by





Lieutenants Lewis, Simms and Minor, and fifteen sailors from the Confederate steamer Patrick Henry. Hollins went first in search of the U. S. S. Pawnee, hoping to take her by surprise. Foiled in this, he cruised in Chesapeake bay, and captured the schooner Margaret, the brig Monticello and the schooner Mary Pierce, which prizes he carried to Fredericksburg. Soon after this exploit Commodore Hollins was ordered to command the naval forces at New Orleans.



### CHAPTER III.

#### HOLLINS' ATTACK ON THE UNITED STATES VESSELS AT THE "HEAD OF THE PASSES"—HATTERAS IN- LET—HILTON HEAD—BATTLE OF ROANOKE ISL- AND—ELIZABETH CITY.

THE first naval encounter occurred at the mouth of the Mississippi river on the 12th of October, 1861.

At this time the United States ships Richmond, Vincennes, Preble, and the small steamer Water Witch, commanded respectively by Capt. John Pope, Commanders Robert Hardy, and Henry French and Lieut. Francis Winslow, were lying at the "head of the passes." The Confederate squadron, under Commodore Hollins, consisted of the ram Manassas (Lieutenant Warley), the McRae (Lieutenant Huger), the Ivy (Lieutenant Fry), the Tuscarora, the Calhoun, the Jackson, and the tugboat Watson. A little before 4 a. m. Warley rammed the Richmond with the Manassas, but without damaging her seriously. Fire rafts were sent down by Lieutenant Averett, of the Watson, and these, with the "ramming," completely demoralized the enemy. The captains of the Richmond, Vincennes and Preble were panic-stricken and retreated with their vessels down the river. The brave commander of the Water Witch (Winslow), however, kept his head and his post. In attempting to pass the bar the Richmond and Vincennes grounded, and the captain of the latter vessel actually deserted his ship with his crew, first laying and lighting a train to the magazine. It was said that as the men of the Vincennes were leaving the ship, an old quarter-gunner, with more nerve than his commander, brushed aside the train, and thus saved the ship. Winslow, after attempting in vain to



prevent the vessels from leaving the river, finally prevailed upon Commander Hardy to return to his ship. Francis Winslow was an accomplished naval officer. He died early in the war, or we should have heard more of him.

As soon as day broke, the Confederate vessels followed the United States vessels, exchanged a few shots at long range, and returned to New Orleans. Why they did not prosecute their success has never been explained. It was a lost opportunity. Lieutenant Averett, a very gallant, cool-headed officer, says: "The expedition was a complete success so far as opening the way to the sea from New Orleans was its object, but the officers of the *McRae* were greatly disappointed when it was discovered that her machinery was so defective as, in the judgment of Flag-Officer Hollins, to render the steamer unfit for sea service." Lieut. C. W. Read, who was present on the *McRae*, in a letter to the *Southern Historical Society* magazine, says in relation to the morning's transactions:

On arriving at extreme range we fired a few shots, all of which fell short. One of the enemy's shells falling near the *Ivy*, which had ventured nearer than the other boats, signal was made to "withdraw from action," and we steamed gallantly up the river.

We shall hear more of this same Lieutenant Read. He was, in the writer's opinion, one of the greatest naval officers the South produced. He had his counterpart in young Cushing, of the United States navy. Lieutenant Read mentions the *McRae*, *Manassas*, *Ivy*, *Calhoun* and tugboats *Tuscarora* and *Watson* as being present on this occasion, but does not give the names of all the captains, nor does Colonel Scharf in his history.

Soon after the secession of North Carolina, steps were taken to defend the entrances to Pamlico and Albemarle sounds, and batteries were constructed at Hatteras, Ocracoke and Oregon inlets. On the 26th of August,



1861, an expedition, consisting of the United States steam frigates Minnesota, Susquehanna and Wabash, and steamers Pawnee, Monticello and Harriet Lane, the whole under the command of Flag-Officer Stringham, sailed from Hampton Roads to attack the batteries at Hatteras. A land force of about 900 men, under Gen. B. F. Butler, accompanied the expedition. On the afternoon of the 26th, the vessels anchored off the inlet, and on the 27th the bombardment commenced. The enemy landed a force of 315 men, and soon took possession of a small fort near the main one. The garrison at these forts consisted of one regiment, the Seventh North Carolina volunteers. On the 28th Commodore Samuel Barron arrived on the steamer Winslow, and at the earnest solicitation of Colonel Martin landed with his aides, Lieutenants Murdaugh and Sharp, and assumed supreme command—an unwise proceeding on his part, as events afterward proved. The bombardment was renewed on the morning of the 29th, when the fort surrendered.

The defense of Hatteras was not much to the credit of the Confederates. They should have captured the small force landed on the 27th. Indeed, those who landed expected it. But this was early in the war, and our men were not accustomed to the fire of heavy shot and shell. They afterward learned to treat the fire of ships with indifference. Lieut. William H. Murdaugh, of the navy, was badly wounded on the morning of the 29th, but his friends succeeded in carrying him off to the steamer Winslow. He was spoken of in high terms by his comrades in the fort, and he deserved their praise. The Confederate steamers Winslow (Capt. Arthur Sinclair) and Ellis (Commander W. B. Muse) were present at this affair but could render no assistance. They took off the garrison at Ocracoke inlet, together with the women and children of the village, and returned the first to New Bern and the others to Washington on the Pamlico river. Oregon inlet was also abandoned and the guns





removed to Roanoke island, which the Confederates were now fortifying to protect the approaches to Norfolk.

On the 29th of October, 1861, a formidable force consisting of sixteen United States steam frigates and gunboats, under Flag-Officer Dupont, and 12,000 soldiers, under Gen. Thomas W. Sherman, sailed from Hampton Roads for Port Royal, S. C. Commodore Tattnall, who had moved to its vicinity through the sounds from Savannah with his squadron of river boats—consisting of the Savannah (flagship), Capt. J. N. Maffit, with Capt. R. L. Page as fleet-captain; the Resolute, Lieut. J. Pembroke Jones; the Sampson, Lieut. J. Kennard, and the Lady Davis, Lieut. John Rutledge—exchanged shots with the United States vessels upon their arrival off the forts, with slight results. The forts were captured on the 7th of November after a feeble resistance, and Tattnall's vessels were very useful in removing the soldiers to Savannah. They could not, of course, pretend to cope with the enemy's fleet. The brunt of the attack of Dupont's fleet was sustained by Fort Walker, on Hilton Head. The garrison of Fort Beauregard, at Bay Point, retired as soon as it appeared that Fort Walker was taken. Hilton Head and Port Royal, like Hatteras inlet, remained in possession of the enemy until the close of the war. After the fall of Hatteras the enemy made no attempt to take possession of Albemarle and Pamlico sounds, though two or three gunboats would have been sufficient for the purpose.

The Confederate States vessels under Commodore Lynch—consisting of the Seabird, Capt. Patrick McCarrick (flagship); the Curlew, Commander T. T. Hunter; the Ellis, Commander James W. Cooke; the Appomattox, Lieut. C. C. Simms; the Beaufort, Lieut. Wm. H. Parker; the Raleigh, Lieut. J. W. Alexander; the Fanny (captured by Commodore Lynch, October 1, 1861), Lieutenant Tayloe, and the Forrest, Lieut. J. L. Hoole—moved about these waters from Roanoke island to New Bern on



the Neuse river, and occasionally fired a shot or two at the fort and vessels at Hatteras. Of these vessels the Seabird and Curlew were sidewheel river steamboats; the others were "converted" canal boats, of perhaps 4-inch iron or less, about 100 feet long and 17 feet beam. The decks of these vessels were strengthened. The Seabird had a smooth-bore 32-pounder mounted forward, and a 30-pounder Parrott gun aft. The other vessels were armed with a 53-cwt. rifled and banded 32-pounder, mounted forward. The crew of each vessel numbered from 35 to 40 officers and men. In addition was the schooner Black Warrior, Lieutenant Harris, carrying two 32-pounder smooth-bores. The magazines, engines and boilers of all these vessels were above the water line and without any protection whatever.

In January, 1862, the United States navy department organized an expedition for the purpose of completely controlling the waters of the sounds. This fleet, under Flag-Officer L. M. Goldsborough, composed of seventeen vessels, and accompanied by an army of 12,000 men, under General Burnside, arrived off Hatteras on the 12th day of that month. Commodore Lynch assembled his entire squadron at Roanoke island, correctly anticipating an attack upon its defenses. Roanoke island is in Croatan sound, between Albemarle and Pamlico sounds. It was garrisoned by two North Carolina regiments under Colonels Shaw and Jordan. Colonel Scharf, in his history of the Confederate navy, well says: "With the military defense of Roanoke island this work has no proper connection except to express the opinion that greater want of preparation was nowhere else shown in all the war; that a more inadequate force was nowhere else entrusted with the defense of an important position." Gen. Henry A. Wise, who had lately been put in command of all the forces, fully represented this to the authorities at Richmond.

The defenses of Roanoke island consisted of three



forts. The upper one was at Weir's point and was called Fort Huger. It mounted some ten guns, smooth-bore and rifled. About 500 yards below was Fort Blanchard with four 32-pounders. Still farther down, about two miles from Fort Huger, stood Fort Bartow, on Pork point. This fort was the only one engaged on the 7th, as the enemy did not come within range of the others. It mounted ten guns, eight of which were smooth-bore 32-pounders of 57 cwt., and two rifled 32-pounders of 53 cwt. On the opposite side of the channel was Fort Forrest, mounting seven 24-pounders, but it took no part in the defense. Fort Bartow was well commanded by Lieut. B. P. Loyall, of the navy. After manning the forts, Colonel Shaw, commanding on the island, had less than 1,000 men fit for duty. On February 6, 1862, the combined forces of Flag-Officer Goldsborough and General Burnside appeared off Roanoke island, and it being foggy, anchored near the Marshes, about five miles below Fort Bartow. Admiral Goldsborough's squadron, or fleet, consisted of the Stars and Stripes, Lieut. Comdg. Reed Worden, 5 guns; Louisiana, Lieutenant Murray, 5 guns; Hetzel, Lieutenant Davenport, 2 guns; Underwriter, Lieutenant Jeffers, 4 guns; Delaware, Lieutenant Quackenbush, 3 guns; Valley City, Lieutenant Chaplin, 5 guns; Southfield, Lieutenant Behm, 4 guns; Hunchback, Lieutenant Calhoun, 4 guns; Morse, Master Hays, 2 guns; Whitehead, Master French, 1 gun; Seymour. Master Wells, 2 guns; Shawsheen, Master Woodward, 2 guns; Lockwood, Master Graves, 3 guns; Ceres, Master McDearmid, 2 guns; Putnam, Master Hotchkiss, 1 gun; Brinckner, Master Giddings, 1 gun, and Granite, Master's Mate Boomer, 1 gun. Besides these were the Commodore Perry, Lieutenant Commanding Flusser, and the Commodore Barney. These vessels, it is but fair to state, were merchant vessels and ferryboats "converted." They were armed with 100-pounder, 80-pounder and 32-pounder rifled, and 9-inch, 8-inch and 6-inch smooth-bore



guns—some 54 heavy guns on 19 vessels; to oppose which Commodore Lynch had 8 small steamers, mounting in the aggregate 9 guns. This fleet was accompanied by many transports carrying the troops. Admiral Ammen, U. S. N., says:\* “The army transports were 46 in number, armed with 47 guns of small caliber, and carried in round numbers 12,000 troops.” The admiral also mentions the gunboats Picket, Huzzar, Pioneer, Vidette, Ranger, Lancer and Chasseur as participating in the attack on Fort Bartow. These boats mounted, probably, one gun each.

Captain Parker, commanding the Beaufort, gives the following account of the naval part of the defense, in “Recollections of a Naval Officer,” page 227: “It was at 9 o'clock on the morning of February 6, 1862, that the enemy's fleet made its appearance. The fleet was accompanied by a large number of transports bearing the troops of General Burnside; and it was evidently his plan to silence our batteries, particularly the one at Pork point [Fort Bartow], and land the troops under the protection of the guns of the ships. The weather at the time the enemy made his appearance was cold, gloomy and threatening; and about 10 a. m. we observed that he had anchored below the Marshes. We had got under weigh and formed line abreast, in the rear of the obstructions, † and we remained under weigh all day, as the weather was too thick to see very far, and we did not know at what moment the ships might commence the attack.

“About 4 o'clock in the afternoon Captain Simms, in the Appomattox, was sent down to reconnoiter. He went very close to the enemy, but was not fired at. Flag-Officer Goldsborough says in his allusion to it: ‘She met with no opposition from us, simply because we were not unwill-

\* “The Atlantic Coast,” by Admiral D. Ammen, page 177.

† The channel was obstructed a little above Fort Bartow by piles. This did not amount to much and was easily passed by the enemy.





ing that she should accomplish her wishes.' Simms gave a very correct report of the number of men-of-war in the fleet; it was not possible to count the transports. At sunset, as we saw no disposition on the part of the enemy to move, we anchored. We kept guard boats out during the night to avoid a surprise.

"At daylight on the 7th, the Appomattox was sent to Edenton, and, as she did not return till sunset, and the Warrior took no part in the action, this reduced our force on the water to 7 vessels and 8 guns. At 9 a. m. we observed the enemy to be under weigh and coming up, and we formed 'line abreast,' in the rear of the obstructions. At 11:30 the fight commenced at long range. The enemy's fire was aimed at Fort Bartow and our vessels, and we soon became warmly engaged. The commodore at first directed the vessels to fall back in the hope of drawing the enemy under the fire of Forts Huger, Blanchard and Forrest; but as he did not attempt to advance, and evidently had no intention of passing the obstructions, we took up our first position and kept it during the day. At 2 p. m. the firing was hot and heavy, and so continued till sunset. Our gunners had had no practice with rifled guns, and the firing was bad. It was entirely too rapid. Early in the fight the Forrest was disabled, and her gallant young captain, Lieutenant Hoole, badly wounded in the head by a piece of shell. She got in under Fort Forrest and anchored.

"Some time in the afternoon, in the hottest of the fire, reinforcements arrived from General Wise's brigade, and were landed on the island. The Richmond Blues, Capt. E. Jennings Wise, were part of this force. Fort Bartow kept up a constant fire, and the enemy could not silence it. The men stood to their guns, encouraged by the spirited example of their captain, Lieut. B. P. Loyall. Forts Huger and Forrest did not fire, the enemy's ships being out of range; but Fort Blanchard fired an occasional gun during the day. [Maj. John Saunders



Taylor, an old navy officer, who commanded Fort Huger, finding that the enemy did not come within range of his guns, mounted his horse and rode into Fort Bartow to encourage the garrison. He was received with loud cheers. This brave and accomplished officer was killed at the bloody battle of Antietam.] Toward 4 o'clock in the afternoon a shot or shell struck the hurricane deck of the Curlew, and went through her decks and bottom as though they had been made of paper. She was run ashore and subsequently burned by her crew. About 4 p. m. I observed that the enemy's troops were landing to the southward of Fort Bartow, under the guns of a division of the fleet, and could not perceive that any resistance was being made to it. A little after sunset the firing ceased on both sides, and as we felt sure the enemy would not attempt to pass the obstructions by night, as he had declined to attempt them by day, we ran in and anchored under Fort Forrest.

"The loss in the squadron was not officially stated, but Lieutenant Hoole was badly wounded, and Midshipman Camp, of the Ellis, lost an arm. Admiral Ammen gave the loss on his side at 6 killed, 17 wounded, and 2 missing; this including the howitzer battery of six guns, operating with the army. Soon after we anchored, signal was made by the flagship for the captains to report on board. Upon entering the cabin I was informed by Commodore Lynch that we must retreat from Roanoke island. Much surprised and mortified, I asked why, and was told that the vessels generally were out of ammunition. A council was held as to whether the vessels should retreat to Norfolk, or to Elizabeth City on the Pasquotank river. We would have saved the vessels by going to the former place; but the commodore's orders were to do his utmost to defend the waters of North Carolina. So we decided to go to the latter, where it was understood a fort had been built to protect the town. Elizabeth City is the terminus of the Dismal Swamp canal, and we



hoped to get ammunition that way from Norfolk in time to act in conjunction with the fort. I was sent to Roanoke island to communicate all this to Colonel Shaw, and confess I did not relish my mission. It looked too much like leaving the army in the lurch; and yet to have remained without ammunition would have been greater folly. About 9 p. m. our squadron got under weigh, all lights were extinguished, and we sailed for Elizabeth City, the Seabird towing the Forest."

On February 8th, Roanoke island was taken possession of by the enemy. Colonel Scharf says:

Thus Roanoke island was lost. It was the key to all the rear defenses of Norfolk; it unlocked two sounds (Albemarle and Currituck), eight rivers (North, West, Pasquotank, Perquimans, Little, Chowan, Roanoke and Alligator), four canals (the Albemarle & Chesapeake, the Dismal Swamp, the Northwest and the Norfolk), and two railroads (the Petersburg & Norfolk and the Seaboard & Roanoke). It guarded more than four-fifths of Norfolk's supplies of corn, pork, and forage, and its loss cut off the command of General Huger from all its most efficient transportation. Its possession by the enemy endangered the existence of Huger's army, threatened the navy yard at Gosport, and might cut off Norfolk from Richmond, and both from railroad communication with the South Atlantic States.

Roanoke island was not well defended. The forts should have been at the Marshes, and our vessels should have met Goldsborough's fleet there. But as it was, the army should have thrown up intrenchments and dug ditches at the place where it was almost certain the enemy would land. By concealing the men and not firing a shot until the boats reached the shore, the landing might have been prevented. Colonel Shaw had, it is true, few men; but there seems to have been no reason why General Wise should not reinforce him. It is very certain that Flag-Officer Goldsborough would never have attempted to run by the forts with his vessels. The



little squadron under Lynch did its part well, inasmuch as it kept Goldsborough's fleet at bay. The bombardment of Fort Bartow by his fleet did almost no damage. Roanoke island in point of fact was taken by Burnside's army. A dashing naval officer would have run by our batteries and vessels, taken Roanoke island in reverse, and captured both the island and our fleet. Goldsborough had force enough for such an achievement.

Elizabeth City, where Commodore Lynch's vessels were now assembled, is on the Pasquotank river, twelve miles from its mouth. The river here is very narrow; and on the right bank, two or three miles below the town, was a battery of four 32-pounder smooth-bore guns. The fort, as it was called, was a badly-constructed affair, and the magazine opened on the river. General Henningsen was here with one or more batteries of light artillery, and after the arrival of Lynch, the militia was called out, and a company was sent to the fort. It appearing that the Dismal Swamp canal was out of order, and vessels could not pass through, Commodore Lynch sent Captain Hunter by land to Norfolk for ammunition and men to repair the canal.

On the evening of the 8th, the commodore, with the *Seabird* and *Raleigh*, started to return to Roanoke island; but meeting with a superior force, the *Seabird* returned to Elizabeth City, while the *Raleigh*, cut off, made her escape to Norfolk. On the evening of the 9th the United States squadron, consisting of the *Delaware*, *Louisiana*, *Hetzel*, *Underwriter*, Commodore Perry, *Valley City*, *Morse*, *Seymour*, *Whitehead*, *Lockwood*, *Ceres*, *Shawsheen*, *Brinckner* and *Putnam*, the whole under the command of Commodore Rowan, anchored at the mouth of the Pasquotank. To meet this attack Commodore Lynch had but the *Seabird*, *Ellis*, *Appomattox*, *Beaufort* and *Fanny*, with the schooner *Black Warrior* and the fort.

Early on the morning of the 10th, the enemy got under way, and Commodore Lynch formed his five vessels





abreast the fort to await the attack. The militia in the fort, with the exception of Lieutenant Heinrich, the engineer officer, fled before a gun was fired; seeing which the commodore ordered Captain Parker to take charge with the crew of the Beaufort. This Captain Parker proceeded to do, and the Beaufort was sent, in charge of her engineer and pilot, to Norfolk. She effected her escape. As is narrated in "Recollections of a Naval Officer:" "While pulling ashore the officers and men were engaged in tearing some sheets into strips to be used as bandages for wounded men—a cheerful occupation under the circumstances!—but it was one of the delights of serving on these gunboats that no surgeons were allowed. Upon getting into the fort I hastily commenced stationing the men at the guns, and as quickly as possible opened fire upon the advancing enemy. Some of the officers and men of the Forrest joined us, under the brave Lieut. Joseph Gardner. I found Commodore Lynch in the fort; his boat had been cut in two by a shot, and he could not get off to his ship. . . . He assumed no command. The enemy's vessels came on at full speed under a heavy fire from our vessels and the fort. The fire from the latter was ineffectual. The officers and men were cool enough, but they had not had time to look about them. Everything was in bad working order, and it was difficult to train the guns. . . .

"Commodore Rowan's steamers did not reply to our fire until quite close. Without slackening their speed they passed the fort and fell upon our vessels. They made short work of them. The Seabird was rammed and sunk by the Commodore Perry. The Ellis was captured after a desperate defense, in which her gallant commander, James Cooke, was badly wounded. The Fanny was run on shore near the fort, and the officers and men escaped. The Appomattox got as far as the mouth of the canal; but being too wide to enter, was burned by her commander. The officers and crew escaped. The schooner Black Warrior met with the same fate. Before the Ellis



was captured, a number of her men, by order of her commander, escaped by swimming to the shore. Midshipman William C. Jackson was killed in the water." Commodore Rowan's vessels having passed the fort and destroyed our squadron, Captain Parker now abandoned the fort, first taking the guns. Commodore Lynch started for Richmond. The officers and men, under Captain Parker, made good their retreat to Norfolk, where they found the Beaufort and Raleigh, all that remained of Commodore Lynch's squadron. Thus ended the Confederate naval operations on the sounds of North Carolina until the affair of the Underwriter in February, 1864, and the advent of the ram Albemarle in April of the same year.



## CHAPTER IV.

THE JAMES RIVER SQUADRON—EVACUATION OF THE NORFOLK NAVY YARD BY THE FEDERALISTS—CONSTRUCTION OF THE MERRIMAC—OFFICERS OF THE MERRIMAC—THE PATRICK HENRY, JAMESTOWN TEASER, BEAUFORT AND RALEIGH.

SOON after the secession of Virginia, the governor seized the steamers Yorktown and Jamestown, sidewheel steamers running between Richmond and New York, and they were immediately converted into men-of-war and renamed the Patrick Henry and Thomas Jefferson; but the Jefferson was generally known as the Jamestown, notwithstanding the change of name. The Patrick Henry was partially protected with iron. Her armament consisted of twelve guns—ten medium 32-pounders in broadside, one 10-inch shell gun forward, and one 8-inch solid shot gun aft. The Jefferson mounted two heavy 32-pounders. These vessels were put in commission under Commander John R. Tucker and Lieut. Nicholas Barney, respectively, and with the gunboat Teaser (Lieutenant Webb), constituted the James river squadron.

On the 13th of September, and again on the 2d of December, 1861, this squadron engaged the ships lying off Newport News and the shore batteries. The firing was at long range, with no particular result. Otherwise the squadron remained quiet until March 8, 1862, when it took gallant and important part in the great battle of Hampton Roads.

On the night of Saturday, April 20, 1861, the United States naval authorities evacuated the navy yard at Gosport, Va. This was one of the most extraordinary pro-



feelings of the war. Whether the commandant of the yard was perplexed by the indecisive instructions of the authorities at Washington, or whether he was simply panic-stricken, remains a mystery to the present day. The large corvette *Cumberland* and the steamer *Pawnee*, both in commission, were there; and by keeping the latter in the lower harbor to prevent the Confederates from obstructing the channel, and the *Cumberland* with her broadsides sprung upon Norfolk and Portsmouth, both towns would have been overawed. The yard was under the heavy batteries of the *Pennsylvania* and the *Merrimac*, to say nothing of a force of marines. It was simply out of the power of the Confederates to capture the place. They had no heavy guns to mount in batteries, even if they could have erected them under the broadsides of the *Cumberland*. "The spirit of madness and folly prevailed; and I know of no better exhibition of it than the fact that while they [the United States forces] were trying to get out, our people were actually trying to keep them in by obstructing the channel! One would suppose that we would have been only too glad to see them depart. And no sooner had the United States given up this yard than they commenced making preparations to recapture it." Prof. J. R. Soley says:

Though a few shops and houses were burnt, the work was done so hurriedly that the best part of the valuable material at the yard fell into the hands of the enemy. The dry-dock was not destroyed, as the fuse failed to ignite the powder; but whether from accident or from the work of other hands has never been discovered. The magazine, with great numbers of loaded shells, and 150 tons of powder, had already been seized. Two thousand guns of all descriptions were left practically uninjured, 300 of them being new Dahlgren guns of various calibers. Besides the guns, machinery, steel plates, castings, construction materials, and ordnance and equipment stores in vast quantities came into the possession of the Confederates; and severe as the loss of so much material would have been by itself to the Federal government, it





was rendered tenfold greater by supplying the necessities of the enemy.

The fuse referred to by Professor Soley was extinguished by Lieut. C. F. M. Spottswood, Confederate States navy, who was one of the first to enter the yard after its evacuation. The powder was seized and carried to Richmond by Lieutenants Pegram, Sinclair and C. Jones. The navy yard was immediately taken possession of by the Confederates. The following is a list of the guns in the yard, as given in the report of W. H. Peters to the governor of Virginia: One 11-inch columbiad, two 10-inch guns, fifty-two 9-inch guns, four 8-inch 90-cwt. guns, forty-seven 8-inch 63-cwt. guns, twenty-seven 8-inch 55-cwt. guns, one 8-inch 57-cwt. gun, four 64-pounders of 106 cwt., two hundred and twenty-five 32-pounders of 61 cwt., one hundred and seventy-three 32-pounders of 57 cwt., forty-four 32-pounders of 51 cwt., twenty-eight 32-pounders of 46 cwt., one hundred and sixteen 32-pounders of 33 cwt., forty-four 32-pounders of 27 cwt., two hundred and thirty-five 61-cwt. guns, old style, fifty 70-cwt. guns, old style, forty-four 40-cwt. guns, Shrubrick, sixty-three 42-pounder carronades, thirty-five 32-pounder carronades.

Here we have 1,195 guns of large caliber! These guns furnished the batteries of the Confederate forts from Norfolk to New Orleans. They were to be found on all the rivers of the South; and without them it is difficult to see how the Confederates could have armed either their forts or ships.

The vessels destroyed, or partially destroyed, were the *Pennsylvania*, three-decker; the *Delaware*, seventy-four; the *Columbus*, seventy-four; the frigates *Merrimac*, *Columbia* and *Raritan*; the sloops-of-war *Germantown* and *Plymouth*, and the brig *Dolphin*. The old frigate *United States* was left intact, and was afterward used by the Confederates as a receiving ship. The large



steam frigate Merrimac was scuttled and sunk. She was set on fire and burned to her copper-line, and down through to her berth deck, which, with her spar and gun decks, was also burned. She was immediately raised, and the powder in her magazine (put up in air-tight copper tanks) was found to be in good condition. It was afterward used by her in her engagements in Hampton Roads.

Steps were immediately taken by the Confederate authorities to convert the Merrimac into an ironclad. As early as May 8, 1861, Mr. Mallory, secretary of the navy, said in a letter to the naval committee: "I regard the possession of an iron-armored ship as a matter of the first necessity. Such a vessel at this time could traverse the entire coast of the United States, prevent all blockades, and encounter with a fair prospect of success their entire navy."

Commander John M. Brooke devised a plan for the conversion of the Merrimac,\* and the work was immediately commenced under Naval Constructor John L. Porter and Chief Engineer W. P. Williamson, in their respective departments. "The ship was raised, and what had previously been her berth deck became her main gun deck. She was 275 feet long as she then floated, and over the central portion of the hull a house or shield about 160 feet long was built. This shield was of oak and pine wood, two feet thick. The sides and ends inclined, according to Lieut. Catesby Jones, 36 degrees; and the roof, which was flat and perhaps 20 feet wide, was covered with iron gratings, leaving four hatchways. Upon this wooden shield were laid two courses of iron plates, each two inches thick; the first course horizontal, and the second perpendicular, making four inches of iron armor on two feet of wood backing. The iron was put on while

---

\* Constructor Porter disputed the claim of Commander Brooke to the plan for the conversion of the Merrimac, but President Davis and Secretary Mallory acknowledged Brooke's claim. Moreover, Commander Brooke took out a patent for his invention.



the vessel was in dock; and it was supposed that she would float with her ends barely submerged. So great was her buoyancy, however, that it required some 80 tons of pig iron (according to Boatswain Hasker in his account of her) to bring her down to her proper depth. I know myself that a quantity of iron was put on, though I cannot say how much. Now as this iron was put on, the whole structure sunk; and when she was ready for battle, her ends, which extended some fifty feet forward and abaft the shield, were submerged to the depth of several inches and could not be seen. . . . The appearance of the Merrimac was that of the roof of a house. Saw off the top of a house at the eaves (supposing it to be an ordinary gable-end, shelving-side roof), pass a plane parallel to the first through the roof some feet beneath the ridge, incline the gable ends, put it in the water, and you have the Merrimac as she appeared. When she was not in action, her people stood on the top of this roof, which was, in fact, her spar deck." \*

Lieut. Catesby Jones says (Southern Historical Society Papers, Vol. XI):

The prow was of cast iron, wedge-shaped, and weighed 1,500 pounds. It was about two feet under water, and projected two feet from the stem. . . . I may mention that it was so badly fastened that the best judges said it would certainly break off when used. It will be seen hereafter that perhaps it was as well that it was not firmly fastened. . . . The rudder and propeller were unprotected. The battery consisted of ten guns: four single-handed Brooke rifles, and six 9-inch Dahlgren guns. Two of the rifles, bow and stern pivots, were 7-inch, of 14,500 pounds; the other two were 6.4-inch caliber, 32-pounder, of 9,000 pounds, one on each broadside. The 9-inch gun on each side nearest the furnaces was fitted for firing hot shot. A few 9-inch shot with extra windage were cast for hot shot. No other solid shot were on board during the fight. The engines were the same the vessel had whilst in the United States navy. They were radically defective, and had been

---

\* "Recollections of a Naval Officer," by Capt. W. H. Parker



condemned by the United States government. Some changes had been made, notwithstanding which the engineers reported that they were unreliable. They performed very well during the fight, but afterward failed several times, once while under fire. Commodore Tatnall commanded the Virginia [Merrimac] forty-five days, of which time there were only thirteen days that she was not in dock or in the hands of the navy yard. Yet he succeeded in impressing the enemy that we were ready for active service.

The chief engineer of the Merrimac, H. Ashton Ramsay, had been a shipmate of the author in the last cruise of that ship in the Pacific. He was then a passed assistant engineer. He knew the engines well, and it may be doubted if another man in the Confederate navy could have got as much out of them as he did. He deserved all the praise Admiral Buchanan afterward bestowed upon him. The Merrimac upon her first appearance in Hampton Roads drew about 21½ feet. After she was docked on the 9th of March, and more iron put on, she drew about one foot more. She steamed about six knots an hour. After docking, this was somewhat reduced. Her complement was 320 officers and men. The Merrimac was named the Virginia by the Confederate authorities; but as she is rarely called by this official name, we shall continue to use the name which has become historical.

Early in March, 1862, the Merrimac was commissioned as follows: Capt. Franklin Buchanan, flag-officer; First Lieut. Catesby Ap R. Jones; Lieuts. Charles C. Simms, Robert D. Minor (flag), Hunter Davidson, John Taylor Wood, J. R. Eggleston, Waller R. Butt; Midshipmen R. C. Foute, H. H. Marmaduke, H. B. Littlepage, W. J. Craig, J. C. Long, L. M. Rootes; Paymaster James A. Semple; Surg. Dinwiddie Phillips; Asst. Surg. Algernon S. Garrett; Capt. of Marines Reuben Thorn; Chief Engineer H. A. Ramsay; Asst. Engineers John W. Tynan, Loudon Campbell, Benjamin Herring, C. A. Jack, R. Wright;





Boatswain Charles H. Hasker; Gunner C. B. Oliver; Carpenter Hugh Lindsey; Arthur Sinclair, Jr., captain clerk; Lieut. Douglass Forrest, C. S. A., volunteer aide; Captain Kevil, commanding Norfolk United Artillery detachment; Sergeant Tabb, signal officer.

Flag-Officer Buchanan's command included the Patrick Henry, Jamestown, Teaser (the James river squadron), Beaufort and Raleigh.

The officers of the Patrick Henry were: Capt. John R. Tucker; First Lieut. James H. Rochelle; Lieuts. William Sharp, F. L. Hoge; Surg. John T. Mason; Paymaster Thomas R. Ware; Passed Asst.-Surg. Fred Garrettson; Acting Master Lewis Parrish; Lieut. of Marines R. H. Henderson; Midshipmen John Tyler Walker, A. M. Mason, M. P. Goodwyn.

The officers of the Jamestown were: Capt. J. N. Barney; Lieuts. Samuel Barron, Bradford, Benthall; Surg. Randolph Mason; Chief Engineer Manning; Asst. Engineers Ahern and Gill; Lieut. of Marines J. R. T. Fendall; Midshipmen D. M. Lee, Daniel Trigg, Neal Sterling; Frank B. Dornin, captain's clerk.

Officers of the Teaser: Capt. William A. Webb, Lieut. J. H. Rochelle. (The further names are not obtainable.)

Officers of the Beaufort: Lieut. Comdg. William H. Parker; Midshipmen Charles Mallory, Virginius Newton, Ivy Foreman (volunteer aide); Chief Engineer Hanks; Pilots Gray and Hopkins (volunteer); Bain, captain's clerk.

Officers of the Raleigh: Lieut. Comdg. J. W. Alexander; Lieutenant Tayloe (volunteer); Midshipmen J. Gardner and Hutter.

The rapidity with which the Merrimac was converted into an ironclad reflects great credit upon Mr. Mallory, secretary of the navy; Commander John M. Brooke, her designer; J. L. Porter, the constructor; W. P. Williamson, engineer-in-chief; Commodore F. Forrest, commanding the Norfolk navy yard, and upon the Tredegar iron



works at Richmond. The vessel was not constructed a day too soon, for the United States authorities were hurrying up the Monitor. Professor Soley says:

It was a race of constructors; and in spite of the difficulties at the South, and the comparative facilities at the command of the department at Washington, the Confederates were the winners. The secret of their success lay in promptness of preparation.



## CHAPTER V.

### BATTLE OF HAMPTON ROADS—SINKING OF THE CUMBERLAND—DESTRUCTION OF THE CONGRESS—THE WORK OF THE WOODEN GUNBOATS.

AS the result of this battle—showing as it did the power of the ram and the ironclad—revolutionized the navies of the world, a detailed account of it will be given in the words of the author, himself an eyewitness and participant, as published in "Recollections of a Naval Officer:"

"About the 6th of March, 1862, the Merrimac being ready to go out, the Norfolk papers published an article to the effect that she was a failure, and would not be able to accomplish anything. It was intended, of course, to deceive the enemy, who we knew regularly received our papers. The United States squadron then in Hampton Roads consisted of the following vessels, viz.: The Congress and Cumberland, lying off Newport News, and the Minnesota, Roanoke and St. Lawrence, at anchor below Old Point. There were also below Old Point the store-ship Brandywine, the steamers Mt. Vernon and Cambridge, and a number of transports and tugs. These, however, took no part in the subsequent engagement. The Congress was a sail frigate of 1,867 tons, old measurement, mounting 50 guns, principally 32-pounders, with a crew of 434 men; the Cumberland was a large corvette (a razee) of 1,700 tons, old measurement, mounting 22 9-inch Dahlgren guns, with a crew of 376 men; the Minnesota was a large steam frigate of 3,200 tons, old measurement, mounting 43 guns, 9-inch and 11-inch Dahlgrens, with a crew of about 600 men. The Roanoke was similar to the Minnesota, and the St. Lawrence to the Congress.



"Newport News is on the left bank of the James river, six and one-half miles above Old Point, and twelve miles from Norfolk. The enemy had a large number of guns mounted there to protect the mouth of the river, with a large garrison. At Sewell's point, three and one-half miles from Old Point, the Confederates had a powerful battery to protect the entrance to the Elizabeth river, which also in a measure commanded the approach to Newport News; but the main ship channel is at a distance of two or two and one-half miles from it. At Sewell's point was mounted the only 11-inch gun we had in the Confederate States.

"Everything being ready, it was determined by Commodore Buchanan to make the attack on the 8th day of March. The last signal inserted in our signal books was, 'Sink before you surrender!'

"At 11 a. m., March 8, 1862, the signal was made to sail, and the Beaufort cast off from the navy yard wharf, in company with the Merrimac and Raleigh, and stood down the harbor. The weather was fair, the wind light, and the tide half-flood; the moon was nine days old.

"Nearly every man, woman and child in the two cities of Norfolk and Portsmouth were at the same time on their way to Sewell's point, Craney island, and other points where they could see the great naval combat which they knew was at last to take place. Some went by land, others by water. All the batteries were manned; all work was suspended in public and private yards, and those who were forced to remain behind were offering up prayers for our success. A great stillness came over the land.

"Flag-Officer Forrest, who commanded the navy yard, accompanied by many of his officers, went down with us in the tugboat Harmony as far as Craney island, four and one-half miles below Norfolk. Everything that would float, from the army tugboat to the oysterman's skiff, was on its way to the same point, loaded to the water's





edge with spectators. As we steamed down the harbor, we were saluted by the waving of caps and handkerchiefs; but no voice broke the silence of the scene. All hearts were too full for utterance; an attempt at cheering would have ended in tears, for all realized the fact that here was to be tried the great experiment of the ram and ironclad in naval warfare. There were many who thought that as soon as the Merrimac rammed a vessel, she would sink with all hands enclosed in an iron-plated coffin. The least moved of all were those who were about to do battle for the 'cause' they believed in. On board the Merrimac the officers and men were coolly employed in the multifarious duties that devolved upon them, while the men of the Beaufort and Raleigh were going into battle with the same *insouciance* they had exhibited in the battles of Roanoke Island and Elizabeth City.

"The James river squadron, consisting of the Patrick Henry, Jamestown and Teaser, under the command of Capt. John R. Tucker, had been previously notified by Commodore Buchanan that the Merrimac would go out on the 8th, and Tucker was directed to come down the river as close to Newport News as he deemed prudent, so as to be ready to dash by the batteries and join our division when the battle commenced. The commodore could not have given the order to a better man. Eager to engage the enemy, Tucker, the most chivalric and bravest of men—ably seconded by his gallant captains, Barney, Webb and Rochelle—was only too ready to fly the Confederate flag in Hampton Roads. At daylight on the 8th he was at anchor off Smithfield point, some ten miles above Newport News, and in full view of the enemy, as afterward reported by Lieut. George U. Morris, who in the absence of Captain Radford fought the Cumberland.

"As we got down toward the mouth of the Elizabeth river, about 12:30 p. m., the Beaufort took a line from the port bow of the Merrimac to assist her in steering. Being very near the bottom she steered badly. We



turned up the James river. The Congress and Cumberland were lying off Newport News, and were riding to the last of the flood tide. They had their boats at the booms, and 'washed clothes' up; evidently not expecting anything unusual to happen. In fact, Captain Radford, of the Cumberland, was at this time attending a court-martial on board the frigate Roanoke. The Cumberland could not have been better defended than she was by her executive officer, Lieut. George U. Morris. The Congress was lying immediately off Newport News point, and the Cumberland was a few cable lengths higher up. As soon as our vessels turned up the James river, they saw that our attack would be upon them, and they got ready for it.

"At 1:30 p. m. we cast off the line from the Merrimac, and all three vessels steamed for the enemy. The Beaufort maintained her position on the port bow of the Merrimac, and exactly at 2 p. m. she fired the first gun of the day, at the same time hoisting the battleflag she had used at Roanoke island. The Merrimac now hoisted the signal 'close action,' and from that time she made no signal, nor did she answer one, until the close of the action. As we approached the enemy, firing and receiving their fire, the Merrimac passed the Congress and made for the Cumberland, which vessel was either just turning to the ebb tide, or had her broadside sprung across the channel."

Commander Catesby Ap. R. Jones says (Southern Historical Society Papers, Vol. XI):

The action commenced about 3 p. m. by our firing the bow gun at the Cumberland, less than a mile distant. A powerful fire was immediately concentrated upon us from all the batteries afloat and ashore. The frigates Minnesota, Roanoke and St. Lawrence, with other vessels, were seen coming from Old Point. We fired at the Congress on passing, but continued to head directly for the Cumberland, which vessel we had determined to run into, and in less than fifteen minutes from the firing of the first gun we rammed her just forward of the starboard fore-



chains. The noise of the crashing timbers was distinctly heard above the din of battle. There was no sign of the hole above water, but it must have been large, as the ship soon commenced to careen. The shock to us on striking was slight. We immediately backed the engines. The blow was not repeated. We here lost the "prow," and had the stem slightly twisted. The Cumberland fought her guns gallantly as long as they were above water, and she went down bravely with her colors flying. One of her shells struck the side of the bow port and exploded, the fragments killing two and wounding a number. One aft 9-inch gun was loaded and ready for firing, when its muzzle was struck by a shell which broke it off, and fired the gun. Another gun also had its muzzle shot off and was broken so short that at each subsequent discharge its port was set on fire. The damage to the armor was slight. The fire appeared to have been aimed at our ports. Had it been concentrated on the water-line we would have been seriously hurt, if not sunk. Owing to the ebb-tide and our great draft we could not close with the Congress without first going up stream, which was a tedious operation, besides subjecting us twice to the full fire of the batteries [at Newport News], some of which we silenced.

We were accompanied from the yard by the gunboats Beaufort, Lieut. Comdg. William H. Parker, and Raleigh, Lieut. Comdg. J. W. Alexander. As soon as the firing was heard up James river, the Patrick Henry, Commander John R. Tucker; Jamestown, Lieut. Comdg. J. N. Barney, and the gunboat Teaser, Lieut. Comdg. W. A. Webb, under command of Capt. John R. Tucker, stood down the river, joining us about 4 o'clock. All these vessels were gallantly fought and handled, and rendered valuable and effective service. The prisoners from the Congress stated that when on board that ship it was seen that we were standing up the river, that three cheers were given under impression we had quit the fight. They were soon undeceived.

The narrative first quoted continues as follows:

"The Beaufort and Raleigh engaged the Congress and shore batteries, and the firing was fast and furious. We took up a position on the port quarter of the Congress, and used the rifled gun with effect. The Merrimac rammed



the Cumberland, striking her just forward of the starboard fore-channels—firing and receiving a heavy fire in return—and stove her bow in so completely that she at once commenced to go down. As she took the bottom, she turned over on her beam ends. She made a gallant defense, her crew fighting the guns to the last, and went down with her colors flying. This was at 2:40 p. m. precisely. Boats went off from Newport News to save the drowning men.

"The Merrimac reversed her engines immediately upon ramming the Cumberland, and had some difficulty in extricating herself—indeed her bow sunk several feet. When free, she proceeded a short distance up the river to turn round; having done which she stood for the Congress. As soon as the Congress observed the fate of her consort she slipped her cable, set the fore-topsail flying, and with the assistance of a tug ran on shore below Newport News. At this time I observed the James river squadron coming gallantly into action. They were under a very heavy fire while passing Newport News, but got by without receiving much damage. All of our vessels now directed their fire upon the Congress. The Beaufort took position on her starboard quarter, and kept it until she surrendered. The fire on this unfortunate ship was terrible. She returned it with alacrity, principally from her stern guns, and was assisted by the batteries on shore.

"We saw now the frigates Minnesota, Roanoke and St. Lawrence coming up from Old Point to the assistance of the Congress, towed by powerful tugs. They were under a heavy fire from the batteries on Sewell's point in passing, and received some damage. The Minnesota received a rifle-shot through her mainmast, 'crippling it,' according to her captain's report. Strange to say, all three of these vessels ran aground—the Minnesota about one and a half mile below Newport News, the Roanoke and St. Lawrence farther down. The Minnesota was near enough to take part in the engagement, and the St. Lawrence fired





a few broadsides. The Roanoke and the St. Lawrence were soon pulled off by the tugs, and made the best of their way back to Old Point. They took no further part in the action. The Minnesota remained aground.

"The Congress made a gallant defense, and did not surrender until one hour and twenty minutes after the ramming of the Cumberland. Her decks were running with blood, and she bore the brunt of the day. At 4 o'clock she hoisted a large white flag at her main truck. . . . When I saw the white flag, I immediately lowered a boat, and sent Midshipmen Mallory and Foreman to take possession of the prize. My aide, Midshipman Ivy Foreman, hauled down the Congress' flag and brought it to me.

"The firing having ceased, the Merrimac signaled me to 'come within hail,' which I did. Commodore Buchanan then ordered me to 'go alongside the Congress, to take the officers and wounded men prisoners, to permit the others to escape, and to burn the ship.' I went alongside her in the Beaufort, and sent an officer to direct her commander to come to me, at the same time sending my men aboard to help get the wounded men to the Beaufort. I did not think it proper to leave my vessel myself, as I had but two young and inexperienced midshipmen with me, and I saw an enemy's gunboat not very far off. In a few minutes Lieut. Austin Pendergrast came down the side of the Congress, accompanied by an officer whom I took to be the surgeon or paymaster of the ship. This officer proved to be Capt. William Smith, who had been in command until a few days before, when he had been relieved by Lieut. Joseph Smith. Lieutenant Smith had been killed, which left Pendergrast in command. Captain Smith was a volunteer, as I afterward learned.

"These two officers surrendered the ship to me and delivered up their arms. I told Pendergrast my orders, and requested him to get his officers and wounded men on board the Beaufort as quickly as possible. He said there



were 60 wounded men on board the frigate, and begged me not to burn her. I told him my orders were peremptory. While we were engaged in this conversation the wounded men were being lowered into the Beaufort, and just then the Raleigh came alongside me. I sent her to the starboard side of the Congress to help in the work. I had scarcely given the order when a tremendous fire was opened on us from the shore. Medical Director Shippen, U. S. N., says it was from the Twentieth Indiana regiment. The fire was from artillery as well as small-arms. At the first discharge every man on the deck of the Beaufort, save Captain Smith and Lieutenant Pendergrast, was either killed or wounded. Lieutenant Pendergrast begged me to hoist the white flag, saying that all his wounded men would be killed. I called his attention to the white flag which was flying at his mast-head, directly over our heads.

"The lieutenant then requested permission to go on board the Congress with Captain Smith to assist in getting the wounded down. This I assented to. In the first place, I was glad to have their assistance; and secondly, I was not willing to confine them in my cabin at a time when the bullets were going through it like hail; humanity forbade it. I would not have put a dog there. I now blew the steam whistle, and my men came tumbling on board. The fire still continuing, we cast off from the Congress and opened fire on the shore. The sides and masts of the Beaufort resembled the top of a pepper-box, from the bullets which went in one side of her, and out at the other. Being much encumbered with the prisoners I ran alongside the tugboat Harmony, and delivered them to Commodore Forrest. We then steamed immediately back, and joined the other vessels in the attack on the Minnesota, which vessel was still aground.

"Between 7 and 8 p. m. we hauled off in obedience to signal, and anchored between Sewell's point and Craney island. At midnight the Congress blew up. According



to the report of Lieutenant Pendergrast she had been on fire from the beginning of the action; and Medical Director Shippen, who from his station would be likely to know, says: 'We were on fire in the sick-bay, in the main hold, and under the wardroom near the after magazine. Some of these fires were extinguished; but the most dangerous one, that near the after magazine, was never extinguished, and was the cause of the explosion which during the following night blew the ship to pieces.'

"The results of this day's operations were the total destruction of the frigate Congress and the corvette Cumberland, and the partial crippling of the steam frigate Minnesota. The loss in killed and drowned on board the Cumberland, as reported by her commander, was 121; and the surgeon reported 14 wounded, which makes 135 casualties. I find it difficult to ascertain from Lieutenant Pendergrast's report how many men the Congress lost in all. He gives the total number of killed and missing as 136. . . . There is reason to fear that some wounded men were left on board to be consumed by the flames, who would have been taken off by the Beaufort and Raleigh, under the flag of truce, had they not been fired on by the troops on shore. The fire of these troops killed their own wounded men as they were being lowered over the side, and rendered it impossible for us to continue the work. The Minnesota lost 3 killed and 16 wounded, and there were some casualties reported among the other vessels. The loss in the Federal fleet in killed, drowned, wounded and missing must have amounted to nearly 400 men.

"On our side, the Merrimac lost 21 killed and wounded, the Patrick Henry 14, the Beaufort 8, the Raleigh had Lieutenant Tayloe and Midshipman Hutter killed—how many men I do not know, nor have I any information as to the number of killed and wounded on the Teaser. The Jamestown had no casualties, though she was in the thickest of the fight. Our total loss, however, did not exceed



60. On the Merrimac, Commodore Buchanan and Lieut. R. D. Minor were wounded. Captains Webb, of the Teaser, and Alexander, of the Raleigh, were slightly wounded. Lieut. Catesby Jones succeeded to the command of the Merrimac."

In all descriptions of this battle, the Merrimac has so completely overshadowed her consorts that but little of the honor of the day has fallen to them, but that they greatly assisted in the successful result cannot be denied. When the Merrimac went up James river to turn—a "tedious operation," according to Lieut. Catesby Jones—the gunboats Beaufort and Raleigh were left alone to contend with the frigate Congress and the shore batteries under the signal, "Close action." Secretary Gideon Welles in his report for 1862 says:

Having thus destroyed the Cumberland, the Merrimac turned again upon the Congress, which had in the meantime been engaged with the smaller rebel steamers [the Beaufort and Raleigh], and after a heavy loss, in order to guard against such a fate as had befallen the Cumberland, had been run aground. The Merrimac now selected a raking position astern of the Congress, while one of the smaller steamers [the Beaufort] poured in a constant fire on her starboard quarter. Two other steamers of the enemy also approached from James river, firing upon the unfortunate frigate with precision and severe effect.

Lieutenant Pendergrast, of the Congress, says: "The smaller vessels [the Beaufort and Raleigh] then attacked us, killing and wounding many of our crew." The captain of the Minnesota, Van Brunt, also speaks of the damage done his vessel by the wooden Confederate steamers Patrick Henry and Jamestown. It is useless to deny the important services of our wooden gunboats on this occasion; and although it is possible that the Merrimac alone could have accomplished all that was done, certain it is that if these gunboats had been sent in on the next





day, March 9th, with the signal for "close action," the Minnesota would have been destroyed beyond a doubt.

On the night of the 8th, the Confederate squadron remained at anchor off Sewell's point. Commodore Buchanan and his flag lieutenant, Robert Minor, were removed to the hospital on shore. The remainder of the wounded received the attention of Surgs. Dinwiddie Phillips, John Mason, Randolph Mason and Algernon Garnett. These gentlemen had belonged to the medical corps of the old navy, a corps of educated, courteous gentlemen which can, perhaps, be equaled, but never excelled.

"About 11 p. m.," as Commander Jones narrates, "one of the pilots [of the Merrimac] chanced to be looking in the direction of the Congress, when there passed a strange looking craft which he at once proclaimed to be the Ericsson [Monitor]. We were therefore not surprised to see the Monitor next morning at anchor near the Minnesota."



## CHAPTER VI.

### BATTLE OF THE MERRIMAC AND THE MONITOR—THE MONITOR DECLINES A RENEWAL OF COMBAT—EVACUATION OF NORFOLK—DESTRUCTION OF THE MERRIMAC—BATTLE OF DREWRY'S BLUFF.

**E**RICSSON'S Monitor, as described by Professor Soley, "consisted of a small iron hull, upon which rested a large raft, surmounted by a revolving turret. The hull was 124 feet long and 34 feet wide. The raft projected at the bow and stern, its total length being 50 feet greater than that of the hull. Its overhang amidship was 3 feet 8 inches wide, gradually increasing toward the bow and stern. The raft was 5 feet deep, and was protected by a side armor of five 1-inch iron plates backed with oak. The deck was covered with two ½-inch plates, over timber laid on heavy wooden beams. The turret was armored with eight 1-inch plates, and its roof was protected by railroad iron; in it were two 11-inch Dahlgren guns. The pilot house, in front of the turret, was built of square iron bars, notched together, with a bolt through the corners. On the top of the pilot house was an iron plate, 1½ inch thick, set in a ledge without fastenings."

When the victors of March 8th retired that night, they hoped to accomplish a great work on the following day. The Minnesota was aground, the Roanoke and St. Lawrence had retired below Old Point, and the enemy was known to be greatly demoralized. How much, was not realized. No mortal man could have surmised what was afterward learned, but the Confederate naval officers intended to destroy the Minnesota, and then see what



could be done with the other vessels. The Monitor had been heard of, but only in rumor.

Shortly after 8 a. m. on the 9th, the squadron got under weigh, and the Merrimac proceeded toward the Minnesota, closely attended by the Patrick Henry. The Monitor now made her appearance. James Barron Hope said she looked like a "cheese-box." She engaged the Merrimac for some time, the wooden vessels looking on. It was a naval duel, though the Merrimac occasionally fired at the Minnesota, and received her shot in return. It appeared to be a battle between a giant and a pigmy, but it should be remembered that the Merrimac was very hard to manage and drew twenty-two feet water, whereas the Monitor was readily handled, and drew but ten feet. In point of fact, it was not necessary to maneuver the Monitor at all; for as her turret revolved, all she had to do was to stand still. This, indeed, is one of the strong points of this class of vessels, fighting in rivers or shallow water. They can always bring a gun to bear as long as the turret will revolve.

After some time the Merrimac succeeded in ramming the Monitor, but her prow had been broken off in ramming the Cumberland the day before, and she did no harm. The Monitor in turn attempted to run close to the stern of the Merrimac in the hope of disabling her rudder, but was not successful. Toward 12 o'clock the Monitor steamed down toward Old Point, and the Merrimac, after waiting awhile, turned in the direction of Norfolk, where she went into dock the same day.

The Merrimac and Monitor both used shells alone on this day. Had they used solid shot, which they were always afterward prepared to do, the result would probably have been more decisive. The action as it was is well described by Capt. Catesby Jones in the publication previously mentioned:

The Monitor commenced firing when about a third of a



mile distant. We soon approached, and were often within a ship's length; once, while passing, we fired a broadside at her only a few yards distant. She and her turret appeared to be under perfect control. Her light draft enabled her to move about us at pleasure. She once took position for a short time where we could not bring a gun to bear on her. Another of her movements caused us great anxiety; she made for our rudder and propeller, both of which could have been easily disabled. We could only see her guns when they were discharged; immediately afterward the turret revolved rapidly, and the guns were not again seen until they were fired. We wondered how proper aim could be taken in the very short time the guns were in sight. The Virginia [Merrimac], however, was a large target, and generally so near that the Monitor's shot did not often miss. It did not appear to us that our shell had any effect upon the Monitor. We had no solid shot. . . .

When we saw that our fire made no impression on the Monitor, we determined to run into her, if possible, which we found a very difficult feat. Our great length and draft, in a comparatively narrow channel, with but little water to spare, made us sluggish in our movements, and hard to steer and turn. When the opportunity presented, all steam was put on; but there was not sufficient time to gather full headway before striking. The blow was given with the broad, wooden stem, the iron prow having been lost the day before. The Monitor received the blow in such a manner as to weaken its effect, and the damage to her was trifling. Shortly after, an alarming leak in the bows was reported. It, however, did not long continue. . . .

The fight had continued three hours. To us the Monitor appeared unharmed. We were therefore surprised to see her run off into shoal water where our great draft would not permit us to follow, and where our shell could not reach her. The loss of our prow and anchor, and consumption of coal, water, etc., had lightened us so that the lower part of the forward end of the shield was awash.

We for some time awaited the return of the Monitor to the roads. After consultation, it was decided that we should proceed to the navy yard, in order that the vessel might be brought down in the water and completed.





The pilot said if we did not then leave, that we could not pass the bar until noon of the next day. We therefore, at 12 m., quit the roads and stood for Norfolk. Had there been any sign of the Monitor's willingness to renew the contest, we would have remained to fight her. We left her in the shoal water to which she had withdrawn, and which she did not leave until after we had crossed the bar on our way to Norfolk.

Thus ended the fight between the Merrimac and Monitor. It may be added that the Merrimac's damages were slight, and in her encounter with the Monitor she had not a man killed or wounded.

Commodore Josiah Tattnall now took command of the squadron, and Lieut. J. Pembroke Jones relieved Lieutenant Minor as flag lieutenant. On the 11th day of April the squadron proceeded to Hampton Roads to engage the enemy. The United States squadron at anchor below Old Point consisted of the Minnesota (flagship) and some other frigates, the Monitor, the Naugatuck (iron-clad), and a large number of smaller vessels and transports. In the course of the day the steamer Vanderbilt—a vessel specially designed to ram the Merrimac—arrived.

The Confederate vessels took possession of the roads, cut out three vessels from under the enemy's guns, and defied the enemy to battle. The United States vessels remained ignominiously at anchor under the guns of Old Point. At sunset, finding that Flag-Officer Goldsborough would not fight, Commodore Tattnall made signal to anchor off Sewell's point.

On the 8th of May, the Merrimac being at the navy yard, the United States vessels (including the Monitor) attacked the batteries at Sewell's point. Upon hearing the guns, the Merrimac proceeded to the scene of action. Upon her drawing near, the enemy incontinently fled, and took refuge under the guns of Fortress Monroe.

Norfolk was evacuated by the Confederates on May 10, 1862, and on the same night the Merrimac was set on



fire and blown up by her commander. The officers and crew landed on Craney island and proceeded to Drewry's bluff, some eight miles below Richmond. Flag-Officer Tammall applied for a court-martial. It is sufficient to say he was acquitted, the opinion of the court being that "the only alternative was to abandon and burn the ship [the Merrimac] there and then."

The other vessels of the squadron had been previously dispatched to Richmond. Capt. John R. Tucker, in command, hearing that the enemy's ships were ascending the river, immediately commenced preparations to defend the city. The Jamestown and some other vessels were sunk in the channel. The guns of the Patrick Henry and Jamestown were with incredible labor carried up and mounted on Drewry's bluff, and manned by the crews of those vessels. On the 15th of May the iron-clads Galena, Monitor and Naugatuck, with the gunboats Port Royal and Aroostook, the whole under the command of the indomitable Commodore John Rodgers, U. S. N., attacked the battery. The enemy's squadron was driven off with considerable loss, the Galena being seriously damaged. Commander Ebenezer Farrand, C. S. N., commanded the combined forces on the bluff. The officers and crew of the Merrimac had arrived two days before, and manned some of the guns. But the credit of this defense, which saved the city of Richmond, belongs fairly to Capt. John R. Tucker, Commander J. N. Barney, the officers and crews of the Patrick Henry and Jamestown, and to Major Drewry and his brave soldiers. *Palmam qui meruit ferat.* Lieut. John Taylor Wood, in command of a company of sharpshooters, manned the banks of the river near Chapin's bluff, and considerably annoyed the enemy, as did Capt. John D. Simms with a company of marines.

The battle between the Merrimac and Monitor has been much discussed, and both sides have claimed the victory. The honors of the day may be technically awarded the



Monitor (in consequence of the Merrimac's leaving for Norfolk), for she remained on the field and saved the Minnesota. The Merrimac should undoubtedly have destroyed that ship before leaving the roads. It was a lost opportunity, for the Monitor when she withdrew was a whipped ship.

In support of this assertion may be cited the following:

1. The omission of the name of Lieut. Dana Greene, who succeeded to the command of the Monitor after Captain Worden was wounded, from the official report of his captain.
2. The report of Captain Van Brunt, of the Minnesota, who distinctly says, "The Monitor stood down for Fortress Monroe."
3. The shameful letter of Ericsson to Captain Fox in relation to Greene.
4. The panic pervading the Northern cities, incited by the secretary of war, Mr. Stanton, who actually ordered the Potomac river to be obstructed fifty miles below Washington.
5. The suggestion of President Lincoln to "obstruct the Elizabeth river, to keep the Merrimac from coming out."
6. The rejection of Captain Worden's claim for prize money by the naval committee of Congress in 1883.
7. The earnest request of General McClellan that the Merrimac should be neutralized.
8. The employment of the steamer Vanderbilt to ram and destroy the Merrimac, what the Monitor had failed to do.
9. The fact that the Monitor declined to engage the Merrimac on the 11th day of April, 1862.
10. The further fact that the Monitor ran away from the Merrimac on the 8th day of May, 1862.

No further proofs are required. The Monitor was a whipped ship on the 9th of March, the only day she dared encounter the Merrimac; and what is more, the defeat was generally conceded by the United States authorities at that time. The claim of a victory for the Monitor was an afterthought, and only asserted when the Merrimac had been destroyed by her own commander.

The destruction of the Merrimac by her commander on



the night of May 10, 1862, came upon the Confederacy like a clap of thunder. Commodore Tatnall's intention was to lighten the ship, by throwing overboard coal and stores, to a draft of eighteen feet, and then proceed up the James river to Harrison's bar, forty miles below Richmond. After the ship had been thus lightened, the pilots suddenly declared the ship could not be taken there. The ship being now no longer an ironclad as to her hull—the lightening had brought the eaves of her shield above water, and there were no means to bring her down again to her proper draft of twenty-two feet—nothing remained but to destroy her.

But what service would she have been at Harrison's bar or anywhere else, when one shell at her unprotected water-line would have sent her to the bottom as quickly as an iron pot sinks! In point of fact, when the Merrimac was left without support by the evacuation of Norfolk, there remained but one of two things to do, viz., to blow her up, or to attack the enemy's fleet below Old Point, and proceed to the York river and destroy McClellan's transports. The latter course might have resulted greatly to Confederate advantage. It is possible, now, to see some such results as these: That Flag-Officer Goldsborough's vessels would have proceeded to sea without waiting to be attacked; Fortress Monroe would have surrendered; McClellan's plan of campaign would have been frustrated, and the Chesapeake bay and the mouths of the Potomac, Rappahannock, York and James rivers would have been controlled. But Commodore Tattnell has been fully justified in the alternative course he adopted.

The moral effect of the Merrimac was most wonderful. The United States authorities were panic-stricken. Many of those high in command completely "lost their heads." The dread of the Merrimac extended among the seaboard cities from Boston to Washington. Never in the history of the world has the effect of a single ship





been so marvelous! As she revolutionized the navies of the world, one can understand the sensation created in Europe. But the terror inspired by the Merrimac at the North, the wild speculations as to what she could and would do, and the universal panic, must ever remain a marvel.



## CHAPTER VII.

### THE MISSISSIPPI RIVER FLEET—DEFENSES OF NEW ORLEANS—FARRAGUT RUNS THE RIVER FORTS—PART OF THE NAVY IN THE COMBAT.

UPON the secession of Louisiana strenuous efforts were made to construct and "convert" vessels for war purposes both at New Orleans and on the upper Mississippi. By April, 1862, we find the Mississippi, Louisiana, Manassas, Maurepas, Ponchartrain, McKae, Livingston, Polk, Calhoun, Jackson, Ivy, Mobile, Segur, St. Mary's and others; and, in addition, there were at New Orleans two iron-plated floating batteries. The amount of work done at New Orleans was simply phenomenal, considering the facilities.

The Louisiana was an ironclad vessel with armor sufficient to resist 10 and 11-inch shells, as subsequently demonstrated. She had a formidable battery of 7-inch rifled, and 8-inch and 9-inch shell guns; but her motive power was so insufficient in a stream like the Mississippi that she was simply a floating battery. The Manassas was a ram 128 feet long and 26 feet wide. She was what is called a "turtle-back," and was covered with railroad iron. Her resisting power seems to have been good, as she was never penetrated; but her offensive power was small, as appears from the fact that although, under the gallant Warley she several times rammed vessels, she never did them much damage. She mounted one gun. The Mississippi had not long been launched when New Orleans fell. She was an ironclad, and officers of both navies pronounced her the most formidable war vessel ever built. The other vessels were "converted." Some of them, however, carried heavy bat-



teries and rendered efficient service, notably the McCrea.

Early in the year 1862 it was seen that New Orleans was threatened. Secretary Mallory was of the opinion that it would be attacked from above, and hence ordered Commodore Hollins to proceed with his vessels up the river to Island No. 10, to assist in its defense. The commodore was of a different opinion, but in obedience to orders went to Island No. 10 with the *McRae*, *Ivy*, *Livingston*, *Maurepas*, *Ponchartrain*, *Polk*, *Calhoun* and *Jackson*. These vessels do not appear to have been of any particular service, though commanded by brave and daring officers. Captains Carter, Dunnington and Fry were conspicuous. Fry afterward distinguished himself on the White river, and Dunnington by his defense of Arkansas Post. Lieut. F. M. Roby, a young officer who saw much hard service in the war, was Dunnington's brave assistant. Lieut. S. W. Averett, an excellent officer, assisted at the defense of Island No. 10 in command of a floating battery, which had been towed up from New Orleans. It had to be destroyed after the evacuation of the island. Of the vessels enumerated, the *Maurepas* and the *Ponchartrain* were afterward sunk by their commanders, Fry and Dunnington, and their guns placed in battery on shore; the *McRae*, *Ivy* and *Jackson* were returned to New Orleans, and the remainder were eventually burned to save them from the enemy.

About the 11th of April, hearing from Commodore Whittle that the enemy was in force at the mouth of the Mississippi, Commodore Hollins started down the river in the *Ivy*. Upon his arrival at New Orleans, he found orders to report at Richmond to sit on court-martial duty. This left Commodore John K. Mitchell in command of the vessels afloat at New Orleans, and Commodore W. C. Whittle in command of the station. Capt. Arthur Sinclair and Lieut. C. M. Fauntleroy were in charge of the ironclad Mississippi, and were using every exertion to prepare her for action. On the 20th of April the iron-



clad Louisiana was towed down to the assistance of Fort Jackson, which had been under the fire of Porter's mortar schooners for two days.

On April 16, 1862, the United States combined forces under Admiral Farragut and General Butler had arrived at the mouth of the Mississippi river. As General Butler and his army of 15,000 men took no fighting part in the capture of New Orleans, no further mention need be made of him.

Admiral Farragut's force consisted of the screw-steamers Hartford, 24 guns; Pensacola, 23 guns; Brooklyn, 22 guns; Richmond, 24 guns; the side-wheel steamer Mississippi, 17 guns; the screw-sloops Oneida, 9 guns; Varuna, 10 guns; Iroquois, 7 guns; Cayuga, 2 guns, and the screw-gunboats, Itasca, 2 guns; Katahdin, 2 guns; Kennebec, 2 guns; Kineo, 2 guns; Pinola, 2 guns; Sciota, 2 guns; Winona, 2 guns, and Wissahickon, 2 guns; in addition were twenty mortar schooners and six gunboats, under Commander Porter.

The defenses at the mouth of the Mississippi were Forts Jackson and St. Philip, the former mounting 62 guns, and the latter 47. Of the guns in these forts, 56 were smooth-bore 24-pounders. ("The Gulf and Inland Waters," by Capt. A. T. Mahan.) For the naval defense were the Louisiana, Manassas, McCrea and Jackson, the Governor Moore (of the State navy), and six rams commanded by river captains under nobody's orders. There were also a small number of tugboats to tow fire rafts. The river was obstructed by schooners anchored across the stream between the forts, and chains were passed from vessel to vessel.

The Louisiana mounted 16 guns. She was moored, or tied up, to the left bank of the river, just above Fort St. Philip. Workmen were employed night and day on her machinery and to prepare the ship for service. Her third lieutenant, William C. Whittle, says: "The Louisiana was in an entirely incomplete condition when she





was sent down from New Orleans. . . . Her guns were not mounted, and the machinery of her two propellers was not put together. . . . The port-holes for the guns were so miserably constructed as simply to admit of the guns being run out, and were so small as not to admit of training laterally or in elevation." The Louisiana was commanded by Commander Charles F. McIntosh. Her executive officer was John Wilkinson, and among the other lieutenants were William H. Ward, William C. Whittle, Jr., G. E. Shryock and R. Bowen, with Surgeon J. V. Grafton and Engineer Wilson Youngblood. The Manassas was commanded by Lieut. A. F. Warley, with Lieut. Frank Harris as executive; the McRae by Lieut. Thomas B. Huger, with C. W. Read as executive; the Jackson by Lieut. Frank Renshaw, and the Governor Moore by Capt. Beverly Kennon, once of the old navy, but now in the Louisiana State navy.

The bombardment of Fort Jackson by Porter's mortar fleet commenced April 18th and was continued till the 24th. On the 22d, General Duncan, in command of the forts, requested Commodore Mitchell to move the Louisiana farther down the river so that she might drive the mortar schooners off. The commodore declined, for the reasons that the Louisiana's machinery was not yet in working order, that the engineers hoped to have it ready in a day or two; that the top of the Louisiana was unprotected, and if a shell dropped on it, it would pass through the bottom and inevitably sink the ship; and finally, on account of the small size of the ports, the guns could not be sufficiently elevated to reach the mortar fleet from the position General Duncan wished the Louisiana to take. The last reason was a sufficient one, if true; but there was some difference of opinion as to it, even among the navy officers. Be that as it may, Commodore Mitchell was supported by his officers in his determination not to move the ship; and from this time all cordiality between the forts and vessels ceased to exist.



This was particularly unfortunate, for it must naturally have discouraged both the soldiers in the forts and the sailors in the squadron. The situation of Commodore Mitchell with a helpless flagship and an insubordinate set of steamboat captains commanding his most effective vessels—the rams—was not an enviable one.

Fire rafts were sent down the river every night; but, as Captain Mahan says, "these were productive of no serious damage beyond collisions arising from them . . . and the special mistake was made of sending only one at a time instead of a number, to increase the confusion and embarrassment of the ships." Unfortunately, on the night the enemy's fleet passed the forts, no fire raft was sent down to light up the river, and General Duncan was justified in complaining of it. There was a want of organization and discipline, but Commodore Mitchell cannot be held responsible for it, as he took command of the Louisiana on the 20th of April, only four days before the enemy's ships passed. The want of proper preparation at New Orleans may fairly be attributed to a mistake of the secretary of the navy, who could not disabuse his mind of the idea that New Orleans would be attacked by the fleet above, instead of the fleet below. And he clung to this idea until the last hour, as evidenced by his ordering the Louisiana to Fort Pillow as late as April 10th.

While the mortar schooners were bombarding Fort Jackson daily from the 18th to the 23d, Farragut's ships were "stripping for a fight," and the skill and ingenuity displayed are well worth the study of young naval officers. Captain Mahan says: "The chain cables of the sheet anchors had been secured up and down the sides of the vessels, abreast the engines, to resist the impact of projectiles, . . . and each commander further protected those vital parts from shots coming in forward or aft, with hammocks, bags of coal, or sand, or ashes, or whatever else came to hand. The outside paint was daubed over



with the yellow Mississippi mud, as being less easily seen at night; while, on the other hand, the gun-carriages and decks were whitewashed, throwing into plainer view the dark color of their equipment lying around. On some ships splinter nettings were rigged inside the bulwarks and found of advantage in stopping the flight of larger fragments struck out by shot." Several of the gunboats had their masts removed.

On the night of the 20th a passage was made through the obstructions by the United States gunboats *Itasca* and *Pinola*, under their gallant commanders, C. H. B. Caldwell and Pierce Crosby. No bolder or more important feat was performed during the war. Caldwell and Crosby deserved promotion, for they opened the way to New Orleans. At 2 a. m. on the 24th, *Farragut's* vessels got under weigh for the attack, and at 3:30 the leading ship, the *Cayuga*, passed through the obstructions and was followed by the other vessels in line ahead. The *Hartford*, flagship, was the ninth ship in the line, leading what was called the port column.

The two forts, Jackson and St. Philip, and the *Louisiana* and *McRae* opened a heavy fire. The *Manassas* boldly attacked the United States vessels, and after ramming several with slight effect was set adrift by her commander, who with his officers and men repaired to the *Louisiana*.

The *McRae* was gallantly fought by her captain, Thomas Huger, who fell mortally wounded in the action. Upon his fall, the heroic C. W. Read continued the fight until all the enemy's vessels had passed. The *McRae* then anchored near the *Louisiana*, and was sent next day to New Orleans with a flag of truce. She sunk at the wharf from damage received in the action. The *Louisiana* could only act as a floating battery; but her guns were well served. Her gallant captain, Charles F. McIntosh, was mortally wounded while on the upper deck prepared



to resist an expected attack of boarders. The shield of the *Louisiana* was not penetrated.

The gunboat *Jackson* was not in the battle. The State ram, *Governor Moore*, commanded by Capt. Beverly Kennon, made a desperate fight from the beginning; and finished by ramming and sinking the *Varuna*, which vessel Kennon stuck to with the tenacity of a bulldog. The *Moore* was afterward run ashore and burned, and the unconquerable *Kennon* was made prisoner. The loss of life on the *Governor Moore* was very great. The ram *Stonewall Jackson*, of the river fleet, also rammed the *Varuna*, and her captain behaved bravely. There was another river captain who displayed uncommon courage. In the midst of the carnage the captain of the little tug *Mosher* boldly pushed a fire-raft alongside the *Hartford* and set her on fire. Unfortunately, his name has not been preserved, and accounts say the *Mosher* was destroyed with all hands. Although the river boats did not otherwise, as a rule, behave very well at New Orleans, yet in other cases on the Mississippi, notably at Memphis, and in the capture of the iron-clad *Indianola*, they displayed uncommon bravery. Admiral Porter in his history bears witness to their enterprise and unparalleled exertions to resist his advances.

Of Admiral Farragut's fleet, all but three passed the forts and on the 25th at noon, anchored off New Orleans. The *Louisiana* remained at her berth, and Commodore Mitchell was getting ready to go up and attack the enemy, when on the 27th the forts surrendered, General Duncan ignoring the presence of Commodore Mitchell, and making no terms for the navy in his surrender. Upon this, Commodore Mitchell burned the *Louisiana* to prevent her falling into the enemy's hands, and, with his officers, delivered himself up as prisoner of war. The enemy tried to make it appear that he willfully endangered their vessels by blowing up the *Louisiana*, and at first he and his officers were harshly treated as prisoners:





but the President of the United States acknowledged his right under the rules of war to act as he did, and he was soon after exchanged. The Confederate naval authorities sustained his course at New Orleans, and not long after his exchange he was made a flag-officer and placed in command of the James river squadron. Thus ended the battle of New Orleans. We have seen that the authorities at Richmond failed to provide means to obstruct the Mississippi river, or to organize a proper naval force there.

At the time New Orleans fell there were three small Confederate gunboats on Lake Ponchartrain, commanded by Lieutenants Poindexter, Gwathmey and Winder. These officers burned their vessels, first sending the guns up to Port Hudson, where they were afterward of much service. In the general panic attending the appearance of Farragut's fleet, the fine ironclad Mississippi was burned. Lieut. C. W. Read says (*Southern Historical Society Papers*, Vol. I): "There was no real effort made to get that vessel up the river. Two river steamboats, poorly commanded and miserably handled, made a show of trying to tow the ironclad. They humbugged a few minutes and then set her on fire. The assertion that the Mississippi could not have been towed up the river is perfectly absurd. The large, flat-bottomed, square-ended floating battery built at New Orleans was easily towed up to Columbus."

The loss in the United States fleet in passing the forts and vessels at New Orleans was 37 killed and 147 wounded; total, 184. We have no record of the Confederate loss.



## CHAPTER VIII.

### THE RAM ARKANSAS—HER COMPLETION ON THE YAZOO RIVER—HER DARING DASH THROUGH THE FEDERAL FLEET.

SOON after the secession of Tennessee, efforts were made to construct vessels for war purposes, and at Memphis were commenced two ironclad rams, the Arkansas and the Tennessee. Upon the fall of Memphis the latter vessel was burned, but the Arkansas was carried by her commander, Capt. Charles H. McBlair, to the Yazoo river. Captain McBlair was relieved of command by Lieut. Isaac N. Brown, who by extraordinary and unparalleled exertions got her ready for service by July, 1862. She was indifferently armored, but had a formidable battery, viz., two 8-inch columbiads, two 9-inch Dahlgren guns, four 6-inch rifles and two smooth-bore 32-pounders. She drew 14 feet of water, and had a maximum speed of six knots. She was admirably officered with Lieuts. H. K. Stevens, J. Grimbail, A. D. Wharton, C. W. Read, A. Barbot and George W. Gift; Surg. H. Washington, Asst. Surg. C. M. Morfit, Asst. Paymaster Richard Taylor; Engineers City, Covert, Jackson, Brown, Doland, Dupuy and Gettis; Acting Masters Phillips and Milliken; Midshipmen Bacot, Scales and Tyler; Gunner Travers and Master's Mate Wilson, with Messrs. Shacklette, Gilmore, Brady and Hodges as pilots, and a crew of 200 men, principally soldiers and rivermen.

Upon consultation with General Van Dorn, commanding at Vicksburg in the summer of 1862, Captain Brown determined to proceed in the Arkansas to that city, distant by water about fifty miles. To do this he had to



pass the vessels of Admiral Farragut and Flag-Officer Davis, and the rams of Colonel Ellet. These vessels were at anchor in the Mississippi, three miles below the mouth of the Yazoo, and among them were six ironclads, seven rams and ten large ships of war. On the morning of July 15, 1862, Captain Brown started in the Arkansas for Vicksburg. About six miles from the mouth of the Yazoo river he was met by the United States ironclad Carondelet, Captain Walker; the gunboat Tyler, Lieutenant Commanding Gwinn, and the ram Queen of the West. All three of these vessels turned, and a running fight ensued. The ram made a straight wake, but the other two fought well. The Tyler was too weak to encounter the Arkansas, though her commander, Gwinn, did all that could be expected of him. The Arkansas bestowed most of her attention to the ironclad Carondelet, killing and wounding many of her men, and finally driving her into shoal water. Captain Brown asserted that she lowered her colors; this Captain Walker denied, but there is no doubt that the Arkansas would have made a prize of her could she have spared the time to stop, which she could not. In the encounter with the Carondelet, Captain Brown was badly wounded and two of his pilots were killed. One was the Yazoo river pilot who, as they were carrying him below, had the courage and devotion to exclaim with his dying breath, "Keep in the middle of the river!" The Arkansas' smokestack was so riddled that she could hardly make more than one knot per hour when she entered the Mississippi; but this, with the current of the river, enabled her to run the gauntlet of Farragut's fleet.

Capt. A. T. Mahan says:

The ram [Arkansas] now followed the Tyler, which had kept up her fire and remained within range, losing many of her people, killed and wounded. The enemy was seen to be pumping a heavy stream of water both in the Yazoo and the Mississippi, and her smokestack had been so pierced by shot as to reduce her speed to a little over a



knot an hour, at which rate, aided by a favoring current, she passed through the two fleets. Having no faith in her coming down, the vessels were found wholly unprepared to attack; only one, the ram General Bragg, had steam, and her commander unfortunately waited for orders to act in such an emergency. . . . She [the Arkansas] fought her way boldly through, passing between the vessels of war and the transports, firing and receiving the fire of each as she went by, most of the projectiles bounding harmlessly from her sides; but two 11-inch shells came [went] through, killing many and setting on fire the cotton backing. On the other hand the Lancaster, of the ram fleet, which made a move toward her, got a shot in the mud receiver which disabled her, scalding many of her people, two of them fatally. The whole affair with the fleets lasted but a few minutes, and the Arkansas, having passed out of range, found refuge under the Vicksburg batteries. The two flag-officers [Farragut and Davis] were much mortified at the success of this daring act, due as it was to the unprepared state of the fleets; and Farragut instantly determined to follow her down and attempt to destroy her as he ran by.

Colonel Scharf says in his history: "The Federal line was now forced, and the Arkansas emerged from the volcano of flame and smoke, from an hour's horizontal iron hail of every description, from 32 to 200 pounders, hurled by a fleet of about forty formidable war vessels—shattered, bleeding, triumphant! . . . They were welcomed by the patriotic shouts of the army at Vicksburg, and the siege of that city was virtually raised." This last assertion may be disputed.

The loss in the Federal fleet on this occasion was, according to Captain Mahan, 13 killed, 34 wounded and 10 missing. Captain Brown reported his loss as 10 killed and 15 badly wounded. The New York Herald made the loss in the Federal fleet 42 killed and 69 wounded.

On July 22d the United States ironclad Essex and ram Queen of the West made an attack on the Arkansas as she lay at the wharf at Vicksburg. They were driven off with loss. The Arkansas at the time had but 41 men

XII 5





on board. On the 3d of August the Arkansas, under the command of Lient. H. K. Stevens, Captain Brown being on shore sick, left Vicksburg to co-operate with General Breckinridge in an attack upon Baton Rouge. On the way her machinery occasioned trouble, and finally broke down altogether. Lieutenant Stevens then burned her to prevent her falling into the hands of the enemy, the officers and crew escaping. And so ended the Arkansas.



## CHAPTER IX.

### THE IRONCLADS PALMETTO STATE AND CHICORA— THEIR FIGHT OFF CHARLESTON—ATTACK ON FORT SUMTER—TORPEDO EXPEDITIONS—THE RAM AT- LANTA.

AT Charleston, S. C., in January, 1863, were the two Confederate ironclads Palmetto State and Chicora. These vessels were constructed on the general plan of the Merrimac, but their "ends" were not submerged. The side-plating, of 4-inch iron, extended to the "knuckle" near the water line, and from the "knuckle," at the same angle, to some three feet below the water line. They were more buoyant than the Merrimac, much stronger at the water line, and very creditable vessels, exceedingly well officered and manned. They carried each an 80-pounder Brooke rifle forward, a 60-pounder rifle aft, and two 8-inch shell guns in broadside—four guns in all. Their draft was 14 feet and their engines were reliable and capable of giving a speed of six knots per hour.

Flag-Officer Duncan N. Ingraham was in command of the station and of the vessels. The officers of the Palmetto State were: Capt. John Rutledge, Lieuts. William H. Parker, Philip Porcher, George Shryock and Robert Bowen; Surg. A. S. Lynch, Paymaster Banks, Chief Engineer Campbell, Assistant Engineer Jordan, Master F. T. Chew, Midshipmen Clarence Cary, Sevier and Hamilton; Boatswain Wilson and Gunner George Thompson, with a crew of about 120 men. The officers of the Chicora were: Capt. John R. Tucker, Lieuts. George Bier, William T. Glassell, John Ingraham and William H. Wall; Master A. M. Mason, Passed Midshipman J. B.



Claybrooke, Midshipmen Bacot, Saunders and Pinckney; Surgeon Turner, Engineers Clark, Tombs, Jones and Lyell; Paymaster West, Gunner Johnson and Carpenter Weaver, with about the same crew. The Palmetto State bore the flag of Commodore Ingraham.

Capt. William H. Parker, an eye-witness and participant, says in "Recollections of a Naval Officer:" "By January, 1863, the vessels being all ready, we commenced to think of making some demonstration, and it was decided to attack the fleet off Charleston on the night of the 30th. The enemy's fleet off the harbor or in the vicinity on that night consisted of the Housatonic, Mercedita, Keystone State, Quaker City, Augusta, Flag, Memphis, Stettin, Ottawa and Unadilla. Of these, the Housatonic, Ottawa and Unadilla were, I think, the only regularly-built men-of-war, the others being converted merchant steamer-paddles and screws. Captain Taylor, of the Housatonic, was the senior officer; Admiral Dupont, the commander-in-chief, was at Port Royal with the ironclad New Ironsides, the frigate Wabash, and the steamships Susquehanna, Canandaigua, and some others. About 10 p. m., January 30, 1863, Commodore Ingraham came on board the Palmetto State, and at 11:30 the two vessels cast off their fasts and got under weigh. There was no demonstration on shore, and I believe few of the citizens knew of the projected attack. Charleston was full of spies at this time and everything was carried to the enemy. It was nearly calm, and a bright moonlight night, the moon being eleven days old. We went down the harbor very slowly, so as to reach the bar of the main ship-channel, 11 miles from Charleston, about 4 in the morning, when it would be high water there. . . . We passed between Forts Sumter and Moultrie—the former with its yellow sides reflecting the moon's rays—and turned down the channel along Morris island. I presume all hands were up in the forts and batteries, watching us, but no word was spoken. . . .



"As we approached the bar, about 4 a. m., we saw the steamer *Mercedita* lying at anchor a short distance outside it. I had no fear of her seeing our hull; but we were burning soft coal, and the night being very clear, with nearly a full moon, it did seem to me that our smoke, which trailed behind like a huge black serpent, must be visible several miles off. We went silently to quarters, and our main deck presented a scene which will always live in my memory. The men stood quietly at their guns, the port-shutters were closed, not a light could be seen from the outside and the few battle-lanterns lit cast a pale, weird light on the gun-deck. My friend, Phil Porcher, who commanded the bow gun, was equipped with a pair of white kid gloves and had in his mouth an unlighted cigar. As we stood at our stations, not even whispering, the silence became painful. Just at my side I noticed the little powder-monkey of the broad-side guns sitting on a match-tub, with his powder pouch slung over his shoulder, fast asleep; and he was in this condition when the action commenced.

"We crossed the bar and steered directly for the *Mercedita*. They did not see us until we were very near. The lieutenant on deck then hailed us, and ordered us to keep off or he would fire. We did not reply, and he called to us, 'You will be into me!' Just then we rammed him on the starboard quarter and fired the bow gun. The shell from it, according to Captain Stellwagen, who commanded her, went through her diagonally, penetrating the starboard side, through the condenser, through the steam-drum of the port boiler, and exploded against the port side of the ship, blowing a hole in its exit four or five feet square. She did not fire a gun, and in a minute her commander hailed to say he surrendered. Captain Rutledge then directed him to send a boat alongside. I went out on the after-deck to receive it. The men in it were half dressed and, as they had neglected to put the plug in when it was lowered, the boat was





half full of water. Lieut. T. Abbott, the executive officer of the *Mercedita*, who came in the boat, . . . reported the name of the ship and her captain, said she had 128 souls on board, and that she was in a sinking condition. After some delay, Commodore Ingraham required him to give his word of honor, for his commander, officers and crew, that they would not serve against the Confederate States until regularly exchanged. This he did; it was a verbal parole. He then returned to his ship. In the meantime the *Chicora* passed us and became warmly engaged."

The *Chicora* engaged the *Keystone State*, killing and wounding 40 of her crew. The *Keystone State* lowered her colors, as her commander acknowledged in his report, and afterward hoisted them again and treacherously made her escape. Her commander, in his official report, complacently spoke of his "destroying and throwing overboard arms and ammunition" after he had surrendered his vessel, ignoring the fact that by the laws of war he was guilty of a dishonorable action.

The *Palmetto State*, after losing some time with the *Mercedita*, stood to the eastward and exchanged shots with the *Memphis* and *Quaker City*. They soon sheered off, and stood to the southward and eastward. The other vessels of the blockading fleet followed their example. The *Palmetto State* and *Chicora*, at 8:45 a. m., anchored off Sullivan's island. At this time all the enemy's vessels were driven off, and with a marine glass their masts only could be seen, their hulls being invisible. Captain Tucker said in his report: "We pursued them six or seven miles seaward."

During the afternoon the *Housatonic* and some others took position more to the eastward, but remained a long distance off. With their slow speed it was useless for the Confederate ships to pursue them.

General Beauregard and Commodore Ingraham issued a proclamation announcing the blockade broken; but as foreign governments did not concede it, we will not



dwell upon that. The officers of the United States vessels strenuously denied that they were driven off, the captain of the *Housatonic*, in particular, asserting that he was never outside the "usual line of blockaders." Yet his log-book shows that he was "waiting for the *haze* to clear to run in and pick up our anchor." There was no "*haze*" observed by the Confederate naval officers; on the contrary, they thought it a very clear day. The *Mercedita* was towed to Port Royal after the *Palmetto State* left her.\* Her officers and men were afterward regularly exchanged. At 4 p. m. the Confederate vessels crossed the bar and returned to Charleston, having remained outside the harbor the entire day. The loss on the Federal ships on this occasion was 23 killed and 22 wounded. There was no loss on the Confederate side—the vessels were not even hit.

Of the result of this enterprise on the part of Commodore Ingraham, Captain Parker, in his "Recollections," says: "Our only chance of any great success lay in a surprise under cover of the night. After ramming the *Mercedita* we should have remained a while outside and near her; then as the enemy's vessels came up in succession we should have captured them, as it is reasonable to suppose we would have done. When a vessel struck, she would have been directed to run in and anchor near the *Mercedita*. By pursuing this plan I think we would have retained the *Mercedita* and *Keystone State*, and probably have captured, in addition, the *Quaker City*, *Augusta* and *Memphis*. By that time daylight would have revealed to the other United States ships 'what manner of men' [ironclads] they were contending against, and the fight would have ended."

On the 7th of September, 1863, Flag-Officer Dupont, with a squadron of ironclads, made an attack upon Forts Sumter and Moultrie. The *Palmetto State* and *Chicora*

---

\*On the authority of Admiral D. Ammen, U. S. N., in a letter to the author.



were ready to assist in the defense, but the United States ironclads were driven off with loss, one of them—the Keokuk—being sunk; and as not one of them ventured to pass Fort Sumter, the services of the Confederate vessels were not demanded. On the 10th, an expedition consisting of fifteen torpedo boats was organized to attack the monitors then lying off Morris island, but as the boats were about starting, the monitors got under weigh and crossed the bar. About the 8th of May, another expedition of six torpedo boats, under the command of Lieut. William H. Parker, was sent through the inland waters to attack the monitors at the mouth of the North Edisto river. The boats arrived at their point of destination, which was Bohicket creek, without being discovered. The intention was to lie in the creek, abreast the monitors, adjust the torpedoes, wait for a dark night, and then make the attack. Unfortunately, one of the men of the expedition deserted to the enemy and disclosed the plan, upon which the flotilla returned to Charleston.

At Savannah, Ga., in 1862, the blockade-runner *Fingal* had been converted into an ironclad, and named the *Atlanta*. The *Atlanta* was similar to the *Palmetto State* and other Confederate ironclads. She carried two 7-inch Brooke rifles, bow and stern pivots, and two 6-inch Brooke rifles in broadside—four guns in all—and had a crew of 165 officers and men. She had attached, or fitted to her ram, a percussion torpedo. On the 17th of June, 1863, she went out under her commander, William A. Webb, C. S. N., to encounter the two monitors, *Weehawken* and *Nahant*, in Warsaw sound. "They were two of the strongest vessels of their class, armored with ten inches of iron on the turret, and carrying two 15-inch and two 11-inch guns." The action was short and decisive. The *Atlanta* got aground and her engines could not move her, and in this condition she was attacked by the *Weehawken* at a distance of 300 yards. The *Weehawken* fired but five shots, four of which hit the *Atlanta*.



These are described by Professor Soley, in "The Blockade and the Cruisers," as follows:

The first, a 15-inch coned shot, struck the inclined side of the vessel in the line of the ports, and though fired at an angle of fifty degrees with her keel, penetrated the armor and, ripping out the wooden backing, the two inner layers of which were of brittle Georgia pine, covered the deck with splinters. From the effects of this shot 40 or more men were prostrated, several of whom received ugly wounds from the fragments of wood and iron. The second shot, from the 11-inch gun, struck the edge of the overhang and started the plating. The third carried off the roof of the pilot house, wounded the two pilots, and stunned the men at the wheel. The fourth shattered a port shutter, driving the fragments in through the port. Upon this, the Atlanta hauled down her colors and hoisted a white flag.

The Atlanta fired eight shots, not one of which hit the Weehawken. The Nahant did not come into the fight; but she was nearly up, and it would have been as well for the Atlanta to have stood at least one shot from her. She then would have surrendered to two vessels instead of one. The Atlanta seems to have been poorly prepared for a fight, though if she had not unfortunately grounded she would doubtless have given a better account of herself, as she might have been able to make use of her ram and torpedo. Commander R. L. Page, C. S. N., strongly opposed the Atlanta's going out, owing to the lack of water in Warsaw sound.





## CHAPTER X.

CAPTURE OF THE SATELLITE AND RELIANCE—TORPEDO ATTACK ON THE U. S. IRONCLAD NEW IRONSIDES—CAPTURE OF THE U. S. S. UNDERWRITER—TORPEDO ATTACK ON THE U. S. S. MINNESOTA—CAPTURE OF THE U. S. S. WATERWITCH.

ON the night of August 20, 1863, Lieut. John Taylor Wood, with four boats and 60 men, boarded and carried the United States steamers Satellite and Reliance, then lying at the mouth of the Rappahannock river. The Satellite mounted one smooth-bore 32-pounder and one 12-pounder howitzer, and had a crew of 40 men. The Reliance had one 30-pounder Parrott and one 24-pounder howitzer, with a crew of 40 men. The boats boarded the two steamers at the same moment; Lieutenant Wood with two boats boarding the Satellite, and Lieut. F. L. Hoge with the other two, the Reliance. The latter vessel was stoutly defended. Lieutenant Hoge, Midshipman Henry Cook, and 3 men were wounded, and the Reliance had her captain and 8 others wounded, and 2 men killed. The Satellite had 2 men killed and 6 men wounded. In this brilliant affair Lieutenant Wood was gallantly supported by his officers, Lieutenants Hoge and William E. Hudgins, Midshipmen M. P. Goodwyn and Cook, and Engineers Bowman and Tennent.

Lieutenant Wood, with the Satellite, cruised for a day or two in Chesapeake bay, and took three prizes. Information of the loss of the Satellite and Reliance having by this time reached the enemy, overpowering forces were sent up from Old Point, seeing which Wood took all his captures up the Rappahannock and burned them. The



guns and stores of the Satellite and Reliance were, however, saved. The expedition was a gallant achievement on the part of Lieutenant Wood and his brave officers and men, and they were much applauded.

On the night of October 5, 1863, Lieut. W. T. Glassell, C. S. N., made a daring attack upon the New Ironsides, then lying off Morris island, near Charleston, S. C. The affair is well described in Scharf's history:

Lieut. W. T. Glassell was placed in command of the first David built [a steam, turtle-back, torpedo boat] and had under him C. S. Tombs, engineer, James Sullivan, fireman, and J. W. Cannon, pilot. The night selected for the expedition was slightly hazy, and shortly after 9 o'clock the David was within 300 yards of the New Ironsides and making directly for her side, when discovered by a sentinel. Without making any reply to his hail, Glassell kept on and fired with a shotgun at the officer of the deck (Acting Master Howard), who fell mortally wounded. The next moment the David struck the frigate, the torpedo exploded, the little craft plunged violently, and a deluge of water thrown up by the concussion descended on her smoke-pipe and hatchway. Her fires were extinguished and her machinery jammed. In the midst of a rattling fire of musketry from the New Ironsides, Glassell directed his men to save themselves by swimming, as it seemed impossible that the David could be made to move. After being in the water himself more than an hour, he was picked up by the boat of a transport schooner and handed over as a prisoner to Admiral Dahlgren, who ordered him into confinement on the guardship Ottawa.

Engineer Tombs, after swimming awhile, got back to the David, pulled in the pilot, J. W. Cannon, got steam up and succeeded in getting back to Charleston. The fireman, Sullivan, was taken prisoner.

Upon examining the New Ironsides, it was found that the torpedo exploded only three feet under water, and against four and a half inches of armor and twenty-seven inches of wood backing. By the explosion the ponderous ship was shaken from stem to stern. It knocked down a bulkhead, started some timbers, and threw two or three



rooms into confusion. A marine was dashed against the ceiling and his leg broken, while several other men were slightly injured.

Glassell and Tombs were promoted for their gallant behavior in this audacious enterprise. Glassell was exchanged in a few months, and served in the James river squadron. Tombs was afterward conspicuous in torpedo warfare in and around Charleston harbor.

The capture of the United States steamer *Underwriter*, on the night of February 1, 1864, by Commander John Taylor Wood and his men, was one of the brilliant episodes of the war. It was intended that General Pickett should attack the land forces at New Bern, N. C., while Wood should attempt to carry the gunboats in the Neuse and Trent rivers. General Pickett's attack was only partially successful, owing to the failure of one of his divisions to make the necessary diversion.

Wood's party rendezvoused at Kinston, on the Neuse river. It consisted of drafts from the Confederate vessels at Richmond, Wilmington and Charleston. From the schoolship *Patrick Henry* and the James river squadron went Lieut. Benjamin P. Loyall (second in command), Lieut. F. L. Hoge, and Midshipmen Palmer Saunders and Dan Lee; and from Wilmington and Charleston went Lieuts. Philip Porcher, William A. Kerr, F. M. Roby, J. M. Gardner, George W. Gift and Henry Wilkinson; Midshipmen H. S. Cooke, J. T. Scharf and W. S. Hogue, and Engineer E. J. Gill. The entire force consisted of 15 officers and about 100 sailors and marines, in six boats. The marines were under Capt. Thomas S. Wilson. The expedition pulled down the Neuse river from Kinston to New Bern, a distance of some 40 miles, and at 2:30 a. m., February 25th, discovered the *Underwriter* lying close inshore, under the protection of two forts.

J. T. Scharf, who was present in one of the boats, has written:



In the meantime the Underwriter slipped her cable and made efforts to get up sufficient steam from her banked fires to move off, or run the Confederates down. This movement only hastened the boarding party, and the crews pulled rapidly alongside. The instructions to the boats were that one of the divisions should board forward and the other astern, but in the excitement the largest number of boats went forward, with Captain Wood amidships. . . . The enemy gathered in the ways just aft of the wheel-house, and as the Confederates came up they poured into them volley after volley of musketry, each dash of which reddened the waters around, enabling the attacking party to note their position. In spite of the heavy fire, the boarders were cool and yet eager, now and then one or more were struck down, but the rest never faltered. When the boats struck the sides of the Underwriter, grapnels were thrown on board, and the Confederates were soon scrambling, with cutlass and pistol in hand, to the deck with a rush and a wild cheer that rung across the waters, the firing from the enemy never ceasing for one moment. The brave Lieut. B. P. Loyall was the first to reach the deck, with Engineer Emmet F. Gill and Captain Wood at his side. Following in their steps came Lieutenants Hoge, Kerr, Porcher, Gardner, Roby, Wilkinson and Gift, with Midshipmen Saunders, Lee, Cook and Scharf.

The Underwriter was soon in possession of the Confederates. She was a side-wheel steamer, carried four guns, and had a crew of about 80 men. She made an obstinate defense, losing in the engagement her captain and 8 men killed, and 20 wounded. On the Confederate side the loss was, Engineer E. F. Gill, Midshipman Palmer Saunders and 4 men killed, and 22 wounded.

It had been the intention of Captain Wood to proceed in the Underwriter and attempt the capture of other of the United States gunboats; but he found her moored, head and stern, only 200 yards from the Federal batteries, and as these batteries now opened a heavy fire upon her, he was compelled to burn and abandon her. In the confusion, 23 of her officers and men made their escape in one of the boats. Upon reaching Kinston the party dis-





banded, and the officers and men returned to the respective vessels. For this daring exploit Commander Wood and his officers and men received the thanks of the Confederate Congress. Commander Wood was promoted to captain, and Lieutenant Loyall to commander.

Lieut. Hunter Davidson, on April 9, 1864, having run 120 miles down the James river from Drewry's bluff with his torpedo-boat *Torpedo*, attempted to destroy the United States steam-frigate *Minnesota*, flagship of Rear-Admiral S. P. Lee, at anchor off Newport News. The river swarmed with the enemy's vessels, and a guard tug was lying by the *Minnesota*, but her commander had allowed his steam to go down. Davidson hit the great ship full and fair, but his torpedo charge was only 53 pounds of powder, and it failed to break in her sides. A frame was shattered, planks started, several gun-carriages broken, and a lot of stores damaged. The daring Confederate got away without harm.\* Lieutenant Davidson was immediately promoted to commander. He had for a year or more been in charge of the torpedoes in the James river, which constituted a formidable defense of the city of Richmond on the water side. He found the torpedo service in an embryo state and, by his energy and perseverance, brought it to perfection. To him should be given much credit for the defense of the river in the summer of 1864. The gun-boat *Commodore Jones* was blown up by one of his batteries on May 6, 1864.

In the fall of 1864 Commander Hunter Davidson was ordered abroad, and the gallant and accomplished Lieut. J. Pembroke Jones succeeded to his command. The selection of Lieutenant Jones indicates the importance the navy department attached to this branch of the defense of the river.

Another brilliant affair was the boarding and capture of the United States steamer *Waterwitch*, on the night of June

---

\* Scharf's History of the Confederate States Navy.



3 1864, by Lieut. T. P. Pelot, Confederates States navy, and his command. The steamer *Waterwitch*, mounting four guns, with a crew of 79 men, was at anchor in Oribaw sound, below Savannah, Ga., when it was determined by the Confederates to attempt her capture by boarding. Lieutenant Pelot, with Lieutenant Price, Midshipmen Trimble and Minor, Boatswain Seymour, Assistant Engineers Caldwell and Fabian, Assistant Surgeons Thomas and Jones, Master's Mates Gray, Freeman, Barclay, Golder and Rosler, with seven boats and some 80 men, executed the project on the night of June 3d. Lieutenant Pelot losing his life, Lieutenant Price made the official report, in which he said:

The night being dark and rainy, we got close aboard of her without being discovered. On being hailed, Lieutenant Pelot answered, "Rebels," and gave the order, "Board!" The vessel having steam up at the time, as soon as the alarm was given, commenced turning her wheels backward and forward rapidly, thus thwarting the earnest efforts of Boatswain Seymour and Master's Mate Rosler to get on board with the entire boat's crew. The port column, led by Lieutenant Pelot, boarded on the port side; the starboard column, led by Lieutenant Price, boarded on the starboard side. In coming alongside, the enemy's fire with small-arms was quite severe; in fact, it was during that time, and while the boarding netting, which was triced up, was being cut through, that the most of our loss in killed and wounded was sustained. After a sharp hand-to-hand fight of some ten minutes the ship was taken. Lieutenant Pelot was the first to gain the deck, and while bravely fighting was shot and instantly killed. In his death the country has lost a brave and gallant officer, and society one of her brightest ornaments.

In this engagement the *Waterwitch* had 2 men killed, and 12 wounded. Her commander, Lieut. Austin Pendergrast, complained bitterly, in his official report, of the behavior of his crew and the engineer officers, saying:

I regret to say the watch below evinced no desire to come on deck and defend the ship. . . . The men



seemed paralyzed with fear, and remained under the hurricane deck without giving the officers the least support. . . . I regret to say the engineers acted in the most cowardly manner.

But Captain Pendergrast and his officers certainly made an obstinate defense; for of the boarding party Lieutenant Pelot and 5 men were killed, and Lieutenant Price, Midshipman Minor, Boatswain Seymour, and 9 men were wounded. The *Waterwitch* was taken into the Confederate navy, and was burned when the Confederates evacuated Savannah in December, 1864. Lieutenant Price was promoted to commander for his gallant conduct in this affair.



## CHAPTER XI.

### THE RAM ALBEMARLE—HER BATTLES AND VICTORIES —WRECK OF THE RALEIGH.

ON June 3, 1863, Lieutenant Flusser, commanding the United States steamer Miami, in Albemarle sound, advised Rear-Admiral S. P. Lee, U. S. N., of the building of a new Confederate States ram, the Albemarle,\* at Edward's Ferry on the Roanoke river, 30 miles below Weldon. The United States navy department several times called the attention of the general in command of the United States forces on the sound to the construction of this vessel, and advised that as the United States ships could not reach her on account of the shallowness of the water, a land force be sent to burn her. This appeal was disregarded.

In the meantime the building of the vessel, subsequently named the Albemarle, went on under the most discouraging circumstances. There was not even a ship yard at Edward's Ferry; the timber had to be cut in the woods, workmen were scarce, there was no machine shop, and iron was almost unobtainable. Fortunately, Commander James W. Cooke, C. S. navy, was ordered to assist her builders, and take command of her when finished. She was simply a flat-bottomed boat, sharp at both ends. The prow was solid oak, plated with iron; her shield was slanting, and covered with railroad iron, which was *sufficient*, as after experience demonstrated. She carried two good guns, Brooke rifles. As the vessel went down in the

\* "On October 17, 1862, a contract with Howard & Ellis, of New Bern, N. C., was entered into for the construction at White Hall, N. C. [on the Roanoke river], of the hull of one gunboat to be iron-plated, and completed on or before the first day of March, 1863."  
—Scharf's History.





water, Cooke moved her farther and farther down the river into deeper water. The officers, crew and workmen suffered great hardships from bad fare, bad water and bad climate. But the indefatigable Cooke encouraged them by his example.

By April, 1863, the vessel was partially completed, and a combined movement against the Federal forces at Plymouth, N. C., was planned. About the middle of April, General Hoke, commander of the Confederate land forces, visited the ship, then at Hamilton, and Captain Cooke promised to be at Plymouth by the 18th to assist the army. Few men would have ventured to make the promise. Workmen were still at work; the engine had not been tried, nor the crew drilled. Cooke had, however, an excellent executive officer in the brave Lieut. F. M. Roby.

On the 17th and 18th of April, 1864, vigorous attacks were made upon the forts at Plymouth by the Confederates under General Hoke. At this time the United States vessels present were the Miami, the Southfield, two small picket boats, the Bombshell and Whitehead, and the gunboat Ceres, all under the command of Lieutenant Flusser. In Albemarle sound were several United States vessels, technically called double-enders. Captain Flusser helped materially in the defense of the forts on the 17th and 18th; his two larger vessels carrying one rifled 100-pounder and five or six 9-inch shell guns each. On the evening of the 18th, expecting the advent of the Albemarle, he chained the Miami and Southfield together, a somewhat novel proceeding. In this condition he confidently awaited the attack, having some months before expressed the opinion that "we shall whip them if they venture down."

In the meanwhile the Albemarle, having landed her mechanics in the afternoon of the 18th, was slowly making her way down the river, stern foremost, as she was difficult to steer. About 3 a. m. on the 19th, Captain



Flusser was made aware of her approach, and the Miami and Southfield steamed to meet her. The Albemarle, with her ports closed, passed the enemy's fort at Warren's Neck under a heavy fire, and rammed the Southfield, forcing her ram into the fire-room. The Albemarle had some difficulty in extricating herself, the water coming into her bow port before she could get clear. The Southfield filled and sank as the ram was drawn out. Commander Cooke, in his official report, spoke highly of his officers, Lieutenant Roby, Master Shelly, Past Midshipman Hamilton and Pilot Hopkins. He also specially thanked Mr. Elliot, the builder, who accompanied him as a volunteer, for great gallantry and efficient service.

As the Albemarle closed with the Miami and Southfield they fired shells, which of course burst into fragments against the ram's iron sides and rebounded over the Miami's deck. Three or four of the pieces struck the gallant Flusser, and he was instantly killed. Seeing the fate of the Southfield, the Miami, Whitehead and Ceres made off down the river. The Bombshell had been previously sunk by a shot from a Confederate battery. The Albemarle having sunk the Southfield and driven off the other vessels, now turned her guns upon the forts, and the town surrendered the same day. Thus did the navy assist the army in the capture of Plymouth. Without the aid of the Albemarle it could not have been effected.

The Albemarle now went to the wharf at Plymouth to be completed. On May 5th, accompanied by the steamer Cotton Plant and the little gunboat Bombshell, which had been raised by the Confederates and commissioned under Lieut. W. E. Hudgins, she steamed down the Roanoke river into Albemarle sound. According to Capt. J. N. Maffitt, C. S. N., in his "Reminiscences," Captain Cooke was ordered to convoy the Cotton Plant to Alligator river. After proceeding some 15 miles



down the sound she encountered the Federal fleet, consisting of the double-enders Mattabesett, Sassacus, Wyalusing and Miami, and the gunboats Ceres, Whitehead and Commodore Hull, all under the command of Commodore M. Smith, U. S. N. These vessels were heavily armed, and the Miami carried a torpedo and a seine, the latter to foul the Albemarle's propeller. The Cotton Plant was sent back to Plymouth, and the Bombshell *should* have been, for of course she had soon to surrender.

About 5 p. m. the engagement commenced. The Albemarle made repeated attempts to ram her huge antagonist, but her slow speed prevented. The enemy poured broadside after broadside into her; but even the 100-pound rifled projectiles and the 9-inch solid shot failed to penetrate her shield. The Sassacus rammed her just abaft the shield, but without effect. In return, she received from the Albemarle a 100-pound Brooke rifle-shot, which passed through one of her boilers, scalding many of her crew, and sending her out of action, disabled. The Miami made no use of her torpedo and the seine accomplished nothing. The Albemarle kept up a constant fire, though one of her guns was badly cracked. Finding it impossible to capture the Albemarle, the Federal fleet discontinued the action at 7:30 p. m., and the unconquerable little ram made her way slowly back to Plymouth. The total loss in the Federal vessels was 29. We have no returns of the Albemarle's loss.

As the Confederate navy department was building an ironclad ram on the Neuse river, the Albemarle now awaited her co-operation. On the night of October 27, 1864, she was sunk while lying at the wharf at Plymouth, by a torpedo boat under the command of the heroic Lieut. W. B. Cushing, U. S. N., one of the most brilliant exploits in naval annals. At the time, the Albemarle was commanded by Lieut. A. F. Warley; Commander Cooke, who had been promoted to captain, having



retired from ill health. After the destruction of the Albemarle the town of Plymouth fell again into the enemy's hands.

On the night of May 6, 1864, the ironclad Raleigh, Capt. J. Pembroke Jones, bearing the flag of Commodore Lynch, C. S. N., steamed out of New inlet, Cape Fear river, N. C., to attack the United States vessels blockading the port of Wilmington, N. C. After exchanging a few shots, the Raleigh, at daylight, returned up the river. As she attempted to cross the bar, she stuck, and the weight of her armor "broke her back." The Raleigh was the worst constructed of all the Confederate gunboats. What she went out for has never been ascertained. She accomplished nothing. No blame was, or could have been, attached to her gallant captain, as a court of inquiry afterward decided.





## CHAPTER XII.

### DEFENSE OF MOBILE BAY—THE RAM TENNESSEE— HER GALLANT BATTLE WITH FARRAGUT'S FLEET —FIRST ATTACK ON FORT FISHER.

IN August, 1864, the Confederate vessels off Mobile point at the entrance to Mobile bay were the iron-clad Tennessee and the gunboats Morgan, Gaines and Selma. The Tennessee was one of the most powerful of the Confederate ironclads. Built on the general plan of the Merrimac, her shield was armored with six inches of iron, both sides and ends inclined at an angle of forty-five degrees. She was begun at Selma on the Alabama river, and finished at Mobile. She drew fourteen feet, was particularly strong at her "knuckle," and carried six guns, one 7-inch Brooke rifle, bow and stern, and four 6-inch Brooke rifles in broadside. Her engines were weak, and her speed only six knots, but her greatest defect was in her steering gear, which was unprotected. The Morgan and Gaines were wooden gunboats—the first carrying two 7-inch rifles and four 32-pounders, the latter one 8-inch rifle and five 32-pounders. The Selma, a river steamer "converted," had three 8-inch shell guns and one rifled 32-pounder.

The officers of the Tennessee were Commander James D. Johnston, Lieuts. William L. Bradford, A. D. Wharton, E. G. McDermott, Fleet Surg. D. B. Conrad, Masters J. R. Maloy and H. W. Perrin, Asst. Surg. R. C. Bowles, Engineers George D. Lining, J. C. O'Connell, John Hayes, Oscar Benson and William B. Patterson, Paymaster's Clerk J. H. Cohen, Master's Mates Forrest, Beebe and Carter, Boatswain McCredie, Gunner H. S. Smith. The crew numbered 110 men.



The officers of the Morgan were Commander George W. Harrison, with Lieut. Thomas L. Harrison as executive; of the Gaines, Lieut. Com. J. W. Bennett, Lieutenant Payne, Assistant Surgeon Iglehart, Assistant Engineer Dubois, Gunner Offut, and Paymaster's Clerk Wilson; of the Selma, Lieut. Com. P. U. Murphy, Lieut. J. H. Comstock, Assistant Surgeon Booth and Midshipman Robinson. The squadron was commanded by Admiral Franklin Buchanan, who had been promoted for his memorable victory at Hampton Roads.

The entrance to Mobile bay was protected by the powerful Fort Morgan at Mobile Point on one side, and Fort Gaines on Dauphine island on the other. There were also a large number of torpedoes planted in the bay, and a line of piles. But the defense of Mobile rested principally on Fort Morgan.

The United States fleet destined to make the attack was under the command of the celebrated Admiral David Farragut, and consisted of the Hartford, Brooklyn, Richmond, Lackawanna, Monongahela, Ossipee and Oneida, all heavily armed steam sloops; the gunboats Metacomet, Octarara, Port Royal, Seminole, Kennebec, Itasca and Galena, averaging eight guns each; with the monitors Tecumseh, Manhattan, Winnebago and Chickasaw, the two former armed with two 15-inch guns each, the last two with four 11-inch guns each. Altogether the fleet carried 160 heavy guns.

At 5:30 on the morning of August 4, 1864, Farragut made signal to his fleet to get under way. His plan of attack was in two columns, the monitors forming the right column, and the corvettes the left, each corvette having on her port side a gunboat to assist her in case of necessity—a capital arrangement. The Tecumseh led the line of monitors, and the Brooklyn the line of corvettes. The flagship Hartford was the second in the line.

At 7 minutes past 7 a. m., Fort Morgan opened fire, and the Tecumseh fired two shots at the fort, while Buchan-



an's vessels were at this time lying under the fort. At 7:45 a. m. the *Tecumseh* struck a torpedo and almost immediately sank. Of her crew of 141 souls, but 21 were saved. Notwithstanding this misfortune the other monitors pushed boldly on, and in the port column the flagship *Hartford*, from the *Brooklyn's* stopping, became the leading ship. The Confederate gunboats *Morgan*, *Gaines* and *Selma*, slowly retiring before her advance, opened on her a very effective fire with their stern chasers. Capt. A. T. Mahan, U. S. N., says:

As the *Hartford* advanced over the line of torpedoes the three smaller gunboats of the enemy took their position on her starboard bow and ahead, whence they kept up a raking and most galling fire. . . . As the flagship advanced they retreated, keeping their distance and range about the same, from 1,000 to 700 yards, and fighting mainly the stern guns. At no period of the action did she suffer as now, and the quarters of her forward division became a slaughter-pen.

The *Gaines* soon received a shot which reduced her to a sinking condition, and her captain ran her on shore near Fort Morgan, he and his crew going into the fort. Their services not being required there, Lieutenant Bennett, with his men, went up that night to Mobile in his boats. As soon as the *Hartford* passed Fort Morgan, Farragut sent Lieutenant Commanding Jouett in the *Metacomet* after the little *Selma*. Lieutenant Commanding Murphy, having had many of his crew killed or wounded, was compelled to surrender to Jouett's superior force. Several other gunboats now approaching, Commander Harrison was compelled to take the *Morgan* under the guns of Fort Morgan. The same night he ran the gauntlet of the United States fleet and reached Mobile. In the meanwhile the *Tennessee* was not inactive. Buchanan first made for the *Hartford*; but changing his mind, probably on account of the *Tennessee's* want of speed, he attacked the *Brooklyn*, and failing in ramming her, he passed down the line to the *Richmond*, Lacka-



wanna, Monongahela and Ossipee in succession, delivering his broadsides and receiving a heavy fire from each of the enemy's vessels. The Monongahela at this time rammed the Tennessee with slight effect. The Tennessee then passed under the stern of the Oneida, the last ship in the line, and delivered a raking fire. At this moment, 8:20 a. m., the ironclads which, by order, had delayed before the fort, opened fire on the Tennessee.

All of Farragut's vessels having passed the fort, the flagship and many others anchored five miles above Fort Morgan, and the men went to breakfast. Farragut's impression was that the Tennessee had gone under the guns of Fort Morgan, and that the fight was over for the time. But it was far otherwise. The indomitable Buchanan determined to attack the entire Federal fleet single-handed, and at 8:15 a. m. the fight was renewed. The Tennessee was beset, and for more than one hour she held out against their combined efforts. The Monongahela rammed her on the starboard side, and the Lackawanna on the port quarter. The Hartford attempted to do likewise, but partially failed, and all the ramming was without effect. In the meanwhile the other vessels were pouring their broadsides into her, and, the monitors coming into play, one of them, the Manhattan, fired a 15-inch shot, which broke through the port side of her shield. The Chickasaw took up a position at short range astern of her and held it with pertinacity. She fired no less than fifty-two 11-inch solid shot into her stern, cut away her steering gear, and seriously wounded Admiral Buchanan. Lieutenant Commanding Johnston, succeeding to the command, bravely defended the ship. In the mêlée the Lackawanna ran into the Hartford.

At 10 a. m. the Tennessee, surrounded by her enemies, with her steering gear gone, three port shutters jammed, her smokestack shot away, and steam run down so that she had barely steerage-way, surrendered. The loss in the Federal fleet in the whole engagement was 52 killed





and 170 wounded, exclusive of the 120 drowned in the *Tecumseh*. The Confederate total loss was 12 killed and 19 wounded. Among the killed was Lieut. J. H. Comstock, executive officer of the *Selma*; and among the wounded were Admiral Buchanan and Lieutenant Commanding Murphy. The Federals lost more men by the fire of the Confederate vessels than by that of Fort Morgan.

In this engagement the *Tennessee*, though exposed to the fire of 160 heavy guns, rifled and smooth-bore, at close range for more than two hours, lost but 2 men killed and 8 wounded. Nothing could have more forcibly demonstrated her strength. One shot from the *Manhattan* nearly went through her shield; but all the pounding of the *Chickasaw* and others, and the ramming of the *Monongahela* and *Lackawanna*, did not seriously injure her. Her serious defects lay in her slow speed, unprotected steering gear, want of draft when the smoke-stack was shot away, and the jamming of the port shutters when struck by shot. But, like the *Merrimac*, the *Louisiana*, the *Arkansas*, and the *Albemarle*, she proved herself a wonderfully strong vessel, and reflected great credit upon her builders. Her offensive power was shown by the list of killed and wounded in the Federal fleet, though, as in the battle of Hampton Roads, the Confederate gunboats contributed largely to this.

On the 23d of August, Fort Morgan, after an obstinate defense under Gen. R. L. Page, an old navy officer, surrendered; and the way to Mobile was open to the Federal fleet.

In the winter of 1864-65, Fort Fisher, which commanded the entrance to Cape Fear river, N. C., was subjected to a heavy, unsuccessful attack by the United States fleet of 50 vessels. At this first bombardment of Fort Fisher, December 24 and 25, 1864, the navy rendered good service. Major-General Whiting in his report presented his . . . acknowledgments to Flag-Officer Robert Pink-



ney, C. S. N., who was present during the action, for the welcome and efficient aid sent to Colonel Lamb, the detachment under Lieutenant Roby, which manned the two Brooke guns, and the company of marines under Capt. Van Benthuyzen, which reinforced the garrison. Lieutenant Chapman, C. S. N., commanding Battery Buchanan, by his skillful gunnery saved us on our right from a movement of the enemy which, unless checked, might have resulted in a successful passage. The navy detachment at the guns, under very trying circumstances, did good work. No commendations of mine can be too much for the coolness, discipline and skill displayed by officers and men. Their names have not all been furnished to me, but Lieutenants Roby, Dornin, Armstrong and Berrien attracted special attention throughout. To Passed Midshipman [Clarence] Cary I wish to give personal thanks. Though wounded, he reported after the bursting of his gun, to repel the threatened assault, and actively assisted Colonel Tansil [an old marine officer] on the land front.

At the two guns commanded by Lieutenant Roby, of the 29 men manning them, 19 were killed or wounded. Lieutenant Dornin and Past Midshipman Cary were wounded.



## CHAPTER XIII.

### OPERATIONS ON THE JAMES RIVER, 1864-65—ATTEMPTED EXPEDITION AGAINST CITY POINT—THE NAVAL BRIGADE—THE RAM WEBB.

DURING the summer of 1864 the Confederate vessels on the James river were the ironclads Virginia, Richmond and Fredericksburg, and the gunboats Nansemond, Hampton, Drewry, Roanoke, Beaufort and Raleigh. The ironclads were similar to the Merrimac, but their ends were not submerged. The Virginia had six inches of iron on her sides and eight inches on her ends, and mounted two 8-inch and two 7-inch Brooke rifles. She was probably the strongest of all the Confederate ironclads. The Richmond was a similar vessel in construction, but not so heavily armored. The Fredericksburg was the weakest of the three. Each mounted four guns—rifles. The gunboats carried one rifled 32-pounder each. The squadron was commanded by Flag-Officer French Forrest.

In May the squadron was reorganized: Flag-Officer Mitchell relieved Commodore Forrest; Capt. R. B. Pegram was placed in command of the Virginia; Lieut. Com. William H. Parker, of the Richmond, and Commander T. R. Rootes, of the Fredericksburg. The obstructions in the river at Drewry's bluff were removed, and active operations were in contemplation. The squadron went down below the obstructions to Chapin's bluff; but on the 15th of June the Confederates were surprised to find that the Federal authorities had obstructed the river at Trent's reach, some six miles below.

Batteries were constructed at several points on the river, and manned by the Confederate sailors. Upon the



evacuation of Savannah, Charleston and Wilmington, the navy officers at those points, after destroying their vessels repaired, with their men to Richmond, from which point they were sent to the shore batteries, and brigaded under the command of Flag-Officer John R. Tucker, U. S. N. The men were formed into companies and drilled as infantry. Among the officers of the naval brigade were Capt. T. T. Hunter, Lieuts. W. G. Dozier, C. Stanton, W. H. Ward, M. M. Benton, F. M. Roby, D. Trigg, W. R. Mayo, W. L. Bradford, Washington Gwathmey, H. H. Marmaduke and J. M. Gardner, Lieut. of Marines A. S. Berry and many midshipmen.

The vessels on the river, as well as the batteries, were frequently engaged with the batteries of the Federal army, now gradually approaching Richmond. The United States vessels, under Admiral S. P. Lee, made no effort to pass their own obstructions; which indeed were not removed until after the Confederate vessels had been blown up by their commanders in consequence of the evacuation of Richmond.

On January 23, 1865, a naval attack on the Federal vessels in the James river was projected, which, had it proved successful, would have seriously embarrassed General Grant and his army. The river was very high on account of a freshet, and there was but one Federal ironclad, the monitor Onondaga, in the river, the others having been sent to assist in the attack upon Fort Fisher. The indefatigable Lieut. C. W. Read had examined the enemy's obstructions in Trent's reach, and found there was a passage for the ships. It was determined to send the vessels down, destroy the Onondaga with torpedoes, burn all the buildings and stores at City Point, the base of General Grant's supplies, and obstruct the river at Harrison's bar to prevent the navy from coming to his assistance.

The vessels under Commodore Mitchell were the ironclads Virginia, Lieutenant Commanding Dunnington;





Richmond, Lieutenant Commanding Kell, and Fredericksburg, Lieut. Com. Frank E. Shepperd; the gunboat Drewry, the torpedo boat Torpedo, and three torpedo launches under Lieutenant Read. On the night of the 23d the vessels started. The Fredericksburg went through the obstructions, but the Virginia and Richmond grounded, and could not be got off. The Fredericksburg was recalled, and so the affair failed.

The next month a torpedo expedition of boats, under Lieutenant Read, made another attempt upon the Federal vessels, but failed, owing to the treachery of one of the party.

Rear-Admiral Raphael Semmes relieved Commodore Mitchell of the command of the James river squadron February 18, 1865. The Virginia remained under the command of Lieutenant Dunnington; the Richmond was placed under the command of Lieut. Oscar Johnson; the Fredericksburg, of Commander Glassell; the Hampton, of Lieutenant Wilson; the Nansemond, of Lieut. Walter Butt; the Roanoke, of Lieutenant Pollock; the Beaufort, of Lieutenant Wiatt, and the Torpedo, of Lieutenant Roberts.

When Richmond was evacuated, on the night of April 2, 1865, Admiral Semmes blew up his vessels, marched to Manchester (opposite Richmond), and taking possession of a train, the last one out of the city, proceeded to Danville, Va., where he joined President Davis. After serving ten days in the trenches there, the command, included in General Johnston's surrender, was disbanded.

The naval brigade, under Commodore Tucker, abandoned the batteries on the same night, and joined the division of Gen. Custis Lee, forming the rear guard of Gen. Robert E. Lee's army. On the 6th this division was surrounded, and, after fighting in the battle of Sailor's Creek, it surrendered. In this battle the sailors of Tucker, and the marines under Major Simms, behaved with distinguished valor, and were the last of the division



to surrender. Upon laying down their arms, the Federal soldiers "cheered them long and vigorously."

The last exploit of the Confederate navy was the attempt of Lieut. C. W. Read to run the gauntlet at New Orleans and proceed to sea, in the ram Webb. Leaving Shreveport, La., April 16, 1865, Read steamed down the Mississippi river, regulating his speed so as to pass the forts at the mouth of the river at night. The Webb dashed through the Federal fleet at New Orleans on the afternoon of the 24th, receiving a few shots which did her no damage, and steamed for the mouth of the river at the rate of twenty knots per hour. Several of the enemy's gunboats were now in pursuit. Some twenty miles below the city the heavy sloop-of-war Richmond was encountered, and not being able to pass her broadside, Read ran the Webb on shore and burned her. He then surrendered himself and crew to the officers in command of the United States gunboats Hollyhock and Florida. This brilliant exploit of Lieutenant Read was a fitting climax to his previous career.



## CHAPTER XIV.

### THE CONFEDERATE NAVAL ACADEMY—THE CORPS OF INSTRUCTORS—SPLENDID SERVICE OF THE MIDSHIPMEN—CHARACTER OF THE YOUNG OFFICERS.

IN the summer of 1863 the steamer Patrick Henry, at Richmond, was fitted up as a schoolship, and a naval academy was organized. The officers were: Capt. William H. Parker, superintendent; Lieut. B. P. Loyall, commandant of midshipmen; Lieut. W. B. Hall, professor of astronomy and navigation; Lieut. T. W. Davies, assistant; Lieut. C. I. Graves, instructor of seamanship; Lieut. J. W. Billups, assistant; Lieut. W. V. Comstock, instructor in gunnery; Lieut. G. M. Peek, professor of mathematics; Lieut. George W. Armistead, professor of physics; Lieut. Lewis Huck, professor of English; Lieut. George A. Peple, professor of French and German; Master Sauxey, professor of infantry tactics and sword exercise.

The staff remained about the same to the conclusion of the war. Capt. James H. Rochelle relieved Captain Loyall in the fall, and Lieut. John P. McGuire reported for duty as assistant professor of mathematics.

Until April 2, 1865, the school continued in operation, the senior class of midshipmen graduating as past midshipmen, and the new appointees being sent to the schoolship. The exercises were occasionally interrupted by the detachment of the senior class for pressing service, notably in the capture of the United States steamer Underwriter, where Midshipman Saunders was killed; but upon the whole, satisfactory progress was made. During the summer of 1864 constant drafts were made upon the school, and the midshipmen served on board



the tronclads in the river, and in the trenches at Drew's Bluff. In the fall of that year they were again assembled at the school, and exercises went on pretty regularly during the winter.

When Richmond was evacuated, April 2, 1865, the corps of midshipmen, numbering at the time some 60, armed with rifles and well-drilled as infantry, was selected by the authorities to take charge of the Confederate treasure. Suffice it to say, the duty was faithfully performed. After traversing the State of South Carolina and reaching Augusta, Ga., the corps retraced its steps to Abbeville, S. C., and on the 2d of May, 1865, delivered the treasure intact to President Davis and his Cabinet at that place. It was the last act of the Confederate States navy, and was marked by unparalleled devotion to duty. It is recorded in another work by Capt. William H. Parker, who commanded the corps: "Here I must pay a tribute to the midshipmen who stood by me for so many anxious days. Their training and discipline showed itself conspicuously during that time. The best sentinels in the world; cool and decided in their replies; prompt in action, and brave in danger—their conduct always merited my approbation and excited my admiration. During the march across South Carolina, footsore and ragged, as they had become by that time, no murmur escaped them, and they never faltered. On the 2d of May they were disbanded at Abbeville, S. C., far from their homes. They were staunch to the last, and verified the adage that 'blood will tell.' Their officers [Captain Rochelle, Lieutenants Peek, Armistead, McGuire, Graves, Armstrong, Huck and Sauxey] I cannot say too much for. From the time we left Richmond until we disbanded, they set the example to the corps to obey orders, with the watchword, 'Guard the treasure.' I am sure that Mr. Davis, and Mr. Mallory, if he were alive, would testify to the fact that when they saw the corps in Abbeville, wayworn and weary after its long march, it





presented the same undaunted front as when it left Richmond; and that it handed over the treasure which had been confided to it thirty days before, intact; and that, in my opinion, is what no other organization at that time could have done."

The junior officers of the Confederate navy were an exceptionally fine body of young men. The writer having been for two years the superintendent of the Confederate naval academy, and previously an instructor at the United States naval academy at Annapolis, is capable of forming an opinion. The midshipmen of the Confederate States navy—representing the best blood of the South—showed extraordinary aptitude for the naval service, and on every occasion distinguished themselves in action. They were bold, daring and enterprising to a degree. Many names could be cited; but it is not necessary. Among the many midshipmen who were on board the schoolship *Patrick Henry* in the two years the school was in operation, the writer can hardly recall one who had not the making of a good naval officer.

It would have been well for the Confederate navy if the young lieutenants, passed midshipmen, and midshipmen could have been elevated to more important commands. It is no derogation to the officers of the "old navy" to assert this. Had the South been possessed of a navy, so that the war could have been carried on on the high sea against men-of-war, it would have been different. Here professional education would have come into play. This the young officers had not. But placed, as they necessarily were, in command of river and canal boats, the old officers recalling the well-constructed ships they had served in, and the splendid body of trained seamen they had commanded, were cramped in their movements. This was logical. The young officers had none of this feeling. They knew of nothing better, and were ready to risk everything.



## CHAPTER XV.

### THE CRUISERS—THEIR STATUS IN WAR.

THE cruisers of the Confederate navy were the Sumter, the Alabama, the Florida, the Shenandoah, the Nashville, the Georgia, the Tallahassee, the Chickamauga, the Clarence, the Tacony, the Stonewall and the Olustee. These vessels were regular men-of-war and must not be confounded with privateers. Professoroley says:

It is common to speak of the Alabama and the other Confederate cruisers as privateers. It is hard to find a suitable designation for them, but privateers they certainly were not. The essence of a privateer lies in its private ownership. Its officers are persons in private employment; and the authority under which it acts is a letter-of-marque. To call the cruisers privateers is merely to make use of invective. Most of them answered all the legal requirements of ships-of-war. They were owned by the government, and they were commanded by naval officers acting under a genuine commission. . . .

A great deal of uncalled-for abuse has been heaped upon the South for the work of the Confederate cruisers, and their mode of warfare has been repeatedly denounced as barbarous and piratical in official and unofficial publications. But neither the privateers, like the Petrel and the Savannah, nor the commissioned cruisers, like the Alabama and the Florida, were guilty of any practices which, as against their enemies, were contrary to the rules of war.

The first man-of-war to get to sea under the Confederate flag was the Sumter. She was a screw steamer of 500 tons, and had formerly been the Spanish steamer Marquis de Habana. She was strengthened, a berth deck was put in, the spar deck cabins removed, and she was armed with an 8-inch shell gun, pivoted amidships, and



four light 32-pounders in broadside. On April 18, 1861, Commander Raphael Semmes was ordered to the command of her, with the following officers: Lieuts. John M. Kell, Robert T. Chapman, John M. Stribling, and William E. Evans; Paymaster Henry Myers; Surg. Francis L. Galt; Midshipmen William A. Hicks, Richard F. Armstrong, Albert G. Hudgins, John F. Holden, and Joseph D. Wilson; Lieut. of Marines B. K. Howell; Engineers Miles J. Freeman, William P. Brooks, Matthew O'Brien, and Simeon W. Cummings; Boatswain Benjamin P. McCaskey; Gunner J. O. Cuddy; Sailmaker W. P. Beaufort, Carpenter William Robinson, and Captain's Clerk W. Breedlove Smith.

On the 30th of June the Sumter sailed from the mouth of the Mississippi, and although chased by the United States steamer Brooklyn, got fairly to sea. Captain Semmes cruised along the south side of the island of Cuba, taking eight prizes, and thence went to Cienfuegos. From there he cruised down the Spanish main, and on the 13th of November anchored at St. Pierre, Martinique. Here he was blockaded by the United States ship Iroquois for nine days, but on the night of the 23d he adroitly made his escape, and crossed the Atlantic to Cadiz, where he arrived January 4, 1862, taking several prizes on the way. Not being permitted to coal, he proceeded to Gibraltar, which port he reached on the 19th of January. Here he was blockaded by the United States vessels Tuscarora, Kearsarge and Chippewa, and it was decided to lay the ship up. The Sumter captured 17 vessels, of which 2 were ransomed, 7 were released in Cuban ports, 2 were recaptured, and 6 were burned.

The second cruiser built in England for the Confederates was the "290" or Alabama. The 290 was sent by Capt. James D. Bulloch, the accomplished agent of the Confederate government in England, to the Western islands. The bark Agrippina took her armament and stores there, and on August 24, 1862, she was commissioned by



Capt. Raphael Semmes, C. S. N., with the following officers: Lieuts. John M. Kell, Richard F. Armstrong, Joseph D. Wilson, Arthur Sinclair, and John Low; Surg. Francis L. Galt; Asst. Surg. David H. Llewellyn; Paymaster Clarence R. Yonge; Lieut. of Marines B. K. Howell; Engineers M. J. Freeman, William P. Brooks, S. W. Cummings, Matthew O'Brien, and John W. Pundt; Midshipmen William H. Sinclair, Irvine S. Bulloch, Eugene Maffitt, and Edwin M. Anderson; Master's Mates George T. Fulham and James Evans; Boatswain B. P. McCaskey; Gunner J. O. Cuddy; Carpenter William Robinson; Sailmaker Henry Alcott, and Captain's Clerk William B. Smith.

Captain Semmes first cruised off the Western islands and the banks of Newfoundland, taking many prizes; next off the coast of the United States, and on November 18th he anchored at Port of France, Martinique. From Martinique he went to the Gulf of Mexico, capturing the Pacific Mail company's steamer Ariel on the way. Arriving off Galveston he decoyed the United States steamer Hatteras from the fleet, engaged and sunk her in fifteen minutes, and proceeded to Port Royal, Jamaica, with his prisoners. Sailing from Port Royal, Semmes cruised down the Brazilian coast, and on July 28, 1863, anchored at Saldanha bay. For the remainder of the year he cruised in the straits of Sunda, the China sea, and the Bay of Bengal. From the time of leaving Port Royal to April 27, 1864, the Alabama took some thirty prizes.

On the 11th of June, 1864, she anchored at Cherbourg, France, and on the 19th she went out and engaged the United States steamer Kearsarge, a vessel slightly her superior. After an engagement of about one hour, the Alabama was reduced to a sinking condition. Her loss in killed, wounded and drowned was 40; the loss of the Kearsarge was but 1 killed and 2 wounded. The survivors of the Alabama were saved by her own boats and those of the Kearsarge and the English yacht Deerhound.





Thus ended the career of this historic vessel. The name of Semmes has become immortal. In two short years he captured some seventy vessels, and swept the seas of American commerce. Space precludes further mention of the Alabama. The reader will find in Captain Semmes' "Service Afloat" a detailed and very valuable account of his proceedings.

The Florida was the first of the commerce destroyers of English origin. She was built at Liverpool in the fall of 1861. On the 22d of March, 1862, she cleared from Liverpool under the name of the Oreto. She arrived at Nassau April 28th, and was there delivered to Capt. John N. Maffitt, C. S. N., who commissioned her under the name of the Florida and fitted her out. Maffitt first went to Cuba. Here the yellow fever broke out, and finding himself without the necessary officers, men, and ordnance stores, he determined to go to Mobile. He ran by the blockading vessels under English colors, and anchored under the guns of Fort Morgan, September 4, 1862.

The Florida was here refitted, and on the night of January 15, 1863, she successfully ran the blockade again, and proceeded on a cruise. The following is a list of her officers: Capt. John N. Maffitt; Lieuts. S. W. Averett, J. L. Hoole, C. W. Read, and S. G. Stone; Midshipmen R. S. Floyd, G. D. Bryan, J. H. Dyke, G. T. Sinclair, W. B. Sinclair, and Robert Scott; Engineers John Spidell, Charles W. Quinn, Thomas A. Jackson, and E. H. Brown; Surg. Frederick Garretson, and Paymaster Lynch. Maffitt first cruised in the West Indies and then made his way to the coast of Brazil, commissioning one of his prizes, the brig Clarence, Lieut. C. W. Read, by the way. On the 16th of July, Maffitt anchored at Bermuda, having made 17 prizes, 14 of which he burned. From Bermuda he went to Brest; and there, his health being broken, relinquished the command to Lieut. Charles M. Morris, C. S. N. Morris got to sea in January, 1864, and went first to the West Indies and the coast of the United



States, capturing many prizes. In the summer of that year he crossed the ocean to Teneriffe, and then to Bahia, Brazil, where he anchored October 4th. He found here the U. S. S. Wachusett; but confiding in the neutrality of the port, he permitted his officers and men liberty to visit the shore. On the night of October 6th the Florida was treacherously captured by the Wachusett; and so ended her cruise. She had made 37 prizes.

The Shenandoah was the last of the Confederate cruisers. She was bought by Captain Bulloch and sent to the Desertas, an uninhabited island near Madeira. The officers and stores were sent to the same place in the steamer Laurel, and on October 20, 1864, the Shenandoah was commissioned by Capt. James Iredell Waddell, with the following officers: Lieuts. William C. Whittle, John Grimball, S. Smith Lee, Francis T. Chew, and Dabney M. Scales; Acting Master I. S. Bulloch; Engineers Matthew O'Brien, W. H. Codd, John Hutchinson, and Ernest Mugguffeney; Surg. C. E. Lining; Paymaster Breedlove Smith; Passed Midshipmen O. A. Browne and John T. Mason; Asst. Surg. F. J. McNulty; Master's Mates C. E. Hunt, J. T. Minor, and Lodge Colton; Boatswain George Harwood; Carpenter J. O'Shea; Gunner J. L. Guy, and Sailmaker Henry Alcott.

Waddell first went to Australia, and there, in pursuance of the plan projected by Com. John Mercer Brooke, C. S. N., proceeded to destroy the United States whaling fleet in the North Pacific. On the 2d of August, 1865, Waddell learned of the collapse of the Confederacy, and returned to England, where he delivered the ship to the British naval authorities. The Shenandoah took 36 prizes.

The Nashville was commissioned as a man-of-war in the fall of 1861 with Robert B. Pegram, C. S. N., as captain; Lieuts. Charles M. Fauntleroy, John W. Bennett, and William C. Whittle; Master John H. Ingraham; Surg. John L. Auchrim; Paymaster Richard Taylor;



Engineer James Hood, and Midshipmen Dalton, Sinclair, Cary, Pegram, Hamilton, Thomas, and McClintoc. She made a short voyage to England and back, in the course of which she burned the ship *Harvey Birch* and the schooner *Robert Gilfillan*. She was afterward engaged as a blockade runner, and was eventually destroyed by the United States monitor *Montauk*.

The *Georgia* was bought at Dumbarton, Scotland, for the Confederate government. She was commissioned off Ushant in April, 1863, by Com. William L. Maury, with the following list of officers: Lieuts. R. T. Chapman, Evans, Smith, and J. H. Ingraham; Passed Midshipman Walker; Midshipman Morgan; Paymaster Curtis; Surgeon Wheeden, and Chief Engineer Pearson. She cruised in the Atlantic, ran over to the coast of Brazil, and thence to the Cape of Good Hope. On the 28th of October she anchored at Cherbourg, having taken 9 prizes. Here Captain Maury turned over the command to Lieutenant Evans, but she made no other cruise.

The *Tallahassee* was the blockade runner *Atlanta*. She was converted into a man-of-war, and on August 6, 1864, sailed from Wilmington, N. C., for a cruise off the coast. Her officers were: Capt. John Taylor Wood; Lieuts. W. H. Ward, M. M. Benton, and J. M. Gardner; Master Alex Curtis; Engineers J. W. Tynan, C. H. Leroy, E. G. Hall, J. F. Green, J. J. Lyell, H. H. Roberts, and R. M. Ross; Paymaster C. L. Jones; Asst. Surg. W. L. Sheppardson; Boatswain Cassidy; Gunner Stewart; Master's Mate C. Russell, and Lieut. of Marines Crenshaw. She cruised along the northern coast as far as Maine. On the 18th of August, Wood anchored at Halifax, but could only obtain coal enough to take the vessel back to Wilmington. On the 25th she arrived at that port, having in her short cruise burned 16 vessels, scuttled 10, bonded 5, and released 2—a remarkable record.

The *Chickamauga* was the small blockade runner *Edith*. She sailed for a cruise on the coast in the fall of 1864 un-



der Capt. John Wilkinson, C. S. N. She made a short cruise, during which she captured 7 vessels.

The brig *Clarence* was captured by the *Florida* and commissioned under Lieut. C. W. Read, C. S. N., on May 6, 1863. Read proceeded to the coast of the United States, and made his first prize off Cape Hatteras, the bark *Whistling Wind*. He next took and burned the *Kate Stewart*, *Mary Alvina* and *Mary Schindler*, and bonded the *Alfred H. Partridge*. He then took the *Tacony* and transferred his flag to her, burning the *Clarence*. In the *Tacony* he sailed along the coast of New England, capturing and burning 15 vessels. On June 25, 1863, he transferred to the prize schooner *Archer*, burning the *Tacony*. On the 27th he entered the harbor of Portland, Me., and cut out the revenue cutter *Caleb Cushing*. He got out with his prize, but the enemy sent out an overwhelming force and recaptured her, making prisoners of Read and his companions, who were sent to Fort Warren. Read, whose name occurs so frequently in these pages, was soon after exchanged. He was unquestionably one of the greatest naval officers the country has ever produced.

The *Olustee* was the steamer *Chickamauga*. She sailed from Wilmington, October 29, 1864, under the command of Lieut. William H. Ward, C. S. N. Ward made a short cruise on the coast, capturing some seven prizes, and returned to Wilmington about November 7th.

The *Stonewall* was the ironclad ram *Sphynx*. She was built in France, sold to Denmark, and transferred by that country to Capt. Thomas Jefferson Page, C. S. N. Page took her to the appointed rendezvous off Quiberon, where she was met by the steamer *City of Richmond* with stores. She was commissioned January 24, 1865, with the following list of officers: Capt. T. J. Page; Lieuts. Robert R. Carter, George S. Shryock, George A. Borchert, E. G. Read, and Samuel Barron, Jr.; Surg. B. W. Green; Asst. Surg. J. W. Herty; Paymaster





R. W. Curtis; Engineers W. P. Brooks, W. H. Jackson, and J. C. Klose; Master W. W. Wilkinson; Boatswain J. M. Dukehart; Gunner J. B. King; Master's Mate W. H. Savage, and Paymaster's Clerk William Boynton. The Stonewall went to Corunna, and thence to Ferrol, Spain, for repairs. She was blockaded by the United States vessels Niagara and Sacramento. On the 24th of March Page steamed out of Ferrol, and defied the two vessels to battle, which they ingloriously declined. Page then crossed the ocean to Nassau and Havana. At the latter port he learned of the end of the war, and delivered his ship to the Spanish authorities.

This closes this short sketch of the Confederate cruisers. As the Confederate government had no regular men-of-war, its naval officers were restricted to commerce destroying, a mode of carrying on hostilities neither chivalrous nor romantic. As Professor Soley says: "Nor is it that which a naval officer of the highest type would perhaps most desire to engage in." But the work was necessary; and that it was well done, the pages of history will testify.



## CHAPTER XVI.

### CONCLUSION—THE CONFEDERATE STATES IRONCLAD FLEET—MEMORABLE ACHIEVEMENTS.

IN this brief narrative it has been possible to give only a general idea of the services of the Confederate navy.

We have seen that when the North made war upon the Confederate States, the latter had actually no navy. Had the same inequality existed on land, the war could not have lasted a week! But incredible as it may appear, the South in the four years' war constructed a fleet of iron-clads equal to any in the world at that time. This fleet comprised:

1. The Merrimac, of 10 guns—two 7-inch Brooke rifles, two 6.4-inch Brooke rifles, six 9-inch Dahlgren smooth-bores.
2. The Louisiana, of 16 guns—Brooke rifles of 7 and 6.4 inch caliber, and 8 and 9-inch Dahlgren smooth-bores.
3. The Manassas, a turtle-back ram—one 68-pounder, smooth-bore.
4. The Arkansas, of 10 guns—two 8-inch columbiads, four 6.4-inch rifles, two 9-inch Dahlgrens, and two 32-pounders, smooth-bore.
5. The Palmetto State, of 4 guns—one 80-pounder rifle, one 60-pounder, and two 8-inch shell guns.
6. The Chicora, of 4 guns—two 32-pounders, rifled, and two 9-inch shell guns.
7. The Richmond, of 4 guns—one 7-inch Brooke rifle, two 6.4-inch Brooke rifles, and one 10-inch smooth-bore.
8. The Virginia, of 4 guns—one 7-inch Brooke rifle, two 6.4-inch Brooke rifles, and one 10-inch smooth-bore.
9. The Fredericksburg, of 4 guns—two 6.4-inch rifles, one 11-inch smooth-bore, and one 8-inch smooth-bore.
10. The Albemarle, of 2 guns—two 7-inch Brooke rifles.
11. The Atlanta, of 4 guns—two 7-inch and two 6.4-inch Brooke rifles.



12. The Tennessee, of 6 guns—two 7-inch and four 6.4-inch Brooke rifles.

13. The Savannah, of 4 guns—probably two Brooke rifles and two smooth-bores.

14. The Columbia, of 8 guns—probably Brooke rifles and smooth-bores.

15. The Charleston, of 6 guns—four Brooke rifles and two 9-inch Dahlgren shell guns.

16. The North Carolina, of 4 guns—probably two Brooke rifles and two smooth-bores.

17. The Raleigh, of 4 guns—probably same as the North Carolina.

18. The Georgia, of 7 guns—smooth-bores and rifles.

19. The Milledgeville—probably same as the Savannah. (Not completed when burned to prevent capture.)

20. The Neuse—similar to the Albemarle, but burned to prevent capture.

21. The Mississippi—burned to prevent capture. Pronounced by United States and Confederate States naval officers the most powerful vessel in the world at that time.

So much for the materiel. As for the personnel, Prof. J. R. Soley testifies: "The personnel of the Confederate navy was distinguished by enterprise, originality and resource, and to it were due some of the most gallant episodes of the war."

The wonderful feats of the Confederate army have so overshadowed the Confederate navy that the present generation may be surprised to read this tribute from the pen of an enemy; but if any reader is inclined to doubt the audacity, the skill, the enterprise, or the ingenuity of the Confederate naval officers, let him recall the following achievements:

1. Buchanan in the Merrimac, ramming the Cumberland; and again in the Tennessee attacking, single-handed, three monitors and a fleet of fourteen heavily-armed men-of-war. 2. The small gunboats at the battle of Hampton Roads. 3. Isaac N. Brown in the ram Arkansas. 4. J. W. Cooke in the little Albemarle. 5. J. Taylor Wood's capture of the Satellite, the Reli-



ance, and the Underwriter. 6. Pelot's capture of the Waterwitch. 7. Glassell's torpedo attack on the New Ironsides. 8. Davidson's torpedo attack on the Minnesota. 9. Semmes' admirable management of the Alabama. 10. Maffitt's dash at Mobile and his after exploits. 11. Read in the Tacony, and his dash in the Webb. 12. Capt. John Wilkinson as a blockade-runner. 13. Brooke's design for the Merrimac, and his rifle-gun. 14. Davidson's torpedo bureau. 15. Catesby Jones' cannon foundry. 16. Jackson's powder-mills. 17. Whittle's running the Nashville from Beaufort to Georgetown, S. C. And let it not be forgotten that the Southern naval officers developed the two great offensive and defensive weapons, the ram and the torpedo.





## APPENDIX.

### REGISTER OF THE COMMISSIONED AND WARRANT OFFICERS OF THE NAVY OF THE CONFEDERATE STATES OF AMERICA, TO JANUARY 1, 1864.

THE NAVY DEPARTMENT, JANUARY 1, 1864.

S. R. Mallory, secretary; E. M. Tidball, chief clerk; Z. P. Moses, clerk; Thomas E. Buchanan, clerk; T. J. Rapier, clerk; C. E. L. Stuart, clerk; T. J. J. Murray, messenger.

Office of orders and detail: John K. Mitchell, chief of bureau; James S. Jones, register, etc.; George Lee Brent, chief clerk.

Office of ordnance and hydrography: J. M. Brooke, chief of bureau; J. P. McCorkle, chief clerk; A. B. Upshur, clerk.

Office of provisions and clothing: John DeBree, chief of bureau; T. C. DeLeon, chief clerk.

Office of medicine and surgery: W. A. W. Spotswood, chief of bureau; C. N. Fennell, chief clerk.

REGISTER OF THE CONFEDERATE NAVY, TO JANUARY 1, 1864.

Admiral Franklin Buchanan.

Captains Rousseau, Forrest, Tattnall, Randolph, Hollins, Ingraham, Barron, Lynch, Sterrett, S. S. Lee, W. C. Whittle, Semmes.

Captains (in provisional navy) W. Hunter, E. Farrand, J. R. Tucker.

Commanders S. S. Lee, W. C. Whittle, Thorburn, Robb, W. W. Hunter, M. Mason, E. Farrand, C. H. McBlair, Fairfax, R. L. Page, Chatard, A. Sinclair, Kennedy, Brent, Mitchell, M. F. Maury, J. R. Tucker, T. J. Page, G. Minor, Pinckney, Rootes, Hartstene, Henderson,



Muse, T. T. Hunter, Cooke, Spotswood, I. N. Brown, W. L. Maury, J. N. Maffitt, Barney, C. Ap. R. Jones, J. T. Wood.

Commanders (for the war) Bulloch, North, Pegram, Brooke, Webb.

Commanders (in provisional navy) G. T. Sinclair, W. T. Glassell.

First Lieutenants Renshaw, Poindexter, Lewis, G. W. Harrison, J. D. Johnston, Gwathmey, P. U. Murphy, Guthrie, Rutledge, Morgan, Winder, J. H. Parker, Kennard, Wilkinson, Morris, Fauntleroy, J. S. Maury, Hays, Simms, Myers, Warley, Bennett, J. H. Carter, McLaughlin, W. H. Parker, J. P. Jones, W. H. Murdaugh, Kell, DeBree, Rochelle, R. D. Minor, Van Zant, McCorkle, Sharp, J. I. Waddell, Fry, McGary, Davidson, R. R. Carter, Hamilton, O. F. Johnston, Eggleston, Chapman, Campbell, Blake, Loyall, Ward, Dunnington, Shepperd, Pelot, Dozier, Bradford, Porcher, Dalton, Evans, Shryock, Porter, Alexander, Graves, Mills, W. C. Whittle, Jr., Kerr, Grimball, Hall, Averett, Claiborne, Borchert, Cenas, Butt, Pollock, Wharton, Dornin, T. L. Harrison, Hoole, Hoge, E. G. Read.

First Lieutenants (provisional navy) Borum, J. V. Johnston.

Second Lieutenants C. W. Read, Stone, Carnes, J. H. Ingraham, W. Van Comstock, Armstrong, A. G. Hudgins, King, J. H. Comstock, Wilson, Spencer, Benton, Chew, A. M. Mason, Moore, Foreman, Littlepage, Foute, Roby, Marmaduke, Gardner, Goodwyn.

Lieutenants (for the war) Barbot, Humphreys, Bowen, Gift, Davies, McCarrick, Corbin, W. F. Carter, Wall, J. L. Johnson, S. S. Lee, Jr., S. Barron, Jr., Benthall, Stockton, Blackwood, Baker, Odenheimer, J. W. Murdaugh, Hanelson, McAdams, Crane, Price, Grant, Yeatman, Oliver, Hasker, Watlington, Stiles, Phillips, Arledge, M. F. Clark, Payne, Ray, W. E. Hudgins, Ramsey, Hill, Means, Henry Roberts, Gayle, Lowe, Arthur



Sinclair, Jr., W. W. Roberts, Lambert, Otey Bradford, Wiatt, Skinner.

Surgeons Cornick, Patton, Spotswood, Minor, McClenahan, J. T. Mason, Sinclair, Jeffery, J. F. Harrison, Greenhow, Phillips, W. D. Harrison, Carrington, Williamson, Lynch, Fahs, Wysham, Conrad, Galt, Page, Washington, Garnett.

Passed Assistant Surgeons Garretson, Sanford, Charlton, Lining, Christian, Freeman, Green, Herty, Lindsay, Iglehart.

Assistant Surgeons Morfit, T. B. Ford, Gibbs, Booth, Emory, Turner, DeBree, M. Ford, Graves, Addison, Edmonds, Herrick, Read, Leyburn, Powell, Bowles, J. C. Harrison, Lipscomb, W. C. Jones, Sheppardson, Parker, Thomas, Melvin, Stoakly, Griggs, Tipton, Weston, Halstead, Cook, J. O. Grant.

Assistant Surgeons (for the war) P. Brown, Land, G. W. Claiborne, Hicks, King, Ewart, Caire, Harris, Dickinson, Rutherford, Foote.

Paymasters DeBree, Ware, Semple, John Johnston, Kelly, Harwood, Ritchie, Myers, Senac, Nixon, Moore, Richard Taylor.

Assistant Paymasters Armour, D. F. Forrest, Micou, Brooks, Banks, McPherson, Seay, O'Neal, Richardson, DeLeon, Tredwell, McKean, Seymour, Reardon, Chase, McDuffie, Ladd, Barksdale, Nicholas, Keim, Deacon, Ridgely, Pearl, L. M. Tucker, C. L. Jones.

Masters (in line of promotion) Claybrook, W. P. Mason, Robinson, Price, Telfair, Trigg, Holcombe, Dalton, Worth, Camm, Scales, J. T. Walker, Gregory, W. W. Read, Bacot, McDermett.

Masters (not in line of promotion) Pearson, Parrish, Pacetty, Evans, Harris, Minor, C. W. Johnson, Whitehead, Perrin, Guthrie, McEvoy, W. D. Porter, J. W. McCarrick, Musgrave, P. W. Smith, Andrews, Myers, Beall, Pearson, Stanton, Nash, Wragg, Peck, Wilkinson, Julian Fairfax, Carlon, Peple, L. S. White, McGuire, Barnum,





Rear-Admiral RAFAEL SEMMES.  
 Commander L. N. BROWN.  
 Captain JOSIAH TATTNALL.  
 Commander JOHN M. BROOKE.

Captain J. W. COORE.  
 Commander JOHN F. WOOD.  
 Captain GEORGE S. HOLLINS.  
 Admiral FRANKLIN BUCHANAN.

Captain JOHN R. TUCKER.  
 Commander J. N. MACCALL.  
 Captain P. N. INGRAHAM.  
 Captain SAMUEL BARRON.





Maxwell, Burley, Milliken, Seth Foster, Ahern, J. Webb, Sage, Beck, Huck, Armistead, Sheiley, G. W. Smith, Curtis, Collins, Hite, A. Robinson.

Passed Midshipmen Beirne, Blanc, Mayo, Colcock, Hamilton, Long, Vaughan, J. M. Pearson, H. S. Cooke, Sparks, Craig.

Midshipmen (third class, seniors) Gibbs, Shaw, Morehead, Joiner, Roger Pinckney, C. Cary, Deas, B. Carter, Sevier, Clayton, Hale, Berrien, T. C. Pinckney, Wright, Scott, Tyson, F. Dornin, P. H. McCarriek, F. M. Thomas, F. S. Hunter, Carroll, D. M. Lee, Ratcliff, C. Meyer, Norris, Goode, L. M. Rootes, Crawford, Harmer, Wherritt, E. M. Jones, Talbott, R. E. Pinckney, Ellett, Raphael Semmes, Jr., Trescott.

Midshipmen (third class, juniors) Dixon, Lomax, J. A. Lee, Cloud, Inglis, H. T. Minor, W. S. Hogue, Howell, John Johnson, Levy, Minnegerode, Doak, Wilkins, Trimble, Northup, Slaughter, Phillips, Warren, Scharf, W. A. Lee, Hunt, P. M. Moore.

Midshipmen (abroad) R. S. Floyd, Moses, W. W. Wilkinson, Brown, J. T. Mason, W. B. Sinclair, J. W. Pegram, Hamilton, Dyke, Newton, Bryan, George T. Sinclair, W. H. Sinclair, Bulloch, E. Maffitt, Anderson, Wilson, J. M. Morgan.

Engineer in chief W. P. Williamson.

Chief Engineers Quinn, Warner, T. A. Jackson, V. Freeman, Manning, H. A. Ramsey, Schroeder, Frick, Tynan, Tombs (provisional navy).

First Assistant Engineers City, W. S. Thompson, Levy, Campbell, Lining, W. J. Freeman, Willy, Clark, M. F. Jordan, Loper, Riddle, Morrill, Tennant, Herring, J. T. Tucker, W. Ahern, J. R. Jordan, Darcy, Youngblood, C. W. Jordan, Wright, Jack, Toombs, Brooks.

Second Assistant Engineers Hall, Bowman, Green, Hanks, J. M. Freeman, Jr., Collier, O'Brien, Fauntleroy, W. F. Jones, King, Foster, Killpatrick, Brockett, J. C. Johnson, Pritchard, O'Connell, Brown, Dent, Langdon.



McCarthy, West, Lyell, Hayes, Cardy, Caldwell, Finn, Dick.

Third Assistant Engineers Doland, Caswell, Patrick, Baily, Harding, Parker, Miller, S. B. Jordon, Langhorne, Tomlinson, Roberts, Gill, Hackley, J. B. Brown, Bowe, DeBlanc, Leavett, Peek, Yonge, Schwartzman, Young, Newberry, Edwards, Drayo, Benson, Phillips, Luddington, William Rogers, Drury, Faithful, McDonald, Patterson, Weaver, Cohen, Reams, R. S. Herring, McGrath, Goodrich, Wainwright, Kerrish, Applegate, J. N. Ramsey, J. B. Weaver, Edwards, Diggers, Kerr.

Boatswains Seymour, Layton, Gauley, A. J. Wilson, Blakie, Cronin, Kavanaugh, James Smith, W. T. Smith, H. J. Wilson, J. J. Ingraham, McCredie, McCalla.

Gunners Owens, Lovett, Cuddy, McCluskey, Offut, Larmour, Haynes, Travers, Fleming, G. M. Thompson, E. R. Johnson, Schisam, E. G. Williams, Hughes, Shelly, Baker, Brittingham, Gormly, Barrom, Ballentyne, Raabe, Mayberry, Waters, H. McDonald, Porter, H. L. Smith.

Carpenters Baine, Rustic, J. F. Weaver, Burroughs.

Sailmakers Bennett, Mahoney, Turner, Beaufort, G. Newton.

Naval Constructors J. L. Porter, Pearce, Graves, Edward Williams.

Acting Master's Mates Ahern, McBlair, Holly, Mayberry, Riley, T. T. Hunter, Jr., Brittingham, Young, W. G. Porter, Boville, Wragg, Waterman, W. W. Skinner, Nutter, Benson, Layton, T. J. Hudgins, W. Smith, Benthall, Albertson, T. E. Gibbs, R. M. C. Kennedy, S. M. Foster, Russell, Hazlehurst, Fogartie, Turner, Bohannon, Atchinson, Brockenton, Rasler, E. W. Skirmer, Burr, Parsons, Paschall, Battle, Turner, Cohoon, Hart, E. P. Winder, Green, Fitzgerald, Golden, Seymour, Sneed, Oliviera, Brown, Selden, Bragdon, E. W. Jordan, Jenkins, C. Hunter, P. M. Baker, W. B. Littlepage, Simpson, Keen, Foster, Spraggins, Haynie, Bronson.



## OFFICERS OF THE CONFEDERATE STATES MARINE CORPS.

Colonel Commandant Lloyd J. Beall; Lieut.-Col. H. B. Tyler; Maj. George H. Terrett; Paymaster, Major Allison; Adjutant, Maj. Israel Greene; Quartermaster, Maj. A. S. Taylor. Captains J. D. Simms, Tattnall, Hays, Holmes, Thoms, Van Benthuyssen, Meiere, Wilson. First Lieutenants Sayre, Howell, Henderson, Raney, Fendall, Gwynn, Thurston, Cameron, MacRae. Second Lieutenants Bradford, Venable, Graves, H. M. Doak, Berry, Neufville, Brent, Murdoch, Roberts, Rapier.





J. WILLIAM JONES. D. D.





THE MORALE OF THE CONFEDERATE ARMY

BY

J. WILLIAM JONES, D. D.



## THE MORALE OF THE CONFEDERATE ARMIES.

ENTHUSIASM OF ALL CLASSES FOR THE SOUTHERN CAUSE—COLLEGE STUDENTS IN THE FRONT—GREAT CAMPAIGNS AND VALOROUS ACHIEVEMENTS—HUMANITY TOWARD THE ENEMY—RELIGION IN THE CAMP—INCIDENTS OF PERSONAL HEROISM—THE VETERAN IN CIVIL LIFE.

IN his testimony before "the committee on the conduct of the war," Major-General Hooker—"Fighting Joe" he was affectionately and appropriately called by his men—uses this remarkable and emphatic language:

Our artillery had always been superior to that of the rebels, as was also our infantry, except in discipline, and that, for reasons not necessary to mention, never did equal Lee's army. With a rank and file vastly inferior to our own, intellectually and physically, that army had, by discipline alone, acquired a character for steadiness and efficiency unsurpassed, in my judgment, in ancient or modern times. We have not been able to rival it.

Now, we may fully accept the latter part of this statement of General Hooker's as to the character of the Confederate army, without conceding that it was due alone to discipline. It was my privilege to be a member of the army of Northern Virginia. As private soldier or as chaplain I followed its flag from Harper's Ferry in '61 to Appomattox in '65, mingling freely with the men in camp, on the march, in the bivouac, on the battlefield, and in the hospital. I knew its most conspicuous leaders and made it my especial business to know the heroes of the rank and file. I marched with them along the weary



road, bivouacked with them in the pelting storm, went with them into the leaden and iron hail of battle, ministered to them in the loathsome hospitals, labored among them in those glorious revivals which made well nigh every camp vocal with God's praises, resulting in the professed conversion of over 15,000 men; rejoiced with them in that long series of brilliant victories which have illustrated brightest pages of American history, and wept with them when Lee was "compelled to yield to overwhelming numbers and resources." Since the war I have carefully studied the official reports on both sides and everything that has been published which throws any light on the history of that army. I am prepared, therefore, not only to fully indorse General Hooker's opinion of the infantry of the army of Northern Virginia, but to go further and say that our artillery, though inferior in guns, ammunition and equipment, was always a match for that to which it was opposed; that the men who rode with Turner Ashby, Wade Hampton and Fitz Lee, or "followed the feather" of "Jeb" Stuart, though greatly inferior in mount and equipment to the Federal cavalry, were masters of the situation on any fair field; and that the army of Northern Virginia as a whole, was, in gallant dash, steady resistance, patient endurance, heroic courage, and all other qualities which go to make up the best soldiers, not only unrivaled, as the gallant general says, by the army of the Potomac, but the equals of any other army that ever marched under any flag, or fought for any cause.

And I give equal honor to the other armies of the Confederacy. The men who defended Fort Sumter and Charleston and Savannah and Mobile and Fort Fisher; who fought under Albert Sidney Johnston, Beauregard, Bragg, Joseph E. Johnston, Hood, Stephen D. Lee, Pemberton, Van Dorn, Price, Dick Taylor, Kirby Smith, Forrest, Joe Wheeler, John Morgan, and others, were the peers of those who followed Lee and Stonewall Jack-



son and deserve equal praise. The world never saw better soldiers than those who composed the Confederate armies. But we must utterly repudiate the reason General Hooker assigns for the efficiency of the Confederate soldiers. So far from its being due to "discipline alone"—so far from its being true that the Confederates were "vastly inferior, intellectually and physically," to the soldiers on the other side, it can be abundantly demonstrated that just the reverse is nearer the truth, and that the world never saw an army composed of more superb material, intellectually, physically and morally, in all that constitutes what we call morale in an army, than the armies of the Confederate States of America.

It was a very popular idea of the North, which found expression in many of the newspapers of the day and has gone into their histories, that the masses of the people of the South were opposed to the secession of their States, but that a few "traitor leaders" entered into a conspiracy which succeeded in dragooning the States into "rebellion," and that after they had thus brought on the war, the "conscript act" forced into the army unwilling soldiers, who were ignorant and debased. But this is not true. On the contrary, the people really forced the leaders to act, and though anxious to avert war and ready to sacrifice all save honor to preserve the peace, yet when the war was forced upon them and they were compelled to defend their homes and firesides, there was never a more general and spontaneous uprising of the masses of a people to resist invasion than that of the people of the South. In illustration of this popular patriotism, reference may be made to the action of Virginia. The State had elected a convention which was overwhelmingly "Union;" i. e., opposed to passing an ordinance of secession as long as there was any hope of obtaining proper guarantees of rights in the Union. Commissioners were sent to Washington, the "peace convention" was called, and the "Old Dominion" on bended knee begged for





peace, fraternity and the preservation of the Union under the Constitution, which her sons had done so much to form. But when all efforts failed, when the administration at Washington violated its plighted faith by attempting to reinforce and provision Fort Sumter, thus forcing the Confederacy to capture it; when Mr. Lincoln called for 75,000 troops to coerce sovereign States, and honest John Letcher, governor of the State, had replied to the call, "You can get no troops from Virginia for any such wicked purpose . . . you have chosen to inaugurate civil war," then the convention promptly passed an ordinance of secession, thus throwing Virginia into the breach and calling on her sons to rally to her defense. The response was prompt, general and enthusiastic. From Alleghany to Chesapeake, from the blue-crested mountains to the ocean shores, from the Potomac to the North Carolina line, the mustering of her young men to battle and the preparations of her people to endure the shock of war illustrated the nearly universal popular defiance of the invaders of her soil. Hon. John B. Baldwin, the Union leader of the Virginia convention and one of the ablest men the State ever produced, received at the time a letter from a friend at the North, in which was asked: "What will the Union men of Virginia do now?" In response he said: "We have no 'Union' men in Virginia now; but those who were Union men will stand to their guns and make a fight which shall shine on the page of history as an example of what a brave people can do after exhausting every means of pacification."

The proclamation of Mr. Lincoln, which definitely declared the policy of coercion by force of arms, made at once a "solid South," and all classes throughout the Southern section united for the common defense. The farmer left the plow in the furrow, the merchant left his merchandise unsold, the mechanic left his job unfinished, the lawyer left his brief unargued, the physician forsook home practice to render service in hospital, march and



battle, the professor left his chair and the teacher his school, the preacher gave up the pulpit in the church to minister to the imperiled flock in the field, the student exchanged the "midnight lamp" for "the camp-fires of the boys in gray," and all classes rallied round the "stars and bars"—not mercenaries, not men bought up with "bounty money," but the very flower of our Southern chivalry, the bone and sinew, the brain and brawn, the wealth, education, social position and moral worth of our Southern manhood.

Within the space allotted me, I can only cull a few illustrations from the very large mass of material at hand—a volume would not suffice to do the subject full justice. Rev. Dr. Junkin (father-in-law of Stonewall Jackson, an able and admirable man, a Northerner and a Union man), who was then president of Washington college at Lexington, Va., called his faculty together and asked them: "What are you going to do about that rag on the dome of the college?" alluding to a Confederate flag which the students raised as soon as they heard of the secession of Virginia. Prof. James J. White, whom Col. William Preston Johnston once characterized as "the learned head of the Greek department, who combines in his one person the subtlety of Ulysses and the proportions of Ajax," at once replied: "I do not know what the other gentlemen propose to do about it, but for myself, I say let it wave and I propose to fight under it." Accordingly he organized that day among the students a company called "the Liberty Hall Volunteers," thus reviving and assuming the name of the company, from the academy out of which Washington college sprung, that did valiant service in the Revolution of '76. This company was afterward attached to the famous "Stonewall" brigade, and rendered gallant service from First Manassas to the close of the war. Hampton-Sidney college also organized a company of students. In the expedition which moved on the evening of April 17, 1861, the day on which Vir-



ginia seceded, for the capture of the arsenal at Harper's Ferry, there were two companies of students of the university of Virginia, and of the over 600 students who were at the university that session, fully nine-tenths of them enlisted in the Confederate armies. The president of the board of trustees of Howard college at Marion, Ala., Judge Porter King, organized and led to the front a company of students of that college. The university of North Carolina, the university of Georgia, the university of Alabama, the university of Mississippi, South Carolina college, the citadel of Charleston, the university of Louisiana, and the colleges generally throughout the South, sent their students and the flower of their alumni to the Confederate armies. On the day and at the very hour designated by the governor, a quiet professor at Lexington, Va., marched to the front of the whole corps of cadets of the Virginia military institute and came not back again until he was borne to his burial in "Lexington, in the valley of Virginia," while two continents were ringing with the fame of "Stonewall Jackson."

The famous Rockbridge artillery was organized in Lexington, Va., and drilled by Rev. Dr. W. N. Pendleton, a graduate of the military academy at West Point, but then rector of the Episcopal church of the town. It was recruited from young men all over the South. Dr. Pendleton, afterward General Pendleton, Lee's chief of artillery, was made its first captain, and it won fame on nearly every battlefield from First Manassas to Appomattox. This company illustrated the hold which the Confederate cause had on the intellectual and moral classes of the South. My own first personal knowledge of its complexion was obtained when a part of the Confederate army was in line of battle at Darkesville, in the lower valley of Virginia, July 4, 1861, expecting an attack from General Patterson, who, instead of attacking, allowed Gen. J. E. Johnston to completely outgeneral him and



march across the mountains to join Beauregard and win the great victory of First Manassas. Learning that the Rockbridge battery was in position near by, I went to visit it, and found as private soldiers seven masters of arts of the university of Virginia, twenty-eight college graduates, twenty-five theological seminary students, and among the others many of the most accomplished young men of the South, including R. E. Lee, Jr., son of the great commander. This was by no means an isolated example, for many other companies of artillery, infantry and cavalry were composed of similar splendid material. The Thirteenth Virginia infantry gave to the Confederacy three generals, who were its original field officers: A. P. Hill, who rose to the rank of lieutenant-general, one of the most accomplished, skillful and successful soldiers the war produced; James A. Walker, who commanded the Stonewall brigade until he was severely wounded at the "bloody angle" at Spottsylvania Court House, May 12, 1864, and afterward led Early's old division to Appomattox Court House; and J. B. Terrill, who was promoted only a short time before he was killed at Bethesda church in June, 1864, and would have won higher distinction had his noble young life been longer spared. Besides these, there were many among the rank and file of that regiment who were the peers of these distinguished soldiers and would have worn the "wreath and stars" of generals as gracefully and achieved just such official distinction as they did win in patiently doing their duty as "unknown and unrecorded heroes of the rank and file." I give several illustrations of the general Confederate morale drawn from the personnel of this fine Confederate regiment. When the war broke out, there lived at Orange Court House, Va., a young man named Wilson Scott Newman, who had graduated in law, was commonwealth's attorney of his county and thereby exempt from military service, and who had been recently married to a beautiful young





woman who graced his charming home. Many men would have considered it their duty to remain at home under the circumstances, especially as young Newman's wide popularity gave him every promise of high political preferment. But when at 12 o'clock, April 17, 1861, there came a telegram from the governor of Virginia, ordering the "Montpelier Guards," a volunteer regiment composed of the best young men in the county, to be ready to take a train of cars that evening, Wilson Newman promptly enlisted as a private soldier in the company to which four of his brothers already belonged, and served, until killed September 19, 1864, at Winchester, as one of the most intelligent, brave, patient and efficient soldiers who ever fought in any cause. One incident illustrates his character: On one of the marches of Jackson's "Valley campaign," I saw him one day with bare, blistered and bleeding feet limping along the hard turnpike and suffering greatly as he left his bloody tracks on the road in keeping up with his command. I begged him to fall out of rank and rest by the roadside until I could get him a place in one of the ambulances or on a wagon. "No, I cannot do that," replied the brave patriot, "for all of the transportation is needed for poor fellows worse off than I am. Besides, I cannot leave the ranks now, for we are going to fight up yonder presently, and if I cannot march I can shoot. Indeed, I am in first-class condition to go into battle just now, for I cannot run even if I wished to, and will be obliged to hold my position, no matter how hot it should prove." And thus the heroic boy limped to the front to "take his place in the picture near the flashing of the guns." Three years ago, visiting the town of Lexington, Va., nestling in the Blue mountains and rich in hallowed memories, I went to the tomb of Lee, which the genius of Edward Valentine has decked with one of the most superb works of art on this continent, putting into pure white marble the veritable "Robert E. Lee at rest." I also gazed for



some time on the monument of Stonewall Jackson, in which Valentine has given us a very Jackson in bronze, and meditated on the career of this great soldier and what might have been had God spared him to lead longer his victorious legions. But in turning away from Jackson's grave, my eye fell on a modest marble slab, on which was carved the name of Wilson Scott Newman. Pausing to drop a tear on the grave of my brave army comrade, I said: "Your name will not go sounding down the ages like that of the great chieftain who sleeps beneath yonder bronze; but for true patriotism, chivalric bearing and heroic self-sacrifice, you had no superior, and it is meet that your grave is near that of Stonewall Jackson himself."

During the first year of the war there were enlisted in the Louisa Blues five brothers named Trice. The eldest one, against his earnest protest, was discharged at Harper's Ferry in May, 1861, "on account of physical disability." But as soon as he got home he joined another company, which was assigned to the Fifty-sixth Virginia regiment and was in Fort Donelson when Grant made his attack upon it. He had been wounded four times and ordered from the field, but when his regiment then made a brilliant charge, he was among the foremost in the advance, displaying conspicuous gallantry, using his musket for a crutch, and finally fell, pierced with many bullets. At Gaines' Mill, Va., June 27, 1862, the Thirteenth Virginia, being deployed as skirmishers, captured a number of prisoners. The second brother, "Tap" Price, was sent to the rear, against his earnestly expressed wish, in charge of prisoners, and instead of using this as a good excuse to keep out of the fight, he turned his prisoners over to some men who were detailed to guard them and hurried to the front to join his regiment. But the command had changed position and he failed to find it until the battle began to rage furiously all along the line. Just then he found the Fifty-sixth



Virginia regiment about to go into action, and rushing up to the Louisa company, he said to the captain, whom he knew well: "I want you to put me in the file in which my brother would be if he were here to-day. I cannot find my own regiment, and I want to take his place and avenge his death." The brave fellow was wounded three times, but refused to leave the field until he received another wound which rendered him unconscious. Not being able to march any longer, even when partially recovered from his wounds, he joined a cavalry company and served to the close of the war with conspicuous gallantry. He survived the war but became almost totally blind from the effects of his wounds, and yet he continued bright and cheerful in the consciousness of having done his duty in the great struggle for constitutional freedom. On the same day two others of the brothers fell dead in that historic charge which Stonewall Jackson ordered and the men made with such heroic impetuosity that, despite Fitz John Porter's skillful and gallant resistance, they carried every position north of the Chickahominy and fully convinced General McClellan that it would be wise for him to "change base." The fifth brother was badly wounded (he was afterward killed), and one of the saddest sights I saw the next morning when moving among the dead and wounded, was this boy of sixteen preparing his two brothers for their burial "on the field of glory." The news went to the mother of these young soldiers, a widow who had been running the little farm while all of her sons were at the front, that the remaining four had been killed. In her great but not rare affliction she said: "They were noble boys, and how I can do without them I do not know. But I am proud of the fact that they were not cowards, but that all five of them fell bravely doing their duty in the cause of Southern independence. And, bitter as is my affliction, my chief regret is that I have not five more boys to put in their places." Did Spartan women, Roman matrons



or the women of the Revolution of '76 ever utter nobler sentiments of patriotism than this humble Southern woman whose fame deserves to be celebrated with that of "the mother of the Gracchi?"

Another boy in the same company and regiment was a fit representative of a large class. When the war broke out, George Haner was an orphan working in a carriage factory at Louisa Court House, Va. He not only owned no slaves, but it was not likely that he ever would, and some might have said: "This is none of Haner's fight. Why should he go into it?" But George was an intelligent, well-informed secessionist, and when at noon on the 17th of April, 1861, the Louisa Blues received their marching orders, he was the first man ready to march, as he was ever afterward prompt in the discharge of duty. The boys called him "eccentric" at first and laughed at his oddities. One of his "eccentricities" was that he always carried his Bible in his haversack and read it as he had opportunity. But when on the memorable field at Cold Harbor and Gaines' Mill, June 27, 1862, the heroic regiment at one time faltered under the terrific fire (they carried into that fight 306 men and lost 175, killed and wounded) and seemed about to fall back, the color-bearer being shot down, Haner grasped the flag, rushed to the front, calling on the men to rally to their colors and firing their valor so that they swept on to victory; then they saw that George Haner was a true hero in a fight, and changed their laughter into praise. He was thenceforth known and honored for his conspicuous gallantry. Another simple incident illustrates his noble character: Down at Petersburg, in February, 1865, the regiment held a position south of the Appomattox, and the opposing lines were so close together at that point that it was almost certain death to expose one's self for even a minute. One day when I was looking through a porthole at the enemy in blue, who seemed only a few feet away, a sudden gust of wind blew off my hat and landed it





between the lines. It was a new hat, for which I had just invested \$3.00, Confederate currency, but I would not have gone after it for all the hats that ever ran the blockade. I was sorrowfully turning away to see if I could not borrow a "second-hand hat," to wear into Petersburg, though I did not know how I could get another, when George Haner stepped up and said: "Chaplain, I will get your hat." I positively forbade his doing so, told him that it would be a reckless risk of his life to attempt it, and thinking that he was dissuaded, I went into one of the bomb-proofs, and having succeeded in borrowing a "second-hand" cover for my head, was preparing to leave the trenches when George Haner came up and brought me the hat which had deserted me. "Why, how did you get it, George?" I asked. "Oh! I crawled down the trench leading to the picket line and fished it in with a pole." "But, did not the Yankees see and shoot at you?" "Yes! and they came very near getting me," said the brave fellow, as he raised his arm and showed three bullet-holes in the jacket sleeve of the arm with which he had worked the pole. "I reckon they would have gotten me," he added, "but I called out, 'Hello, Yank! quit your foolishness. I am doing no harm. I am just trying to get the chaplain's hat,' and the Yank replied, 'All right, Johnny, I'll not shoot again if you will hurry up and get it before the next relief comes.' And so I got it without being hurt." The brave boy had cheerfully risked his life to serve his old comrade and chaplain. Poor fellow! he was killed a few days afterward, bravely doing his duty. He sleeps in an unknown grave at Petersburg; and this little tribute is justly due to as true a patriot, as heroic a soldier as ever kept step to the music of Dixie or fought under any flag.

I have not singled out the Thirteenth Virginia infantry as being superior to other regiments of the Confederacy. I have simply cited a few illustrations which came under my personal observation; but there were many other



regiments composed of just as good material, and volumes could be filled with the heroic deeds of men of every State, illustrating the morale of the Confederate armies. I cull further from my ample material only a few individual illustrations. In September, 1859, there came to Washington college at Lexington, Va., a young man who walked from near Clarksburg, in northwestern Virginia, the neighborhood in which Stonewall Jackson was born, and, appearing before the president, said: "I want an education. I have no money, but I am willing to saw wood or do any work to meet my expenses." He was received into the college, and though imperfectly prepared, soon showed real genius and by hard study took a high stand in all of his classes. When the war broke out he at once enlisted in an artillery company, displayed the highest qualities as a soldier, and became especially distinguished as a gunner for the quickness, accuracy and cool courage with which he handled his piece. He was made sergeant, refusing higher promotion because he would not leave his loved gun. He carried his Greek classics and his books on higher mathematics in his haversack, and studied them around the camp-fires, frequently teaching classes of his comrades when in camp. At the close of the war he went back to Washington college, of which his great chief, R. E. Lee, was now president, sustained himself at the head of his classes, won the "Cincinnati" prize for best scholarship, was made adjunct professor and given leave of absence to go to Europe; won at a German university his degree and the highest honor ever won there by an American student; was made professor of Greek in Vanderbilt university and then in the university of Lexington, and is now professor of Greek in the university of Virginia. It is conceded by scholars generally that this ex-Confederate soldier, Prof. N. W. Humphries, is beyond question one of the very first Grecians and one of the most thorough scholars in this country.



One day during an interval in the battle of Cold Harbor in June, 1864, I went to see a college mate who had entered the army as a private soldier, but was now chaplain of a Georgia regiment. He was a brilliant master of arts, had completed nearly the whole of his theological course, and was under appointment as missionary to Japan when the war broke out and changed all of his plans. I found him lying on an oil cloth deeply absorbed in a book which I supposed might be some volume of light literature that had been captured from the enemy. But when I asked him what he was reading he replied: "My wounded have all been sent to the hospitals in Richmond, and as there is no fighting going on now, I thought I would amuse myself with this a little." I found that he was studying Arabic, and I thought that a man who could amuse himself studying Arabic in an interval between the terrific fighting along the Cold Harbor lines, had a power of application beyond anything of which I had ever conceived. After the war he spent several years in study at one of the German universities, was for many years professor of Hebrew in the Southern Baptist theological seminary, and has been for some years the able and accomplished head of the department of oriental languages in Harvard. When President Elliot was asked why they had put "a rebel soldier" in a chair at Harvard, he replied, "We did not select him because he was a rebel soldier, but because Prof. Crawford H. Loy is unquestionably the first scholar on the continent in that department."

Many other individual examples of the intellectual cast of the Confederate army might be put in evidence, but it must suffice to state that a correct list of the professors in our Southern colleges and universities that served in the Confederate armies shows that at least nine-tenths or them had been Confederate soldiers. And a very large proportion of the students in universities, colleges and theological seminaries were "men who wore the



gray" during the four years of war. The witty editor of the Richmond Christian Advocate, Dr. Lafferty, said of a certain State: "They already have twelve 'universities,' and at our latest advices they were cutting poles for another." Now we did not call our schools "universities," but in the log chapels and log huts of winter quarters, in the camps of summer and even in the bivouacs of active campaigns there were classes taught by scholars who would have graced the chairs of any university or college, and a high standard of scholarship maintained which would have astonished many of the so-called "universities." It was noted in all of our Southern colleges and universities that the classes formed just after the war were the most brilliant they ever had, and the obvious explanation is that the students were prepared for college in these army classes by these able teachers, and were enabled by this preparation, added to native intellect and hard study, to take the very highest stand in their classes.

But perhaps the best evidence of the morale of the Confederate armies is their achievements, notwithstanding the immense odds in numbers, resources and equipment against which they fought. The population of the Northern States was about 20,000,000, while the population of the Confederate States was only 5,000,000 whites. There were enlisted in the Federal armies, as shown by the official reports, 2,864,274 men, while there were mustered in the Confederate armies a total of only 800,000 men. The blockade cut off the Confederacy from the factories and general supplies of the world and shut the South up to its own scant resources; while the Federals had not only the arsenals, the navy yards and the shops of the government, and the numerous factories of the North, but those of the whole world from which to draw their war material. The Federal armies were equipped in complete style, their arms and ammunition were of the most improved patterns, their supplies of every kind





were abundant and even luxurious, their transportation very superior and their telegraph, pioneer, "secret service" and every other department of the highest efficiency; while the Confederates were sadly deficient in all of these and, indeed, lacked everything save devoted patriotism, able leadership and heroic hearts. And yet, with these overwhelming odds against them, the Confederate armies for four years maintained the unequal contest, fought over nearly all the territory of the Confederacy, and in over 2,000 engagements, great and small, won many victories which astonished the world. Col. C. S. Venable, a member of the staff of General Lee, has aptly quoted the inscription on the monument at Lucerne to the Swiss guard—"Not conquered, but wearied out with victory"—as describing the state of the Southern armies at the close of their heroic struggle for an independent constitutional government. A noted Southern statesman reproduced the same beautiful Swiss legend in a rough form by goodhumoredly saying just after the war was over, "We wore ourselves out whipping them." At the last hours of Appomattox, Gordon sent to Lee the message, "My corps is fought to a frazzle." Yet even after that the fighting was resumed. It is not a boast to declare that in fact the spirit of the South was never broken, the courage of the South never quailed, the convictions of the South were never deserted, and the manhood of the South was never surrendered. It is also the gratification of every patriot in the United States that the Union was not a conqueror, and the free citizenship of our country was never conquered.

In evidence of the high morale of the Confederate army, a letter from a gallant Union colonel, who served to the end of the war, is here quoted as it was published in the Southern Historical Society Papers (Vol. IX, pp. 142, 143), in which he says: "I take pleasure in reading the Southern Historical Society Papers, and consider them invaluable. They show conclusively the great



disparity of numbers and the bravery and great sacrifices of the Southerners in battling for their principles and for what they honestly consider were their rights. And I take a just pride, as an American citizen, a descendant, on both sides of my parentage, of English stock who came to this country about 1640, that the Southern army, composed almost entirely of Americans, were able, under the ablest American chieftains, to defeat so often the overwhelming hosts of the North, which were composed largely of foreigners to our soil." General Hooker, in his testimony, surely overlooked this element, or he would not have testified that the Confederates were inferior to his people, "intellectually and physically," and acquired their superiority in steadiness and efficiency "by discipline alone."

But the point will be obvious by citing the results of a few of the many battles as illustrations. When on account of the wounding of Gen. J. E. Johnston at Seven Pines, Gen. R. E. Lee was put in command in Virginia, June 1, 1862, the situation looked dark indeed for the Confederates. The capture of Forts Henry and Donelson, the fall of New Orleans, the capture of Nashville, Roanoke island and Norfolk, gave the Federals confidence of success and tended to greatly dispirit the Confederates. The gloom had been somewhat brightened by the Confederate victory at Shiloh and Stonewall Jackson's brilliant Valley campaign, which terminated at Cross Keys and Fort Republic a few days after General Lee assumed command. But the situation was still exceedingly threatening, for McClellan was strongly intrenched with 115,000 men within sight of the spires of Richmond and almost within cannon range of the city. He had 10,000 more men at Fortress Monroe and was confidently expecting McDowell, whose troops had been diverted by the movements of Stonewall Jackson, to join him with 40,000 troops. General Lee, to oppose this strong force, after receiving all of the reinforce-



ments that he could draw from every source, could only muster 78,000 men, the largest army he ever commanded. And yet, with this force Lee attacked McClellan in his stronghold, and in "Seven Days' battles" drove him from every position and forced him to take refuge under the cover of his gunboats at Harrison's landing, forty miles below Richmond, after a series of brilliant Confederate victories which inflicted immense loss on the enemy in both men and material. The subsequent campaign, in which the Confederates won the victory of Cedar Run mountain, fought the brilliant battle of Second Manassas, after which they drove the Federals into the fortifications around Washington, captured Harper's Ferry with 11,500 prisoners, 13,000 stand of small-arms, 73 pieces of artillery and large quantities of provisions and stores of every description, and transferred the war across the Potomac—this campaign will be noted in history among the most splendid military movements. At the battle of Sharpsburg General Lee had at first only 17,000 men and only 33,000 when his troops were all up, and yet he not only successfully withstood McClellan's nearly 100,000, but considerably advanced his lines on a part of the field, remained in line of battle all day the next day "expecting and, in fact, hoping for another attack," as he himself expressed it, and only retired on information that McClellan was being largely reinforced, while he could expect no reinforcements as long as he remained north of the Potomac river.

At Fredericksburg, December 13, 1862, Burnside had over 100,000 men and Lee barely 70,000, only 20,000 of whom were engaged at any one time, and yet Lee inflicted on the enemy so bloody a defeat that those plains became henceforth historic as "Burnside's slaughter pen," and this brave soldier was compelled to "desist from further slaughter of his men" and to retreat across the river, by the emphatic remonstrance, protest and pressure of his leading generals. At Chancellorsville,



Hooker had 132,000 men and Lee only 55,000, and after "Fighting Joe" had successfully crossed the river and had gotten 90,000 of his forces strongly intrenched at Chancellorsville, on Lee's flank, while Sedgwick was at Fredericksburg with 42,000 men to move on Lee's rear, there did seem reason in his proud boast that "the enemy will now be compelled to ingloriously fly, or come out from behind his defenses and give us battle on our own ground, where certain destruction awaits him." Yet Lee did not "ingloriously fly," but boldly advancing on Hooker, he sent Stonewall Jackson on his famous flank movement, and by a series of brilliant attacks, forced Hooker to recross the river, under cover of a stormy night, to prevent the utter destruction of "the finest army on the planet," as a few days before he had, with pardonable pride, called his well-equipped command. At Gettysburg General Meade had 105,000 men opposed to Lee's 60,000, but there is a reasonable belief that the splendid Confederate victory of the first day would have been followed by the crushing defeat of the Federal army and the capture of Washington and Baltimore, had not Lee's plans miscarried by unfortunate misconception of, if not disobedience to, his orders.

The campaign of 1864 was a still more striking example of the ability of Lee and the prowess of his resolute veterans. Grant had under his control over 275,000 men, reckoning together his immediate force, the army in the Shenandoah valley, the division that came through the mountain passes of southwestern Virginia, and the wing under Butler that moved up the James, all of which were to converge on and capture Richmond. Counting with these the reinforcements he received from the Rapidan to Petersburg, over 275,000 men were in his command, while Lee had a total to meet this vast host of only 73,000 men. The disparity in arms, equipment, supplies of every description, transportation and all appliances to increase the efficiency of an army, was even greater.





And yet, as soon as Grant crossed the river, Lee had advanced on him and faced the powerful invasion from the Wilderness to Cold Harbor and Petersburg, in which Grant lost over 80,000 men and was forced to sit down to the siege of Petersburg, a position he might have taken by direct movement without the sacrifice to which he subjected his army. But meanwhile Lee had not only made his works around Richmond impregnable to direct assault, but had sent a movable column under Early which, after driving Hunter from Lynchburg through the mountains, approached and threatened Washington so vigorously as to alarm the whole North for the safety of the national capital. Then followed the siege of Petersburg by the "attrition" and starvation plan of campaign, until the Confederate army, after a series of battles, was gradually worn away, its lines "stretching until they broke," and at last, on April 9, 1865, a bare remnant of Lee's army of exhausted Confederates was surrendered to over 100,000 Federals, who surrounded them. Now in the distribution of the just awards of fame, there is no lessening of the glory due the great Southern military leaders to put on record the truth that the victories won for the Confederacy were in equal measure due to the patient endurance, the heroic courage, the unsurpassed morale of the men of the rank and file, who, often with bare and bleeding feet, gallantly bore their great leaders to an immortality of fame. When Gen. John B. Gordon was enthusiastically cheered at a Confederate reunion, he said, in his own inimitable way: "Comrades, you are cheering the wrong man. You ought to cheer the men of the rank and file who made Gordon." General Lee once said to a foreign officer, who was visiting his headquarters, "I am ashamed for you to see my poor, ragged men in the camp or on parade. But I am not ashamed for the world to see them on the battlefield." Yes! it was on the battlefield that the Confederate soldier was at his best. His uniform might be ragged, but his musket



was bright. His haversack might be empty, but he kept his cartridge box full. His feet might be bare, blistered and bleeding, and he might straggle on the march, but he was up when the battle opened, and did his full share toward snatching victory from immense odds, or meeting defeat with unconquerable patience and endurance.

The histories of all armies of the Confederacy showed equal heroism, steadiness and efficiency. The defense of Fort Fisher, N. C., was characterized by skill and heroic daring which deserve its place in the history of the Confederacy. The story of the defense of Fort Sumter and Charleston, as told by Rev. Dr. John Johnson, of South Carolina, who was engineer officer in the fort, is one of marvelous skill and heroic daring, reflecting the highest credit, not only on General Beauregard, Col. D. B. Harris and other commanders and engineers, but on the men in the ranks as well, who held out against the most powerful combinations that were brought against them, and would have continued to hold their position had not Sherman's march in the rear of Charleston in February, 1865, compelled its evacuation.

The achievements of the army of Tennessee at Shiloh, in the Kentucky campaign, at Murfreesboro, at Chickamauga, in the campaign of 1864 from Dalton to Atlanta, in the terrific battles before Atlanta, at Franklin, Tenn., and in the ill-fated campaign of Nashville, show beyond question that in all of the qualities which go to make up morale in soldiers, the men of that army were the equals of their brothers of Lee's army.

No less worthy of honor were the men of the Trans-Mississippi department, who, under the lead of Price, Marmaduke, McCulloch, Van Dorn, Hindman, Kirby Smith, Dick Taylor, Joe Shelby, Magruder and other able leaders, performed deeds of arms worthy to be celebrated in song and story as well as to be written on the pages of history. General Magruder's capture of the



Harriet Lane, forcing the destruction of the Westfield to prevent her capture, raising the blockade of Galveston and keeping the port open, accomplishing all this with only a small force of artillery and Texan cavalry, was certainly a most brilliant exploit. Gen. Dick Taylor's defeat of Banks' Red river expedition, with such heavy loss to this political general who had won in the Shenandoah valley the sobriquet of "Stonewall Jackson's quartermaster," and was to be known henceforth as "Dick Taylor's commissary," was certainly a most creditable achievement for both the general and his troops. The fights made by Sterling Price and Earl Van Dorn at Iuka and Corinth, Miss., were among the most heroic of the war. The fight at Sabine Pass was one of the most remarkable in Confederate history, and the little handful of Confederates who resisted successfully the great odds that came against them deserve to have their names preserved among the heroes of the war. But perhaps one of the most brilliant victories of the Confederacy was that of Stephen D. Lee at Chickasaw Bayou, where with only 2,700 men he gave Sherman, in his advance on Vicksburg with 30,000 men, such a bloody repulse that he re-embarked on his transports and went back to Memphis; Grant, who was to have co-operated with him for a sudden capture of Vicksburg, being also compelled to retreat because Van Dorn destroyed his stores at Holly Springs. Gen. N. B. Forrest—"the Wizard of the Saddle," the "Stonewall Jackson of the West"—had a most brilliant career, and some of his exploits and those of his heroic men have scarcely been equaled in the annals of war. His campaign against Gen. W. L. Smith, in which with about 3,500 men he drove Smith's 7,000 pellmell before him, capturing six pieces of artillery and many prisoners, horses and stores; his pursuit and capture of a much larger force than his own under General Streight, and many of his raids and retreats, were marvelous illustrations of what he said was the secret of his success—"I get



there first with the most men"—while the exploits of some of his companies, squads and individual soldiers would have done honor to the palmiest days and brightest deeds of chivalry. The career of Gen. John H. Morgan and his men was so brilliant that the deeds of "Morgan's men" will long live in the traditions of "Bluegrass Kentucky." His many raids, his capture in Ohio and imprisonment in the Ohio penitentiary, his bold escape therefrom by tunneling under the walls, and his tragic death, read more like romance than the real history he made. One incident may be related here just as it is interestingly told by Capt. John H. Carter, of Morgan's command: On the retreat from Kentucky, in the fall of 1862, Col. Basil W. Duke sent a party of seven, consisting of Sergt. Will Hays, of Covington; Ash Welsh, of Cynthiana; Joseph M. Jones, of Paris; Thomas Franks, of Holly Springs, Miss.; Frank Riggs; Hughes Conrardt and Chapin Bartlett, of Covington, Ky., to ascertain the position of the enemy on the turnpike leading from Walton in Boone county, Ky. This squad, in making a sudden turn in the pike, came face to face with a Federal picket of sixty-nine men, posted about 500 yards in advance of the Federal army. The clear voice of Hays rang out a demand for the immediate surrender of the sixty-nine Federals, and the lieutenant commanding them, supposing that such a demand would not be made unless backed by adequate force, at once yielded his sword, and the sixty-nine Federals were double-quickened to the rear of this squad of seven Confederate heroes, who were warmly congratulated on their exploit, and all of whom were afterward promoted on the recommendation of Morgan "for gallant and meritorious conduct."

One of the most striking exhibitions of the superb morale of the Confederate soldiers is to be found in their kind treatment of prisoners who fell into their hands, and of the people, when in the enemy's country, notwithstanding the outrages perpetrated by the enemy all





through the South. How often have I seen our brave fellows, after some great battle, wearied out as they were, searching the field for the wounded of the enemy, bearing them on litters to our field hospitals to be treated by our surgeons under General Lee's standing orders that "the whole field must be treated alike, and the wounded of the enemy cared for as well as our own men."

Gen. J. B. Kershaw, of South Carolina, published some years ago a deeply interesting narrative concerning "Richard Kirkland, the humane hero of Fredericksburg," a sergeant in the Second South Carolina regiment. After the bloody repulse of the Federals at Fredericksburg, near the foot of Marye's hill, they left their many killed and wounded lying between the lines, and the piteous cries of the brave men on account of pain and thirst appealed to the sympathies of the soldiers of both armies. Kirkland went to General Kershaw, who was then in command of the Confederates at that point, and said with deep emotion: "General, I can't stand this." "What is the matter, Sergeant?" asked the general. He replied: "All day I have heard those poor people crying for water and I can stand it no longer. I come to ask permission to go and give them water." The general regarded him for a moment with feelings of profound admiration, and said: "Kirkland, don't you know that you would get a bullet through your head the moment you stepped over the wall?" "Yes," he said, "I know that I may, but if you will let me, I am willing to try it." After a pause the general said: "Kirkland, I ought not to allow you to run such a risk, but the sentiment which actuates you is so noble that I will not refuse your request, trusting that God may protect you. You may go." With light heart and buoyant step the humane hero, armed with all of the canteens he could carry filled with water, crossed the wall, went unharmed through the shower of bullets which at first greeted him, and



reached and relieved the nearest sufferer, pouring down his parched throat the life-giving fluid, putting him in a more comfortable position, and leaving him a canteen filled with water. His purpose now being apparent, the Federals ceased to fire on him, and for an hour and a half, amid the plaudits of both armies, this angel of mercy went on his mission from man to man of the wounded enemy—his comrades gladly filling his canteens for him and being prevented from joining him in his labor of love only by the orders against their crossing the line—until all on that part of the field were relieved. It needs only to be added—since “the bravest are the tenderest and the loving are the daring”—that Sergeant Kirkland so greatly distinguished himself at Gettysburg that he was promoted for “conspicuous gallantry,” and that he fell on the victorious field of Chickamauga, bravely doing his duty. But he will be known in the annals of the war as “The humane hero of Fredericksburg,” and as he had but a short time before found “Christ in the camp,” I doubt not that he wears now a bright crown bestowed by Him who promises that a cup of cold water given in the right spirit shall not lose its reward.

I well remember that at Winchester, on the Gettysburg campaign, one of our men came for me after midnight to see a dying prisoner, whom he had been nursing, and that I had with him a solemn and a very satisfactory interview; several of our boys doing the singing and leading in the tender prayers. Just in the rear of the “bloody angle” at Spottsylvania Court House, I found a Federal soldier dreadfully wounded but happy in his simple trust in Christ and loud in his praises of the kindness with which he had been treated by some of “the Johnnies,” who had tenderly borne him to their hospital, had his wounds attended to, and provided, as far as they could, for all his wants.

The conduct of our soldiers in the enemy's country after the outrages perpetrated in ours is among the



highest evidences that can be produced of their peculiar morale. The orders of Butler in New Orleans, Steinwehr, Milroy, Pope, Hunter, Sheridan and Sherman; and the pillage, devastation, insults and nameless outrages inflicted by some of their men on helpless old people, women and children, are deplorable illustrations of the savagery of war, and were well calculated to arouse the bitterest enmity of our soldiers as well as to provoke the sternest retaliation. The Federal soldiers burned probably sixty towns and villages in the South, besides hundreds of private houses. Sherman, in his official report of his "march through Georgia," said: "I estimate the damage done to the State of Georgia and its military resources at \$100,000,000, at least \$20,000,000 of which have inured to our advantage and the remainder is simply waste and destruction." In other words, he used for his army property valued at \$20,000,000 and ruthlessly destroyed \$80,000,000 more. His march through the Carolinas was equally destructive, and the outrages committed by the army and camp followers have not been and never can be fully described. Sheridan, after carrying out Grant's orders to desolate the Shenandoah valley, made his cruel boast that he had done his work so effectually that "a crow flying over that region would have to carry his own rations." Many others of the Federal commanders perpetrated like outrages, and the letters from home to Confederate soldiers were filled with stories of murders, outrages, raping and arson. And yet, when Bragg moved into Kentucky, or in the frequent raids of Morgan and Forrest across the border, in Lee's invasion of Maryland in 1862 and of Pennsylvania in 1863, there was no disposition on the part of the Southern armies to retaliate on the "Union" men, but they obeyed cheerfully the stringent orders against depredating on private property. After our first invasion of Maryland a prominent Union man wrote of our army in one of the Northern papers: "They were a set of ragged gen-



clemen—they did not do me half as much damage as the Union troops did when they were camped on me, and if it were not for the name of the thing, I would say I very greatly prefer to have the rebels rather than our Union troops quartered on my premises." When the Confederate army entered Pennsylvania in 1863, General Lee issued an order in which he said: "The commanding general considers that no greater disgrace could befall the army and, through it, our whole people, than the perpetration of the barbarous outrages on the innocent and defenseless, and the wanton destruction of private property, that have marked the course of the enemy in our country. Such proceedings not only disgrace the perpetrators and all connected with them, but are subversive of the discipline and efficiency of the army and destructive of the ends of our present movements. It must be remembered that we make war only upon armed men, and that we cannot take vengeance for the wrongs our people have suffered without lowering ourselves in the eyes of all those whose abhorrence has been excited by the atrocities of our enemy, without offending against Him to whom vengeance belongeth and without whose favor and support our efforts must all be in vain. The commanding general, therefore, earnestly exhorts the troops to abstain with the most scrupulous care from unnecessary or wanton injury to private property, and he enjoins upon all officers to arrest and bring to summary punishment all who shall in any way offend against the orders on this subject."

If this order had only been intended for effect, the army to be allowed to plunder at pleasure, then there would have been nothing further done or said on the subject, and our officers would have simply winked at, if they had not encouraged, depredations. But there is abundant proof that General Lee and his subordinates did everything in their power to carry out the orders and that, consequently, there were far fewer depredations by





Confederate troops in Pennsylvania than within our own borders. Upon one occasion General Lee himself dismounted and with his own hands began to put up a fence which some of the soldiers had left down, and at another time he personally ordered the arrest of some soldiers who were committing slight depredations and of the officers who permitted it. When Gen. John B. Gordon, of Georgia, led his command into one of the Northern towns, and the frightened women crowded around him begging for protection, he said: "Ladies, these are Southern men, and you will find that you need no protection from them. But if one of them should so far forget himself as to destroy property or to offer the slightest insult to a woman, just point out the man to me and he shall be brought to summary punishment. Your soldiers have invaded our Southland and inflicted on the mothers, wives, sisters and daughters of these men every manner of wanton insult and outrage. But we are not here to imitate their example. We make no war on women or children or peaceable citizens, and you are as safe in your homes while we occupy your town as you would be if your own men were here. Indeed, safer, for we will give you better protection." While that gallant and accomplished soldier, Gen. Clement A. Evans, then colonel of the Thirty-first Georgia regiment of Gordon's brigade, was busily engaged with his brave men in an effort to extinguish the flames of a little town on the Susquehanna which the retreating Federals had fired, he chanced to pick up a newspaper lying on the street, and the first paragraph that caught his eye was a telegraphic account of the burning of Darien, a seacoast town in his own State of Georgia, by a party of Federals who had landed and set the town on fire. The Georgians were, of course, deeply indignant at this fresh outrage of the enemy upon their people, and it would have been but human nature if they had at once ceased their efforts to extinguish the flames and save the property of



these people, and have said: "Let this town, which Federal soldiers have fired, pay the penalty for our town of Darien, which their vandal troops have tried to leave in ashes." But these noble Georgians, under guidance of their Christian leader, suppressed their just indignation and saved the property of their enemies.

But it may be asked: "Did not the Confederates burn Chambersburg, Pa., the next year?" Yes! they did, and Northern writers do not intend to let the world forget it, for they are sure to mention this one instance, the only one they can find, of the burning of a town by Confederates, though careful to omit all mention of the scores of Southern towns ruthlessly burned by the Federals. But it is fair to say that while General Early ordered the burning of Chambersburg in retaliation for Hunter's burnings and other acts of vandalism in the valley of Virginia, and also upon the refusal of the town to pay the ransom demanded, yet the act was without the knowledge or consent of General Lee or President Davis, and was disapproved by both of them. And as it was, that gallant soldier, W. E. Peters, positively refused to obey an order to fire the town, saying: "With a full knowledge of the consequences of refusing to obey orders, I have to say that you may take my sword, but I will not use the torch against innocent non-combatants."

As for the treatment of prisoners, despite all of the slanders that were published against the Confederacy and are still unjustly repeated, the fact remains that the Confederate records have been searched in vain for proof that the Confederate authorities ever ordered or connived at any ill-treatment of prisoners. The Confederates did everything in their power to mitigate the suffering of prisoners and made various humane propositions to that end, which were rejected by the Federals; and while the sufferings of prisoners were very great and the mortality among them fearful on both sides, yet the official reports of E. M. Stanton, United States secre-



tary of war, and J. K. Barnes, surgeon-general, show that nearly four per cent more Confederates perished in Northern prisons than Federals in Southern prisons; and this notwithstanding the fact that the Confederacy was deficient in food, raiment and medicines for even its own soldiers, while the Federals had an abundance of all supplies. The truth is that our Christian President, Jefferson Davis, and his generals conducted the war on the highest plane of civilization; that our rank and file caught their spirit and showed in this, as in other directions, their peculiar and lofty morale. The great English scholar and poet, Prof. P. S. Worsey, wrote the truth in lines of blended strength and beauty in his poem dedicated to Gen. R. E. Lee, in which he thus refers to the Southern Confederacy:

"Ah! realm of tombs! but let her bear  
This blazon to the last of times;  
No Nation rose so white and fair,  
Or fell so pure of crimes."

But, after all, the surest proof of the morale of the Confederate armies is the very large religious element which composed them, the very large number of earnest Christians who were their leaders, or belonged to their rank and file. I have given this phase of the subject very special study, and have collected a large mass of material concerning it. I speak, therefore, what I do know, and testify to that which I have seen when I say that no armies—not even Cromwell's nicknamed "Roundheads"—ever had in them so large a proportion of true, active, Christian men as the armies of the Confederate States, and in no other armies were there ever such religious revivals or such a large number of professions of faith in Christ.

Beginning our investigation with the most prominent Confederate officials, it is ascertained that the South committed its civil and military affairs to eminent men of true moral and religious character. The President and



Vice-President were both religious men. The great military leaders, Albert Sidney Johnston, Joseph E. Johnston, R. E. Lee, Bragg, Pendleton, Hood, Kirby Smith, Stonewall Jackson, Stuart, Polk, Stewart, Hardee, S. D. Lee, together with hundreds of others constituting a very large majority of Confederate officials, were devout communicants of some church. The same interesting fact becomes apparent as we look into the character of the army in general. Officers of regiments and companies and private soldiers all reared under the religious faith prevailing at the South, which was singularly free from skepticism, carried their moral convictions with them to keep company with their ardent patriotism.

The eagerness with which the men attended religious meetings and listened to the preaching of the Gospel was simply marvelous. Go to one of the brigades at almost any hour of the day and any day of the week and intimate that you are willing to preach, and a few taps of the drum, a call of the bugle, or better still, the singing of some good hymn, serves as a church call well understood, and from every part of the camp there will gather round the preacher a crowd of earnest listeners, ready to drink in with delight the simple truths of the Gospel. Let me recall a few of the many scenes of those days, asking the reader to go with me to some of these services: We enter the battered old town of Fredericksburg one evening in the early days of 1863, just as the regiments of Barksdale's Mississippi brigade are coming in from dress parade. We pause for a moment to admire those brave fellows, who, on a memorable morning in December, held the old town with such heroic obstinacy until "Marse Robert," as Lee was affectionately called, could form on the hills his "lines of gray tipped with steel," against which the blue waves were to beat in vain. Soon is heard the familiar order, "Break ranks," and at once the whole town is alive with men eagerly running in the same direction. Ask one of those eager runners,





and without pausing he replies: "We are trying to get into the church before the space is all taken." The house of God is the goal, and long before the appointed hour for worship the spacious Episcopal church—kindly tendered for the purpose by the then rector, Rev. Dr. B. N. Randolph, now bishop of the diocese of Southern Virginia—is filled to its utmost capacity, while many turn away disappointed, unable to find even standing room.

Enter and mingle with that vast congregation of worshipers. They do not spend their time while waiting for the coming of the preacher in idle gossip or a listless staring at every newcomer, but a clear voice strikes some familiar hymn, around which cluster hallowed memories of home and of the dear old church far away; the whole congregation joins in the hymn, and there arises a volume of sacred song that seems almost ready to take the roof off the house. The song ceases and one of the men leads in prayer. *And he prays.* He does not make "a stump speech to the Lord" on the war—its causes, its progress, or its prospects. But, from the depths of a heart that feels its needs, he tells of present wants, asks for present blessings, and begs for the Holy Spirit in His convicting, converting power. After awhile the preacher comes in and the pulpit service begins. It may be Dr. J. C. Stiles, the able expounder of the Gospel, who preached very frequently in these meetings, and whose untiring labors in the army were so richly blessed; it may be that gifted pulpit orator, the lamented Dr. William J. Hoge; it may be "the golden-mouthed orator of the Virginia pulpit," Dr. James A. Duncan; it may be the peerless Dr. J. L. Burrows, whose self-sacrificing labors for the temporal and spiritual welfare of the soldiers were so greatly blessed, and gave him so warm a place in the affections of "the boys" and of our whole Confederate people; it may be the earnest evangelist, Carroll; it may be one of the chaplains, or it may be J. L. Pettigrew, of Mississippi, or some other private soldier. But,



whoever it is, *he preaches the Gospel*. He does not discuss the "relation of science to religion," or the slavery question, or the causes which led to the war, or the war itself. He does not indulge in abusive epithets of the invaders of our soil, or seek to fire his hearers with hatred or vindictiveness toward the enemy. He is looking in the eyes of heroes of many a battle, and knows that the "long roll" may beat in the midst of his sermon and summon the men to battle and to death, and therefore he "speaks as a dying man to dying men," telling with simple earnestness "the old, old story" of salvation, and holding throughout his sermon the individual attention of the vast crowd. There are tears in eyes "unused to the melting mood," and, when at the close of his sermon the invitation is given and the congregation unites in singing some familiar old hymn, there will be 50, 100 or 200 who will promptly ask an interest in the prayers of God's people, or profess their faith in Christ. There were at least 500 professions of conversion in this great revival in the Episcopal church in Fredericksburg. I went on Sunday evening, September 6, 1863, to preach in Wilcox's Alabama brigade, at sunset, by request of Dr. J. J. D. Renfroe, chaplain of the Tenth Alabama regiment, and as I stood up before them there seemed to me to be a solid acre of eager, upturned faces. I preached from the text, "The blood of Christ Jesus His son cleanseth us from all sin," and at the close of the sermon there were 610 to ask for the prayers of God's people, 210 of whom professed faith in Christ before they left the ground. During this great revival and at other periods of special activity many chaplains made it a rule to preach at least once every day, and many for weeks together averaged two sermons a day to congregations of from 1,000 to 3,000 listeners.

As illustrating how men would come out to preaching under difficulties, one of the chaplains reported that one Sunday in the early winter of 1863 there came a fall of



snow, which he supposed would entirely break up his Sunday service, as they had no chapel; but, at the appointed hour, he heard singing at their usual place of worship, and looking out he saw that a large congregation had assembled. He, of course, went at once to the place and preached to deeply interested men, who stood in snow several inches deep, and among the number he counted fourteen barefooted men, besides scores whose shoes afforded very little protection from the snow. The men used to say: "We go on picket; we march and fight, and do all other military duty in any weather that comes, and we cannot see why we should allow the weather to interrupt our religious privileges." At first the popular impression, even among the chaplains, was that but little could be done during an active campaign except in the hospitals. But it soon appeared that the faithful chaplain who would stick to his post and watch for opportunities; who was ready to resign his horse to some poor fellow with bare and blistered feet while he marched in the column as it hurried forward; who went with his men on picket, who bivouacked with them in the pelting storm, and who went with them into the leaden and iron hail of battle, who, in a word, was ready to share their hardships and dangers, such a man had, during the most active campaign, golden opportunities for pointing the sick and wounded to the great Physician; the hungry to "the bread of life;" the thirsty to "the water of life;" the weary to "the rest that remaineth for the people of God," and the dying to "the resurrection and the life."

I can recall, as if it were last night, some of those scenes on that famous "Valley campaign," which won for our brave boys the sobriquet of "Jackson's foot cavalry." Starting at "early dawn" (a favorite hour, by the way, with our great chief, of whom the boys used to say, "He always marches at early dawn, except when he starts the night before"), it was tramp, tramp, tramp all



day along the hard turnpike, the only orders being, "Press forward!" "Press forward!" As the evening shadows began to gather on the mountain-tops, some of the best men would fall out of ranks and declare that they could go no farther, and it did seem that even "the foot cavalry" could do no more. But presently the word is passed back along the line, "The head of the column is going into camp." Immediately the weak grow strong again, the weary become fresh, the laggard hastens forward, and there upon some green sward on the banks of the beautiful Shenandoah we lie down to rest after a hard day's march. But before the bivouac is quiet there assembles a little group at some convenient spot hard by, who strikes up some dear old hymn which recalls hallowed memories of home and loved ones and of the old church far away, and which serves now as a prayer call well understood. From all parts of the bivouac men hasten to the spot; the song grows clearer and louder, and in a few moments a very large congregation has assembled. And as the chaplain reads some appropriate Scripture, leads in fervent prayer, and speaks words of earnest counsel, faithful admonition, or solemn warning,

"Something on the soldier's cheek  
Washed off the stain of powder."

There were very large congregations at Winchester, after Banks had been driven across the Potomac, on the call of our Christian leader to the "thanksgiving" service which he was accustomed to appoint after each victory, and also at Strasburg, while Ewell's division was in line of battle to keep back Fremont until all of Jackson's troops could pass the threatened point, and on that whole campaign the men were never too weary to assemble promptly for the evening service. The morning of the battle of Cross Keys a large part of Ezley's brigade assembled at half-past seven to hear a sermon by the chaplain of the Twenty-fifth Virginia regiment, Dr. George B. Taylor, who, being satisfied that a battle was





imminent, determined to deliver one more message for his Master. In the midst of his sermon the preacher was interrupted by the colonel of his regiment, who told him that the enemy was advancing and the battle about to open. Soon the shock of battle succeeded the invitations of the Gospel and men were summoned from that season of worship into the presence of their Judge. After the battle of Port Republic, while resting in the beautiful valley preparatory to marching to "Seven Days around Richmond," we had some delightful meetings, and on the march frequent seasons of worship. Remaining for a season with the wounded in the field hospitals after Cold Harbor and Gaines' Mill, I rejoined the command just after the line of battle was formed in front of General McClellan's position at Harrison's landing (Westover), and General Ewell said to me pleasantly: "I have not seen you preaching, or heard the songs of your prayer-meetings for several days, and I have missed them." I explained that I had been back in our hospitals looking after our wounded, and that my regiment had more men back there than in front just then, but that I was going to have a meeting as soon as I could assemble the men. And so we soon had a service in full hearing of the enemy's lines. Some of the meetings held around Richmond when the army came back from Harrison's landing; around Gordonsville when Jackson went to meet Pope; in line of battle at Cedar Run, and on the march to Second Manassas, were of deep solemnity and great interest. The morning that Early's brigade was relieved from its perilous position on the north bank of the Rappahannock near the Fauquier White Sulphur Springs, where for twenty-four hours it faced the whole of Pope's army with an impassable river, swollen by a sudden storm, in the rear, one of the largest congregations I ever saw promptly assembled on an intimation that there would be preaching. I never saw the army massed within as small a space as at that point.



General Lee had purposed crossing his whole army over at the Springs, and by a rapid march on Warrenton and the railroad to plant himself firmly on General Pope's line of retreat. General Early was thrown across as the advance guard, but the severe storm made the river unfordable, and as we had no pontoon bridges the movement had to be abandoned. So men from many other commands as well as our own came to our service until, when I stood up to preach, I looked on a great mass of eager listeners. An artillery duel was going on across the river and an occasional shell would shriek overhead or fall near by, but the service went on, regardless of that strange church music until, as we were singing the last hymn before the service, an immense rifle-shell fell in the center of the congregation, a few feet from where the preacher was standing. It fell between Col. (afterward general) James A. Walker and Capt. Lewis N. Huck, of the Thirteenth Virginia, and found just space enough to wedge its way in between their legs without striking either. It was a "cap shell," the reverse end struck, and it simply buried itself in the soft ground, threw dirt on all around, but did not explode. There was, of course, a moving back from that spot, as it was supposed that the shell would explode, but the leader of the singing lost no note, the song was sung through, the preacher announced his text, and the service would have gone on despite the interruption. But Colonel Walker stepped up to the chaplain and told him if he would suspend the service he would move the brigade back under the hill where it would be more sheltered. Accordingly the announcement was made to the congregation, and we moved back under cover. As we moved out a shell exploded in an artillery company in our rear and killed or wounded five men. The service was resumed and I preached from the text, "Except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish," as plainly and earnestly as I could. At "early dawn" the next morning



we started on that famous flank march of "Jackson's foot cavalry," which culminated in the battle of Second Manassas, and many of our poor fellows heard their last sermon that day on the Rappahannock. I went back that afternoon to the spot where we held our service, and found that after we moved, at least twenty shells had fallen and exploded in the space occupied by that congregation.

The banks of the historic Antietam were once lined with an immense crowd of Confederate soldiers. But they came not in "battle array," no opposing host confronted them, no cannon belched its hoarse thunder, and the shriek of shell and the whistle of the minie were unheard. Instead of these, sweet strains of the songs of Zion were wafted on the breeze, and the deepest solemnity pervaded the gathered host as one of the chaplains led down into the historic stream fourteen veterans who a few months before had fought at Sharpsburg, and were now enlisting under the banner of the Cross. Several times during the revival in Gordon's Georgia brigade in the autumn of 1863, Rev. T. H. Pritchard, of North Carolina, or Rev. Andrew Broadus, of Kentucky, administered the ordinance of baptism in the Rapidan in full view and easy range of the pickets on the opposing side.

Maj. Robert Stiles, of Richmond, in an address delivered in 1869 before the male orphan asylum of Richmond, related an incident which I give in his own eloquent words:

One of the batteries of our own battalion was composed chiefly of Irishmen from a Southern city—gallant fellows, but wild and reckless. The captaincy becoming vacant, a backwoods Georgia preacher, named C——, was sent to command them. The men, at first half amused, half insulted, soon learned to idolize as well as fear their preacher captain, who proved to be, all in all, such a man as one seldom sees, a combination of Praise-God Barebones and Sir Philip Sidney, with a



dash of Hedley Vicars about him. He had all the stern grit of the Puritan, with much of the chivalry of the cavalier and the zeal of the Apostle. There was at this time but one other Christian in his battery, a gunner named Allan Moore, also a backwoods Georgian, and a noble, enthusiastic man and soldier. The only other living member of Moore's family was with him, a boy of not more than twelve or thirteen years, and the devotion of the elder brother to the younger was as tender as a mother's. The little fellow was a strange, sad, prematurely old child, who seldom talked and never smiled. He used to wear a red zouave fez that ill-befitted that peculiar, sallow, pallid complexion of the piney-woods Georgian; but he was a perfect hero in a fight. 'Twas at Cold Harbor in 1864. We had been all day shelling a working party of the enemy, and about sunset, as adjutant of the battalion, I was visiting the batteries to arrange the guns for night-firing. As I approached C——'s position, the sharpshooting had almost ceased, and down the line I could see the figures of the cannoners standing out boldly against the sky. Moore was at the trail, adjusting his piece for the night's work. His gunnery had been superb during the evening, and his blood was up. I descended into a little valley and lost sight of the group, but heard C——'s stern voice: "Sit down, Moore, your gun is well enough; the sharpshooting isn't over yet. Get down." I rode to the hill. "One moment, Captain. My trail's a hair's breadth too much to the right;" and the gunner bent eagerly over the handspike. A sharp report—that unmistakable crash of the bullet against the skull, and all was over. 'Twas the last rifle-shot on the lines that night. The rushing together of the detachment obstructed my view; but as I came up, the sergeant stepped aside and said, "Look here, Adjutant." Moore had fallen over on the trail, the blood gushing from his wound all over his face. His little brother was at his side instantly. No wildness, no tumult of grief. He knelt on the earth, and lifting Moore's head on his knees, wiped the blood from his forehead with the cuff of his own tattered shirt sleeve and kissed the pale face again and again, but very quietly. Moore was evidently dead, and none of us cared to disturb the child. Presently he rose—quiet still, tearless still—gazed down on his dead brother, then around at us, and,





breathing the saddest sigh I ever heard, said just these words: "Well, I am alone in the world." The preacher-captain instantly sprang forward, and placing his hand on the poor boy's shoulder, said solemnly, but cheerfully, "No, my child, you are not alone, for the Bible says, 'When my father and mother forsake me, then the Lord will take me up,' and Allan was both father and mother to you; besides, I'm going to take you up, too; you shall sleep under my blanket to-night." There was not a dry eye in the group; and when, months afterward, the whole battalion gathered on a quiet Sabbath evening on the banks of the Appomattox to witness a baptism, and C—— at the water's edge tenderly handed this child to the officiating minister and, receiving him again when the ceremony was over, threw a blanket about the little shivering form, carried him into the bushes, changed his clothing, and then reappeared, carrying the bundle of wet clothes, and he and the child walked away hand in hand to camp—there were more tears, manly, noble, purifying tears; and I heard the sergeant say, 'Faith! the captain has fulfilled his pledge to that boy!'

A missionary to Featherston's Mississippi brigade writes of conducting religious services while the pickets were fighting heavily 600 yards in front, and with balls falling all around. There were several instances on the Petersburg lines where men were wounded in congregations which remained quiet while the preacher continued his sermon.

In that long line of nearly forty miles of intrenchments extending from north and west of Richmond to Hatcher's Run and Five Forks below Petersburg, the opportunities for preaching and other religious services were varied. Some parts of the line were subjected to almost constant fire from the enemy, and the men could never assemble outside of the "bomb-proofs;" but other parts were sufficiently distant from the enemy's lines to allow the men to assemble even outside of the trenches. A large number of comfortable chapels were erected; and where the men could not assemble in crowds they



met for prayer and praise in the "bomb-proofs." Let me try to picture several scenes as specimens of our daily work along the Petersburg lines. One day I went to Wise's brigade, stationed in the trenches near the Appomattox, at a point where the lines of the enemy were so close that it was almost certain death to show your head above the parapet. As I went into the lines I saw what I frequently witnessed. An immense mortar shell (the men used to call them "lamp-posts") would fly overhead, and some "gray-jacket" would exclaim, "That is my shell! That is my shell!" and would scarcely wait for the smoke from its explosion to clear away before rushing forward to gather the scattered fragments, which he would sell to the ordnance officer for a few cents a pound (Confederate money), to help eke out his scant rations. Entering the trenches I joined Maj. John R. Bagby, of the Thirty-fourth Virginia regiment, who accompanied me down the lines as we distributed tracts and religious newspapers, and talked with the men concerning the great salvation. There was a good deal of picket-firing going on at the time, the minie balls would whistle by our ears, and I found myself constantly dodging, to the no small amusement of the men. At last we came to a man who was the possessor of a frying-pan, and the still more fortunate possessor of something to fry in it. As we stood near, a minie struck in the center of his fire and threw ashes all around. But he went on with his culinary operations, coolly remarking, "Plague take the fellows; they'll spoil my grease yet before they stop their foolishness." Soon after, the major proposed that we should go into one of the "bomb-proofs" and join in the noonday prayer-meeting. I am afraid that some other feeling besides a devotional spirit prompted me to acquiesce at once. But when we went in we found the large "bomb-proof" filled with devout worshippers, and it proved one of the most tender, precious meetings I ever attended.



In the summer of 1864 Wright's Georgia brigade was stationed at a point where the opposing lines were some distance apart, and the preacher used to stand on a plat of grass in front of the trenches while the men would gather close around him or sit on the parapet. One night, with a full moon shedding its light upon the scene, there was an unusually large congregation and a service of more than ordinary power. A large number came forward for prayer, there were a number of professions of faith in Christ, and at the close of the service I received nine for baptism, and had just announced that I would administer the ordinance the next morning, when the "long roll" beat, the brigade formed at once, and in a few minutes began the march to one of the bloody battles of that summer. Several days later the brigade returned to its quarters, and I went back to resume my meetings, and look up my candidates for baptism. I found, alas! that out of the nine received three had been killed, two were wounded and one was a prisoner, so that there were only three left for me to baptize.

The alacrity with which the men went to work to build chapels may be cited as an illustration of their eagerness to hear the Gospel. When we went into winter quarters along the Manassas line in the winter of 1861-62, a few of the commands had well-constructed chapels. I think the first one was built in the Seventeenth Virginia regiment, of which Rev. John L. Johnson (long the distinguished professor of English in the university of Mississippi) was chaplain. There was one also in the Tenth Virginia infantry, of which Rev. S. S. Lambeth, of the Virginia Methodist Conference, was chaplain. In the Thirteenth Virginia infantry we had a chapel and "parsonage" under the same roof, and a well-selected circulating library, which proved a great comfort and blessing to the men. Down on the Rappahannock the next winter there was a still larger number of chapels, and a large and very comfortable one was built in the "Stone-



wall" brigade, which General Jackson was accustomed to attend, and where the world-famous chief "played usher" until the men were all seated, and then listened with glistening eyes to the old-fashioned Gospel in which he so greatly delighted. But the chapel-building reached its climax along the Rapidan in the winter of 1863-64, and along the Richmond and Petersburg lines in the winter of 1864-65. The great revival which swept through our camps on the return of the army from the Gettysburg campaign, and which resulted in the professed conversion of thousands and the quickened zeal of Christians generally, naturally produced a desire to have houses of worship during the winter. As soon as we went into winter quarters, the cry was raised in well nigh every command: "We must have a chapel." No sooner said than done. The men did not wait to finish their own quarters before they went to work on "the church." Their axes rang through the woods; some cut logs for the body of the building, others "rove" slabs, some provided "ridge poles" and "weight poles," and there were parties to do the hauling, put up the house and undertake "the finer work." Never since the days of Nehemiah have men had a better "mind to work" on the walls of Zion, and in from two to six days the chapel was finished, and the men were worshipping God in a temple dedicated to His name. Rude as they were, the completion of these chapels was hailed with the liveliest manifestations of joy on the part of those who had helped to build them, and each one of them proved, indeed, "none other than the house of God and the gate of heaven."

Rev. W. S. Lacy, of the Forty-seventh North Carolina, thus writes of an evening service in his chapel: "It was a solemn sight to see one of those earnest, crowded congregations by our feeble light in that rude chapel. We had no brilliant gas-jets, softened by shaded or stained glass. The light was reflected from no polished surface or snowy wall; one or two rough-looking specimens of

III 11





candles (we thought them magnificent) adorned the pulpit, and, perhaps, three others were in the room, subject to the caprices of the wind. A few torches in the fireplace made the complement of light, and fully served to render the darkness visible. But there was a sort of spell in the flicker of those lights and the solemn stillness of the vast crowds, and as they would flare the lurid gleam would reveal many an earnest face and brimming eye." There were forty chapels built along the Rapidan in the winter of 1863-64, and over sixty the next winter along the Richmond and Petersburg lines, notwithstanding the fact that at this last period timber was very scarce and transportation hard to obtain on a large part of the lines, and the men had to bring the lumber at great distances on their shoulders. In many of these chapels there were circulating libraries and daily prayer-meetings, Sunday-schools, literary societies, Young Men's Christian Association meetings, etc. And many of them answered the double purpose of church and school. Some few were taught to read and write. I remember one poor fellow, who said to me: "Oh! Chaplain, if you will just teach me how to read, so that I can read God's Word, and how to write, so that I can write to my wife, there is nothing in this world I will not do for you;" and I shall never forget what a proud fellow he was when in a very short time he had learned both to read his Bible and to write to his wife. But I met during the four years of the war very few Confederate soldiers who could not read and write, and the schools established were generally for the study of Latin, Greek, mathematics, French, German and other similar branches.

The strong religious spirit of the Confederate army is shown by the accurately reported results of the services held among the soldiers. From the minutes of the Chaplains' Association, the estimate of other chaplains and missionaries in position to know, and a very careful compilation of facts and figures from files of religious news-



papers, and hundreds of letters and narratives from chaplains, missionaries and colporteurs, the following estimate is made of the number of men in the army of Northern Virginia who professed faith in Christ during the four years of its existence: During the fall and winter of 1862-63, and spring of 1863, there were at least 1,500 professions. From August, 1863, to the 1st of January, 1864, and to the opening of the Wilderness campaign, at least 2,000 more were added to this number. And from May, 1864, to April, 1865, it is a low estimate to put the number of converts at 4,000.

Add to these figures at least 2,500 who, during the war, were converted in the hospitals, at home, or in Northern prisons (for Christ was in the prisons, and there were revivals at Point Lookout, Fort Delaware, Elmira, Johnson's island, and other points), and we have a grand total of at least 15,000 soldiers of Lee's army alone who professed faith during the four years of the war. Rev. Dr. Bennett ("Great Revival in the Southern Armies," page 413) says: "It was believed that fully one-third of all the soldiers in the field were praying men, and members of some branch of the Christian church. A large proportion of the higher officers were men of faith and prayer, and many others, though not professedly religious, were moral and respectful to all the religious services, and confessed the value of the revival in promoting the efficiency of the army." But figures cannot, of course, give a tithe of the results of a great revival. The comfort, the peace, the strength for hardships, privations, sufferings, trials, temptations—these cannot be counted, but are really of far more value than mere numbers of professed converts. Add to all this, the gladness which these revivals carried to "loved ones at home," who were wont to spend sleepless nights thinking of and praying for the soldier boys at the front, and the influence upon the churches, many of which were blessed with great revivals, directly traceable to



army work, and eternity alone will be able to estimate the glorious results of these army revivals. But was this a genuine and permanent work of grace? Was it not a mere animal excitement produced by the dangers to which the men were exposed, and liable to pass off when those dangers were removed? Are not the accounts of this army work exaggerated? Was not there an abounding wickedness in the army, even to the close of the war? Most certainly there was wickedness in the army. I have been unfortunate if, in endeavoring to portray vividly the power of religion in the Confederate army, I have been understood as representing that the millenium dawned upon us, or that wickedness and vice were entirely banished from our camps. Far from it. It was not uncommon, even during our most powerful revivals, to see a party playing cards not far from where the preacher stood, and to hear the profane oath as you came from the place of prayer, and visitors would be, naturally, greatly shocked at this state of things. But during the most powerful revivals in towns and cities, precisely the same state of things constantly exists, only green blinds or stained glass hide the view, and the church walls obstruct the sound. In the camps all was open and could be seen and heard. There is no doubt that some of the professions of religion in the army were spurious. This has been true in every revival, from the days of Judas Iscariot and Simon Magus, and it was not to be expected that our army work would prove an exception. And yet the conversions in our camps were as genuine works of grace as any that occur in our churches at home, and as large a proportion of the converts proved the reality of their professions as in any revivals. The very material of which our congregations were composed was a safeguard against undue animal excitement in the meetings. We had not women and children, but men to deal with, men who were accustomed to go into the "leaden and iron hail of battle," and



to face death every day, and who could not have been "scared into religion," even if the preachers had tried to do so. Besides there were ministers of every denomination and of different temperaments working together, and if one were disposed to get up any undue excitement, or to use improper "machinery," another would have restrained him.

Quotations could be made from the reports, resolutions and other actions of the Southern Presbyterian General Assembly, the General Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, the Southern Baptist Convention and other church organizations, furnishing the strongest testimony for the genuineness, extent and permanence of this army work. But after all, the best evidence of the genuineness of the revival is to be found in the after lives of professed Christians, and of the young converts, which testimony is not lacking in the career of the Confederate soldier during and since the war. I recall the case of a young lawyer who had borne an outwardly consistent character since he had united with the church some years before the war, but who (although a ready speaker at the bar or on the hustings) could never be induced to lead a prayer-meeting, open a Sunday-school, or conduct family worship—fluent and eloquent for client or party, but dumb when asked to speak for Christ. For some time after joining the army his chaplain urged him in vain to take an active part in the meetings. But after his heart was touched by the power of one of the revivals, and just after a great battle, he came to the chaplain and said: "I wish you would call on me to lead in prayer at the meeting to-night. I have been persuading myself that it was not my duty, but I have been recently led to think that I might be wrong, and as I saw my men fall around me to-day, I was made to feel keenly that I had not exerted over them the influence which I ought to have done, and to register a solemn vow that if God would spare me I





would be more faithful in the future." He became henceforth one of the most active, useful Christian officers in the army, was spared through the war, and is to-day, one of the most efficient laymen in the church. I recall a captain from one of the Southern States who became one of the leading workers in his brigade, and who since the war has been one of the most actively useful and one of the most liberal contributors to every good object of all the laymen in his State. And yet I learn he was of so little worth to his church, so careless in meeting his church duties, before he entered the army, that the church was thinking seriously of excluding him from her fellowship. The Southern Presbyterian gives the following concerning Col. Lewis Minor Coleman:

The Christian character of Lieut.-Col. L. M. Coleman, formerly professor of Latin in the university of Virginia, was wonderfully developed by the war. Before going into the field, notwithstanding his rare mental gifts, he was undemonstrative and retiring in religious matters, shrinking even from public prayer, and scarcely, if ever, rising to the boldness of an exhortation. But thrown among his men, under circumstances which would have left them without the means of grace if he had not broken the thrall of this silence, he rose to the height of the occasion; and in the camp, on the march, whatever the weather, he was found at reveille in front of his company, with eloquent prayer invoking the blessing and aid of Almighty God on them and their undertaking. He became a minister in everything except the accidents of the office—licensure and ordination—and he had decided, if his life were spared until the return of peace, to take his place among the 'legates of the skies' in the Baptist pulpit. Here, then, was one educated by the Holy Spirit, for the ministry, in the school of this war. Why may we not look with hopeful eyes to the army, therefore, as a sphere of triumph for the Gospel, where believers may be edified in the faith, and faith, the gift of God, may be imparted to sinners?

Gen. Clement A. Evans, of Georgia (the gallant and accomplished soldier who succeeded General Gordon in his



brigade and then in his division), was a leading lawyer before the war, but became very active as a Christian in the army, and was gradually led to decide that he would become a preacher of the Gospel. When on a visit to Athens, Ga., in 1869, it was my privilege to fill his pulpit, to renew at his hospitable board the Christian friendship formed in the camp, and to learn from him that three others of his military family had consecrated themselves to the work of preaching the Gospel. There were reported at one of our chaplains' meetings twenty soldiers, from the rank of colonel down, who had determined to preach. I received from our colleges and theological seminaries in 1866 some very striking statistics as to the large number of soldiers who were entering the ministry, and I have strong reasons for the statement that a very large proportion of our evangelical preachers, under sixty and over thirty-five, at the South, learned in the army to "endure hardness as good soldiers of Jesus Christ." And certainly a very large proportion of our church members within the past twenty years have been those who found "Christ in the camp," or had the pure gold of their Christian character refined and purified by the fiery trials through which they were called to pass. Rev. Dr. Richard Hugh Bagby, of Bruington, Va., told me that of twenty-seven members of his church who returned at the close of the war, all save two came back more earnest Christians and more efficient church members than they had ever been, and many other pastors have borne similar testimony.

And certainly the young converts, while in camp, met admirably all the tests of genuine conversion. They used to have brigade prayer-meetings, regiment prayer-meetings, company prayer-meetings and mess-prayer-meetings, and prayer-meetings to prepare for prayer-meetings, until one of our missionaries, Rev. J. E. Chambliss, reported to our chaplains' association that he could find no time in Davis' Mississippi brigade to preach



without conflicting with some prayer-meeting. The earnestness with which these young converts went to work to lead their comrades to Christ was clear evidence of the genuineness of their own conversion. I take space for only a few incidents of their zeal. A youth of the Ninth Louisiana regiment, named Bledsoe, professed conversion in hospital at Charlottesville, under the instructions of Post Chaplain J. C. Hiden, and returned to his brigade with the burning zeal of the young convert determined to do something for the spiritual good of his comrades. Bledsoe hunted diligently through the camp for men who would unite with him in a prayer-meeting, and at last found five others who would agree to do so. These six young soldiers, afraid to begin their meeting in the camp lest they should be interrupted by the jibes and jeers of wicked comrades, went out into a clover field beyond the hearing of their comrades, and began to pray for God's blessing upon themselves and the brigade. The meeting grew nightly in numbers and interest until in about a week Bledsoe came to tell me that a number of men had professed conversion, and they wanted me to go up and take charge of the meeting. I found some 100 in attendance, fifteen professing conversion, and a number of inquirers after the way of life. The meetings grew in interest and were moved into the center of the brigade, where the work went on until over 200 professed to find "peace in believing." In Gordon's Georgia brigade, in a meeting conducted by Dr. A. B. Woodfin, there professed conversion one night a captain, who was known as one of "the bravest of the brave" in that brigade of heroes, and at the same time as one of the most wicked men in the army. After the meeting was over he went back to his quarters rejoicing in his new-found hope, called his company around him, and with deep emotion made them a little talk to this effect: "Men, I have led you into many a battle, and you have followed me like men. Alas! I have led you in wickedness and vice, and you have fol-



lowed me in this, too. I have now resolved to change my course. I have enlisted under the banner of the Cross, and mean, by God's help, to prove a faithful soldier of Jesus as I have been a true soldier to my country. I call upon you, my brave boys, to follow me as I shall try to follow 'the Captain of our salvation,' and I want all who are willing to do so to come, here and now, and give me their hands and let me pray for them." It is hardly necessary to add that the effect was electrical. The men crowded around their loved captain, tears flowed freely, earnest prayers were offered, and the brave fellow continued his personal efforts until his company had become a center of powerful influence for the religious good of their regiment and brigade.

Most potent among the instrumentalities in our work were the liberality and zeal of the young converts. I have never seen more princely liberality than among these Christian soldiers. There are old subscription papers—for regimental library, for tracts, Bibles and religious newspapers, for the Fredericksburg sufferers, and other benevolent objects which show the self-sacrificing liberality of these noble men. In the winter of 1863-64 the Young Men's Christian Association of Posey's (afterward Harris') Mississippi brigade led off in a movement which was followed by a number of other brigades. They solemnly resolved to fast one day in every week in order that they might send that day's rations to the suffering poor of the city of Richmond. Here were these poor fellows away from home, and many of them cut off from all communication with home, receiving only eleven dollars per month in Confederate currency, often getting not more than half rations, and very frequently not that, voluntarily fasting one day in the week in order to send that day's rations to God's poor in the city, for whose defense they were so freely and so heroically offering and sacrificing their lives.

Men think that the manner in which one meets the





"grim monster" Death is an evidence of preparation by simple trust in Christ. This proof was often given by the calm patience, the heroic fortitude, the ecstatic triumph with which our brave fellows went from the din of battle to their glorious crown of rejoicing. On the night before the last day's battle at Second Manassas, Friday, August 29, 1862, Col. W. S. H. Baylor, one of the most widely known and loved young men in the State, was in command of the "Stonewall brigade," which had the year before won its name and immortal fame on these historic plains. Sending for Capt. Hugh White—son of the venerable Dr. William S. White, of Lexington, "Stonewall" Jackson's old pastor, and himself a theological student—who commanded one of the companies in the brigade, "Will" Baylor, as we used familiarly to call him, said to him: "I know the men are very much wearied out by the battle to-day, and that they need all of the rest they can get to fit them for the impending struggle of to-morrow. But I cannot consent that we shall sleep to-night until we have had a brief season of prayer to thank God for the victory and preservation of the day and to invoke His blessing upon us in the great battle which we are to have to-morrow." Capt. Hugh White entered into lively sympathy with Colonel Baylor's feelings, and at once began to arrange for the meeting. He found in his bivouac near by Chaplain A. C. Hopkins, one of those faithful chaplains, who was always found at the post of duty even though it was the line of battle or the advance skirmish line of the army. The men were quietly notified that there would be a prayer-meeting at brigade headquarters, and as many as could be spared from the line of battle promptly gathered at the appointed place. Chaplain Hopkins led the meeting, and it was one of those tender seasons of worship that we frequently had on the eve of battle. The songs, and even the prayers could be distinctly heard by the enemy's line of battle. Will Baylor entered into the service with



the zest of the young convert, and Hugh White with the ripened experience and hearty joy of the Christian of long standing. The next day, when General Lee had ordered forward his whole line, Stonewall Jackson had given his favorite order, "Sweep the field with the bayonet," and the Confederates were pressing forward and sweeping everything before them, Colonel Baylor, with the flag of his regiment in his hands and the shout of victory on his lips, fell in the very forefront of the battle, giving his brave young life to the cause he loved so well. As the flag fell from the nerveless grasp of brave Baylor, Capt. Hugh White sprang forward, caught up the falling colors, waved them in the view of the veterans of the "Stonewall" brigade, and called on them to follow him in the charge. The smoke of battle soon enveloped the young hero and his comrades, but when the line had swept irresistibly forward, driving the enemy from the field, and adding "Second Manassas" to the series of Confederate victories, it was found that Hugh White, captain of the "Liberty Hall volunteers," a hero on former victorious fields, had also been killed. And thus those two young men, who had mingled so lovingly in the prayer-meeting of the evening before, entered together through the gates of heaven.

When Gen. J. E. B. Stuart, the flower of cavaliers, fell at Yellow Tavern in the heroic stand which prevented Sheridan from riding into Richmond, he was carried into the city and was visited by President Davis, who tenderly took his hand and asked him how he felt. He promptly replied: "Easy, but willing to die if God and my country think I have fulfilled my destiny and done my duty." To the doctor who was holding his wrist and counting his pulse, he said: "Doctor, I suppose I am going fast now. It will soon be over. But God's will be done. I hope I have fulfilled my destiny to my country, and my duty to God." Turning to Rev. Dr. Joshua Peterkin, of the Episcopal church, of which General Stuart had long



been a consistent member, he asked him to sing

"Rock of Ages, cleft for me:

Let me hide myself in Thee;"

and he himself joined in the song with all the strength he could summon. He joined with fervor in prayer with the minister present, and again said just before he passed away: "I am going fast now; I am resigned. God's will be done." And thus the dashing soldier "fell on sleep," and left behind the record of a noble life, as well as a simple trust in Christ. Col. Lewis Minor Coleman, the accomplished scholar, the great teacher, the chivalric gentleman, the humble Christian, left his chair at the university of Virginia in May, 1861, raised an artillery company, was gradually promoted until he became colonel of artillery and widely known as an accomplished artillery officer, and fell at Fredericksburg on the 13th of December, 1862, by the same shot that cut down Arthur Robinson, a grandson of William Wirt, and Randolph Fairfax, one of the noblest young men laid on the altar of Confederate independence. Colonel Coleman lingered for several months in great suffering but with noble Christian patience, and left behind a wealth of dying words worthy to adorn our Christian literature.

Rev. Dabney Carr Harrison, once chaplain at the university of Virginia, was delightfully located in a quiet pastorate when the war broke out. He did not enter the army at once, though his soul was stirred with patriotic fire. But when at Bull Run, July 18, 1861, he lost his gallant cousin, Maj. Carter H. Harrison, and at Manassas, July 21st, there fell his noble cousins, Holmes and Tucker Conrad, and his pure and beloved brother, Lieut. Peyton Randolph Harrison, he calmly said: "I must take my brother's place," raised a company of which he was made captain, and did noble service both as a soldier and as a minister of the Gospel. At Fort Donelson three balls passed through his hat without harming him, a fourth cut his temple, and a fifth passed through his right



lung inflicting a mortal wound. Rev. Dr. Moses D. Hoge closes a beautiful sketch of this noble Christian soldier as follows: "A little while before he died, he slept quietly for a few minutes. In dreams his soul wandered back to yesterday's conflict. He was again in the battle. The company for which he had toiled and prayed and suffered so much was before him and he was wounded—lying on the field. But in dreams he had not lost

. . . . . 'the unconquerable will,  
And courage never to submit or yield.'

Starting out of sleep, he sat once more erect, and exclaimed: 'Company K, you have no captain now; but never give up! never surrender!' The arms of his faithful attendant received him as he rose, and now supported him tenderly as his drooping form grew heavier. With his head pillowed on a soldier's breast, he sank, peacefully as a babe, into that deep sleep which no visions of strife shall ever disturb."

Col. William Johnson Pegram was widely known and widely honored as "the boy artillerist," who by skill and heroic daring fought his way up from private to colonel of artillery. Capt. W. Gordon McCabe, who served on his staff, thus closes a beautiful sketch of him:

On the first day of April, just as the earth was beginning once more to grow glad with flowers, came to him the last of many fights. The brilliant artillerist, the pride of his corps, who during four years of active service had never lost a gun, was to fall at 'Five Forks,' with all his wounds in front, fighting such odds as had never yet confronted him. For two days previous to the battle he had undergone immense fatigue; in the saddle day and night, with slight intermission, for forty-eight hours; wet, hungry, no blankets; engaging almost continually the cavalry of the enemy. On the very morning of the fight his breakfast consisted of a handful of parched corn, which he generously shared with a comrade. In the center of the line of battle were posted one gun from his own battalion, commanded by Lieutenant Hollis, Ellett's battery, and a section from Braxton's battalion, commanded by Lieutenant Early. Further to





the right, sweeping the Gilliam field, were the remaining three guns of Ellett's battery. There had been during the morning some sharp skirmishing with the enemy, but everything had grown quiet toward midday, and old soldiers doubted whether there would be any general engagement. Pegram, wearied down by fatigue, was sleeping soundly among the guns on the right, when sudden, ripping volleys of musketry from the center told him that the enemy were charging his batteries. He instantly jumped into his saddle, and rode at full speed down the line of battle to his guns. Lieutenants Hollis and Early were using double canister at close range, and their cannoneers were serving their pieces in a manner beyond all praise. Within thirty yards of the guns the dense columns of the enemy were staggering under their rapid fire. Pegram rode in, speaking cheerily to the men, a sweet serenity on his boyish face, but the old light of battle shining in his eyes. "Fire your canister low, men!" he shouted as the blue lines surged still nearer to the heated guns. It was his last order on a field of battle. Suddenly he reeled and fell from his saddle. Small wonder that he was first to fall. The infantry were lying down, by order, firing over a low "curtain" which they had hastily thrown up; he was sitting on his white horse in the front line of battle, cheering and encouraging his men. He had received his mortal wound, and knew it. "Tell my mother and sisters," he said firmly, "that I commend them to God's protection. It will be a great blow to them at home to lose me so soon after 'brother;' but for myself, I am ready. I have done my duty and now I turn to my Saviour." He knew nothing of the bitter defeat. When victory no longer perched on the battle-flag of his old battalion, he had received his last promotion at the hands of the great Captain. He met a soldier's death, and had but a soldier's burial. Wrapped carefully in a coarse blanket he was laid to rest in the bosom of his mother State, Virginia. Thus passed away "this incomparable young man," in the twenty-fourth year of his age. It was his lot to be tried in great events, and his fortune to be equal to the trial. In his boyhood he had nourished noble ambitions, in his young manhood he had won a fame greater than his modest nature ever dreamed of, and at last there was accorded to him on the field of battle the death counted sweet and honorable.



A noble fellow who fell at Gaines' Mill, the 27th of June, 1862, said to comrades who offered to bear him to the rear: "No! I die. Tell my parents I die happy. On! on to victory! Jesus is with me, and will give me all the help I need." A Georgian captain, who was shot in the mouth and unable to speak, wrote in my diary, when I visited him in the field hospital at the Wilderness: "I do not know how it will be with me, whether I shall die or recover, but my full trust is in Christ, and I am perfectly resigned to God's will." Maj. Augustus M. Gordon, who fell at Chancellorsville, said (they were his last words): "Lay me down now, Captain, for I am dying. I am not afraid to die, for I know I am going to be with Jesus." We read in one of the Georgia papers of a Georgia soldier, who, at Chancellorsville, had his left leg shattered from the ankle to the knee, but who, hearing that a comrade was wounded, said to those who were about to bear him to the rear, "He is worse wounded than I am, carry him off; I can wait here!" Before the ambulance corps could get back, a minie ball had passed through his unselfish, generous heart. A writer who visited our wounded on a field of blood says: "As you pass from one to another, washing their wounds and administering some cordial or food, you will hear such petitions as these: 'Will you write to my mother that I trust in Jesus, her Jesus?' 'Oh, sir, can you get one brief message to my wife in Virginia? Tell her to train up the children for heaven.' Here is a soldier just breathing his last. You kneel and whisper in his ear, 'Jesus, Saviour.' He smiles and ceases to breathe." We find accounts of two soldiers at the point of death. With the first the following conversation occurred: "Are you willing to die here among strangers?" "Perfectly." "Have you a wife?" "Yes." "Are you willing to die without seeing her?" "If God wills it, I am." "Have you children, and if so, how many?" "Five." "Can you trust them in the hands of Jesus?" "Yes; He is all my



trust." His countenance was the impersonation of resignation and peace. The second said, in answer to the inquiry whether he loved the Saviour: "Oh, yes, sir; I love Him with all my heart. I know that I am dying, and that I will soon be in heaven, to reign with Him forever."

Capt. Abram Poindexter, son of Rev. Dr. A. M. Poindexter, of Virginia, was one of the noblest Christian characters, and one of the most active workers for Christ in the army. Rev. Dr. J. A. Broadus, in a memorial address on Dr. Poindexter, thus described the heroic death of this young soldier, and the influence he exerted on his men:

The older son, Abram Wimbish Poindexter, at the age of twenty-one years, enlisted as a volunteer before his brother's death in an infantry company which he materially assisted in raising, and was elected first lieutenant. Afterward, by the death of Captain Easley, he became captain; it was Company K, Forty-sixth Virginia. The young man had made a public profession of religion the previous year, was a graduate of Wake Forest college, and principal of Talladega academy, in Alabama. As teacher and as officer he showed superior talents and great force and charin of character. Before Petersburg, July 30, 1864, the enemy exploded their now famous mine, and poured through the great gap in the works, enfilading with deadly fire the thin Confederate lines on either side. Captain Poindexter's company was especially exposed, and stood its ground amid heavy loss. Every officer but himself was borne away severely wounded. Addressing the little remnant of his company, the young captain said: "Boys, we must hold this position, or die in our places, for the salvation of the town depends upon the enemy's not carrying these works." Presently an officer rode by, and seeing the little handful of a company standing firm, he asked who was their commander. They replied, pointing to a dead body, "There's our captain; he told us we must hold these works, or die in the defense, and we mean to do it." And they did. Without an officer, the little fragment of a company obeyed their dead captain's commands, and stood firm before the enfilading fire and the rush of the foe.



The career of two boys in Charlottesville, Va., French Strother Bibb and Willie M. Abell, touchingly illustrated the morale of the Confederate armies. French Bibb left the university of Virginia in the spring of 1863, and joined the Charlottesville artillery, of which he was made junior lieutenant, and in which position he discharged his duties so faithfully, so bravely, that he won the respect of his superiors, and the admiration and love of the entire battery, nearly all of whom were his seniors in age. He fell on the victorious field of Chancellorsville, heroically doing his duty, and, as he was borne from the field by an irreligious comrade, he calmly said to him: "I am willing to die for my country; and I think it had better be myself than you." Willie Abell gallantly rode with his regiment, proving himself a very hero in the fight, and at the same time illustrated the power and influence of the Gospel in his intercourse with his fellows, until he fell in the discharge of a delicate and important duty, and left behind the name of a hero. The Charlottesville Chronicle thus told the story of his death: "Mr. Abell, who was acting adjutant of his regiment (Fifth Virginia cavalry), had gone forward to reconnoiter in advance of the skirmish line, and discovered that a squadron belonging to his regiment was in a position where it was about to be cut off, of which it was unconscious. He started immediately to inform the colonel that it might be withdrawn, and just at this moment he received the fatal shot through the body; but in this condition he galloped on, gave the information, saved the squadron, and then lay down to die. Such are the young men we are losing."

I am aware of the fact that my illustrations have been drawn largely from the army of Northern Virginia, but this has been by no means because that army is more fruitful in illustrations than the other armies of the Confederacy, but because I served in that army, and have deemed it best to use illustrations that came under my





own personal observation or were attested by those whom I personally knew. But I will now give some other illustrations culled from the annals of other armies of the Confederacy. Rev. Dr. W. W. Bennett, of the Southern Methodist church, in his admirable book on "The Great Revival in the Southern Armies," gives the following concerning the battle of Shiloh: "The instances of heroic valor in the battle of Shiloh are abundant. A chaplain, Rev. I. T. Tichenor, of the Seventeenth Alabama regiment, in a letter to Governor Watts, of that State, who at one time commanded the regiment, says: 'During this engagement we were under a cross fire on the left wing from three directions. Under it the boys wavered. I had been wearied, and was sitting down, but seeing them waver, I sprang to my feet, took off my hat, waved it over my head, walked up and down the line, and, as they say, "preached them a sermon." I reminded them that it was Sunday. That at that hour (11:30 o'clock) all their home folks were praying for them; that Tom Watts—excuse the familiar way in which I employed so distinguished a name—had told us he would listen with an eager ear to hear from the Seventeenth; and shouting your name loud over the roar of battle, I called upon them to stand there and die, if need be, for their country. The effect was evident. Every man stood to his post, every eye flashed, and every heart beat high with desperate resolve to conquer or die. The regiment lost one-third of the number carried into the field.' Among the Christian soldiers that fell was Lieutenant-Colonel Holbrook, of a Kentucky regiment. After the battle, several of his officers came to see him in the hospital. He was dying fast, but desired to be propped up in bed, and then he talked with them like a Christian soldier: 'Gentlemen, in the course of my official duties with you, I have had little or no occasion to speak to you upon the subject of religion, but this is a time when, as fellow-men, we may commune frankly together. And I



desire to bear witness to the fact that I am at the present moment deriving all my strength and consolation from the firm reliance which I have upon the blessings of religion.'"

One of the rarest instances of youthful heroism is recorded in connection with this battle. Charlie Jackson, whose brief career as a soldier and whose happy death we place here upon permanent record, was worthy of the great name he bore:

His father raised a company of soldiers, in which he was permitted to drill with the privates, and finally became so expert in the manual of arms that, young as he was, he was chosen drill-master. In due time, marching orders were received. Then the father, consulting the age of his boy, and probably his own paternal feelings, gave him to understand that it was his wish he should remain at home. To this Charlie strenuously demurred, and plainly told his parent that if he could not go with him he would join another company. Yielding to his obstinacy, a sort of silent consent was given, and the lad left Memphis with his comrades. The regiment to which they belonged was detached to Burnsville, several miles distant from Corinth, and here it remained until the Friday or Saturday preceding the battle. Orders were then received that it should repair at once to the field and take its position. Charlie was asleep at the time of the departure, and the father, unwilling that one so young should undergo the fatigue of the long march of twenty miles and the dangers of the coming fight, gave orders that he should not be disturbed. Several hours after the boy awoke of his own accord. At a glance his eye took in the condition of affairs, and his knowledge of coming events satisfied him of the cause. With him, to think was to act. He seized his little gun, a miniature musket which his father had made for him, and alone started on the trail of his absent regiment. Hour after hour he trudged along, and finally, just as they were about halting preparatory to going into battle, he succeeded in joining his company. He had traveled more than fifteen miles. His father chided him, but how could he do otherwise than admire the indomitable spirit of his boy? The battle commenced. Charlie took his place by his father's side, and was soon in the thickest of the fight. A bullet struck him in the body and tore an



ugly wound. Still he pressed on, firing, cheering, and charging with the remainder of his regiment. He seemed not to know the sensation of fear, and his youthful example on more than one occasion was the rallying point from which the men took fresh spirit. Suddenly at a late hour in the day, the little fellow fell, shot through the leg a few inches below the hip. He gave a cheer and told his father to go on. "Don't mind me," said he, "but keep on; I'll lie here till you come back." This, of course, the feelings of the parent would not permit him to do, and picking him up in his arms, he carried him to the nearest hospital. Within a day or two Charlie was brought to his home in Memphis, feeble, yet full of hope and courage. Dr. Keller was called upon to examine the wound, and, if necessary, to perform amputation; but at a glance his experienced eye saw that the poor boy was beyond the hope of recovery. Mortification had set in, and an operation would only increase his sufferings without prolonging life. The lad noticed the sober countenance of the physician as he turned away and went to an adjoining room to break the intelligence to the weeping father and mother. Nothing could be done but to relieve him of pain by means of opiates. A few moments afterward he returned to the bedside of the sufferer, when the young hero abruptly met him with the question, "Doctor, will you answer me a straightforward question, and tell me the truth?" The physician paused a moment, and then said: "Yes, Charlie, I will; but you must prepare for bad news." "Can I live?" was the response. "No; nothing can save you now but a miracle from heaven." "Well, I have thought so myself. I have felt as if I was going to die. Do father and mother know this?" "Yes," replied the surgeon, "I have just told them." "Please ask them to come in here." When the parents had done so, and taken their places on either side of the bed, Charlie reached out, grasped their hands in his and said: "Dear father and mother, Dr. Keller says that I can't live. And now I want to ask your forgiveness for all wrong I have done. I have tried to be a good boy in every way but one, and that was when I disobeyed you both and joined the army. I couldn't help that, for I felt as if I ought to be right where you were, father, and to fight as long as I was able. I'm only sorry that I can't fight through the war. If I have said



anything wrong, or done anything wrong, won't you forgive me?" The afflicted parents could only weep their assent. "Now, father," continued the boy, "one thing more. Don't stay here with me, but go back to the camp. Mother will take care of me, and your services are more necessary in your company than they are at home. I am not afraid to die, and I wish I had a thousand lives to lose in the same way. And, father, tell the boys when you get back how I died—just as a soldier ought to. Tell them to fight the Yankees as long as there is one left in the country, and never give up! Whenever you fill up the company with new men, let them know that besides their country there's a little boy in heaven who will watch them and pray for them as they go into battle."

After describing a revival of great interest, deep power, and large results in the army of Tennessee, a chaplain writes:

But soon came the order to march; the chapel and the snug cabins were exchanged for the drenched and dreary bivouac, and the sound of the gospel of peace for the notes of whistling minies and bursting shells. In the battle and in the hospital, the genuineness of those army conversions was fully tested. In the terrible campaign that followed, whenever the smoke of battle cleared away and the weary men had a little rest, they gathered their shattered but undaunted cohorts, and, with renewed zeal, and with love tested in the fire of war, repledged their faith to each other. Lying behind the strong barrier of the Chattahoochee river for a few days, these Christian soldiers built a brush arbor and beneath it many souls were born of God. Dying, these noble men of the South gave testimony to the power of Divine grace. "Can I do anything for you?" said the missionary, kneeling by the side of a private, shot through the neck. "Yes; write to my poor wife." "What shall I write?" "Say to my dear wife, it's all right." This was written. "What else shall I write?" "Nothing else, all's right." And thus he died. He was a convert of the camp.

"Passing through a large stable where the wounded lay," says Mr. Redding, "I noticed a man whose





head was frosted with age. After giving him wine and food, I said, 'My friend, you are an old man. Do you enjoy the comforts of religion?' 'Oh, yes,' he exclaimed, 'I have been a member of the church for twenty-five years. Often in our little church at home our minister told us that religion was good under all circumstances, and now I have found it true; for even here in this old stable, with my leg amputated, and surrounded by the dead and dying, I am just as happy as I can be.' "

"In the retreat of our army from middle Tennessee, one of the soldiers," says Dr. W. A. Mulkey, a surgeon in the army, "was struck by an exploded shell, the ponderous mass sweeping away his right arm and leaving open the abdominal cavity, its contents falling upon his saddle. In a moment he sank from his horse to the ground, but soon revived, and for two hours talked with as much calmness and sagacity as though he were engaged in a business transaction. He said, 'I know that my wound is mortal, and that in a very short time I shall be in eternity; but I die as has been my aim for years—prepared to meet my God.' After exhorting those who stood around him to live the life of Christians, he said, 'Tell my wife to educate my two children and train them up in such a way as to meet me in a better world.' He then observed that in entering the army he was influenced alone by a sense of duty; that he did not regret the step he had taken, and that while dying he felt he had tried to discharge his duties both as a soldier and Christian. Thus died an humble private in the ranks of our cavalry, in whose life were most harmoniously blended the characters of patriot, soldier, and Christian."

In a letter from General Johnston's army, Rev. J. J. Hutchinson describes a most pleasing scene. He says: "Ten days ago General Pendleton, a hero of Manassas memory, preached to the soldiers at Dalton. General Johnston and very many other officers were present. On the same day Major-General Stewart, who is an elder



in the Presbyterian church, assisted in this brigade in the administration of the sacrament of the Lord's supper. On the same day I preached to General Finley's brigade, where the general and his staff were present, and where he united audibly with our prayers. General Cleburne, the hero of many battlefields, treated me with much attention and kindness; had a place prepared for preaching in the center of his division, where himself and most of his officers were present, and where I was assisted by Brigadier-General Lowrey, who sat in the pulpit with me and closed the services of the hour with prayer. I partook of the hospitality of General Lowrey at dinner, and spent several delightful hours in profitable religious conversation. The general is a Baptist preacher, and, like the commander of the division, is a hero of many well-fought battlefields. He takes great interest in the soldiers' religious welfare, often preaches to them, and feels that the ministry is still his high and holy calling." A writer said of General Johnston's army not long after the opening of the campaign from Dalton to Atlanta: "It is wonderful to see with what patience our soldiers bear up under trials and hardships. I attribute this in part to the great religious change in our army. Our army seems to be impressed with a high sense of an overruling Providence. They have become Christian patriots and have a sacred object to accomplish—an object dearer to them than life."

Rev. L. B. Payne says of the work in General Johnston's army: "Since my last report, which was for April, we have been in line of battle or on the march nearly every day. Notwithstanding we have had prayer-meetings in the breastworks several times, and I have preached some six or seven times; and, thank God! the revival still goes on." Rev. L. R. Redding reported from the lines near Atlanta: "A most gracious revival is in progress in Gist's brigade. We have built a bush arbor in rear of our line of battle, where we have services twice



a day. Up to the present writing (July 18th), twenty-five have joined the church, and penitents by the score are found nightly at the altar. In other portions of the army, chaplains and missionaries report sweeping revivals in progress. Thus, notwithstanding the booming of cannon and bursting of shell, the good work goes bravely on." Rev. J. B. McFerrin wrote from Atlanta to the *Southern Christian Advocate*: "The other day I rode to the line of battle to see the soldiers as they were resting in a shady wood. To my great joy a young captain whom I had baptized in his infancy approached me and said: 'I wish to join the church, and I wish you to give me a certificate; the Lord has converted me.' I gave him the document with a glad heart. 'Now,' said he, 'if I fall in battle, let my mother know of this transaction. It will afford her great joy.' " Rev. Neil Gillis, writing to the same paper, from camp on the Chattahoochee, said: "I never heard or read of anything like the revival at this place. The conversions were powerful and some of them very remarkable. One man told me that he was converted at the very hour in which his sister was writing him a letter on her knees praying that he might be saved at that moment." Not only in the army at home did our soldiers manifest the deepest interest in religion, but even in the dreary prisons of the North they prayed for and received the Divine blessing. An officer at Johnson's island wrote to the *Southern Presbyterian*: "This is the last quarter of a long, long twelve months' confinement. I try to pass my time as profitably as I can. We have preaching regularly every Sabbath, prayer-meetings two or three times a week, and worship in my room every night. We also have a Young Men's Christian Association, masonic meetings, etc. I attend all of these and fill out the rest of my time by reading the Bible. We have had some precious religious times. There have been about 100 conversions; colonels, majors, captains and lieutenants being among the number." The incidents



of the campaign are rich in spiritual fruits. In hospital and on the open field the Christian soldiers met death bravely. Said a young Kentuckian to a minister who asked him; "Do you think you will recover?" "No," said he; "tell my brother that I died in a holy cause, and am ready to meet God."

It is now, looking back from times of great peace, a matter of wonder how men could calmly worship under the fire of formidable batteries. "Late one afternoon," says Rev. C. W. Miller, writing of the scenes on the retreat from Dalton, "the firing along the line had lulled, and the writer called the brigade together for worship. A chapter from the Holy Book had been read, a song sung, and several fervent prayers offered. Presently, while a soldier was praying and all were devoutly kneeling before God, a distant report as of the discharge of artillery was heard; then in an instant whirr, whirr, whirr—boom! went a 32-pound shell just above our heads, and buried its fragments in the hillside a little beyond us. But the 'devout soldier' prayed on. Another and another shell shrieked above us, but the prayer was regularly finished, the preacher pronounced the benediction, and the men went to their casemates, as they called their holes in the ground. I have related this incident to show you how indifferent men become to danger under the indurating influence of war." Dr. Bennett gives this interesting statement: "Let us now for a moment leave these noble Christian soldiers, in their happy meetings under the fire of musketry and cannon, and look in upon their comrades who languished in Northern prisons. We have before us a letter, written from Fort Delaware to the Christian Observer, giving an account of a revival among the Confederate officers there confined. They had in the morning at half-past nine an 'inquirer's prayer-meeting;' at 12 m. 'the professor's prayer-meeting, where the church members pray for each other, leading the meeting in turn.' We have here





in our barracks three ministers—Rev. Dr. Handy, of the Presbyterian church of Portsmouth, Va., and Captain Harris, of Georgia, and Captain Samford, of Texas, local Methodist preachers. A revival of religion has been in progress for two weeks—17 converts, many backsliders reclaimed, and a refreshing season to old professors, numbering 150 reported names.” Rev. Dr. Kavanaugh reports over 500 conversions in two brigades in the Southwest. He says in his report: “Wicked men come into the congregation, or into the outskirts of it, and are suddenly stricken down and fall to the earth, and remain for hours speechless and apparently unconscious.”

At Atlanta the Confederates held that city against the heavy battalions of General Sherman. The fights along the lines were frequent and deadly, but the religious enthusiasm of the soldiers was undiminished. “They are not afraid of death,” writes a devoted chaplain, A. D. McVoy, “and are ready to die when God calls them. The work of God is going on amid the cannon’s roar, the fatiguing monotony of the trenches, and the heroic movements of the picket line. Religion is infusing a spirit of fortitude, endurance and determination into the hearts of the soldiers that no hardship, no suffering, can undermine or break down.” Bishop Lay, of the Protestant Episcopal church, in a letter to a relative in Charleston, S. C., describes a scene of the deepest interest in the same army. The bishop was earnestly laboring as a missionary in the Georgia army. He says: “Yesterday, in Strahl’s brigade, I preached and confirmed nine persons. Last night we had a very solemn service in General Hood’s room, some forty persons, chiefly generals and staff officers, being present. I confirmed General Hood and one of his aides, Captain Gordon, of Savannah, and a young lieutenant from Arkansas. The service was animated, the praying good. Shells exploded near by all the time. General Hood, unable to kneel, supported himself on his crutch and staff, and with bowed head



received the benediction. Next Sunday I am to administer the communion at headquarters. To-night ten or twelve are to be confirmed in Clayton's division. The enemy there are within 250 yards of our line, and the firing is very constant." Dr. McFerrin writes from the Georgia army: "Meetings have been frequently held when the soldiers were in line of battle. The religious interest, I think, has not at all abated since our great revival in the winter and spring. Hundreds in many parts of the army are seeking the fellowship of Christians by uniting with the Church of the Lord Jesus Christ." Asa Hartz, a gallant and gifted Confederate officer, thus writes from the Federal prison on Johnson's island: "We vary our monotony with an occasional exchange. May I tell you what I mean by that? Well, it is a simple ceremony. God help us! The 'exchange' is placed on a small wagon drawn by one horse, his friends form a line in the rear, and the procession moves; then passing through the gate, it winds its way slowly round the prison walls to a little grove north of the enclosure. The 'exchange' is taken out of the wagon and lowered into the earth; a prayer, an exhortation, a spade, a headboard, a mound of fresh sod, and the friends return to prison again—and that's all of it. Our friend is 'exchanged;' a grave attests the fact to mortal eyes, and one of God's angels has recorded the 'exchange' in the book above. Time and the elements will soon smooth down the little hillock which marks his lonely bed, but invisible friends will hover around it till the dawn of that great day when all the armies shall be marshaled into line again, when the wars of time shall cease and the great eternity of peace shall commence."

Let us add to these impressive incidents the rare story of the heroic sacrifice of Samuel Davis, of Tennessee, which cannot be better told than with the words of Dr. Barbee in a memorial address published in the Confederate Veteran:



He was a volunteer in the army of Tennessee, and had been detailed with others to the secret service, with instructions to gather all possible information concerning the enemy. In the execution of his mission he had surreptitiously obtained possession of manuscripts which contained valuable information for General Bragg, the disclosure of which might have proved injurious to the Union army. Making all possible speed to escape, he was finally apprehended by the scouts of the Federal army, and upon examination of his person and belongings the fatal papers were found concealed in his boot and in the seat of his saddle. Having been conveyed to Pulaski, Tenn., he was brought before the commanding general, Dodge, who endeavored, by all honorable means, to induce the prisoner to reveal the name of his accomplice who was primarily guilty in this affair. He dealt tenderly with the young man, even evincing paternal sympathy, and proffered his release from custody and the sending of him under escort to his own army, if he would disclose the name of his informant. The general suggested that, being quite young, the prisoner might not fully appreciate his peril; adding that if he persistently refused to tell what he knew, it would become necessary to order a court-martial and send him before that tribunal; and that his conviction was inevitable, death being the penalty of the offense charged.

The young hero respectfully assured the general that he thoroughly understood the case, and calmly announced his readiness to die. He put an end to the discussion by saying: "General, it is useless to argue the question with me; my mind is made up, and if I had a thousand lives I would sacrifice them all before I would violate my word and betray my informant." The court-martial was ordered and Davis was tried and convicted, and sentenced to be hanged by the neck until he was dead. He received the announcement of his sentence with dignity, sat down and wrote a farewell letter to his mother, which, with some mementoes, he requested to have sent to the loved ones at home; then quietly addressed himself to his personal preparations for the final hour.

The next day, when he had reached the place of execution, an officer galloped up to the scene, and hastily dismounting went directly to the hapless young man, and at the last moment, touching him upon the shoulder,



renewed the proposal which General Dodge had made to him originally. Looking into the empty coffin which was soon to receive his dead body, and at the noose swinging idly over his head, he hesitated a moment, then putting the cup of life from him, he mounted the scaffold with a firm step. The black cap was dropped over his face, the noose was adjusted, the trap was sprung, and an ideal soldier leaped from the scenes of blood and carnage to the bosom of his God, leaving an immortality of fame behind him.

It is nothing to the discredit of Sam Davis that he was a spy. Some of the most exemplary Christians in the world have acted in this capacity, and it never once occurred to them that they were violating the law of God or outraging a well-regulated public sentiment. One of the most distinguished captains of the world's history, Joshua, the son of Nun, was a spy, and narrowly escaped apprehension. He feared God and it was he who said: "Let others do as they may, as for me and my house, we will serve the Lord."

It is a distinguished honor to be selected by the commander of an army for the secret service, and sent on the perilous mission of spy. Only men of known sagacity, cool, self-contained men, who are fruitful in personal resources, and confessedly men of high courage, are ever sent on errands so fraught with danger. Hence when one thus employed fails in his undertaking, and is called to pay the penalty of death for his sublime daring, it is cause for universal regret and sorrow. Major André died, wept, honored and sung by his countrymen, and Americans have ever mentioned the name of that unfortunate soldier with tenderness and respect; while George III. conferred the honorable distinction of knighthood upon his family.

Sam Davis was one of that exceptional class to whom fear is a stranger. He would have stood in the pass of Thermopylæ, and would not have been the sole survivor who fled to the city and reported the result of the unequal contest. Like Nathan Hale, a captain in the Colonial army during the Revolution of 1776, whose last words were: "My only regret is that I have but one life to give for my country," Sam Davis felt it was a joy to die, rather than to live with blighted honor and a ruined conscience.

I would leave this whole question of the permanent





morale of our army to the conduct of the "men who wore the gray" since the war; for while thousands slept in soldiers' graves, many came back to resume their old places, or rather to make for themselves new places in business and social circles. These men were exposed to some peculiar temptations at the close of the war, and it would not have been strange if they had entered upon a career of lawlessness which would have made the condition of our unhappy South far worse than it was. After four years' absence from any industrial pursuit, with fondly cherished hopes all blighted, plans all frustrated, fortunes swept away, and avenues of business all closed, they returned to their desolated homes. Alas! in many instances blackened ruins marked the spot of their once happy homes, and there were loved ones to tell tales of outrage and wrong which men of Anglo-Saxon blood have not been wont to hear unmoved. To make matters worse (under the then avowed purpose of Andrew Johnson to "make treason odious"), there were stationed in every county squads of provost marshals and freedman's bureau agents, who were not always discreet, and not unfrequently provoked serious collisions between these returned soldiers and themselves, or the newly emancipated negroes. Then followed the "carpet-bag rule" of the Southern States, which is a blot upon our history, concerning which Dr. John A. Broadus so well said at an educational banquet in Brooklyn four years after the war: "You, brethren at the North, think that you have a great deal for which to forgive the South for the four years of war. I will not discuss that. But I tell you, brethren, we of the South have a great deal for which to forgive the North for the four years since the war." And yet, despite all these temptations to a different course, these men, instead of idly sitting down to rake in the ashes of hopes and ruined fortunes, went to work in the corn, cotton and tobacco fields; in the offices, shops, stores, foundries and factories; on the railways, in the mines, and in



every place where honest toil could earn a support. A great deal has been written about "the New South" and its wonderful prosperity; but it is due alike to the truth of history and to these men to say that this prosperity has been brought about, not so much by foreign immigration or foreign capital, as by the pluck, energy, skill and patient industry—the brains and brawn—of the "men in gray" and the boys they have reared. The men who have managed our railways, mines, furnaces, foundries, factories, and great business enterprises; who have filled our offices, State and Federal, since they have been allowed to do so; who have been our leading lawyers, physicians, professors, engineers, editors, preachers, mechanics, etc., have been the "men who wore the gray."

In the summer of 1865 I was traveling one day along a country road in Virginia, when I saw a young man plowing in the field, guiding the plow with one hand, while an empty sleeve hung at his side. When he drew near, singing merrily at his work, I recognized him as a young man whom I had known in the army. I knew his history. Raised in the lap of luxury, he had resisted its temptations, and when the war broke out he was about to bear off the highest honors of one of our colleges, and seemed destined to shine in his chosen profession, for which his tastes and talents fitted him. He was one of the first to step to the front when the South called on her sons to rally to her defense, and was one of the best of her noble soldiers. To see him thus, then, his hopes blighted, his fortune wrecked, and his body maimed for life, deeply touched my heart, and my words of greeting and sympathy were quite warm. I shall never forget how the noble fellow, straightening himself up, replied with a proud smile: "Oh, Brother Jones, that is all right. I thank God that I have one arm left and an opportunity to use it for the support of those I love." Several months after, I met General Lee in Lexington, when he came to take charge of Washington college, and he asked me, as



he frequently did, "How are our soldiers getting on these hard times?" I related to him, among others, the above incident. The old chieftain's face flushed, his eyes filled with tears, and he said: "It is just like them, sir! It is just like my poor boys! They were the noblest fellows that the sun ever shone upon."

That was an impressive scene which occurred in the spring of 1893 in Hampton Roads, near the very spot where the Merrimac defeated the Monitor, and revolutionized the naval warfare of the world. Representatives of the navies of the nations were gathered there preparatory to the grand "Columbian naval review" in New York harbor. One day a United States dispatch boat quietly glided in among them, and at once the guns on all the men-of-war of all of the navies there assembled greeted the newcomer with a salute. What does this mean? Who is on board that dispatch boat whom the navies of the world are honoring? He is Hilary A. Herbert, late private soldier of the old Fourth Alabama regiment, but then secretary of the navy of this great republic, and a representative of the morale of the Confederate armies.

That was a notable incident which took place in the house of representatives at Washington several years ago, when the then "leader of the house" closed the high debate on a great question with a speech worthy of the subject and of his own reputation for able and scholarly argument; and the bill he advocated having triumphantly passed the house, his friends gathered around him and, raising the champion on their shoulders, carried him in triumph from the hall. Who is he whom eminent national men thus honor? He is the Hon. William L. Wilson, who was a gallant private soldier in the Seventh Virginia cavalry, whose daring and intelligent scouting located Sheridan's position at Trevilian's depot in the summer of 1864, when Wade Hampton and Fitz Lee defeated him so badly and drove him pellmell back to Grant's lines.



He was afterward postmaster-general of the United States, now president of Washington and Lee university, and may be taken as a fair specimen of the morale of the Confederate armies. For some years prior to the last session of Congress, the speaker of the house—a position conceded to be only second to that of President of the United States—was Hon. Charles F. Crisp, of Georgia, who served through the war as a gallant private soldier in the Tenth Virginia regiment, and may be called a product of the morale of the Confederate armies.

The Confederates have no reason to retract the views they held, nor any cause to be ashamed of the men who led them; nor of the fight they made against overwhelming numbers and resources. And, after considering fairly the character of the Confederate soldiery for general intelligence, decided morality, patriotic spirit, true courage and magnanimous soul, it may be finally and permanently recorded of them, as it is similarly written of their fallen Confederacy:

No armies ever rose so fair,  
None fell so pure of crime.





AN OUTLINE OF CONFEDERATE MILITARY  
HISTORY

BY

BRIG.-GEN. CLEMENT A. EVANS.



## AN OUTLINE OF CONFEDERATE MILITARY HISTORY.

ONLY a broad general view of military operations during the war between the Confederate States of America and the United States of America may be expected in this sketch. The object of the brief story of the great struggle herein told is to simply show the progress of the leading military events which at length determined the fate of the Southern Confederacy. The political aspects of the contention between the great belligerents will receive little notice, it being sufficient to observe that the Confederate States claimed the right to be one of the nations of the earth, and this claim was denied by the United States. Upon this issue war was joined between the two powers, and thereupon foreign nations accorded belligerent rights to both. The details of the struggle have been given by able writers in the various volumes of this general work.

### INITIAL EVENTS.

The Confederate government was formed by seven organized States, which, having seceded from the United States by separate action, and thus become each an independent State, proceeded formally, in a congress of delegates, to adopt a constitution for their confederation, under which they proposed to govern themselves. But, previous to this action, each State assumed for itself the sovereign rights and obligations of independent government. All land within any State's boundaries became its own eminent domain; all the population became subject to its jurisdiction; its laws were supreme and its flag was the symbol of sovereignty. Each State thus became a government which must organize its armies and navies



for the defense of its people, as well as enact laws to meet their civic needs.

In compliance with this right and duty South Carolina, the first to secede, began to organize its small army and to seek by treaty the peaceable acquisition of certain forts and arsenals held by the military force of the United States. The other States, Mississippi, Alabama, Florida, Georgia, Louisiana and Texas, pursued a similar course, or, despairing of obtaining the consent of the United States, entered into the possession of the forts, arsenals and other government property within their boundaries, with a show of force sometimes, but happily at first without conflict of arms or shedding of blood.

South Carolina declared its independence on the 20th of December, 1860, by a convention of its people, which at the same time authorized the enforcement of its laws by civil process and the organization of a military force for protection against foreign invasion. No military movement, however, occurred in the beginning of this new political order, that indicated hostility to any State or country. But, six days after South Carolina seceded, one unfortunate act of a United States officer inaugurated "the state of war." Maj. Robert Anderson, of the United States army, commanding in the harbor of Charleston and occupying Fort Moultrie, spiked the guns of that fort, destroyed the carriages of the 32-pounders, removed or destroyed the ammunition, and moved his supplies and his garrison abruptly and secretly to join the garrison of Fort Sumter. This very decided hostile movement, by which the commanding officer concentrated his forces at the stronger fort, was unquestionably, in technical definition at least, an act of war. Major Anderson meant it to be so, since he stated as his reason for thus acting that he feared attack, and "if attacked the garrison would never have surrendered without a fight." The object of the movement was to strengthen his position and prepare to meet his enemy at better advantage.



The abandoned fort was therefore promptly occupied by South Carolina troops, and the State also seized such other property as could be taken without bloodshed.

Nearly coincident with this movement of Major Anderson occurred the purchase and equipping of vessels in the New York harbor to carry reinforcements of supplies and troops to Fort Sumter. Gen. Winfield Scott, the commander-in-chief of the United States army, who had constantly insisted on coercive military measures, again urged President Buchanan, on the 30th of December, to send 250 recruits from New York harbor, with extra muskets or rifles, ammunition and subsistence stores to reinforce the fort which Major Anderson now held. The President promptly ordered the reinforcements. The secretaries of war and the navy were immediately instructed, the appropriate orders to army and navy officers were issued, and on the 31st day of December, 1860, the measures for an armed reinforcement of Fort Sumter were fully adopted and carried into immediate operation. A few days' delay unexpectedly ensued, but as quickly as possible, January 5, 1861, the steamer *Star of the West* left New York for Charleston on a warlike mission with 250 troops and six months' provisions, and was followed two days later by the warship *Brooklyn*, Captain Farragut commanding.

The expedition of the *Star of the West* failed, notwithstanding its well-devised plans, nearly as the circumstances of the failure are related by Lieutenant Woods, Ninth United States infantry, commanding the recruits on board. His report shows that on arrival near his destination he steamed up the main channel in Charleston harbor, and was within  $1\frac{3}{4}$  miles of Fort Sumter, with his troops hidden from view, when his vessel was fired upon from Morris island. The *Star of the West* kept on under the fire of the South Carolina battery, but finding it impossible to take the supplies and his command of infantry into Fort Sumter, Lieutenant





Woods reluctantly ordered the ship about, and made his way out of the harbor. Captain McGowan, who commanded the *Star of the West*, was specially mentioned by Lieutenant Woods for his efforts "to put the troops in Fort Sumter." This attempt at armed reinforcement occurred on the 9th of January, and is mentioned in connection with the strategy of Major Anderson as another event occurring thus early in the "inauguration of war." Its special significance appears in the light of the principle already agreed on between the State of South Carolina and Buchanan's administration, that reinforcement of Fort Sumter in this manner had at least a hostile bearing, equivalent, as South Carolina understood it, to an act of war.

The United States government at this date actively reinforced Forts Pickens, Taylor, Key West and Jefferson, and ordered the withdrawal of several war vessels from foreign stations for the purpose of increasing the home squadron, to be distributed along the Southern coasts. The United States naval force available for aggression was inefficient, but such as could be employed were actively threatening the Southern ports. The activity of the Buchanan administration, notwithstanding the vacillation of the President, was sufficient to withhold from the Southern seceded States many valuable positions, among which may be named the forts on the coasts of Florida, as well as Fort Pickens and Fort Sumter. The Confederate government when formed in February, at Montgomery, found its territory occupied with hostile forces at important points on the Atlantic and Gulf coasts, and the future action of the States on its northern and western borders still a painful uncertainty. The conditions at that time were already warlike.

#### COMPARISON BETWEEN THE TWO GOVERNMENTS.

Before further relating the military events of the Confederate war, a view should be taken of the relative sit-



ations of the two great contestants. The expectation of the Confederates was to extend their government over nearly or quite all of the area commonly called the South. The north boundary line of the magnificent country which they designed to cover with the Confederate constitutional government ran westward north of Maryland, Virginia, Kentucky, Missouri and the Indian Territory. South of that long line spread many large States and territories, reaching from the Ohio river to the shores of the Atlantic ocean and Gulf of Mexico. Fourteen great States and two or three territories lay within these boundaries, occupying a region of great fertility and beauty, with all accessories of climate and water, and all natural facilities for commerce, manufacturing, mining and agriculture. The total area was more than a million square miles; the population intelligent, brave, thrifty and increasing in wealth. Of this population, between five and a half and six millions were of the white race, almost wholly natives; the remainder, four and a half to five millions, were negroes, nearly all slaves.

The people of this fine region were not prepared for war and certainly did not desire it. When the seven States instituted the Confederacy there was no army or navy, except such as each seceded State had hastily gathered. They did not have enough guns and ammunition to fight one battle of respectable proportions, and until other States joined them they had no foundries, no powder mills, nor other manufactories of the munitions of war. They were a peaceable, agricultural and commercial people, who were ready enough to fight on provocation or for their convictions, but they had not expected a war with the Northern States and had made no preparation for that calamity. Under an act of the United States Congress there had been sent to the arsenals of the South in May, 1860, a large number of muskets and rifles, which it has been said armed the Confederacy; but on investigation these were found to be of such little service



that the Southern armies were glad to throw them down at Bull run and elsewhere in order to pick up the better guns which their enemies left on the battlefields. The arms referred to were old percussion muskets, percussion rifles and altered muskets—all old patterns—what Congress gave willingly to any State that would take them. They had been deposited in the Charleston, North Carolina, Augusta, Mount Vernon and Baton Rouge arsenals, and after secession went into possession of the various States. Such of them as could be used were placed temporarily in the hands of troops.

As rapidly as possible the Confederate government made military preparations to meet the invasion of its territory that would probably take place. The seceded States turned over the forts and arsenals within their boundaries to the Confederate government, and each State began with considerable vigor to organize and equip a military force. The Confederate government attempted in the beginning to organize a small army of about 11,000 regulars, infantry, artillery, cavalry, and an engineer corps. Congress authorized the President to call for a volunteer force of 100,000 men, and appropriated the money for its support. But the insignificant numbers put into the field before the first of May showed not only the difficulty of rapidly organizing and equipping a great military force, but also the effect of the uncertainty prevailing at the South as to the purpose of the Federal government. In illustration of the character of the military preparations of these first days of the Confederacy, it may be noted that General Bragg reported his force at Pensacola in March at 1,116, and accompanied his report with an appeal which elicited a promise of 5,000 more. Beauregard was then in command of 2,000 at Charleston, and other important stations were manned in the same proportion. These, however, do not comprise the entire military organized in the South, for each State had already called and accepted many companies which



were held in readiness to be equipped for the field of battle.

The lack of a navy was not only very apparent, but the difficulty of creating this important means of defense was nearly appalling. Many of the best officers of the United States navy had resigned and reported at Richmond for active service in the Confederacy. Tattnall, Buchanan, Semmes, Hartstene, Hollins, Rousseau, Ingraham, Randolph and others, who did great service and acquired great fame, were among the accomplished naval officers first assigned to duty by the navy department at Montgomery. About 200 officers of the United States navy, of all grades, resigned their commissions early in 1861, and with a nice sense of honor, not one of them who had charge of a ship brought it into the possession of the Confederacy. What is called the nucleus of the Confederate navy consisted of the few vessels which were seized by the seven States soon after each had seceded, in the aggregate about ten, the most powerful carrying only ten guns. Congress authorized the increase of this little navy by the purchase of ten gunboats, and distributed the gallant officers who had offered their services among various naval posts. Yet, notwithstanding the lack of essentials for creating a navy, the skillful officers above named, with those of like character who subsequently joined them, gave a wonderful fame to this arm of Confederate defense.

The Southern movement was also sustained at its outset by military leaders recognized as the choice spirits of the United States army, who gave up their commissions in obedience to the action of their States. Among them were Albert Sidney Johnston, Braxton Bragg, P. T. Beauregard and the venerable David E. Twiggs, who were soon joined by Joseph E. Johnston, Robert E. Lee, and others whose names will appear hereafter. Military leaders such as these were placed from year to year in command of "the incomparable Southern armies," winning from Mr. Horace Greeley the tribute: "The rebels





were seldom beaten through pusillanimity, never through the treachery of their leaders."

Such was the general situation of the Southern Confederacy preceding the forcible attempt to reinforce Fort Sumter. The government was fully organized, the disposition was peaceful, the military and naval forces inadequate, the leadership superb, and the people ardently devoted to the cause of separate independence; but the new government was to be forced to stand by its ability to maintain itself against military power, or fall by the insufficiency of its own military support.

The preparedness of the United States for the war which they were about to make was materially greater than that of the Confederacy. The population of the United States in 1861, exclusive of the seceded States, was over twenty millions, nearly all white, almost four times the white population of the South. The States comprising the Union at that time were situated north of the Ohio and extended from the Atlantic to the Pacific ocean. The Southern line of this vast territory lay along the northern and western borders of the Confederacy, giving advantages for invasion at many points. The States east of the Mississippi river were populous, thrifty and aggressive. In general resources for making successful war, the States of the northern section of the Union exceeded the South in a proportion much greater than their fourfold excess of population.

The general trade, domestic and foreign, of the entire United States, including the South, had steadily increased during the preceding decade, until twenty-five foreign countries were seeking business here with over 11,000 vessels, while the Southern trade alone amounted to an estimated sum of \$400,000,000 annually in product of the soil exchanged for Northern manufactured goods. The imports of 1860-61 were \$335,000,000 and the exports, \$248,000,000. The total debt of the government was but \$69,000,000.



For war purposes the regular army contained 16,000 men, chiefly stationed on the western frontiers, while the volunteer militia system of the States permitted of a rapid increase of this force through requisitions upon the governors. The whole naval force in commission, as reported by a congressional committee in January, 1861, consisted of five squadrons of twenty-five ships in various foreign waters, the home squadron of eleven ships stationed in the Gulf of Mexico and along the Atlantic coast, and twenty-eight other ships in various United States ports to be refitted for service, making a total of sixty-four vessels belonging to the navy. To these should be added six store-ships and seven receiving ships, also serving in the navy. The report of the secretary of the navy shows that in March, 1861, the total number of vessels belonging to the navy was ninety, carrying 2,415 guns and a complement of 7,600 men, of which sixty-nine ships were available, and this valuable navy was rapidly increased by construction and purchase. The whole of it remained in the possession of the United States. For construction and preservation of all ordnance there were at least four large foundries, fifteen armories and arsenals, besides a large number of gunpowder mills and manufactories of general army equipments located in the Northern section. Notwithstanding the secession of seven large States, the government still held Fortress Monroe, Harper's Ferry, Gosport navy yard at Norfolk, Forts Sumter, Pickens and many minor strongholds on the Southern coast during the first months of 1861. The oceans were open to its commerce as well as to its war fleets; its resources were magnificent as well as rapidly available, and nothing seemed to obstruct the quick subjugation of the Southern States except the obligations of a sacred instrument—the Constitution of the United States.



## ACTUAL HOSTILITIES BEGIN.

Abraham Lincoln, inaugurated President of the United States on March 4th, soon adopted the war policy which had been initiated by the concentration of troops by Major Anderson at Fort Sumter in December, 1860, the ordering of the *Star of the West* to Charleston harbor in January, 1861, with troops, arms and supplies, and the summons of several ships of the distant squadrons to steam homeward. The policy most practicable for immediate hostilities as became apparent to President Lincoln's advisers, was an invasion of the Confederacy by way of the ocean and the gulf. The first objective point, Charleston; the first State to be overthrown and brought to terms, South Carolina; the first movement, reinforcement of Fort Sumter, peaceably if permitted, otherwise by force. This plan was maturely considered during March, while the Confederate leaders were held in suspense with the hope of peace, which caused them to wait for the action of the Federal administration. At length, on the 8th of April, South Carolina was officially informed that "an attempt would be made to supply Fort Sumter, peaceably if they could, forcibly if they must." Eight armed vessels with soldiers aboard had been sent to sustain the notification, and moved so quickly on this expedition that only an unexpected storm at sea caused delay enough for the Confederate authorities to successfully meet the issue.

The Confederate States objected to this movement of the Federal authorities, because the reinforcement was invasion by the use of physical force; because it asserted the claim of the United States to sovereignty over South Carolina, which was in dispute; and because the supply of the garrison in Fort Sumter with necessary rations was not the object nor the end of the expedition. The purpose was to secure Fort Sumter, to close the port with the war-ships, to reduce Charleston by bombardment if necessary, to land troops from transports, and thus crush the rebel-



then where it was supposed to have begun by overthrowing South Carolina. This admirable scheme was frustrated by the necessary, prompt and successful attack on Fort Sumter after General Beauregard had exchanged the usual formalities with Major Anderson. At 4:30 o'clock on the morning of April 12th, the Confederates opened fire on the fort, which was soon returned. The bombardment which followed for thirty-three hours at last made the fort untenable, and Anderson on the 14th surrendered his stronghold to the Confederacy, and on the 15th evacuated the position with honors.

It has been observed that at the time of the sailing of the United States fleet toward Charleston under orders to sustain Fort Sumter, neither of the two countries had armies and fleets in readiness for the impending war. The Confederate government, having had only two months of political existence, was yet scarcely in communication with the seven States which had given it the right to a place among nations. Its armies were a few thousand troops hastily gathered together from the seceded States, and its navy had only a name with an abundance of splendid officers yearning for ships. Seven great States of the South, Missouri, Arkansas, Kentucky, Tennessee, North Carolina, Virginia and Maryland, still remained in the Federal union. On the Northern side the regular army had not been made available and the volunteers were yet chiefly with their States. But the battle over the control of Charleston harbor, although fought by artillery and without the loss of life, was followed by immediate and great preparations for the portentous American conflict.

On the day after the plan of reinforcement failed, President Lincoln issued his proclamation calling for 75,000 troops, to be immediately armed and equipped for active service. President Davis construed this to be a declaration of war, and called for 100,000 troops to support the independence of the South. The governors of six of the





seven States which had not seceded refused to obey the requisitions upon them for troops, because the proclamation established coercion as the policy of the administration, and they would not participate in the subjugation of the Southern States. The governor of Maryland merely asked for delay. The "war governors" of the Northern States responded so earnestly to the first call of President Lincoln that thousands of men who had been held in preparation for this event began to pour toward Washington.

Quickly following the first proclamation, President Lincoln on the 19th of April proclaimed the first blockade of Southern ports from South Carolina to Texas, which was afterward extended, April 27th, to the ports of North Carolina and Virginia. Another proclamation, May 4th, called for about 40,000 volunteers for three years, and ordered an increase of the regular army by 22,000 soldiers, and of the navy by 18,000 seamen. Orders were also issued to seize all dispatches in telegraph offices; to authorize martial law with suspension of the writ of habeas corpus in certain places; to prohibit sales of munitions of war to Southern States—these and other minor measures showing that actual war was at hand. Under this policy Washington city became a military camp, and the frowning visage of war was on all the country.

The unmistakable import of all these coercive measures caused the secession of Virginia, North Carolina, Tennessee and Arkansas; at the same time involving Missouri and Kentucky in civil war, and causing the first blood of the great struggle to flow April 19th on the soil of Maryland. Virginia seceding took possession of Harper's Ferry and the Gosport navy yard, thus acquiring a large amount of machinery and munitions, but found Fortress Monroe so well garrisoned as to make its seizure impossible. Virginia troops were rapidly organized by Maj.-Gen. R. E. Lee, and with such equipments as could be secured were posted at Harper's Ferry, Nor-

2000

2001

2002

2003

and other points. The States seceding with her also occupied all forts and arsenals they could seize, and began in earnest the organization of military commands for the use of the Confederacy.

North Carolina was as loath as Virginia to leave the Union, conservatively avoiding all acts that would place the State in antagonism to the general government. Certain forts were seized by a premature popular attack; but the governor caused them to be restored at once. Nothing warlike occurred until the attempt was made by the reinforcement plan to put South Carolina in peril, and the demand on the State to furnish its quota of troops to put down the so-called rebellion. The governor declined to obey the requisition and took the forts of the State, the arsenal at Fayetteville and the mint at Charlotte into his possession. The State seceded May 20th, and within a month raised a force of over 20,000 volunteers.

The great middle State of Tennessee was so indispensable to the Confederacy that its tardy action produced alarm. The governor urged immediate secession after the fight over Sumter and President Lincoln's call on Tennessee for troops, but the State was hampered by the objection to secession which controlled almost the entire eastern section. Prominent leaders of different parties joined the governor, and at length, in May, the State agreed to enter into an alliance or league with the Confederate government, placing under Confederate control the entire military force, and the question of secession was submitted to the people. This temporary action resulted in the legal secession of this invaluable State and its incorporation with the body of the Confederacy. The governor being authorized by the legislature rapidly organized a large provisional army. Batteries were established on the Mississippi river, several thousand troops were concentrated in west Tennessee, and others were posted in east Tennessee and in camps at other places. Within two months after the passage of the act



of May 6th, the energetic governor had put 30,000 troops in the field. The State went at a bound to the front line of its associates.

#### THE SITUATION ON THE BORDER AND IN THE WEST

A glance at the Western States at this date shows that in the far northwest of the Confederacy war broke out coincidentally with the movements on the Atlantic side. Arkansas, at first indisposed to join the Confederacy, took its place with the seceded States immediately after coercion was inaugurated. The governor answered Lincoln's requisition with a prompt reply on the 22d of April that his State would furnish no troops to subjugate the South. The State then seceded on the 6th of May, and its convention authorized the raising of 60,000 soldiers. The arsenal at Little Rock fell into the possession of State troops; Forts Smith, Pine Bluff and Napoleon with their stores were seized and occupied; the organization of State troops was effected with some rapidity, although no formidable invasion of the State had occurred; and several commands were sent on to Virginia. The army of the State was organized in two divisions commanded by Generals McCulloch and Pearce. With creditable energy Arkansas put into line in the first year about 20,000 men, out of a total voting population of about 50,000. Portions of these troops, marching to the support of Price in Missouri, very greatly aided in saving that State for the first year from Federal control. Later in the war its men fought bravely in the general Confederate field from Maryland to Texas.

Missouri, which had given 148,000 votes against Lincoln and only 17,000 in his favor, and retained a bitter memory of the Kansas troubles, was among the first of the Southern States to suffer the distress of armed invasion. The governor, in January, had declared for the Union as long as it would observe the Constitution which created it, but regarded coercion as an oppression which must



resisted. The convention which met first at Jefferson in February, and then at St. Louis in March, was decidedly against immediate secession. After prolonged discussion it was resolved that Missouri desired the perpetuity of the Union, that the Crittenden resolutions made a good basis for adjusting all difficulties, and that Federal troops should be withdrawn from forts where there was danger of collision, in order to prevent civil war in the State. With exceeding caution, justified, as many of its public men thought, by its specially endangered position, Missouri moved at first with an earnest purpose to prevent the horrors of war.

But war was not only inevitable; it was at hand. The fateful proclamation of the President of the United States seemed to Governor Jackson, of Missouri, to start a civil war and to precede a consolidated despotism—and he said so; but he counseled the legislature to take no precipitate and passionate step. Great excitement was caused by the warlike news from Washington city, amidst which arms were secretly conveyed out of Missouri from the unprotected arsenal at St. Louis and delivered into the keeping of hostile parties at Springfield, Ill. This abstraction of arms, with which the forces of the State might have been equipped, and the surrender of Camp Jackson, at the same date, caused an alarm that precipitated the passage by the legislature of the pending military bill, which authorized the governor to equip the military and take command in person, so as to suppress riots and insurrections in the State.

General Harney, of the Federal army, came to St. Louis April 15th, assumed command of the military department, and agreed with Major-General Price, representing the governor, upon a plan to preserve the peace, which proved futile because it was disapproved at Washington. Another attempt at agreement, proposed by Governor Jackson, was made June 11th, in which he and General Price acted for Missouri, while Frank P. Blair and General





Lyon represented the United States. This also failing the governor issued his proclamation on the 12th of June describing his extraordinary efforts to avoid war, and the causes of their failure, and at the same time called for 50,000 men "for the purpose of repelling invasion and for the protection of the lives, liberty and property of the citizens."

General Lyon had insisted, in the peace conference with Jackson and Price, on the complete occupation of the State by the military forces of the United States, in order to reduce it, as avowed by himself, "to the exact condition of Maryland," and on the governor's rejection of these terms prepared at once to overthrow the State government by his military force. The day following the governor's proclamation, Lyon moved with 1,500 men from St. Louis upon Jefferson city, which he seized, and proceeded toward Booneville, where he was met in battle by the governor, who with Colonel Marmaduke had collected a small body of Missourians. The affair was small in casualties, but signified fully that the Federal government was resolved on the conquest of the State. After this there was rapid increase of military events. June was consumed in recruiting and marching to positions. The Federals had gained great advantage in the prolonged negotiations for peace, during which the increasing and arming of commands went on. The adjoining State of Illinois also stood prepared to throw 10,000 troops across the State lines on any day. Lyon sent out many scouting parties and various expeditions which harassed Missouri. Many small encounters occurred, and one of larger measure at Carthage, where General Price with General Rains and Governor Jackson, defeated Sigel on the 5th of July. About a month later Lyon lost his life in battle at Wilson's creek, or Oak Hills, in which Price and McCulloch, with Missouri and Arkansas regiments, won a Confederate victory. The situation in Missouri at this period, while the first battle of Manassas



as was taking place in Virginia, shows that military operations were in hot progress in the far west; but the general view here taken of the border States in these first months of the war as they were related to the entire field of operations, requires a change of attention from this interesting stage of Missouri's affairs, to take into consideration the opening of the war in Kentucky.

Kentucky's attitude in the general convulsion of the country was very much like that of Missouri and Maryland. In all public expressions by conventions and popular assemblies, Kentucky spoke unitedly the aversion of the people to war and a purpose to abide the administration of President Lincoln unless coercion and subjugation became his manifest policy. Crittenden, her distinguished and venerable Senator, had declared Kentucky's position in the celebrated resolutions which the United States Congress had rejected. Yet, after the demand for troops to be furnished by the State to subjugate the South, Kentucky was in a dilemma. April and May were passed by the people in a condition of general alarm, and at the end of this waiting it was found that the neutrality which they had hoped for had been made impossible. Already had the agents of the Federal government made large enlistments in the army. An encampment of Federal soldiers had been established under Nelson on Kentucky ground, and Governor McGoffin's petition to President Lincoln for their removal had been not only refused, but with the refusal he declined to entertain Kentucky's plea for neutrality. President Davis had replied to the governor's letter on the neutrality question that his government would respect Kentucky's desire, provided such neutrality were strictly observed toward both parties. But even during this correspondence the northern borders were occupied by Federal volunteers, while near the southern line Confederate forces were camping, and within the State the young men were dividing in hostile camps.



Military operations began in western Virginia immediately after the secession of the State. The political movement made in May to cut a new State out of the western side of Virginia, was encouraged by a prompt gathering of United States troops in Ohio and Pennsylvania. General McClellan, the commanding general of the department, moved across the Ohio early in May, and with Rosecrans began a military occupation of this part of Virginia. Governor Letcher met the movement by forwarding such troops as could be spared, and the Confederate government, taking upon itself the defense of this region, sent General Wise into the Kanawha valley and commissioned General Floyd to raise a brigade in southwest Virginia to co-operate with Wise. Colonel Porterfield, commanding a small body of Confederates, was also sent to seize the Baltimore & Ohio railroad, but his force was inadequate to the task. Garnett and Pegram, overmatched by Rosecrans and McClellan, were forced away from the mountain positions they had attempted to hold. The Confederates won in several affairs, but the day went against them at Phillipi, June 3d; Rich mountain, July 11th, and Carrick's ford, July 13th. As the outcome of these combats the Federals under McClellan held military control of northwestern Virginia, and this important left flank of the Confederate general line of defense was broken down as early as the 15th of July.

The military situation in Maryland, another of the States lying between the South and the armies of invasion, may be considered here in association with the state of affairs in Missouri, Kentucky and western Virginia. It is doubtless true that Maryland would have decided to unite with the Confederate States if the question had been left to the free action of its people. Its importance to the Confederacy was not exceeded by that of any other State. Unfortunately, the Confederate government was not able to occupy this valuable ally at once, and it fell



quickly into the firm grasp of the Federal forces. Across the route on which the troops called for by Lincoln's proclamation were to march to Washington, lay this southern commonwealth pleading like Kentucky and Missouri for neutrality and imploring the stay of the threatening conflict. Maryland asked that her soil be relieved from the odium of being the passage ground of troops called to invade Virginia and the South. The reasonable request was refused, and on the 19th of April a body of Federal troops on the way to Washington landed in Baltimore, marched through its streets and encountered an excited population. Mutual firing ensued, during which the first blood of the Southern revolution was shed. The event startled the administration at Washington and caused a temporary apparent change of policy, but within a few days it became clear that Maryland was to be devoted to complete subjugation. General Butler, placed in command to execute this policy, began by fortifying the position at the Relay house, and on the 5th of May took military possession of Baltimore and converted it into a military encampment. Civil authority was entirely overthrown, arrests of officials and citizens followed, and the State government was subverted.

#### THE FIRST GREAT MOVEMENT AGAINST RICHMOND.

The Confederate government was transferred from Montgomery to Richmond in May, from which situation, fronting Washington, it began preparations to meet the invasion of Virginia by the great force gathering on the Potomac, and to counteract the operations by sea and land which threatened the southern coast and the western borders. The Tredegar foundry was converted into a manufactory of guns, the machinery obtained at Harper's Ferry was sent to Fayetteville and Richmond where it could be used in making arms, small foundries were put into service wherever they could be established, powder works were erected, and, in general statement, the





administration at Richmond, aided by all the Confederate States, most actively worked all plans to secure that equipment for its armies, which were now eagerly pressing into the field of action unarmed, and insufficiently equipped. With remarkable celerity the volunteers from the Northern States assembled at or near Washington, and were organized into several armies of invasion. During the latter part of April and May the war department of the United States was busy in receiving and equipping for battle the regiments which the "war governors" were sending forward. By the last of June the great armies were ready to move. McClellan commanded in western Virginia; along the upper Potomac, with headquarters at Williamsport, General Patterson was ready to advance against Joseph E. Johnston; Butler was at Fortress Monroe, and McDowell at Washington with the main body. These troops were disposed under their various commanders in one general line fronting Virginia and extending from the Ohio river through western Virginia and Maryland, at Washington, along the left bank of the Potomac, and to Fortress Monroe. The entire force, containing in round numbers 100,000 men, was thoroughly well provided with all the munitions necessary to successful war. The Confederate line of defense matched this Federal line at all points except in numbers and munitions. In western Virginia the total Confederate force was about 5,000; Gen. Joseph E. Johnston in the Valley with 15,000 faced Patterson; Beauregard, commanding the principal Confederate army of 20,000, was at Manassas; and besides these were the divisions under Holmes on the lower Potomac, and the commands of Magruder and Huger at Yorktown and Norfolk. The entire Confederate strength on this long defensive line was about 65,000.

The Federal preparations were complete in July, and the plan of operation against the Confederate defenses had been discussed and determined. Among the several



lines of advance discussed, that which kept Washington best protected was adopted. It was determined to overthrow Beauregard at Manassas and then march on rapidly to Richmond. With this in view the army of McDowell marched into Virginia, drove back the Confederates at Fairfax Court House, and on the 18th skirmished so successfully as to alarm General Beauregard concerning the right flank of his army. While McDowell was thus pressing Beauregard, Patterson marched against Johnston in the Shenandoah valley, with instructions to reinforce McDowell as soon as he had succeeded in forcing Johnston to retreat across the Blue ridge. Butler, operating from Fortress Monroe, was also charged with the defeat of the Confederate forces on the peninsula.

But while Patterson was attempting to execute his part of the plan, Johnston eluded him and marched directly to the help of Beauregard, arriving on the 20th. General Jackson reached the field with his brigade, and other Confederate regiments under General Holmes were rapidly added to Beauregard's small army. Beauregard was now better prepared for that dangerous assault which McDowell made early in the morning of the 21st of July, bringing on the great historical battle of Bull Run or First Manassas. The first Federal attacks of the day were so successful as to inspire sanguine expectations. Telegrams of progressive triumphs poured from the battlefield into Washington, and from that city were distributed throughout the United States. But the Confederate divisions were handled with matchless skill by their many experienced officers, and though volunteers recently enlisted, they fought with the steadiness of trained men. They rallied from their several defeats during the morning, resuming their fight from time to time until in the afternoon their courage and fortitude were rewarded by a most remarkable victory. The Federal divisions were driven from the field by impetuous but well directed Confederate attacks. The defeated regiments were



broken into fragments of companies, and at length the defeat grew into a rout of the grand army that had marched into Virginia with great confidence in the power of their numbers to make one effective blow that would "end the war in sixty days."

#### NEXT AFTER MANASSAS.

The condition of McDowell's army as it fled in tatters back to the Potomac, praying for the privilege of being once more in camp behind the defenses of Washington, will not be herein described. The courage of the several great Northern armies which struggled often and long with the army of Northern Virginia, will never be questioned by Confederate soldiers, and Southern historians may leave to others the task of criticising the men of McDowell who in this first trial battle were beaten back to the lines from which they had advanced. The engagement at Manassas was simply an indisputable Confederate victory, won by the superior leadership of great generals sustained through the vicissitudes of a whole day's hot encounters by the courage and endurance of the South's fresh-fighting volunteer soldiers. It marked with a very decided emphasis the first stage in the march of events, giving the South renewed confidence in success, exciting the North to increased determination to conquer, and casting Europe into doubt as to the end of the struggle between the two sections of the Union.

Immediately after the battle the Confederate congress authorized the raising of 400,000 soldiers, and the issue of \$100,000,000 treasury notes. The army at Manassas Junction collected thousands of small-arms, thirty cannon, wagons, mules, horses and army supplies of all kinds which the enemy left on the battlefield. The Southern States at once accepted with greater readiness the companies and regiments which had been enthusiastically tendered for immediate service. The United States Congress on its part demanded a call for 500,000 men,



and authorized the government to raise \$500,000,000 to carry on the war. General McClellan was called from West Virginia to take command of the army of the Potomac, and his acknowledged skill as an organizer was soon thoroughly tested by the pressure of great bodies of soldiers forwarded to his department. For months his work consisted in preparing an army which he desired to be invincible, and his government sought to gratify his desire. Before the end of the winter, 200,000 well equipped soldiers constituted "the army of the Potomac," for the protection of Washington and invasion of Virginia.

On the 1st of July, 1861, the total Federal force stationed at all points was computed as 307,875 men, and after deducting the 77,875 three months' men, there still remained at the command of the government about 230,000 soldiers. This total was increased by the 1st of December, according to the estimate of the war department, to 660,971 volunteers and regulars, divided among the armies and navies of the east and the west.

The Confederate authorities, seeing the indisposition of McClellan to make any early advance on Richmond in the fall and winter of 1861, undertook to reorganize the armies of the Confederacy and increase their strength in all respects. The same Federal inaction also permitted an attempt to recover the ground lost in western Virginia. Battles of a minor character were fought in that region, at Grafton, Cross Lanes, Carnifex Ferry, Cheat mountain and other places, but the Confederates failed to establish their control over this section. Accordingly the greater part of the forces engaged in the effort was withdrawn and sent to other fields.

In the western field, after the defeat of Lyon, Price and McCulloch united their commands at Wilson's Creek, Mo.; Price moved against Mulligan's division at Lexington, and compelled his surrender of 3,500 men with their arms and supplies, after which the great Missouri chief-





tain foiled Fremont and occupied Springfield. The battle of Belmont, in the lower part of the State, went against the Confederate general at first, but in the end the Federal general, U. S. Grant, was compelled to take the shelter of his gunboats. The activity of military operations in Missouri during the year 1861, beginning with the affair at Booneville in June, is shown by the record of fifty-two battles, besides many unmentioned small encounters, fought on its soil during the first year of the war.

The fighting in Kentucky in 1861 did not begin until September, and has been regarded as of slight moment; yet in that year there were over twelve engagements of considerable importance. The Home Guards, formed for State protection, furnished a considerable number of men for the Confederate as well as the Federal army, and many Kentuckians went singly or in groups to various Southern commands. The Confederate forces occupied Columbus, on the Mississippi river, in September, at the time General Grant, then commanding at Cairo, took possession of Paducah. General Zollicoffer, with a brigade of infantry and cavalry, entered the southeastern part of the State in September and became engaged in several affairs at Barboursville, Wild Cat and elsewhere with troops from Ohio and Indiana. General Nelson, who had been made useful in organizing Federal troops in Kentucky, operated in the eastern part of that State. In September, a considerable body of Federal troops from Ohio, Indiana and Illinois occupied St. Louis. About the same time, Anderson, who had commanded at Fort Sumter, was promoted brigadier-general of volunteers in the Federal army and assigned to command of the department of Kentucky. He was succeeded by General Sherman. General Buckner commanded the Confederates at Bowling Green, and General Polk was assigned to the "department of the West." The Federal forces in Kentucky were increased before the end of the year, until



they were estimated at 60,000. This large body of troops came from Minnesota, Wisconsin, Michigan, Ohio, Indiana, Illinois and Pennsylvania, except about 20,000, which had been raised in Kentucky. The Confederate forces in the State were computed at about 25,000.

In the middle of the winter, January 10, 1862, the Confederate General Marshall was compelled to fall back from the northeast of Kentucky, and subsequently Crittenden and Zollicoffer were forced to retreat across the Cumberland. President Davis wrote of this affair as "the most serious defeat that we had hitherto met. It broke the right of our defensive line and involved the loss of eastern Kentucky."

In Maryland the Federal military forces held the State in a duress from which the only way of escape was across the Potomac into Virginia, through which many gallant young Marylanders entered the Confederate service.

#### NAVAL OPERATIONS.

While McClellan was fully occupied in increasing the defenses around Washington and forming the great army which was designed to crush its way through Virginia, the earliest special movements of the season, directed by the war and navy departments, were along the extensive southern coast line. Fortress Monroe was reinforced until it was impregnable. Fort Hatteras, in North Carolina, was taken from the Confederates in August, and Port Royal, in South Carolina, was seized in November. Another of the series of expeditions designed for the conquest of the coast region had for its object the Gulf shore between New Orleans and Mobile, and succeeded in securing a position on Ship island. The general blockade was strengthened by these operations, and although not strictly effective its injurious effects began to be seriously felt throughout the Confederacy.



## CLOSE OF THE FIRST YEAR OF WAR.

It may now be seen that at the close of the first year of Mr. Davis' administration the Confederacy, which had begun its career with seven States, had gained the almost untrammelled accession of the great States of Virginia, North Carolina, Tennessee, Arkansas, and the earnest support of a large part of Kentucky and Missouri. Civil government under constitutional provisions was established and operating throughout these States without hindrance, except in localities where the Federal forces had obtained lodgment. Armies had been raised to the computed number of 315,000 volunteers, whose equipment had been the chief difficulty, and even that obstacle had been met by an energetic use of resources which enabled the government to withstand the first assault of coercion. A navy had been created, and a system of privateering instituted which produced considerable derangement of the United States commerce. Manufactories for all kinds of military supplies were erected in many sections, and home agricultural productions were sufficient for the needs of the people and the armies. The South has never made a better exhibit of the energy and ingenuity of its people and the resources of its land than in this exposition of 1861. It now began, in February, 1862, the second year of the struggle for independence, with still the odds against it of four to one in population and greater disadvantages in general means.

## THE GENERAL ARRAY OF FORCES EARLY IN 1862.

The Federal lines covering the land borders of the Confederacy, extending from the mouth of the Chesapeake and passing by the amply protected capital, ran through Maryland, West Virginia, Kentucky, Missouri and on to the mouth of the Rio Grande. At Fortress Monroe, under Butler and Wool, were 15,000 men; on the southern Potomac, Hooker's division of 10,000; immediately in charge of Washington, 160,000 men under Mc-



Clellan; in the Shenandoah valley, Banks with 16,000, and Rosecrans in western Virginia with 20,000. General Buell had united the scattered Federal forces in Kentucky into an army of 100,000, and Halleck was in Missouri with a similar number. A force of 20,000 was put in readiness to operate from Kansas to the Gulf of Mexico, and another army was assembled at Cairo under Generals Grant and C. F. Smith to campaign in co-operation with gunboats along the Mississippi and Cumberland rivers.

The United States naval operations in the beginning of the second year of the invasion contemplated the blockade of the entire coast, so as to cut off the communications of the Confederacy with other nations. The reduction of all ports, and their occupation by the military as points from which various overland incursions might be made, was also a part of the general plan. For these purposes several squadrons were organized—the North Atlantic, Admiral Goldsboro, on the Virginia and North Carolina coasts; the South Atlantic, Admiral Dupont, covering South Carolina, Georgia and northeast Florida; the Eastern Gulf, Flag Officer McKean, and the Western Gulf, Admiral Farragut, on the gulf coast. Three flotillas were employed—the Potomac, Commodore Hardwood; the James River, Commodore Wilkes, and the Mississippi, Admiral Foote—each of which operated as its name indicates. The numbers of vessels in service were about 250 steamers carrying 1,500 guns, and 100 sailing vessels—frigates, sloops-of-war, mortar fleets, barks, brigs and ships—with 1,400 guns.

The Confederate States confronted this formidable array of military and naval forces with a general long interior line. At Norfolk and Yorktown were a small force of infantry, well fortified, and some vessels of the little navy. The main army in Virginia rested its right on the Rappahannock below Fredericksburg, and stretching its fortified line by Centreville and Manassas rested the left in the mountains beyond Leesburg. Beyond





this point there were other brigades at Martinsburg, Winchester and in parts of western Virginia. This long line was under the command of Gen. Joseph E. Johnston and confronted McClellan. In Kentucky the Confederate divisions were chiefly in the lower half of the State, from Bowling Green to Columbus, also occupying Forts Donelson and Henry. The main army in Missouri, commanded by Price, was stationed near Springfield, facing the Federal forces, whose headquarters was at St. Louis. In Tennessee the Confederate troops were encamped preparatory to active campaigning at various positions, including Cumberland Gap, Chattanooga, Nashville and Memphis. Fort Pillow, Island No. 10 and Vicksburg were occupied with strong defensive works, and in Arkansas the military of that State were posted so as to operate with Price, or be sent into Tennessee. Thus the eastern and northern fronts of the Confederacy were curtailed with the Southern armies to resist the threatening advances of the Federals. Turning attention from these to the Southern coast line, the defenses are found to consist of well-fortified positions defending the harbors, and small but vigorous fleets that had been rapidly constructed. Confederate privateers were also boldly adventuring on the seas and doing great damage to the shipping of the enemy.

#### MOVEMENT ALL ALONG THE LINES.

The extensive preparations made by the Federal government for the second grand movement for the conquest of the Southern States became so satisfactory to President Lincoln that he issued on the 27th of January, from the Executive mansion, the following unique order, containing some unusual dramatic features:

Executive Mansion, Washington, January 27, 1862.

President's General War Order, No. 1.

Ordered, That the 22d day of February, 1862, be the



day for a general movement of the land and naval forces of the United States against the insurgent forces:

That, especially,

The army at and about Fortress Monroe,

The army of the Potomac,

The army of Western Virginia,

The army near Munfordville, Ky.,

The army and flotilla at Cairo,

And a naval force in the Gulf of Mexico be ready for a movement on that day;

That other forces, both land and naval, with their respective commanders, obey existing orders for the time, and be ready to obey additional orders when duly given;

That the heads of departments, and especially the secretaries of war and of the navy, with all their subordinates, and the general-in-chief, with all other commanders and subordinates of land and naval forces, will severally be held to their strict and full responsibilities for the prompt execution of this order.

ABRAHAM LINCOLN.

This peculiar order, issued early after Stanton's accession to the office of war secretary, and in the midst of winter, betrayed the impatience as well as the satisfaction of the President, and possibly was chiefly aimed at McClellan, the general-in-chief, who was strenuously devoting himself to the preparation of an army which could defeat the Confederates under Johnston and capture Richmond. The Federal forces in the West began to move about the 1st of February, without waiting for the President's appointed time to arrive. Buell made an attempt to enter east Tennessee, but being diverted from that purpose concentrated near Munfordville. The military forces in Halleck's department, with the gunboats designed for an expedition on the Tennessee river, all under command of General Grant, also responded to War Order No. 1 in advance of the designated date. This movement, made first against Fort Henry, resulted in the fall of that work on February 6th, and the surrender of Fort Donelson about ten days later. Nashville, neces-



sarily next abandoned by the Confederates, was occupied by Buell, while Grant moved his own army to Pittsburg Landing, near the border of the State of Mississippi.

The new Confederate line, which these Federal successes required, extended from New Madrid on the left through Corinth as the center to Murfreesboro on the right. The Confederate leaders at Richmond were shocked by these reverses that imperiled the West, but immediate preparations were made to relieve the situation. Amidst such startling events the electoral votes were counted that made Mr. Davis President under the permanent constitution, and on the 22d day of February he was formally installed in office. The governors of the Gulf and Western States renewed their calls for troops, to which a patriotic response was readily made. The South was still confident of final success.

Meantime, Price, Van Dorn and McCulloch in the West were contending valiantly against the superior forces under Curtis and Sigel, but without being able to recover Missouri. Looking to the Atlantic coast in February, Burnside was observed commanding a naval expedition with military support sufficient to capture Roanoke island, New Bern and Fort Macon, in North Carolina, while DuPont seized Fernandina and Jacksonville in Florida. Preparations were in progress to capture Fort Pulaski on the coast of Georgia, and the harbor of Brunswick was entered by a Federal fleet. New Orleans and Mobile, and the Gulf landings generally, were kept in a state of alarm by the demonstrations made by the constantly increasing numbers of Federal vessels at Ship island. Texas was not yet seriously involved except in the contributions of thousands of Texans to the Confederate armies, but a Federal fleet under Commander Eagle appeared before Galveston preparing to demand its surrender.



## THE SUCCESSFUL DEFENSE OF RICHMOND,

Thus far the Federal advances are seen to have been made with great vigor in the West and on the coast, but on the eastern side of the widely spread battlefield, where the Confederacy was fighting for life, the Federal operations were not so rapid nor so successful. The Confederates were permitted to occupy and use the navy yard at Norfolk, and not only raise the Merrimac, which the Federals sank when they abandoned Norfolk in April, 1861, but to change it into a dangerous ironclad. On the morning of March 8, 1862, this novel vessel, rebuilt by Southern ingenuity upon a novel plan and named the Virginia, steamed away to attack the Federal war vessels lying in Hampton Roads. In the fight which followed between the Virginia and the United States vessels the entire Federal fleet was scattered except the Cumberland, which was sunk, the Congress burned, and the Minnesota run aground. During the night after this battle the Monitor, a new Federal ironclad, also just completed, came into the roads, and taking position between the Minnesota and the Virginia, received next day the blows of the Confederate vessels without being harmed, and returned dangerous shots from its revolving iron turrets. This duel of the ironclads, although nearly harmless to either, aroused the attention of both nations to the value of this class of boats, and the opportune arrival of the Monitor probably protected the ships of the enemy from destruction.

General McClellan gave the Confederate government time during the fall and winter after the battle of Manassas to enlarge the army and navy and increase the strength of the fortifications around Richmond. His antagonist, Gen. Joseph E. Johnston, with an army very much inferior in numbers, covered Washington for months, awaiting the renewal of the invasion. On the 10th of March, McClellan's armies began to move toward Richmond, and the Confederates were withdrawn from





the advanced position near Washington to the Rappahannock. On the 9th the Confederate army was entirely gone from its former position at Manassas, and on the next day McClellan moved toward the deserted intrenchments. A few days later his army changed direction and was massed near Alexandria. From this place it was transferred entire, except McDowell's corps, to Fortress Monroe, to begin the Peninsula campaign.

McClellan's plans were not satisfactory to the Washington management of the war, because it began to appear from the movements of Stonewall Jackson in the Valley that the city had been left without sufficient protection. Moved by this fear, McDowell, with 30,000 men, was temporarily retained on the Potomac, but McClellan's command still consisted of nearly 100,000 total, before which the Confederate force at Yorktown, after delaying the Federals awhile, retired, and Norfolk was necessarily abandoned.

The first of the series of battles between the two armies after Johnston had fallen back, was fought at Williamsburg on the 5th of May, and the next at Seven Pines or Fair Oaks. In this latter battle, of May 31st and June 1st, the Confederates shattered the left wing of the Federal line, capturing 6,000 muskets, ten guns and a large number of prisoners. General Johnston was severely wounded and Gen. Robert E. Lee was assigned to the command of the army. This victory of the Confederates under General Johnston refreshed the spirit of his army and the appointment of Lee at this critical moment increased the Southern confidence. McClellan was checked for the time by the defeat at Seven Pines, which proved to be the prelude of his many reverses.

#### IN THE WEST, APRIL AND MAY, 1862.

The Confederate armies in the West, commanded by Beauregard and Albert Sidney Johnston, were struggling through April and May to sustain the Confederacy



against the armies of Halleck's department, while their comrades were as bravely resisting the Federals under McClellan. During the first days of April, when McClellan was slowly forcing the Confederate position at Yorktown, the two military leaders in the West, provoked by the disasters of the preceding months, moved their armies from Corinth to attack Grant and Sherman at Shiloh. Their assault was made immediately on reaching the enemy with such persisting vigor on the first day, April 6th, that the army of Grant was beaten from the field; but the great victory cost the Confederacy the loss of Albert Sidney Johnston's life. The night screened the defeated Federals, the battle ceased, the reinforcements of Buell were hurried to Grant's relief, and on the next day, after a resolute defense against the attack of these new forces, the wearied and unsupported Confederate victors of the day before were withdrawn from the field, taking with them hundreds of captured muskets thirty cannon and nearly 3,000 prisoners. In this battle—one of the engagements that contributed largely to the final result—40,000 Confederates engaged the first day 44,000 Federals; and on the second day the reinforcements of the Federals were sufficient to maintain their first numbers, while the Confederates were reduced by all casualties about one-fourth and were without reserves. It is estimated that on the second day 45,000 was the total of Grant's strength, opposed by less than 30,000 effective Confederates.

The battle of Shiloh, taken into a view that embraces the positions of both armies at the close of the first day and the condition of both after the battle was ended, is properly written down among Confederate victories. It is placed among the engagements on which Confederate fate was suspended, only because the victory was not so complete as to enable the Confederates to regain the command of Fort Donelson and the possession of all Tennessee and Kentucky. Beauregard, succeeding the fallen



Johnston, could only take his army unopposed back to Corinth, and Grant could only pause on the battlefield where the fierce fight had raged and inform Halleck, "It is unsafe to remain many weeks without reinforcements." Halleck arrived on the ground ten days after the battle and said to Grant, "Your army is not now in condition to resist attack."

Beauregard's army was strengthened at Corinth by reinforcements from Trans-Mississippi, but it was again rapidly reduced by sickness. Unable to stand against the reinforced armies which Halleck at length brought against him, he retreated safely to Tupelo, where on June 17th his own sickness caused him to turn over the command to Gen. Braxton Bragg.

During the first months of 1862 the entire area of the Confederacy appears as a great field of general battle. In Arkansas the State military were contending against the raids of the Federal General Curtis. John Morgan, with his cavalry, was endeavoring to open the way for the recovery of Kentucky by the Confederates. New Orleans had been forced to surrender to Farragut, and was placed under the military command of Gen. Benjamin F. Butler. Memphis also was captured by the Federals, and the control of the Mississippi river was divided. Fort Pulaski, near the mouth of the Savannah river, was taken in April. Numerous incursions, raids and skirmishes, occurring in all directions, accompanied the more massive operations of the great armies.

#### STONEWALL JACKSON IN THE VALLEY.

General McClellan's plan of campaign was to enlarge and equip an army for an advance against Richmond which would be so powerful as to be unaffected in its movements by any diversion the Confederate government could make, but the operations of Stonewall Jackson in the Valley of Virginia became an interference at the beginning and an obstacle in the end, which contrib-



ated to the defeat of the main movement. With a few thousand men this remarkable military genius forced the management at Washington to consider him at every turn of affairs. Although repulsed now and then, his subsequent maneuvers caused the employment of great numbers of the enemy in chasing him, a chasing that led them to defeat. The forces of Shields, Milroy, Fremont, Schenck and Banks felt his power in several encounters, and it was the defeat of these generals while McClellan was moving away from Washington that alarmed the administration. The orders to protect Washington became more stringent, and while they were in process of execution by a concentration of Federal troops in Luray valley, Jackson suddenly and rapidly moved to the vicinity of Richmond.

While Jackson was closing up his series of brilliant actions by the signal defeat of Shields at Port Republic and marching his victorious regiments toward the army of Lee, J. E. B. Stuart rode around the army of McClellan, and returning in safety with many prisoners as Jackson approached, joined in the battles around Richmond, which began with Mechanicsville and ended at Malvern hill.

On the day after the battle of Seven Pines, Gen. Robert E. Lee, who since March 13th had had control of the military operations of all the Confederate armies, was directed by President Davis to take personal command of the army then defending Richmond. Under his skillful directions the fortifications around the Confederate capital had been made strong, and on assuming command of the army of Northern Virginia he proceeded at once to make its position secure against attack, and "to enhance its efficiency and strength by every means in his power, so as to justify aggressive movements."

According to an estimate of the strength of the army of Northern Virginia at the beginning of the Seven Days' battles, made in the office of the adjutant-general





from the army field returns, Lee began the battle of Cold Harbor, June 27th, with 73,000 infantry, 3,000 cavalry and 4,000 artillery. These numbers included the divisions of G. W. Smith, Longstreet, Magruder, D. H. Hill, A. P. Hill, Stonewall Jackson, Huger, Whiting, Ewell and Holmes, comprising thirty-nine brigades of infantry besides Stuart's cavalry and the artillery, making a total strength, in all arms, of 80,000. General Lee stated in November, 1865, that the estimate made in the adjutant-general's office at Richmond of the Confederate strength at the chief battles, appeared to him to be larger than the true number. General Early placed Lee's strength under 80,000 effectives. Colonel Taylor, after elaborate calculations, stated the number at 80,835.

The official returns of McClellan's armies show that at the beginning of the battles around Richmond there were present for duty 115,249 men. This superior force, equipped with whatsoever a powerful government could furnish, had reached a position within 4 miles of Richmond, only to be driven back to the James river with a loss of nearly 20,000. Transferred thence, under a quick change of commanders from McClellan to Pope, it attempted another advance, with the hope of a change from defeat to victory, but only to be vanquished again at Cedar Mountain and Manassas Junction, after which, early in September, the great army under the boastful Pope took refuge again within the fortifications about the capital of the United States.

#### AFFAIRS IN MISSISSIPPI, TENNESSEE AND KENTUCKY.

While these great military events were occurring in Virginia, General Bragg's army was at Tupelo; Van Dorn and Price were operating in Mississippi; Kirby Smith was in east Tennessee, and the cavalry of Wheeler, Forrest and Morgan were advancing into Tennessee and Kentucky.



After Shiloh, all events began to point to a general Confederate triumph, and when the summer ended the Confederate armies were marching into Kentucky under Bragg and Smith, and into Maryland under Lee. Cheered by success the Confederate people indulged the hope that recognition of their independence would soon be their reward for all their sacrifices.

Bragg moved his army, early in July, to Chattanooga, and joining Smith projected an advance into middle Tennessee and Kentucky. With the divisions of Cleburne and Churchill, Smith routed the Federals at Richmond, Ky., and reinforced by Heth moved into Lexington. Bragg, with Polk and Hardee, marched out of Chattanooga with 30,000 men, and entering Kentucky September 5th, the date of Lee's advance into Maryland, captured a garrison of 4,000 men at Munfordville on September 17th, the date of the battle of Sharpsburg. After this successful achievement he occupied Frankfort, the capital of Kentucky.

The Federal General Buell followed these Confederate armies, gathering reinforcements as he went, and forced the battle of Perryville, October 8th, which was well fought on both sides, but the disparity of numbers was greatly against Bragg, his effective strength being reported at 16,000 and the Federal force in active battle at about 24,000. Bragg, in his retreat, perfected his junction with Kirby Smith at Harrodsburg, as he originally intended, and awaited there a Federal attack, which Buell did not choose to make. Bragg soon gave up Kentucky and concentrated his forces at Murfreesboro in Tennessee. General Wheeler, who was the active leader of the cavalry in this campaign, says that the "two months of battles and marches by the armies of Bragg and Smith cost the Federals a loss in killed, wounded and prisoners of 26,530. We captured 35 cannon, 16,000 stand of arms, millions of rounds of ammunition, 1,700 mules, 300 wagons loaded with military stores and 2,000



horses. We recovered Cumberland Gap and redeemed middle Tennessee and north Alabama."

#### LEE'S MARCH INTO MARYLAND, SEPTEMBER, 1862.

Lee's plan for his northward advance included the capture of Harper's Ferry and a general engagement in Maryland, in which he expected to be successful. He crossed the Potomac on September 5th, and unexpectedly a portion of his command fought some severe battles at South Mountain, while Jackson compelled the surrender of the large Federal command at Harper's Ferry. On the 15th, when near Antietam, he confronted McClellan, who had again been called to command of the Federal army, succeeding General Pope. The battle of Sharpsburg ensued. Lee's entire strength in this bloody engagement has been carefully computed by Colonel Taylor at 35,255 of all arms, and General McClellan states in his official report that his command was 87,164 of all arms. "Those 35,000 Confederates," says Colonel Taylor in his "Four Years with General Lee," "were the very flower of the army of Northern Virginia, who with indomitable courage and inflexible tenacity wrestled for the mastery in the ratio of one to three of their adversaries, and with consummate skill they were maneuvered from point to point, as different parts of the line of battle were in turn assailed with the greatest impetuosity. At times it appeared as if disaster was inevitable; but succor never failed, and night found Lee's lines unbroken and his army still defiant." McClellan says of his command at the end of the struggle: "The next morning I found that our loss had been so great and there was so much disorganization in some of the commands that I did not consider it proper to renew the attack that day."

On the night of the 18th Lee recrossed the Potomac, and an attempt by the Federal advance to follow was so vigorously met and with such terrible slaughter that, in the language of Gen. A. P. Hill, "few were left to tell



the tale;" they were driven in great confusion into the Potomac, "and by their own account, 3,000 men were killed and drowned."

#### BURNSIDE SEEKS TO CAPTURE RICHMOND, NOVEMBER AND DECEMBER, 1862.

Lee's army was recruited after his arrival in the lower valley of Virginia to a total of all arms, immediately under himself, of about 40,000. McClellan concentrated his army early in November about Warrenton, where he was relieved of command by General Burnside, who planned at once another advance on Richmond by way of Fredericksburg. Lee therefore ordered Longstreet to that place and Jackson to Orange Court House. About the middle of the month the Federal advance appeared opposite Fredericksburg and with some surprise saw the Confederate guns already posted on the hills in their front. By the 12th of December, Burnside had his army of 100,000 men, as he testified before the committee on the conduct of the war, aligned against Lee's 73,000 on the south side of the river, and on the morning of the 13th began the terrible battle. Attack after attack was most bravely made by the army of the Potomac, with great pertinacity, notwithstanding their repeated repulses with fearful slaughter. Burnside's defeat was overwhelming, and the casualties were so great that the unfortunate Federal general, after one later and futile advance, relinquished his hope of gaining Richmond and willingly retired from command.

#### MURFREESBORO AND THE VICKSBURG EXPEDITIONS, JANUARY TO MAY, 1863.

On the 25th of December, Rosecrans began to advance upon Bragg's position at Murfreesboro with a fighting strength of about 60,000 men. General Bragg with 35,000 held a line crossing Stone's river. On the 30th, Rosecrans arrived with part of his force before this line, and upon his failure to attack, Bragg assailed him the





next day with very considerable success. Rosecrans then changed his line and awaited reinforcements, and in the meantime several brief conflicts occurred between portions of the two armies, one of them being a vigorous charge by Breckinridge's division. After a week of this desultory fighting Bragg withdrew to Tullahoma.

The Federal plan of campaign in the West, in the winter of 1862-63, embraced an invasion of the State of Mississippi, with the special object of taking Vicksburg. At that point strong works upon the bluffs commanded the Mississippi, and had successfully resisted the attacks of the Federal river fleets, in June and July of that year. In December, General Grant led an army southward through the State, to menace the rear of Vicksburg, while General Sherman attacked with a force transported upon the river. Foiled by the cutting of his own communications and the signal defeat of Sherman by Gen. S. D. Lee at Chickasaw bayou, General Grant embarked in January, 1863, at Memphis, and moved his army to the Louisiana side of the Mississippi river opposite Vicksburg. After various attempts were made to approach the city from the north side, all of which failed, Grant's army crossed below Vicksburg, and after a brief campaign extending over the State as far as Jackson, the siege of Vicksburg was begun May 18th.

#### MINOR CONFEDERATE VICTORIES EARLY IN 1863.

Several small Confederate victories, such as the defense of Fort McAllister on the Ogeechee river, Ga., against the monitor Montauk and several gunboats, on the 1st and 28th of February and the 3d of March; the success of the Palmetto and Chicora, two Confederate ironclads, in clearing the harbor of Charleston of the blockading fleet, and the surrender of the Isaac Smith, a Federal gunboat, to the batteries on Stono river, are notable among the early events of 1863. At Galveston



Harbor, Texas, on January 1st, the Union flagship *Westfield* was blown up, and the *Harriet Lane* boarded by the Texans and taken. On March 5th a Federal brigade was captured at Spring Hill, Tenn., by Van Dorn. Confederate armed cruisers were playing havoc among the shipping interests in many waters. The *Alabama* had captured the United States ship *Hatteras*, and this vessel and the *Florida* cruised in the West India waters and off the coast of South America. The commander of the *Florida* estimated his captures at 70 vessels, and Captain Semmes of the *Alabama* reported the capture by his ship of 56 vessels. Since the commencement of the war it was reported that 184 vessels with their cargoes, valued at \$15,000,000, had been destroyed on the high seas by this active branch of the Confederate naval force.

#### BATTLE OF CHANCELLORSVILLE.

For three months after the battle of Fredericksburg the army of Northern Virginia rested in winter quarters, and when the spring opened it was well prepared for the Federal attack which General Hooker, the successor of Burnside, was expected to make with his army of nearly 132,000 men. The official report of the Confederate army arrayed on the south side of the Rappahannock against this large Federal force shows present for duty on March 31, 1863: Anderson's and McLaws' divisions of Longstreet's corps, 15,649; Jackson's corps, 33,333; cavalry, 6,509; reserve artillery, 1,821; total of all arms, 57,212. Of this number less than 42,000 participated in the battle of Chancellorsville.

The army of the Potomac, with which Hooker was attempting to destroy the army of Lee, was composed of seven army corps of infantry—the First, Second, Third, Fifth, Sixth, Eleventh and Twelfth, containing 119,661 men, and a corps of cavalry, 12,000, making a total of



131,661. Of this number about 90,000 were employed in the battle of Chancellorsville. The physical force of the Federals thus appears to have been about double that of the Confederate army.

The advance Federal movement began by the crossing of Sedgwick below Fredericksburg and the passage by Hooker of the upper fords. Soon after moving his own force across the river, Hooker withdrew a part of Sedgwick's force and concentrated at Chancellorsville an army of six corps, containing nearly 90,000 men under his immediate command. The dispositions thus made by the Federal commander to force a retreat by Lee at great disadvantage or a fight in which he could be crushed, have been commended by military critics, but the great abilities of the Confederate chieftain were equal to the vast responsibility now thrust upon him. With him were the superb corps and division generals, Jackson, Anderson, McLaws, Early, Stuart and Fitzhugh Lee, whose commands confided in their skill and were ready to execute their plans.

It was quickly observed by Lee that the main assault was not to be made by Sedgwick, and that a direct attack on Hooker was perilous on account of his great numbers and strong position. A flank movement by Jackson while Early held Sedgwick was therefore soon adopted as the principal feature of the plan, notwithstanding the details of execution divided the Confederate army into three parts. Jackson executed his part of the plan on the afternoon of May 2d, with such wonderful daring and skill that his onset crushed through Hooker's right wing and spread a panic over nearly the whole of the Federal army at Chancellorsville. Sedgwick, at Fredericksburg, had meantime driven Early's small force from his front and was directing his advance toward Hooker. But on the next morning after Jackson's bewildering flank assault, his force, commanded by Stuart after the great hero of the first fight had fallen, joined the divi-



positions which Lee had retained near the center of his line, and these united commands attacked Hooker with an impetuosity which made them masters of the works he had constructed. Sedgwick, with his superior weight, had captured Marye's hill and threatened the rear of Lee's victorious army, but this dangerous movement was foiled by Lee, who led McLaws and Wilcox against Sedgwick in the afternoon, driving him back upon his reserve at nightfall. Early advanced next day on the Telegraph road, and with a few assaults recovered Marye's heights and the ridges, which placed him in the rear of the enemy's left. Hooker, in the midst of these disasters which imperiled his army, diligently fortified his position near Chancellorsville, and Lee, being unwilling to attack him with only a part of his force then at hand, was compelled to consume the greater portion of the day in getting his divided army united and in position to advance. This difficult undertaking was accomplished during the afternoon, and a short time before sunset the attack was made. The Confederates swept again into the Federal breastworks and compelled a hasty retreat during the darkness of night of the whole of Hooker's army across the river. At the same time Fredericksburg was abandoned by Sedgwick. At sunrise of the next day the Confederates found themselves in full possession of the field, enjoying a complete victory. General Hooker, safe again on the bluffs, with the river rolling between him and Lee, reviewed the events of the week and frivolously congratulated the army of the Potomac on their ability to fight or to retreat as circumstances required. The death of Jackson was a loss most seriously felt by the army. No estimate of his military abilities has yet appeared extravagant to the men who fought with him, but no calculations as to results had his life been spared can ever be indulged.





FROM CHANCELLORSVILLE TO GETTYSBURG, JUNE  
AND JULY, 1863.

What policy should be pursued by the Confederate government after two years of defensive warfare and three campaigns in which all the power of the United States had been vainly exerted to reach the Confederate capital or to break into the centers of the Confederate territory? This was the question to be considered in view of the management of the war which had been made up to that time upon the States. With the single exception of the strongly organized and definite efforts to capture Richmond, the entire scope of the conflict revealed only scattered expeditions of various sizes by land and sea, producing no decided result, yet causing a measureless amount of suffering. Over a million Federal soldiers were dispersed over the borders, around the coasts, and along the rivers of the South, but there was only one Army having one definite aim. Except the army of the Potomac, the other vast forces of the United States were operating in large and small detachments. One lone aim—to take Richmond—enchained the attention of the Administration at Washington.

Upon due reflection it was determined by General Lee on the field, and President Davis at the capital, not to attack Hooker on the heights of Fredericksburg, nor to wait on the administration at Washington to plan a new line of advance against Richmond, but to draw the Federal armies from Virginia by boldly marching the army of Northern Virginia northward. Accordingly Lee prepared his army at once for this movement. It was reorganized into three corps: Longstreet's, the First; Ewell's, the Second; A. P. Hill's, the Third; and Stuart commanding the cavalry. With this organization Lee crossed the Potomac in June, advanced into Pennsylvania, and at Gettysburg on July 1st encountered a part of the army of the Potomac under Meade, who had superseded Hooker. The first day's fighting ended in



the defeat of the Federals, who were driven through the village of Gettysburg to the heights beyond. General Lee from an elevated site saw the flight of the beaten regiments over the hills, and ordered the taking of the heights if it could be done. Unfortunately, the order was not obeyed; perhaps its value was not understood. The Confederate commander designed to promptly renew the fight next morning, but the troops required for the attack were not in position until 4 o'clock in the afternoon, and the assault then made, although vigorously pressed, was not sufficiently in concert to achieve the best results.

General Meade's army had meanwhile hurried up, and stretching along the commanding "heights of Gettysburg," fortified thoroughly their almost impregnable position. On the third day Lee's entire army reached the ground, and after some further irritating delays was ready for the general movement to be made nearly according to the original plan. At length heavy artillery firing along the lines of both armies preceded the advance of the infantry. The charge was designed to be general, and by divisions in concert well supported, but the plan was not carried out. Longstreet had said, "The army of Northern Virginia is in condition to undertake anything;" but "the army" as a whole did not fight that day together. The charges were as gallant, as prolonged, and as desperate as men ever made in battle, but they were delivered in detail. At many points the heights were gained, but they could not be held. The Confederate columns heroically assailed the intrenched positions of their enemy, and here and there carried them, but being attacked on both flanks were driven back with heavy loss. The battle ended after great slaughter on both sides, and the two armies stood still before each other during the whole of the next day—the Fourth of July.



## AFTER GETTYSBURG AND VICKSBURG.

During the day following Lee's last attack at Gettysburg his army remained in line twenty-four hours, within easy reach of Meade without being assailed. It was afterward stated in testimony before the committee of the United States Congress "on the conduct of the war," that in a council of Meade with his corps generals the propriety of the withdrawal from Gettysburg of the Federal army was earnestly discussed. To what extent any such withdrawal was considered at any time is not known, but it is clear that Meade's army had been seriously shattered and was not in a condition which made an immediate advance advisable. The Gettysburg battle was indeed very nearly a Confederate victory. Prompt pursuit of the flying foe on the first day would have made triumph easy. Resolute attack on the morning of the second day by all divisions must have given the field to the Confederates. The fortunes of battle were uncertain on the third day, after all the Federal forces were on intrenched elevations which they were to hold by superior numbers of infantry and artillery. It was still possible by concerted heroic movement to have captured the intrenchments; and this possibility is suggested by the fact that wherever the Confederate attack was heroic and concerted the Federal lines were broken, but where concerted action and due support were lacking the movement failed. So nearly was Meade beaten that he was forced to let the recoiled line of Lee lie undisturbed while its great commander arranged the withdrawal of his army into Virginia. The issue at Gettysburg between a Confederate army of 62,000 and a Federal army (fighting on its own soil) of 105,000, reached this stage of doubt after three days of battle, with loss of Confederates 19,000 and of Federals 20,000.

On the day when Lee and Meade were thus contemplating their respective situations, the central strategic position in the West—Vicksburg and the Mississippi



river—was surrendered to the Federal forces after a prolonged siege. With valor similar to that which had been shown by the army of Northern Virginia in the battles of this year, their comrades in the West had been contending for supremacy in that section. After many battles the defenders of Vicksburg endured a siege of nearly fifty days and their surrender became imperative. Four days afterward Port Hudson was also given up and the Mississippi river went out of Confederate control.

These two prominent events occurring together—the withdrawal of Lee from Gettysburg to Virginia and the loss of the Mississippi river—are indissolubly associated in the public mind as the turning point of the issue at arms between the two nations. What might have been the achievements of Lee's army if Stonewall Jackson had not fallen at Chancellorsville is a deeply interesting speculation. What would have resulted had Meade's army been broken into fragments, leaving Maryland delivered, and Washington open to capture, will also remain among unsolved questions. Rumor said that foreign nations were prepared to recognize the Confederate States if Lee made his advance successful; that domestic discontent throughout the North would increase to a revolt there, and that the peace party would present a front which the war party could not withstand. This sketch, however, treats of events only, and throwing them into groups as they occur will leave them to speak for themselves.

Taking fresh account of the military situation after this Fourth of July epoch in the Confederate war, it will be found that Meade after some delay transferred his army into Virginia and advanced to Culpeper, where Lee confronted him with a line along the Rapidan. Lee's army when placed in this position was about 48,000. recruited to 56,000 by the 1st of August, including all arms, and composed of the corps of Longstreet, Ewell





and Hill, the artillery and Stuart's cavalry. Longstreet's corps was sent to Bragg, and Lee's army from that time varied very slightly from 43,000 after the end of 1863. Two corps were ordered away from Meade about the same time that Longstreet's two divisions were detached from Lee and sent to Johnston. The two armies thus reduced were engaged only in desultory fighting, including one successful advance by Lee in October, and the attempt of Meade at Mine run which failed.

CHICKAMAUGA AND MISSIONARY RIDGE, SEPTEMBER  
TO NOVEMBER, 1863.

Bragg, commanding in Tennessee, had fallen back in June, during Lee's operations in Pennsylvania, from Tullahoma to Chattanooga, with his army of 44,000 men, and placed it in intrenchments there in the period of Gettysburg and the surrender of Vicksburg. Rosecrans, with an army of about 65,000, followed him across the Tennessee river, and Burnside with 15,000 took possession of Cumberland Gap. Bragg, perceiving the design of Rosecrans to turn his left flank, evacuated Chattanooga and chose a line of battle on the Chickamauga river. These movements occupied the time from July 1st to September 18th, and brought the two armies together at the battle of Chickamauga. The first day's fight on the 19th was a drawn battle, but General Longstreet's divisions arrived on the field, and with this accession of strength Bragg won on the 20th the great battle that utterly defeated the whole of the army of Rosecrans except the wing which Thomas held with a steadiness that gained him the well-won title of "the Rock of Chickamauga."

The routed forces of Rosecrans, that fled into Chattanooga from this battlefield, were joined by Thomas, who had made good his retreat after his heroic fighting. The Confederate army closed in about the place of refuge which Rosecrans had sought, and made critical the situa-



tion of his army. The Confederate forces had now acquired an advantage which it appears was lost by the detaching of Longstreet on an expedition to drive Burnside from Knoxville; and perhaps also by the neglect of an opportunity for making a united bold advance into Tennessee. At the time that Bragg's forces were thus weakened by the absence of Longstreet and were held as besiegers of Chattanooga in the lines along Missionary ridge and Lookout mountain, Federal reinforcements drawn from Virginia and Tennessee in large numbers were hurried to the relief of Rosecrans. General Grant was also ordered to take command and Rosecrans was relieved.

About the middle of November the Federal army had been increased to 80,000 men, nearly doubling the force of Bragg, and inspired with confidence by the arrival of a new commander. Confiding in this force and appreciating the value of a quick blow while Longstreet was away, General Grant moved against Bragg, and on November 25th drove him from Lookout mountain and Missionary ridge to a new position near Dalton, in Georgia. This much accomplished, a large reinforcement was sent rapidly to Burnside, at Knoxville, causing Longstreet to withdraw toward Virginia.

#### FEDERAL PREPARATIONS TO INVADE GEORGIA, 1864.

The greater part of the armies in Virginia and Tennessee rested awhile in the midst of the severe winter. Sherman, however, with an army of 30,000 marched against Meridian, Miss., which he entered on February 16th and began his usual work of destruction with both infantry and cavalry. But he was harassed by Forrest, who had "the genius for cavalry fighting," and after his own cavalry force of 8,000 men had been punished so severely in a number of fights that they rode off to Memphis, Sherman retreated to Vicksburg.

During the same month the invasion of Florida by



Seymour was arrested by the Confederate victory at Olustee, February 20th, fought under Generals Colquhoun and Finegan. Texas and Louisiana, at this season, became the ground of an expedition of combined land and naval forces under General Banks and Admiral Porter, who went up Red river early in March and advanced upon Shreveport. The expedition had large proportions and expectations of acquiring an immense quantity of cotton, but it met with most mortifying defeats by the Confederates under General Taylor. Banks found the way to New Orleans for himself and parts of his disordered command, while Porter escaped with his gunboats by the ingenuity of an engineer. General Banks was relieved of his command.

#### THE GREAT FINAL MOVEMENTS.

The trial year of war had arrived, the last of those four years from April, 1861, to April, 1865, in which the Confederacy was defended by armies which had fought with unexcelled courage, and by a navy of gunboats and cruisers created with a rapidity and managed with a skill that provoked astonishment and admiration.

While little mention in this scant outline has been made of the action of the Confederate administration at Richmond during the progress of hostilities, it will be borne in mind that all departments had been thoroughly absorbed with the business of war. The President, as commander-in-chief, had often been personally in council on the field with military chieftains, and two or three times exposed in battle. The secretaries of war and the navy, the adjutant-general with his assistants, the bureaus and all chiefs of departments had little relaxation from labor. Congress in frequent and prolonged sessions prepared and passed all acts which the increasing pressure of the war demanded. Governors of States, with the officials under them, bent all their energies to the duty of meeting the demands upon them, and the people of



the South were industriously working to supply the armies. The numerous Confederate dead were mourned for in thousands of homes; an army of men, disabled by wounds or disease, was scattered in all sections of the Confederacy; the widows and orphans of the fallen Southern braves were receiving the attention of legislatures in their time of need, and although the numbers of the soldiery were greatly diminished and the general resources for war had shrunk everywhere, yet the budding springtime of 1864 brought a renewal of purpose to achieve independence and a revival of the hope that it could be gained.

#### EVENTS, GREAT AND SMALL, WORK TOGETHER IN 1864.

The chief interest in the campaign of 1864 centers in the army operations in Virginia and Georgia, but before the collision came in early May between Lee and Grant in the former State, and between Joseph E. Johnston and Sherman in the latter, there had been over 200 engagements since the 1st of January, covering portions of New Mexico, Texas, Louisiana, Arkansas, Missouri, Kentucky, Tennessee, Georgia, Mississippi, Alabama, Florida, South Carolina, North Carolina and Virginia, many of these fights rising to the dignity of battles. The activity of the combatants and the great area of military operations are made apparent by this survey (at a glance) of the theater of war. The defense of the South at so many points where its territory was attacked, required local uses of its resources and detachments from the main armies of large numbers of its troops, or the arming of nearly the entire male population. In line with the policy of destruction then adopted at Washington and understood at the headquarters of the armies, many expeditions and raids invaded the Southern interior, subsisting on the country while they could and leaving desolation when they withdrew. Fighting for farm and fireside was made necessary. Agriculture was hindered, trans-





portation crippled, and all resources for successful war diminished. The Southern States still under the protection of the Confederate armies were thus left in such alarm, notwithstanding the raiders were usually driven off, that productions available for the armies were greatly reduced.

Among this large number of small affairs, the movements of Grant in Virginia to be met by Lee, and of Sherman in Georgia to be met by Johnston, indicated the coming of great events. Grant's lone task was to take Richmond, distant only a few days' march. The capital of the Confederacy was the castle whose capture would satisfy the monarchs of Europe that President Davis had lost his government. Belligerent rights, which had been rightfully accorded the Confederate government when organized in due form and defended by successful arms, had chafed the Washington administration. The fall of Richmond would be followed by the withdrawal of these belligerent rights, so that the Confederate movement for independence would probably at once subside. To the attainment of this great end Grant was equipped with a splendid army for his personal command, and made lieutenant-general in control of the United States army operations. Sherman's advance southward was not so distinctly determined. Marching from Dalton upon Johnston he could move into Alabama and find his "deep water" at Mobile; or, cutting a way into Georgia he could gain Atlanta, from which he might proceed to Savannah. He could make a strong demonstration on either course and retire into Tennessee and be available in helping Grant. Sherman's task was to further subdivide Confederate territory, destroy its resources, interrupt communications and prevent reinforcements from going to Lee. His operations were subordinate and would avail nothing unless Grant destroyed Lee's army and captured Richmond.

Meanwhile the United States armies were well sup-



ported by the dispositions of the navy. The total number of naval vessels in use was 588, of 4,443 guns aggregate, consisting of 46 ironclad steamers for coast service, 150 guns; 29 ironclad steamers for inland service, 152 guns; 203 sidewheel steamers, 1,240 guns; 198 screw steamers, 1,578 guns; 112 sailing vessels, 1,328 guns. The number of seamen in service was over 40,000. Six squadrons were kept along the Atlantic seaboard and the Gulf shores. One flotilla patrolled the Mississippi river, and another occupied the Potomac and the James. Other squadrons were stationed on the Pacific coast, and a considerable number of vessels was employed in search of the bold cruisers and privateers who were destroying United States commerce. The squadrons on the Atlantic and the Gulf stood guard over Southern ports to enforce the blockade, in which duties they were often interrupted by bold attacks.

#### THE CAMPAIGN OF 1864 BEGINS IN MAY.

At the beginning of the campaign of 1864 the forces with which General Lee was preparing to meet Grant were, in round numbers, infantry 50,000, cavalry 8,700, artillery 4,850—the total of all arms present for duty not exceeding 64,000. These numbers had been reached since the official return of April 20th, by the arrival of the divisions of Longstreet. The army then numbering 64,000 of all arms was composed of the First corps, Longstreet; Second corps, A. P. Hill; Third corps, Ewell; cavalry corps, J. E. B. Stuart, containing the divisions of Hampton and Fitzhugh Lee; and the Maryland Line, Gen. Bradley T. Johnson. This force was called the army of Northern Virginia.

The army of the Potomac under General Grant, as reported by the secretary of war, had on May 1st present for duty 120,380 of all arms, which number was increased by the arrival of the Ninth corps, 27,780 strong, to the great force of 141,160 men of all arms—a few more than



double the army of Lee. This general statement that at the outset of the campaign the military strength of Grant's army doubled that of the army under Lee, has been given by many investigators who made their calculations from all authoritative sources. Taking into the computation all of the men whom Grant could readily make available for an immediate advance without endangering Washington or weakening other important positions, in comparison with the force which Lee could employ to resist his advance in May, 1864, it is ascertained that the disparity in numbers was two to one. But the difference in equipment was much greater. The army of Grant moved with resources of the ordnance, quartermaster, commissary and medical departments very greatly exceeding those of the army of Lee. It must be taken into the general consideration of General Grant's campaign that he employed the force of other columns collaterally with his own. Butler, with 30,000 men, entered the James when Grant moved across the Rapidan, and landed at Bermuda Hundred and City Point, which he fortified after one timid attempt to capture Petersburg. His operations afterward availed Grant nothing except the employment of Confederate forces under Beauregard to defeat his expeditions and finally to "bottle him up." General Sigel invaded the valley with about 10,000 men, where he was defeated by Breckinridge on May 15th at New Market. Hunter, relieving Sigel, achieved such considerable success as to require the detaching of Early, in June, to drive him from the valley. Generals Crook and Averell advanced through southwestern Virginia, but were compelled to retire before Gen. Sam Jones to the valley. Sheridan's splendid cavalry were constantly employed to the embarrassment of the Confederates from the beginning to the close of the general movement. These troops will be considered in the progress of the campaign as they increase Grant's army and consequently enlarge the disparity between his force and Lee's.



Almost simultaneously the armies of Sherman and Grant moved out on their respective lines of advance—Sherman to penetrate Georgia and Grant to take Richmond. General Grant, on May 4th, crossed the Rapidan to place his army between Lee and Richmond, but on the 5th and 6th found himself in sudden battle in the Wilderness. Checked in the first move, Grant turned toward Spottsylvania Court House, designing to reach that vantage ground before Lee discovered his purpose. But the Confederate commander anticipated the movement by marching Longstreet's corps to the same point, where the two armies again faced each other and fought for position on the 9th and 10th. General Sheridan, in co-operation with this infantry movement to Spottsylvania, had been sent by Grant with a fine corps of about 10,000 cavalry to ride to the rear of Lee's army and cut the communications with Richmond. Stuart, following after him, fought the battle of Yellow Tavern and rescued Richmond, but lost his own life. Sheridan's raid did not succeed and he returned to Grant.

The fighting at Spottsylvania, nearly continuous, culminated on this line on the 12th, when a salient left without proper artillery protection was carried at dawn by a Federal assault which swept over Gen. Edward Johnson's division and greatly imperiled Lee's army. A most remarkable infantry struggle took place during the day of this assault, at the end of which the Federal advance was checked. For a week afterward Grant awaited the arrival of reinforcements from Washington, which were sent, and then moving behind the cover of the rivers toward Bowling Green, found Lee in line offering battle at Hanover Junction. Shifting his army eastward without having ventured to attack Lee in this new position, he maneuvered to deceive Lee, but the two great armies again met on the battlefield of Cold Harbor, where the Federals were placed at disadvantage. It was at this point that General Grant, on the 3d of June, made





those unavailing assaults on the lines of the army in Northern Virginia which were so destructive to his dispositions that at last they silently declined to advance. "The immobile lines pronounced a verdict," writes Swinton in his "Army of the Potomac," "silent, yet emphatic, against further slaughter. The loss on the Union side in this sanguinary action was over 13,000, while on the part of the Confederates it is doubtful whether it reached as many hundreds."

After this victory Lee detached Early to check Hunter's ravages in the valley, and from the same bloody field the persistent Federal general moved his army to the south side of James river and sought retrieval by a movement to take Petersburg by surprise, in which he was foiled by Beauregard's small command. As the general result of the entire campaign, the army of the Potomac was concentrated south of the Appomattox river to begin the siege of Petersburg, and the opinion was held and expressed with some vehemence at the North that Grant had slaughtered an army without gaining one decisive victory.

#### CHARLESTON AND FORT SUMTER IN 1864.

Charleston had also received the attention of the Federal government while plans were made against Richmond and Atlanta. It was already distinguished by the failure of repeated attempts to take it, and deserves some connected mention at this juncture of Confederate affairs. Doubtless the early capture of that city would have very greatly gratified all those in the United States who regarded it as the originator of secession. The capture of Fort Sumter in April, 1861, by the Confederates, was apparently easily accomplished, but the defense of the same spot by them was so heroic and skillful that it was never taken by force from its captors. The battles of Secessionville in June, and of Pocotaligo in October, 1862, were won in South Carolina's defense. The block-



ade of the port was made strong by the presence of a formidable fleet, but blockaders still came in and the fleet was often disturbed. In January, 1863, the Confederate ironclads Palmetto State and Chicora, in the harbor, boldly attacked the whole Federal wooden fleet, capturing the Mercedita and the Keystone State. The other Federal vessels steamed out to sea, leaving the harbor open for a day and night. Masked batteries opened on the Federal gunboat in the Stono river and cutting off retreat, compelled surrender. A squadron of eight ironclads was finally sent to subdue Sumter and capture Charleston. These powerful vessels, armed with guns of heavy caliber, steamed into position April 7, 1863, and opening fire on Sumter received such response from the fort and the batteries as to cause the withdrawal of the fleet, with many of the ships injured and one of them destroyed. A few months later a Federal landing was made on Morris island, and Battery Wagner was furiously bombarded, July 11th, by the fleet and batteries, followed by General Seymour's assault which General Taliaferro repulsed, causing Seymour a loss of over 1,500 men. Near the same date Sumter endured a seven days' bombardment, which tore down its walls in a mass of ruins, but Beauregard, again commanding at Charleston, erected interior defenses and still held the ruined fort. It became necessary for the Confederates to withdraw from Fort Gregg, Battery Wagner and Morris island, and yet they held the mass of Sumter's ruins and defended Charleston. Both the fort and the city were in the possession of the Confederates when Grant marched in May, 1864, to overthrow Lee, and Sherman moved against Johnston. After the first terrible bombardment which reduced the fort to ruins, the Confederate engineers and soldiers converted the débris into an earthwork of such strength that it bore bombardment through all the campaigns of Grant and Sherman. It stood as the invincible protector of South Carolina's harbor through a year



and a half of Federal attack, endured "for a hundred days and nights their utmost power," and resisting all efforts to take away its crown by force, the old work saw with defiance the army of Sherman pass by in 1865 toward Columbia. The brave fort and gallant city were first in the war and last in the surrender.

#### SHERMAN IN GEORGIA, 1864.

During the time in which Grant was contending with Lee for the possession of Richmond, Sherman and Johnston were engaged in the campaign through Georgia. Sherman reached Atlanta soon after Grant had settled his army in the trenches at Petersburg and around Richmond, so that these cities were placed under siege about the same time, but this advantage had not been easily gained. His army, of sufficient strength to cover Johnston's front with one-half its own, thus leaving another army free to operate on the flank, encountered skillful and vigorous opposition on many battlefields. Adopting tactics for which his superior force was well adapted, Sherman forced Johnston back by flank movements, but not without severe engagements at Resaca, May 14th; New Hope church and Dallas, May 25th-27th; Kenesaw mountain, June 27th; besides many small engagements in which the Federal army suffered great losses. Gathering his "three armies" around Atlanta in July, Sherman began to consider his next movements, and it has been said that the removal of Johnston at this stage of the campaign gave him great satisfaction. Johnston, who had fought him with skill from Dalton to the Chattahoochee river, but had contended with him by retreats, was succeeded by Hood, whose fame for impetuous leadership caused Sherman to consider that the Confederate plans would be changed.

Pausing to take observation from the position now reached, by the Confederate trend, it does not at once clearly appear that the situation had very much changed.



Fighting had been occurring in every Southern State since the middle of May, until the reported number of engagements was 180, besides those fought between the great armies of the two nations, and this is far below the actual number of skirmishes between small bodies in every State. The successes of Grant and Sherman had consisted in merely a gain of ground at a great loss of men. Grant was scarcely better stationed at the end of his campaign, and with the loss of thousands of men, than McClellan was when Lee caused his retreat from Richmond. The chief gain was in the reduction of Confederate numbers, which could not be replaced. Sherman had reached the piedmont of Georgia, where the table-lands stretched before him with rivers running to the sea, but his situation was perilous. Mobile, Savannah and Charleston were still Confederate strongholds, forbidding advance from the South into the Confederate interior. The Trans-Mississippi States, although cut off from the Confederacy in the East, were yet unsubdued and capable of taking care of themselves. The little navy yet left was doing good service, and the privateers were doing full damage wherever they were afloat. The general survey thus made, produced some muttering in the North and inspired some hopes in the South, but the insight of the situation showed a region beginning to suffer heavily from an exhaustion which could not be stayed. The producing area of the Confederacy had been lessened, producers had become much fewer, products had been destroyed, communication by rivers and railroads had been cut off, transportation had been alarmingly reduced, and there was no reliable money. The army official reports showed a considerable strength still left in the numbers of fighting men; but they were necessarily scattered over a vast territory, defending hundreds of important minor positions with inadequate munitions, while the combined armies of Lee and Johnston had not half the strength of either army under Grant or Sher-





man. In these balances the Confederacy was weighed in July, 1864. There was yet a possibility of acquiring independence, and because of that possibility the administration at Richmond, the armies in the field, and the people in their homes resolved in the summer of 1864 on the continuance of the contest.

Hood, succeeding Johnston, struck one of Sherman's corps north of Atlanta on the 20th, and the entire army on the 22d, and still again on the 28th of July. Afterward Sherman's movements necessitated the battles of Jonesboro and Lovejoy's Station, in which the Federals gained advantages that caused the evacuation of Atlanta and opened it for occupation by the Federal army. General Hood, advising with the Richmond administration, planned a bold movement northward to destroy Sherman's communications and to draw him out of Georgia into the former battle grounds of Tennessee. The movement temporarily drew a considerable part of the Federal army into northwest Georgia, and was attended with several small Confederate victories; but in September, Sherman, returning to Atlanta, wantonly burned the city as thoroughly as he could, and leaving it smoking behind him, marched southward, with little opposition, using the destructive agencies of fire and pillage along his broad route to Savannah.

#### THE RESULT APPROACHES ASCERTAINMENT.

While Sherman and Hood were contesting the ground in Georgia in July and September, E. Kirby Smith and Gen. Dick Taylor were holding the enemy in check in the Trans-Mississippi department; Lieut.-Gen. S. D. Lee, commanding the department of Alabama, Mississippi and East Louisiana, had there vigorously engaged the Federal forces until he was transferred to command with Hood at Atlanta, while a great number of skirmishes and small engagements took place in Tennessee and Kentucky. General Forrest, under orders from Gen. S. D.



Lee, had gained a great victory June 10th in the battle of Tishomingo Creek, in Mississippi, thoroughly beating Grierson and Sturgis, capturing 1,600 officers and men, 16 guns, 1,500 small-arms, besides a vast amount of ordnance and quartermaster stores. This brilliant battle was followed by other remarkable exploits of this great cavalry general at Pontotoc and Harrisburg, Miss.; at Memphis, Tenn., and in various other expeditions. During the same period of activity, the Federal Admiral Farragut, with four ironclad monitors and fourteen other vessels, attacked the small Confederate fleet commanded by Admiral Buchanan in Mobile bay, and passing Fort Morgan, disabled several Confederate vessels and drove the remainder up the river. Having gained this advantage he soon captured the forts, with their guns and men, but was unable to wrest Mobile from the defenders in the intrenchments.

The Confederate activity in the States west of Georgia ceased somewhat on account of the great need of Hood for reinforcements during his advance northward into Tennessee, in which his army, although fighting with wonderful courage at Franklin, and afterward at Nashville, became so shattered that its retirement southward again became imperative. The remnants of this splendid army, which had fought so long under Albert Sidney Johnston, Beauregard, Bragg, Joseph E. Johnston and Hood, on returning through Georgia appeared once more in front of Sherman in South Carolina.

Meantime the Confederate line of Lee extended thirty-five miles along the breastworks which engineers, the most skillful of any army, had constructed for the protection of the Confederate capital. Fortressed by these defenses, which were manned their whole length by men far too few to occupy them, the cities of Petersburg and Richmond withstood all the assaults of the great Federal army, through the summer and winter months until the spring of 1865 had come, the details of which



protracted siege are given in many volumes of this work and may not be recounted here. It dragged its wearisome course through the summer while Early was pushing Hunter into the mountains of western Virginia, driving Sigel across the Potomac, defeating Wallace at Monocacy, forming line of battle in sight of Washington city, to the amazement of its defenders, mingled with no little amount of the old fear for the safety of the capital. After thus scandalizing the military management of the Federals, Early defeated Crook and Averell at Kernstown, and gained such mastery of the valley as to require the special expedition of a new force of 40,000 infantry, attended by a chosen body of cavalry, to finally defeat him after many engagements extending into the winter.

The operations of Grant against Petersburg and Richmond from July to the opening of the following spring, were comprised in approaches by intrenchments; the explosion of a mine under the Confederate breastworks on the 30th of July; attempted extensions of his lines in August, in which he was partially successful at Globe tavern and defeated at Reams' Station; besides other efforts on both sides of the river James, which did not change the situation to his advantage.

The total result of events to February, 1865, was such that the Confederate government ventured, through a commission composed of Stephens, Hunter and Campbell, to present again to the Federal administration proposals for peace. The Confederate government was justified at this time in seeking for a basis of peace between the sections, but what the precise conditions were on which it would have accepted peace without independence, has not yet clearly appeared. The exact point of appeasement was never reached, but it is certain that President Lincoln, in his interview with the commission, did not write the word "Union" and consent to the addition thereto of whatever the commissioners desired. Mr. Lincoln was too wise to do so foolish an



act, and the rumor that he did is not only without evidence, but is against the testimony of the parties to the conference. Nor does it appear conclusively that the ultimatum of President Davis was independence or war. Whatever his exigency required him to declare to the public as the true basis of a treaty, it must be considered that his utterances had often committed him to restoration of the Union under the Constitution. But these questions are put aside as not being within the scope of this outline of army operations, that the situation of the great military contestants may be now observed for the last time.

Sherman left Savannah, which he had occupied after suffering the Confederate forces there to retreat without hindrance into South Carolina. His march was resumed in January through that State northward to Columbia, which he caused to be burned. Charleston, flanked by this movement, was evacuated, and from this point the Confederate forces under Johnston met the Federal advances toward North Carolina.

On the return of the army of Tennessee from its unfortunate expedition, Gen. Joseph E. Johnston had been recalled to command and placed in charge of all forces in South and North Carolina, in order that a concentration might be effected with which Sherman could be checked. The divisions of Stevenson and Cheatham, brought from the army of Tennessee; the division of Hoke, which had been detached for some time from the army of Northern Virginia, and the troops of Hardee, withdrawn from Charleston, constituted the infantry. Wheeler and Hampton commanded the cavalry. The strength of the forces when concentrated was probably 20,000 effective men of all arms. With this command, brought together after Bragg had fought the battle of Kinston, and Hardee the battle of Averasboro, General Johnston confronted Sherman's force of 70,000 at Bentonville in engagements from the 19th to the 21st of March, after which he moved his army to Raleigh.





The march of Sherman from Savannah northward bore directly upon the military situation around Richmond, and his success in placing his strong force far up into North Carolina in such dangerous proximity to Virginia brought the war to its real crisis. It is scarcely necessary to again mention the Confederate and Federal forces scattered throughout the South engaged in contests which bore slightly at this time on the impending crisis in Confederate affairs. We may, therefore, turn to Lee and Grant, so closely confronted at Petersburg that the exchange of friendly chat between the lines was often substituted for the sharp explosion of deadly arms.

Lee, having been appointed general-in-chief of all Confederate armies on the 5th of February, began to make various dispositions looking to the probability which he had contemplated before, that Richmond must be abandoned. Early in February, he placed Johnston, as already stated, in command of the army of Tennessee, or such fragments of it as remained after the campaign of 1864, and reinforced him with all troops he could send into the Carolinas from any quarter. Communications southward were kept protected, and supplies as much as possible were placed where they would be available in case Richmond was lost. It was considered that a junction of the army in Virginia with Johnston's command in Carolina, might result in the quick destruction of Sherman's force, followed by a subsequent return to recover Virginia from Grant. The great Confederate military chieftain seems to have foreseen the inevitable evacuation of Richmond, and although providing with utmost care against the calamity, made the best forecast in his power for the operations of his army after that event.

During the first months of 1865, General Grant continued to increase the efficiencies of his army for the final trial of battle with the army of Northern Virginia. Now and then he made efforts to extend to the left, bringing on several conflicts, and occasionally employed his guns



in practice upon the Confederate batteries. The service in the trenches and rifle-pits was dreary indeed to both armies, but especially so to the Confederates, whose rations were scant and clothing well worn. In the extremity of the siege, one bold but unsuccessful attack was made March 25th, by a part of Lee's force, led by Gordon, in which Fort Stedman and a mile of breast-works were gallantly taken from the Federals, only to be lost again. One week later, on the 1st of April, Grant moved against Lee's right, and destroying the divisions of Pickett and Bushrod Johnson by a powerful flank attack during the day, pursued his plans of assault next day with a general movement, which broke the thin Confederate line at many positions and compelled the evacuation of Petersburg and Richmond.

This Confederate disaster, occurring after four years of successful resistance, will be explained by examination into the relative condition of the two armies. The last return of the strength of Lee's army in Virginia, made February 20, 1865, accounted for three corps of infantry, Johnson's division, General Early's Valley command, the cavalry divisions of W. H. F. Lee, the troops of Gen. J. A. Walker, at the defenses of the Richmond & Danville railroad; some unattached commands, and all artillery. The aggregate present of this whole force at all places is given at 73,349; the present and absent, 160,411. The inspection reports summed up, on the 28th of February, the aggregate present for duty 45,633, to which adding one brigade of 2,000 on picket, and the effective artillery 5,000, it is ascertained that Lee's whole effective force at this date was about 53,000. It will also be taken into the account that serious Confederate losses occurred from this time to the beginning of Grant's final assault, April 1st, and that a considerable part of the force mentioned in the report was detached and not directly available by Lee at the time of that assault. The estimate of Lee's army at 45,000 of all arms when the battle on Lee's



right flank at Five Forks began on April 1st, is not far from a true statement. In this battle at Five Forks the divisions of Pickett and Bushrod Johnson were overwhelmed by Warren, Humphreys and Sheridan, at a loss to the Confederate army in killed, wounded and prisoners of 7,000 men; and in the fighting of April 2d, which resulted in the fall of Petersburg and Richmond, other losses, not less than 5,000 or 6,000, had been sustained. On deducting from 45,000 these casualties of all kinds which occurred on the 1st and 2d of April, it becomes clear that the general estimate, made by many calculations, that Lee began his retreat with not more than 32,000 men of all arms, is a close approximation to the actual number.

On the 1st of March, General Grant's armies, under Meade, Ord and Sheridan, all of which were available in the attack on Lee, contained an effective total of over 162,000, according to the official reports. It has been stated that Grant moved upon Lee April 1st with an actual force of 120,000. His cavalry, commanded by Sheridan, was the best that had been put in the field on the Federal side, and doubled the force under Hampton and Fitzhugh Lee. His infantry, freshly uniformed and equipped, made a superb appearance in their compact and well-supported advance against the gallant foe which had so long and well defended the land they loved. It was not physically possible for the reduced army of Northern Virginia to resist on April 2d the Federal heavy columns which assailed them along the entire front from the Appomattox river to the exposed flank which had been turned on the day before. The ratio of physical force on that day was fully four to one.

Lee withdrew from all the defenses of the Confederate capital, and sought the way for junction with Johnston, but while delayed at Amelia Court House by the necessity of securing rations for his small army, was overtaken and turned from his chosen course. The fighting in re-



treat resulted in the reduction of his army by the 9th of April to about 10,000 men, with which small force he essayed to cut through toward Lynchburg, and that last recourse becoming futile, this remnant of a great army was surrendered by the noble chieftain whom all nations admire and revere. The terms of the surrender were highly honorable to General Grant, the victorious Federal general, and greatly promoted the rapid cessation of the long, bloody, costly struggle. The armies parted in mutual respect, and notwithstanding there were other forces in the field, the conviction was settled in the public mind that the Confederate movement had been effectually checked. Over twenty small engagements occurred after the battle of Appomattox in various parts of the Confederacy, but none was important. General Johnston surrendered his forces, April 26th, to General Sherman in North Carolina, and Gen. Kirby Smith surrendered the Trans-Mississippi department on the 26th of May. President Lincoln was murdered by an assassin on the 14th of April—an untimely death, deplored, not only South and North, but throughout the civilized world. President Davis, well worthy of the high honors which are paid to his memory, in attempting to reach the West beyond the Mississippi, was captured and imprisoned, but afterward released. Trial on the indictment against him could not result in conviction. The presidency of the United States passed, under the provisions of the Constitution, to Andrew Johnson. The Confederate States government ceased to exist. Serious errors were committed by Washington politicians, in reconstruction policies that fostered feeling which could have been easily allayed by wiser action, and notwithstanding Southern protestations and proof of fidelity to the faithful recognition of the real results of the war, it required the struggle with Spain, after the passing of a generation, to bring to the States of the Confederacy a just recognition of their true attitude toward the Union.





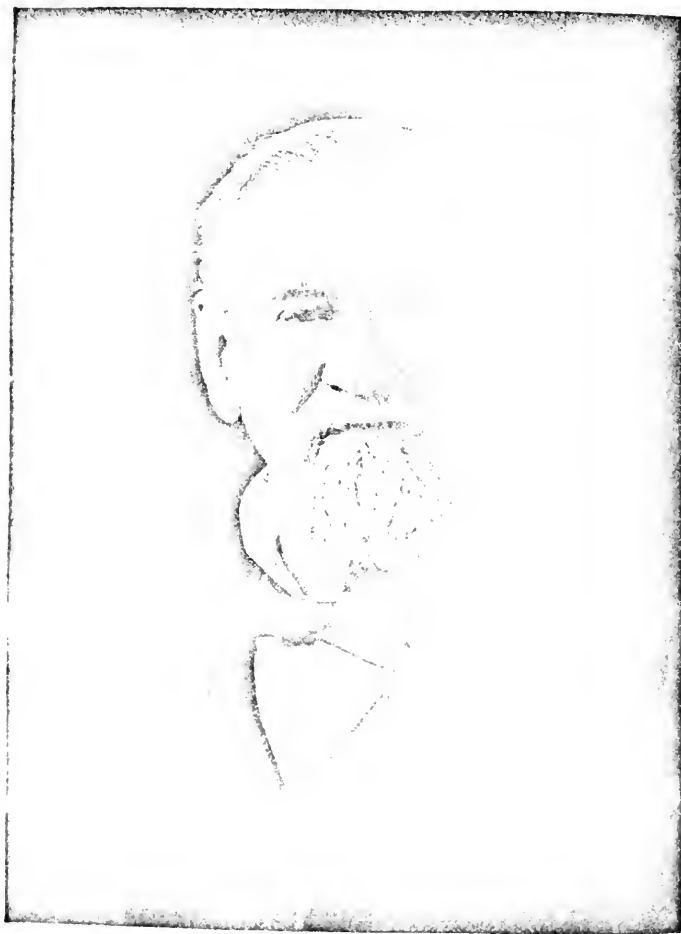
## SOME GENERAL RESULTS.

In the general statistics of this war of four years' duration, it has been computed that there were 2,500 engagements reported by names, besides many not mentioned; the United States put 2,773,304 enlisted men in their armies, and the Confederate States 800,000. Upon the supposition that these numbers represented many re-enlistments, it will be considered that deductions must be made from both amounts alike, which will still leave the disparity of about four Federal soldiers to one Confederate actually employed in the war. One million soldiers and seamen of the two armies and navies suffered death or permanent disability during actual service, and a large additional number died soon after the war ended, from wounds and diseases contracted in service. Many thousands of survivors remained sufferers from the effects of this hard warfare. The loss of commerce and of labor is estimated in only a slight degree by the immense expenses of war, which were met by taxation and government loans. Over 3,000,000 men employed in the business of destructive war were taken from productive pursuits of peace. To the expenses of the two general governments in maintaining war, add the expenditures of all the States and many municipalities. Include in the account the actual destruction of valuable property, of which no reliable data can be obtained. Taking all data into calculation, the sum total of the cost has been reasonably computed at \$10,000,000,000. On the credit side of this statement, it appears that not a foot of territory was added; not one of the great number of material advantages which nations ought to gain resulted from the struggle between the sections. Yet there were some inestimable results like these: State secession ceased to be a remedy for redress of popular grievances; the statehood of the State, put in peril first by coercion and next by reconstruction, stood its trial by both adversaries, and at last triumphed at a judgment bar which recognizes



the legal force and political worth of the Constitution of the United States; the Union of all States under the great instrument which formed it has been demonstrated to be better than a division of sections, and the Constitution to be worth fighting for against those who would subvert it. American military and naval skill was proved to the world's nations. The Confederacy proudly presented to fame Albert Sidney Johnston, Robert E. Lee, Joseph E. Johnston, P. T. Beauregard among its generals in chief command, and Wheeler, Forrest, Stuart, Hampton as cavalry chieftains; while Stonewall Jackson led all in those rare, unique capacities of his own whose work was arrested by death. In its navy, Buchanan and Semmes made fame without resources, and the necessity which stimulates invention induced naval construction with devices for war with ships, that ushered a new era in naval warfare. The general fighting qualities of American soldiers, such as steadiness, celerity, courage and intelligent obedience to orders, were made apparent to all nations, and in a word, the power of the American Union of States was developed.





STEPHEN D. LEE



# THE SOUTH SINCE THE WAR

BY

LIEUT.-GEN. STEPHEN D. LEE





## THE SOUTH SINCE THE WAR.

THE war between the States" came suddenly and finally to an end in the spring of 1865. The effort which the seceded States made to maintain their independence brought under demand every resource of the people, and they utterly exhausted everything they had in order to make their cause a success.

The army of Gen. Robert E. Lee, in Virginia, surrendered April 9th; that of Gen. Joseph E. Johnston, in North Carolina, April 26th; that of Gen. Richard Taylor, in Mississippi, May 4th, and that of Gen. E. Kirby Smith, west of the Mississippi river, May 26, 1865. All other organized bodies of Confederate troops, as well as individual soldiers, wherever they happened to be, reported to the nearest officer in command of Union troops, surrendered and received their paroles. The surrender of the Confederate armies and soldiers was universal and sincere, so much so that there was not a Confederate soldier under arms throughout the South from Maryland to Mexico, by June 9, 1865, or two months from the date of the surrender of General Lee's army in Virginia. There was no reservation in this surrender, no desire or effort to continue the struggle as guerrillas or otherwise.

There was complete submission to the authority of the United States government by all in official and private station. President Jefferson Davis, Vice-President A. H. Stephens, Governor Brown of Georgia, Governor Clark of Mississippi, Gen. Howell Cobb, and Senator Hill of Georgia, and other distinguished citizens of various parts of the South, were immediately arrested and imprisoned. The members of the Confederate cabinet were either prisoners, fugitives or exiles. The Confed-



erate congress was disbanded, the judiciary inoperative, the treasury empty, and the finances, resources and power of the Confederate States of America perished in the death struggle.

The complete and sudden collapse of the Confederate government officially was typical of the complete exhaustion and prostration of the South in the almost superhuman effort she had made to sustain herself against the great odds in men and resources which the United States government had brought to bear against her. The seceded States had put in the field more than their white arms-bearing population; when we consider how soon the border States were overrun and occupied, and remember how soon large portions of the territory of these seceded States were also guarded by the Union armies as to prevent any effort to further recruit the Southern armies, this is the more apparent. The Confederacy had enlisted an army of a little over 700,000 men and had fought over 2,200 battles. The struggle was made over nearly every foot of her territory. She had lost the flower of her youth in the death of 325,000 men from the casualties of war (about one-half her enlisted strength), and many more were disabled and ruined in health. It is a moderate estimate to say that 20 per cent of the white bread-winners of the South were killed or disabled by the war. There was scarcely a home from which one or two had not been taken. The mortality of the Southern troops was enormously greater in proportion than was that of the Union troops, which was only 359,000 men in all, while that of the Southern troops was 325,000 men, the forces of the former outnumbering the latter by over 2,000,000. The contending armies had moved to and fro over the Confederate territory, leaving many cities in ashes and tracts of country in almost every State in waste. The desolation of war had reached nearly every locality and home. The people were utterly impoverished. Nearly all business was destroyed, and



the farms gone to wreck. There was no money in circulation; the banks were generally broken; there was no credit system; most of the commercial agencies were inoperative or suspended. The work stock used in making crops had been mostly destroyed or carried away. Provisions were scarce, having been taken by the one or the other of the contending armies. The paroled soldiers returned to find their homes desolate, and they were disheartened and humiliated by failure. They had nothing at hand with which to begin life anew, except their land and the brave hearts which had carried them through four years of war, which ended in the defeat of a cause they deemed just and honorable.

They found at home 4,000,000 slaves suddenly emancipated as a result of the war. They realized that the greatest problem any people had ever had to solve on sudden notice faced them. The negroes, as was natural that it should be, were greatly demoralized, and had but a faint conception of the responsibility of the freedom that was theirs, and that they knew had been brought about by the defeat of the Southern armies. Large numbers of them thought that freedom meant a cessation of labor on their part, and that the great government which had freed them by force of arms would feed, clothe and provide for them. They generally left their work in the fields and went in crowds to the cities and towns, where they were fed and cared for at the expense of the United States government. All this added greatly to the chaos and confusion of the time.

Private debts that had been incurred in a period of great prosperity, prior to 1861, and were unpaid at the beginning of the war, were still unpaid, and the property, on which most of these debts were contracted, no longer existed. The railroads and other means of transportation were almost wrecked. All factories and other industries were generally destroyed. Agriculture, the main means of support in the South, was almost demoralized



by the need of work animals and on account of the disorganized labor.

To add to the general confusion, the country was flooded with adventurers from the North, camp followers of the Union armies, and others who rushed to the South as soon as they realized that the war was over. These men, imbued with the prejudices and passions which existed at the North during the war, at once began to inflame the negroes against their recent masters, and offered themselves as their friends and advisers in their new condition of freedom. In many portions of the South, the property of private individuals was seized and claimed as abandoned property (under the Freedmen's bureau law), and taken possession of for the use of the United States, and this property assigned for use to negroes who had left their homes and work. The new advisers generally led the negroes to believe that the Southern people were going to try to put them back into slavery, and that the United States government would give to each able-bodied negro man at least forty acres of land and a mule.

To add to the general gloom, great apprehension was felt regarding the future. The war had been waged cruelly toward the close, as was evidenced by the track of desolation and devastation (without a parallel in modern warfare for its pitiless barbarity), averaging 50 miles in breadth, from the Tennessee line through Georgia to Savannah, and through South Carolina by Columbia to North Carolina, by the Union army under Gen. W. T. Sherman; and the desolation in the valley of Virginia by General Sheridan, surpassing if anything that caused by Sherman's march to the sea. Every thing the South fought for was lost and surrendered. The general feeling which was mingled with apprehension and fear found expression (by Lamar) as follows: "We have given up the right of a people to secede from the Union; we have given up the right of each State to





age for itself of the infraction of the Constitution and the mode of redress; we have given up the right to frame our own domestic institutions. We fought for all these and we lost in that controversy."

It is difficult to estimate the pecuniary loss of the South in the war, but it may be partially estimated by comparing her conditions in 1860 and 1870 according to the United States census. In 1860 the total assessed value of property in the United States was \$12,000,000,000. The assessed value in the South was \$5,200,000,000 (44 per cent), and at that time the South was increasing in wealth faster than any other portion of the United States. The census of 1870 showed the assessed valuation in the South to be \$3,000,000,000 only, a decline of \$2,200,000,000 since the census of 1860, and the property of the South decreasing in value instead of increasing. This, too, in face of the fact that the total assessed value in the whole country was \$14,170,000,000, an increase of \$4,370,000,000 in the North, showing that the North had gotten rich during the war while the South was impoverished.

Though the valuation of property by census is used to estimate the values officially, it is always considerably less than the real value. The loss of the South is only partially shown by the census. If we consider what was spent by the South to carry on the war, the destruction of property during the war, and the other losses incident to so great and complete a failure, it is estimated that the total loss of the South will not fall below \$5,000,000,000. Alexander H. Stephens, in his history of the United States, says the war cost both sides \$8,000,000,000, three-fourths of the assessed value of property in the whole United States at the beginning of the war. When we consider that the war debt incurred by the United States government alone was \$3,000,000,000, the estimate given is less than a reasonable one, for the cost to the North in actual loss and expense in prosecuting the

III 18



war was far beyond the war debt—the cost being estimated by some writers at \$8,000,000,000.

Such was the condition of the South at the time (1865) exhausted, prostrated, disarmed, and in the presence of the victorious North, which then had an army, perhaps the best the world ever saw, of over 1,000,000 soldiers under arms. "Thus ended the war between the States," says Mr. Stephens. "It was waged by the Federals with the sole object, as they declared, of 'maintaining the Union under the Constitution,' while by the South it was waged with the great object of maintaining the inestimable sovereign right of local self-government on the part of the Southern States." The war had lasted four years, and the battles fought were among the greatest of modern times, great patriotism and generalship being displayed on both sides. The successes and defeats during most of the time were nearly equally divided, until finally the South fell from exhaustion before overwhelming numbers and resources. Over 2,000,000 soldiers had been brought against her, over and above her total forces, with a navy numbering 700 vessels of war, manned by 105,000 sailors, not including chartered vessels numbering near 3,000. This great fleet was used in occupying and holding the numerous rivers in Confederate territory, in blockading the coast from Maryland to the Rio Grande, and in transporting armies and supplies around territory which could not be crossed or occupied directly.

#### POLITICAL CONDITIONS BEFORE THE WAR, AND AT ITS CLOSE.

To understand thoroughly the events which followed the close of the war, it is necessary to allude briefly to the political conditions of the North and South previous to the war, and the theories which each side acknowledged and adhered to to its close. For the first time in its history the great republic, which in its progress had grown in power, prosperity, resources and wealth so



AS to astonish the world, met the shock of revolution. Intricate questions difficult to solve and existing from the very formation of the government itself, had grown in intricacy with increase in power, population and prosperity, until the great political parties had divided on sectional lines, and the solution of the questions culminated in the war between the States, the greatest war of modern times. Slavery, State rights and acquisition of territory were the irritating causes. The two sections fought against each other, though neither of them departed, except as the exigencies of the war temporarily demanded, from the great American principle of government as they had construed it, namely, the sovereignty of the States composing the respective confederations. The Congress of the United States, in July, 1861, while controlled by the Republican party (the great war party), solemnly declared that the war was waged "to defend the Constitution and all laws in pursuance thereof, and to preserve the Union with all the dignity, equality, and rights of the several States unimpaired; that as soon as these objects were accomplished the war ought to cease." This was the accepted theory to the close of the war.

The seceded States, in their sovereign capacity and through constitutional conventions (the accepted method), severed their connection with the United States, formed a confederated government for common defense and adopted a constitution virtually the same as that of the United States, from which they had separated. They maintained for four years a government which was recognized as belligerent and *de facto* by other powerful nations, and at the close of that period, in theory, these States were still in the Confederacy, although it was *de facto* dead. In the theory of the Confederate government, and also of the United States government, the States composing each had been regarded as free and sovereign. They were as capable of maintaining self-government as they had been from the earliest days of



the United States government. They as States had seceded from the United States in their sovereign capacity, and were capable of legally reconsidering their former action and again uniting with the other States of the Union. The people in the seceded States, as they understood it, had fought to perpetuate the Constitution of their fathers. They believed in State sovereignty in its broadest sense. This question had been an unsettled one always. They believed in the reserved rights of the States. They believed in the decisions of the Supreme court as finally settling all constitutional questions. They had looked to the Constitution to protect their property in slaves. They did not know what to expect next when fourteen of the States of the Union practically nullified the acts of Congress and the decisions of the highest court of the land in the matter of the fugitive slave laws. They had fought to maintain the constitution of 1789 as framed by a common ancestry. They felt and believed that they were actuated by as pure and lofty a spirit of liberty as had ever actuated and governed any people, and their devotion and sacrifices in the war were the evidence of this belief. The North entertained different views as to these questions. They wanted their views to prevail in the construction of the Constitution, and they wanted the Union to remain as it was. They had a majority of votes. The war came and the two irritating causes of difference, slavery and secession, were finally and forever settled against the South. They were eliminated as causes of dissension and difference and that, too, by the highest appeal known to man—that of arms.

The South could do nothing but accept the result of the war. This they were anxious to do, and desirous to claim the protection of the Constitution of their fathers, framed by common ancestry, North and South. They were ready to accept the results with the same honesty and sincerity with which they had been ready :





sacrifice their lives and their property, and with which they had endured privations, hardships, and other trials not surpassed by any people in history. But while this was the case, they felt that they had borne themselves honorably and as a brave people, believing that they were right in the great struggle through which they had passed. All that they had left after that struggle were their integrity, their honor, and their deep-seated love for the American form of government. They were incapable of doing anything which would throw dishonor on their record, or of taking any action by which they would stultify themselves as to that record. They were in the frame of mind to patiently await the action of the United States government in restoring them to the places they had formerly occupied among the States of the Union before the war. They hoped that they would be treated generously, and they determined to submit to any reasonable demand made on them by the victorious North. They knew that they would have to accept what was meted out to them, whether it was good or bad, whether it was generous or ungenerous, as they were utterly incapable of resorting to arms again.

The status of the seceded States immediately after the war, politically, was as follows: The States of Virginia, Georgia, North Carolina, South Carolina, Mississippi, Texas and Florida had governments organized under their respective constitutions which they had in 1861. Tennessee, Arkansas (spring, 1864), and Louisiana (spring, 1864) were under bogus governments, organized and sustained by the military forces of the United States, not by the free will of its citizens. The States of Maryland, Missouri and Kentucky had never seceded regularly from the Union, and their State governments were quickly subdued and controlled by troops of the United States, and, because a large portion of the citizens of those States sympathized with the South, were held under strict surveillance during the entire war.



This surveillance was carried to the extent of arresting legislators in Maryland, suspending the writ of *habeas corpus* in counties and localities everywhere, and arresting and imprisoning thousands suspected of disloyalty to the United States government. Editors of newspapers were arrested for criticising the government, and martial law existed generally in the border States—all being violations of the Constitution.

#### PROPER LEGAL WAY OF RESTORING THE SECEDED STATES.

The proper legal course which should have been pursued by the United States, if the Union was "an indissoluble Union of indestructible States," as afterward stated by the Supreme court of the United States, and if the Constitution of the United States was to be the guide, was as follows: "With the cessation of hostilities against the power of the United States, nothing remained to be done but for the sovereigns, the people of each State, to assert their authority and restore order. If the principle of the sovereignty of the people, the corner-stone of our political institutions, had survived and was still in force, it was necessary only that the people of each State should reconsider and revoke their ordinances of secession and again recognize the Constitution of the United States as the supreme law of the land. This simple process would have placed the Union on its original basis, and would have restored what had ceased to exist—the Union by consent. Unfortunately such was not the intention of the conqueror. Henceforth there was to be established a union by force." (Davis.)

These views were also entertained by Vice-President Alexander H. Stephens, and seemed to have been entertained by Generals Grant and Sherman in arranging with Generals Lee and Johnston for the surrender of the Southern armies. Certainly they were the true, legal, non-political views, unless, now that the war was over,



the Constitution was to be further strained and violent coercive measures inaugurated after the South had laid down her arms. There can be little doubt now that most of the conservative Democrats at the North, and even conservative Republicans, entertained these views, until the breach between the President and Congress became so wide and bitter, and the President so violent in his denunciation of Congress.

#### PROBLEMS TO BE SOLVED.

There were many complex problems to be solved as a result of the war. The responsibility of their solution necessarily rested in the greater degree upon the United States government. It had been completely victorious in the struggle. It had all the power in its hands, and it was evident, as every foot of the lately seceded States was occupied by its troops, that the South could only expect such treatment as it dictated. These problems may be stated generally as follows: To restore the seceded States to the Union; to establish tranquillity throughout the Union; to legally abolish slavery, and invest the negro with the civil rights necessary for his protection; to provide ways and means for liquidating the vast war debt incurred on both sides by both governments and by the individual States; to determine whether there was criminality in secession or in the conduct of the war by the Confederates; to preserve the essential radical principles of the Constitution and prevent change in the structure of the United States government; to reinstate fraternal feelings among the late antagonists.

The main question was not as to the freedom of the negroes, for their freedom was unquestionable—not doubted by any one—as a result of the war, the success of the Union armies, the proclamation of President Lincoln, and the establishment of the Freedmen's bureau by the Congress of the United States. Nor was the question whether secession should be made forever illegal by posi-



tive law. For no statesman would subject himself to ridicule by attempting to deny all right of future popular revolutions by the mere force of a statute, or by a clause in the Constitution. Nor was it whether treason be made odious by degrading great States and harassing a vast body of peaceful people; for jurists were saying that no treason had been committed, and that States cannot be tried by courts. Only some politicians, partisans and not patriots, were crying with reference to the Southern people, "Let them be made odious." Nor should it have been whether party supremacy must be maintained. That is, shall the party which caused the war, fought for the war, and pressed it to the success of the conquest—shall its supremacy and security be the main questions? Some partisans so desired, and acted on their wishes. But the conditions of the era should have raised all issues above the fetid atmosphere of politics. It was not the time to be either a Democrat or a Republican—but a patriot.

### RECONSTRUCTION.

What is known as the reconstruction of the seceded States is a very sad epoch to recall, and no American who loves his country likes to bring back its harsh memories. Yet it is a matter of history and it needs be recorded in order that the part which the North and the South played during that period should be fully understood. It began under President Lincoln before the close of the war, and was carried on by President Johnson after the assassination of President Lincoln, during the years 1865 and 1866. Afterward there was a second phase of reconstruction, or "destruction," known as the congressional plan, which undid all that had been done by Presidents Lincoln and Johnson. This latter period was the greatest trial that the South had to bear, not excepting the terrible ordeal of war. To understand properly the surroundings, it is necessary to enumerate





briefly the events which occurred early in 1865, and the directions given by President Johnson to the military officers of the United States. First, I would mention the death of Mr. Lincoln himself, which was regarded as the greatest calamity that could have happened to the people of the South. The arrest and imprisonment of President Davis and many of the Confederate soldiers and statesmen have been already related. The treatment of Mr. Davis was very harsh indeed, complicity in the assassination of Mr. Lincoln being cruelly imputed to him, and a large reward offered for his capture. He was placed in prison and shackled with irons in the strongest fortress in the Union, and a military guard placed over him day and night. Every town, village and district was occupied rapidly by the Union troops as the Confederate resistance melted away, and all civil government was ignored. The governors of most of the seceded States attempted to call their legislatures together to conform to the results of the war and take steps for their restoration to the Union. They did this, believing that the American principle of government—the sovereignty and indestructibility of the States—would be respected and that these prompt proceedings would be favored as the constitutional plan of restoration. They did this also believing it absolutely necessary to preserve civil government, and to show by legislative enactment complete submission to the results of the war in repealing their ordinances of secession and in accepting the freedom of the negro.

The order issued by General Wilson, of the United States army in Georgia, when the legislature was called to meet, was to this effect: "Neither the legislature nor any other political body will be permitted to assemble under the call of the rebel State authorities." The spirit of this order was carried out in all the seceded States. Existing civil government was ignored everywhere, and military rule inaugurated in municipal and



local communities. The only government allowed was that of the local military officers, or under their supervision.

This harsh action of the United States authorities, civil and military, immediately following the collapse of the Confederate government, caused all prominent actors in the war to feel insecure. They did not know what to expect. It was not known how general the arrests and imprisonments would be, and many leading men, civil and military, escaped to foreign lands, and for the time expatriated themselves. Gen. Jubal Early, with others, escaped to Cuba. Generals Loring, Graves, and a few other officers went to Egypt and took service under the khedive. Hons. Robert Toombs, J. C. Breckinridge and many others went to Europe. Gov. Isham G. Harris, Gens. J. Bankhead Magruder, Hindman and Price went to Mexico; in fact, prominent citizens and soldiers everywhere felt great apprehension as to the course of the government, even with their paroles. It was even contemplated by President Johnson and his advisers to arrest and imprison Gen. Robert E. Lee, who had surrendered his army to General Grant and had been paroled. General Grant, however, entered a vigorous protest against such action, and insisted that men who had surrendered with arms in their hands were entitled to the usual laws recognized by all civilized nations, and that their paroles should be respected. This action on his part, and the advice of Gen. Robert E. Lee and the leading statesmen, officers, and soldiers of all the lately seceded States, caused it to be thought best for all to remain in their respective States and share whatever fate was in store for the South. The feeling of expatriation was greatly allayed when such prominent men advised against it.

#### PRESIDENTIAL RECONSTRUCTION.

President Lincoln began to reconstruct the seceded States when he issued his amnesty proclamation in



December, 1863, which offered pardon to all who were in arms if they would lay them down and take an oath to support the government of the United States. He said he would recognize a State government as a loyal government, provided as many as one-tenth of the number who voted in 1860 would organize a State government and comply with certain conditions named in the proclamation. It was evident also, that he followed the spirit of the resolution passed by Congress in July, 1861, as to preservation of the Union, "with all the dignity, equality and rights of the several States unimpaired," although in the progress of the war, the Constitution was greatly strained, and had been, at times, ignored to secure success which he regarded as paramount to a restored Union. He tried personally to keep as near the principles of the Constitution as was possible in war. His object was to restore the Union. This was the one object near his heart. His theory was, "that the States were never out of the Union; that the people of these States, when they returned to their allegiance, had the power of reconstruction in their own hands." His views as to the qualification of voters were given in his proclamation of 1863, referred to in his message of December 21, 1863, viz: "Being a qualified voter by the election laws of the State, existing immediately before the so-called act of secession and excluding all other, shall re-establish a State government." He believed in the people; to the extent that the people in the seceded States, notwithstanding the war, should and must be trusted. There can be no doubt as to Mr. Lincoln's intention in reconstructing the Southern States, and time has demonstrated that his statesmanship was correct, and that his principles were based on the proper theory of the organization of the government. The decisions of the Supreme court since the war clearly sustain his general views.

When he visited Richmond early in April, 1865, after the city had been occupied by the Union troops, he con-



versed freely with leading citizens, and after leaving the place and arriving at City Point (near Richmond), on his way back to Washington, on April 6, 1865, he sent written authority to General Weitzel, commanding the United States forces in Richmond, "to permit the assembling of the legislature of Virginia;" and a formal call was issued, signed by prominent citizens and approved by the general commanding. In his letter he directed the general to extend his "permission" and "protection" to the assembly until it should attempt any action hostile to the United States. He intended at that time to restore the States through their existing legislatures and executives, acknowledging the State as a political authority, and as represented by them through its constituted authority. If he had not so considered the matter before, he thought so now that he saw the war was virtually over. He was ready to restore the Union as far as he was able in accordance with the principles and resolutions promulgated over and over again in the halls of Congress during the war, and that, too, in the most expeditious way.

On his return to Washington from Richmond, he changed his mind as to restoring Virginia to the Union through the executive and legislature as then existing under the constitution of that State, and he recalled the order given General Weitzel. It is not known why he did so, but he evidently was informed that he would again have trouble with the extreme men of his party if he pursued this policy; and he deemed it best to revoke the order and await events then rapidly following the collapse of the Confederate government. A few days afterward he was assassinated (April 14th). This monstrous crime was a great calamity both to the North and to the South. Lincoln was a statesman and had a good heart. He had the prestige of success. His brain and heart were then grappling with the problems of restoring the seceded States to the Union. He had maturely digested





the plan, had discussed it with his cabinet, and they had agreed with him. Restoration had in fact proceeded so far that the proclamation to restore civil government in North Carolina had been prepared. Mr. Lincoln had great tact in controlling men and bringing them to his views without irritating those who differed with him, as all conceded his patriotism, his love of the Union, and his sincerity.

The effect of his death on the people of the North and the South was electrical. At the North it intensified hatred and revengeful feelings toward the crushed South, and gave excuse to extremists to push their views to the injury of the people of the seceded States in their extreme helplessness. At the South, the people were shocked at the tragedy and condemned it in their brave hearts. They felt that Lincoln was the most moderate and kind-hearted of the men in power at the North, and believed that he, if any one could, would hold in check all extreme measures and stand between them and all unnecessary severities.

It is not certain, however, that Mr. Lincoln's policy would have been otherwise than the "reconstruction" policy of Congress. He intended to attempt to carry out his matured plan if possible. His pocket veto of the bill of Congress in 1864, relative to reconstructing the seceded States, and his giving no official explanation in his next message to Congress, showed that he was adhering to his prerogative of restoring the States as he had determined. He knew that there was great opposition by extremists in his party to his proposed plan of action, yet Congress had not renewed its claims to the extent of antagonizing him again before his death. Congress and a majority of the Northern people had confidence in his ability, and apparently were disposed to give him the right of way by adjourning, March, 1865.

Mr. Lincoln, however, was a party man; his fealty to his party dominated him. Before his death, many of the



party leaders demanded a reconstruction that would enable them to control the South as well as the North. The Republican majority distrusted the Northern Democrats, who were less disposed to violate the Constitution by going too far out of the beaten tracks of the past. Mr. Stanton, the great war secretary, said, "If he (Lincoln) had lived, he would have had a hard time with his party, as he would have been at odds with it on reconstruction." His speech made in answer to a serenade immediately preceding his death, showed that, although he had recalled permission for the Virginia legislature to meet at Richmond, he still adhered to a liberal view of reconstructing and restoring the Southern States.

He would certainly have met the opposition of many in his party, and whether or not his persuasive tact in dealing with such matters would have prevented the extremes to which his party carried legislation after his death, is a matter of speculation. It is believed that the appointment of provisional governors was a concession to the extreme party in Congress even before his death. He recognized that the States had control of suffrage, and that negroes had no legal right to vote except as that boon was given them by the State. It is generally agreed now, that the death of Mr. Lincoln was at least a great blow to early reconciliation, if it did not end the last hope entertained for a conservative and wise policy of reconstruction.

#### RECONSTRUCTION BY ANDREW JOHNSON.

President Andrew Johnson was of a different temperament from his predecessor—most combative, aggressive, and abusive to those who differed with him, and not a safe man for such a great emergency. While he was a great Union man, his ideas were generally Democratic rather than Republican, in that he was more conservative in his construction of the Constitution.

President Johnson was sworn into office April 14, 1865.



immediately after the death of Mr. Lincoln. Congress had adjourned early in March, and the field was open to him to act independently and without congressional interference. His first act was to retain the entire cabinet of Mr. Lincoln, and he proceeded at once to adopt and follow out the plan which had been decided upon by his predecessor. The States of Arkansas, Louisiana and Tennessee had already had their new governments approved and accepted by Mr. Lincoln, and under the conditions of his proclamation of 1863. Virginia had been dismembered in 1862, and forty counties out of the one hundred and forty in the State had been erected into a new State known as West Virginia. Before this was done, these counties had a State government which had been recognized as the true loyal government of Virginia. When this government became the separate State of West Virginia, Francis H. Pierpont, who had been governor, had an election in a few counties so he could hold on as a governor. He was elected, and moved out of the west of the old State and set up as governor in the city of Alexandria, near Washington, where, at pleasure, he had a convention or legislature composed of not over sixteen members, and claimed to be the loyal governor of Virginia.

The proclamation for the restoration of civil government in North Carolina had already been matured by Mr. Lincoln and his cabinet. This paper was presented by Mr. Stanton in Mr. Johnson's cabinet meeting, was approved and accepted by him, and promulgated on May 29, 1865. In this instrument, he appointed W. H. Holden provisional governor, with authority to call a convention to frame a constitution for the State. The voters were designated as those who were entitled to vote under the constitution of the State at the time it seceded. Amnesty was offered to all who had taken part in the war with certain exceptions, viz., all military officers above the rank of colonel, naval officers above the rank



of lieutenant, governors, judges of courts, West Point officers, all civil officers of the Confederate government, and all citizens worth over \$20,000. A fair estimate is that this exclusion fell upon at least 120,000 men in the South. The excluded persons were required to make application for pardon. Each voter had to take an oath as follows:

I, ———, do solemnly swear or affirm in presence of Almighty God that I will hereafter faithfully support and defend the Constitution of the United States and the Union thereunder, and that I will in like manner abide by faithfully and support all laws and proclamations which have been made during the existing rebellion with reference to the emancipation of slaves. So help me God.

Similar proclamations were issued for the States of South Carolina, Georgia, Alabama, Mississippi, Florida and Texas. In all the proclamations, the feature mainly noted was that voters were qualified by the laws of the State in force at the time they seceded, and these voters were to restore the State to the Union.

Without any reservation, every citizen and former soldier determined to make the reconstruction plan of President Johnson a success; even those who were excluded from amnesty by proclamation, gave their moral support and advice for every one who could take part to do so, and as soon as possible, restore civil law and get from under military rule. Every one was anxious to see order come from the confusion then existing, so that a beginning could be made in restoring prosperity, building up waste places, and with brave hearts, removing the scars of war evident in every spot in the South. There was great unanimity in all the States in expediting the process. The provisional governors quickly issued their proclamations, generally restoring civil and local law as far as possible by continuing in office all persons who had been holding State and county offices, till others could be regularly appointed or elected. In the confusion and





chaos of the times, there were local frictions occasionally. The military officers interfered frequently, but the governors considered this as incident to the surroundings and took no exceptions. The people showed great evenness of temper and displayed most remarkable forbearance. The Freedmen's bureau was in operation, and its administration tended to inflame both races and produce collisions.

During this trying period, the people of the South did as best they could amid the great trials and perplexities which surrounded them, and the civil and military pressure brought to bear on them. Provost guards were set up over municipal government. Military courts were established, and many of the best citizens were arrested on frivolous complaints of irresponsible negro men and women, and under military guard, forced to appear at county seats before these courts and undergo trial. Bayonet rule was the order of the day; civil officers were disregarded and humiliated.

Repudiation of State war debts was pressed as a necessity for success in restoring States. The pressure was brought to bear by the president and Secretary Seward. This repudiation was done under protest upon the behest of Federal power. The reign of the provisional governors and military officers was very odious, and the humiliating conditions, not necessary to mention now, developed a spirit of forbearance, sacrifice, and discretion remarkable in a people high-strung and liberty-loving although crushed.

By the fall of 1865, the States were reorganized, and the program of the president carried out to the letter, so much so that when Congress met in December he was able to report in his message that civil government had been restored in the States of North Carolina, South Carolina, Georgia, Alabama, Mississippi, Louisiana and Tennessee. These States had adopted new constitutions, elected governors, senators and representatives in congress, and State



and county officers. Great prudence and good taste were displayed in the elections. Generally those who had opposed secession and were considered as Union in sentiment were elected to the new offices. Those who had been in any way prominent in urging resistance took back seats and did not aspire to official positions. It is true, however, that nearly all who had originally opposed separate State action went with their States in the war and determined to share the common fate.

The people, however, did not stultify themselves by electing Republicans to office; in fact, there was none to be elected then. Welded together by common misfortunes, there was but one party in the South, the white man's party. While all were ready to accept the results in a dignified and manly way, they were not ready to humiliate themselves by any voluntary act reflecting on the motives which impelled them to go into the war.

The States had repealed their ordinances of secession which had taken them out of the Union. Five of the States had ratified the Thirteenth amendment to the Constitution abolishing slavery, making in all eleven of the former slave-holding States and sixteen free States, and their votes were accepted and counted to make up the necessary two-thirds needed to ratify it and make it law. Civil law was in force. State and county officers were in the exercise of the functions of their offices. The president, by a proclamation issued April 2, 1866, finally announced the full restoration of every one of the seceded States, stating that "no organized armed resistance" existed anywhere; that the laws "can be sustained and enforced therein by proper civil authority, State and Federal; that the people of said States are well and loyally disposed, and have conformed or will conform in their legislation to the condition of affairs growing out of the amendment to the Constitution prohibiting slavery within the borders and jurisdictions of the United States." He named Georgia, South Carolina,



North Carolina, Virginia, Tennessee, Alabama, Louisiana, Arkansas, Mississippi and Florida as included. He pronounced the insurrection "at an end and henceforth to be so regarded." This proclamation may be regarded as the end of the presidential plan.

The States, excepting Texas, had perfected what they had been required to do, and but for the friction caused by the armed forces of the Union everywhere, the tendency to race collisions in the administration of the Freedman's bureau, and grave apprehension as to the future action of Congress, matters were beginning to assume normal conditions in the re-establishment of civil government, which had been destroyed immediately after the close of armed resistance throughout the South.

#### CONGRESSIONAL RECONSTRUCTION.

Congress had adjourned in March and left matters entirely in the hands of President Lincoln, so that when it met December 4, 1865, there had been a recess of over eight months, in which Presidents Lincoln and Johnson had had time to carry out their plans coincident with the rapid happening of events incident to the sudden collapse of the Confederate government. Upon the meeting of Congress a concurrent resolution was immediately passed by a party vote in both houses to appoint a committee of fifteen, nine representatives and six senators, with instructions to look into the condition of the seceded States, and to advise Congress as to whether or not they should be represented in Congress under the organization effected through the plan of President Johnson. The committee, as conceded by leading men of the time, was really to look after the interests of the Republican party, and to devise some scheme to perpetuate its power. It was admirably organized for this purpose, and was composed of twelve Republicans and three Democrats. Its duty was to visit the States lately at war with the United States and take testimony on which to formulate a re-



port. In the meantime the senators and representatives elected to Congress under the president's plan were in Washington seeking to be admitted to their seats. Their names were not put on the rolls in organizing the two houses of Congress, and they were left in expectancy, awaiting the pleasure of Congress, until February 20, 1866, when another concurrent resolution was passed in both houses to the effect that neither house should admit any members from the late insurrectionary States until the committee of fifteen, known as the "reconstruction committee," made its report, and Congress had taken action on it. It was resolved also that the Union troops should be kept in the South till Congress recalled them.

On February 6, 1866, another Freedmen's bureau bill, enlarging the powers of the bureau and with much severer conditions than the preceding one, was passed, but was vetoed by the president. In March, a "civil rights" bill was passed, making all persons born in the United States and not subject to any foreign power "citizens of the United States," and affixing penalties to cover the execution of the law. Each measure bore severely on the white people of the South and enlarged the rights and political conditions of the negroes lately enfranchised, and both showed a determination to override the president and make Congress the sole authority in all matters relating to the reconstruction of the lately seceded States. In June, the Fourteenth amendment to the Constitution was proposed to the States for adoption. The object of this amendment was to put into the fundamental law the provisions of the "civil rights" bill, which had been passed over the president's veto. Congress had now full power, since it had the majority necessary to pass its bills over the veto of the president. This Fourteenth amendment meant negro citizenship and white disfranchisement, and it reduced representation in Congress, taking the right to regulate suffrage from the States and putting it in the hands of Congress, thus





conforming to the provision of the "civil rights" bill. It refused Federal offices to all prominent civil and military officers of the late Confederacy until pardoned by Congress; enforced the repudiation of all debts or obligations "incurred in the aid of insurrection or rebellion against the United States." The States had to accept this amendment or remain without the restoration of civil government.

In July, another Freedmen's bureau bill was passed over the president's veto, extending the provisions of the bureau, enlarging the power of the commissioner and appointing agents in almost every locality, and appropriating as much as \$6,887,700 for its support. Military protection was given to the agents everywhere to enforce the provisions of the act. In fact, every agent was in himself a court with military power back of him. Every agent had to be able to take the ironclad oath which necessarily confined the appointments mainly to newcomers in the different States. A more ingenious law to show distrust and alienate the negroes and whites of the South who had to live together, could not have been framed.

The State of Tennessee was admitted to congressional representation July 24, 1866, having ratified both the Thirteenth and Fourteenth amendments to the Constitution.

The committee of fifteen had rendered its report June 18th, and Congress adjourned the latter part of July, 1866. The action of Congress during this session, from December 4, 1865, to July 28, 1866, inaugurated by its legislation a fierce war against the executive branch of the government. There was a great gulf between them. The president considered the war as over, Congress said it was not over and that the lately seceded States had forfeited all claim to protection or appeal to the Constitution; that they were conquered provinces and not "indestructible States of an indissoluble union." This, too, was said in spite of the resolution passed in 1861,



"that this war is not waged on our part in any spirit of oppression, nor for the purpose of conquest or subjugation, nor for the purpose of interfering with or overthrowing the rights of established institutions of those States."

#### RETROSPECT.

At the close of this first session of the Thirty-ninth Congress, which showed the great divergence between the executive and legislative branches of the government, and which also included the beginning of a darker and more revengeful period of reconstruction for the South, it is necessary to take a retrospective view of certain conditions not already considered. When Congress met in December, 1865, the president accompanied his message with a report of a tour which General Grant had made through the South during the latter part of November preceding the assembling of Congress. This report, coming from the highest possible authority, confirmed the president as to the correctness of his message in regard to the feeling of the people of the South. It was to this effect:

With the approval of the president and secretary of war, I left Washington on the 27th of last month for the purpose of making a tour of inspection in the Southern States. . . . I am satisfied that the mass of thinking men of the South accept the present situation of affairs in good faith. . . . There is universal acquiescence in the authority of the general government. . . . My observations lead to the conclusion that they [the citizens of the Southern States] are anxious to return to self-government within the Union as soon as possible; that they are in earnest in wishing to do what they think is required by the government, not humiliating to them as citizens, and if such a course was pointed out they would pursue it in good faith.

General Grant could not have given a more correct or accurate statement as to the animus of the people of the South in the winter of 1865. His testimony in reference



to the Freedmen's bureau, obtained during that same trip, is of most valuable character, showing the estimate of its workings as noted by a man not a politician, but a great soldier, and one who was most instrumental in attaining success to the Union armies. From conscientious agents administering the workings of the bureau, he learned that the "belief widely spread among the freedmen of the Southern States that the lands of their former owners will at least in part be divided among them, came from agents of this bureau. This belief is seriously interfering with the willingness of the freedmen to make contracts for the coming year. . . . Many, perhaps the majority of the agents of the bureau, advise the freedmen that by their own industry they must expect to live. . . . In some instances, I am sorry to say, the freedman's mind does not seem to be disabused of the idea that he had a right to live without care or provision for the future. The effect of this belief in the division of lands is idleness and accumulation in camps, towns and cities." This is as General Grant saw it in the winter of 1865, and under the act extending and enlarging the scope and powers of the bureau, it was ten times worse afterward. He evidently then saw the drift of the work of the bureau and the aim and object of the agents. Nearly every agent became a politician in the near future and was a candidate for office. Under the congressional reconstruction they were elected to nearly all of the Federal, State and county offices by virtue of their influence over the ignorant negroes, and in effecting the organization of "Union League" clubs.

It was to the interest of the agents to create distrust and suspicion on the part of the negroes toward all Southern whites, and to cause them to look only to themselves (the agents) for justice and their rights. So long as they could cause friction, encourage idleness by raising false hopes of support and obtaining lands from the government, and create the impression that their rights



could only be obtained through them, it would prolong the necessity of their offices being continued. All the unsettling work was done through men nearly all of whom were not born in the South and had never been citizens of the South, but who had all the prejudices and bad blood of the times toward the South.

#### OBJECTIONS URGED AGAINST PRESIDENTIAL RECONSTRUCTION.

There were some features in the new constitutions adopted and in the laws being passed by the legislatures under these constitutions, which were to be seized upon by the Republican party as an excuse for a more severe reconstruction by Congress. I mention first that suffrage was confined to the whites alone; even the most conservative element, which had taken the lead in restoring the States, did not think their recent slaves fit subjects for the great boon of the ballot. A good many of the Northern States did not allow negroes to vote; in fact, several States even after the war defeated acts proposing to give them the ballot, when there were only a few negroes within their borders. This suffrage feature had much to do with the States not being admitted. Public opinion at the North, under the lead of Mr. Thaddeus Stevens, of Pennsylvania, and other extreme partisans, was fast drifting in favor of universal suffrage and the adoption of a disciplinary and coercive legislation toward the South, forgetting that nearly all negroes lived at the South, with but few at the North to be affected by such legislation. It was a great problem, yet hostility toward the South turned the scale to the enfranchisement of the negro and disfranchisement of enough whites to create negro domination in the South.

General Grant, in his description of the Freedmen's bureau, stated enough to show that legislation was necessary to check the demoralization among the negroes, and to influence them to return to habits of industry and self-





support. As he stated, large numbers had quit work in the fields, and considered their newly-acquired freedom as relieving them from labor. Somehow they felt that the government would feed, clothe and care for them. This was being done by the bureau, and large numbers had assembled in cities and towns to be supported.

If the new State governments were to take charge, as State governments did in other States, and as was the case before secession, wisdom admonished the legislators to provide for this condition of things and correct it. The Southern people had lived with the negroes; they understood them far better than did the Northern people and the politicians of the North. Some legislatures, to meet this condition of affairs, passed certain laws known as vagrant laws, similar to many found on the statute books of the Northern States, possibly a little different because the surroundings were different. The North, however, in the desire to protect the negro from imposition, not fully understanding matters, took great offense at this, and felt that it was an effort to re-enslave the negro, and defeat the purpose of his freedom. A careful analysis of these vagrant laws, so called, and similar laws on the statute books of the North framed to meet conditions far less aggravated and void of the prejudices and bad blood of the time, will show there was no ground for this excuse seized upon to defeat presidential reconstruction. These laws were of little import anyway, for the bureaus of refugees, freedmen and abandoned lands, backed by military force, were overriding everything in a supposed protection of the rights of the negroes, encouraging them in idleness and inculcating vicious ideas and hostility toward the Southern whites.

#### COMMITTEE OF FIFTEEN.

The committee of fifteen was carefully selected to carry out its purpose, viz., to perpetuate the power and continued existence of the Republican party. It was



the duty of this committee to visit the lately seceded States and take testimony for the guidance of Congress in coming to a correct conclusion. It was divided into sub-committees. There being but three Democrats on the committee, most of the sub-committees visiting more than one-half of the States had no Democrat on them to cross-question witnesses or call for witnesses to present the side of the people to be investigated. It may be stated generally here that the Democrats in Congress and in the North were opposed to the extreme and radical measures of reconstruction, and joined with the president to hinder and alleviate all harsh legislation against the South. They were the only ones in those days who said a kind word for the South, or tried to befriend her, although they had been good Union men and had done their full duty to the North in the war against the South.

The people to be investigated and inquired into were of the whole South. They had not a single representative in Congress to speak for them, and the Democrats who did speak were classed as copperheads, sympathizing with the South in her war against the Union. A more one-sided, partisan, unfair, ungenerous investigation was never set on foot against a helpless people. A fair sample of the work of this committee is given when they investigated Alabama. "As to the condition of Alabama, only five persons who claimed to be citizens were examined. They were all Republican politicians. The testimony of each was bitterly partisan. Under the government of the State as it then existed, no one of these witnesses could hope for official preferment. In his testimony each was striving for the overthrow of his State government and the setting up of some such institutions as followed under congressional reconstruction. When this reconstruction finally had taken place, the first of these five became governor of his State; the second became a senator, and the third secured a life position in one of the departments in Washington. The fourth became a



judge of the supreme court of the District of Columbia, all as Republicans."

Of all the people of Alabama who had gone into the war (a number over her arms-bearing population [white] by the census of 1860), the people who were to be investigated in that State, not a single witness was called. Every witness was a selfish, prejudiced one, anticipating a reward for the kind of testimony he had given, and which reward he duly received. This one-sided testimony is a sample of the testimony taken in all the States by this committee, having the lives and fortunes of a brave people in its power. The people on trial before this partisan court were allowed no witnesses, had no voice or testimony in the matter. The committees summoned only such witnesses as they desired, and who would be likely to give the testimony needed to carry out the purposes for which they were selected. They were pitiless in their work, for they saw and knew how prostrated and helpless the South was. But, seeing as they did, the poverty and destruction of the property of the South, it is strange that even a committee of politicians working for party supremacy could deliberately recommend so terrible an ordeal as was congressional reconstruction.

The committee made its report June 18, 1866, near the close of the first session of Congress, a report "admirably adapted to serve as a manifesto and campaign document, for a new House of Representatives was to be elected before Congress should again convene. It declared that the governments of the States recently in secession were practically suspended by reason both of the irregular character of the governments which had been set up, and of the reluctant acquiescence of the Southern people in the results of the war; and that it was essential to the preservation of the Union that they should not be rein-



stated in their former privileges by Congress until they should have given substantial pledges of loyalty and submission." (Wilson.) This is certainly a very different conclusion from that arrived at by General Grant.

#### ANOTHER STEP IN RECONSTRUCTION.

The Republicans, at the close of the first session of the Thirty-ninth Congress, with the report of the committee of fifteen as a campaign document, inaugurated a most bitter partisan campaign at the North in the election of the new House of Representatives in the fall of 1865. Although the war had been over since April, 1865, the Southern people were represented as still in insurrection and not reconciled to the results of the war, notwithstanding the fact that they had reorganized their State governments, repealed their ordinances of secession, and ratified the Thirteenth amendment abolishing slavery. All the bitterness and hatred of the war were revived by the Republicans in this campaign, and every possible unfair accusation was launched against the sincerity and motives of the people of the lately seceded States. They affirmed that they still intended hostility toward the Union, and had a fixed purpose to defeat the legitimate results of the war. So wrought up were the people of the North that they returned the Republican party to power with an increased majority.

The last session of the Thirty-ninth Congress met in December, 1865, feeling safe in pushing the bitter legislation against the South and in their ability to override any veto of President Johnson's. A caucus committee of the Republican party was appointed to take special charge of this legislation and push it forward with the radical rules of a bitter caucus program. Hostile legislation was at once started in the shape of a tenure of office law to tie the hands of the President and prevent his removal of persons in office who were in sympathy with the policy of Congress. This and other legislation was





intended to open the way for more radical legislation toward the South to follow in the near future. It was also provided that the first session of the new Congress (Fortieth) should meet immediately upon the close of the Thirty-ninth Congress, on March 4th, instead of December, 1867. This was to give a continuous session of Congress till the congressional reconstruction plan was fairly put in operation, and so that the President could not cause delay. General Grant's power as commander-in-chief of the army was increased, and he was made in a measure independent of the President.

On March 2d, just before the close of the Thirty-ninth Congress, the "reconstruction" law was passed over the President's veto, to the effect that the reconstruction already completed by the President was null and void, and the work was to be done under the direction of Congress. The ten States were divided into five military districts, under the absolute command and control of generals of the army, backed by a sufficient military force to carry out any program. They were to ignore State organizations and officers, to treat the State governments as illegal and not affording protection to life and property. These generals were to give this protection, and use their pleasure in trying offenders by military commissions, or by suspended local civil tribunals, if they so desired, but such cases were to be reviewed by them. The generals were to proceed to register as voters all male citizens, whites and blacks, over twenty-one years of age, of whatever race or previous condition, who had been in the State for one year, except such as were disfranchised under the proposed Fourteenth amendment for participation in the war. A convention was to be called under stringent regulations to form a constitution, which should provide that such persons as Congress had designated should have suffrage, and contain such other conditions as had also been named. The constitution passed by this convention was to be submitted to the



same voters who called the convention, and, when adopted, to be passed on by Congress. The legislature called by the State constitution was to ratify the Fourteenth amendment. The States were to remain as provisional till this amendment was ratified and became a part of the Constitution of the United States. No disfranchised person was eligible to any office.

The Fourteenth amendment was to be ratified under compulsion. "The amendment reduced representation in Congress and based it upon voting population; provided that no person should hold office under United States authority, who, having taken an oath as a Federal or State officer to support the Constitution, had subsequently engaged in the war against the Union." The insuperable objection to the Fourteenth amendment was to be found in the clause which required the Southern people to disfranchise their own leaders, to brand with dishonor those who had led them in peace and in war. The North now intended to force this amendment under the terrible compulsion of the congressional reconstruction law. It is recalled here, too, that five of the restored States had already ratified the Thirteenth amendment, and their votes had been accepted and counted as valid in the ratification promulgated by the secretary of state of the United States (Mr. Seward). Without these votes the amendment would have lacked the necessary three-fourths of the States needed. The question arises, Was the ratification legal or illegal under the Constitution. This made little difference then with Congress.

A supplementary act was passed by the new Congress in March, specifying details for the government of the generals commanding the five military districts, carrying out the same bitter spirit in the enforcement of the law.

The Southern people regarded this new legislation as harsh in the extreme, and ungenerous to them in their prostrate and helpless condition. Just as they thought they were being restored to civil government and could



begin to rebuild their homes and repair their losses caused by the war, they were again thrown into confusion worse than ever, and under military law in its most severe administration. It was plain to them that the disfranchising scheme would eliminate all citizens who had had any experience in law making, and in sufficient numbers to turn the whites over bodily to the negroes led by Northern men and the inexperienced and worse element of Southern whites, those who had generally shirked in taking part with either government in the war. It amounted to placing the bayonet at the breast of every white citizen of the South and saying: You must keep your hands off and let this reconstruction plan go through, or we will take your life and property, or send you to prison.

It will be impossible in this short chapter to go into detail in each State, and only the salient features of those terrible and dark days will be given. Details must be found in the accounts given of each State by others. The people of the South could not willingly stultify themselves by acceding to what they considered the dishonorable conditions of the Fourteenth amendment, and the legislatures under presidential organization generally declined to ratify the amendment. It was deemed even better to endure patiently military government until "passions generated by the war subside and better counsels prevail at the Federal capital, maintaining meanwhile law and order and addressing ourselves to industrial pursuits." (Governor Jenkins of Georgia.) Leading citizens protested against the harsh measures. Governor Sharkey, of Mississippi, filed a bill in the supreme court to test its constitutionality. His bill was dismissed. Governor Jenkins, of Georgia, also filed a bill for the same purpose, and employed Jeremiah S. Black, Robert J. Brent, Edgar Cowan, and Charles O'Connor from the North as counsel. The bill was ably argued by Mr. O'Connor and Mr. Walker, of Mississippi,



but it was dismissed by the court. The *McCardle* case from Mississippi was at last presented on its merits. "The argument was concluded on the 9th of March, 1868, and the court took the case under advisement. While it was being so held, to prevent a decision of the question, a bill was rushed through both houses and finally passed, March 27, 1868, over the president's veto depriving the court of jurisdiction over such appeals." This was the course in all similar cases involving a constitutional decision, which certainly was revolutionary, and showed a fear that the court would pronounce the law unconstitutional.

The Fourteenth amendment was now presented to the Southern people again. Its behests and the reconstruction acts were carried out in legislation by the bayonet. The States were negroized in succession. "Its practical operation was of course revolutionary in its effects upon the Southern State governments. The most influential white men were excluded from voting for the delegates who were to compose the constitutional conventions, while the negroes were all admitted to enrollment. Unscrupulous adventurers appeared to act as the leaders of the inexperienced blacks in taking possession first of conventions, and afterward of State governments; and in States where the negroes were most numerous or their leaders most shrewd and unprincipled, an extraordinary carnival of public crime set in under the form of law. Negro majorities gained complete control of State governments, or rather negroes constituted the legislative majorities and submitted to the unrestrained authority of small but masterful groups of white men, whom the instinct for plunder had drawn from the North.

"Taxes were multiplied, the proceeds mostly going into the pockets of the white rascals and their confederates among the negroes. Immense debts piled up by processes both legal and fraudulent, and most of the money borrowed reached the same destination. In several of





the States, it is true that after the conventions had acted, the white vote was strong enough to control when united, and in these, reconstruction, when completed, reinstated the whites in power almost at once, but it was in these States, in several cases, that the process of reconstruction was longest delayed, just because the white voters could resist the more obnoxious measures of the conventions, and in the meantime, there was military rule. By the end of June, 1868, provision had been made for the re-admission of Arkansas, the two Carolinas, Florida, Georgia, Alabama, and Louisiana to representation in Congress. Reconstruction was delayed in Virginia, Mississippi and Texas because of the impossibility of securing popular majorities for the constitution framed by the reconstruction conventions, and Georgia was again held off from representation because her laws had declared negroes ineligible to hold office. It was not until January, 1871, therefore, that all of the States were once more represented in Congress." The above is the account given by a fair writer (Wilson), but being represented then, was not the desired panacea which was to end the hostile legislation or woes of the helpless Southern people.

#### FACTS, PHASES AND COLORINGS OF RECONSTRUCTION.

Besides trying to bring the law before the supreme court, prominent citizens in every State protested against the infamy. Among them may be mentioned H. V. Johnson, B. H. Hill, and others. When Governor Jenkins of Georgia issued an address to the people of the State, advising against acceptance of the Sherman bill, General Pope, the military commander of the district, issued an order forbidding officials to influence the people on reconstruction, and quickly and peremptorily notified him that State officers would not be permitted to denounce the act of Congress. The general soon after relieved Governor Jenkins, the State treasurer and comptroller-general, and appointed army officers to execute their



functions. Governor Throckmorton, of Texas, and the governor of Alabama were also removed.

The judiciaries were subjected to the rule of the sword. All judges held their places by sufferance. Even superior court judges were summarily ousted from the bench. The same was true of county officers, and mayors and aldermen of cities. Citizens were arrested, and the only authority given was that of the soldiers who made the arrests. Then citizens were confined at Fort Pulaski and other most convenient fortresses, generally under false and malicious charges urged by irresponsible parties. Two thousand Federal arrests were made in Louisiana, mostly during the Republican rule of eight years. When the people of a State evinced a disposition not to comply with the severe conditions given, a new act of Congress was passed, as in the case of Georgia, December 22, 1869: "An act to promote the reconstruction of Georgia," imposing still more stringent conditions.

The Alabama constitution was submitted according to the reconstruction law to the registered voters, which required a majority of registered votes should be cast. At the election it was defeated, because it lacked the support of this majority. The conservatives registered, but did not vote and thus caused the defeat of the constitution. General Meade, commanding the district, reported, "The registered voters do not desire to be restored under the Constitution." He reported that the Constitution failed of ratification by 8,114 votes, yet Congress took the matter entirely in its control. It lumped Alabama and its odious constitution in the general bill admitting the other States, and thus made a constitution which the people had refused to ratify. The same thing was done in the case of Arkansas.

A correct idea may be had of the officeholders of Alabama from the State ticket put out by Republicans for election in February, 1868, including the following members of the Freedmen's bureau: Applegate, of



Ohio, for lieutenant-governor; Miller, of Maine, for secretary of state; Reynolds, of Maine, for auditor; Keifer, of Ohio, for commissioner of internal revenue. For legislators, from Montgomery county, Albert Warner of Ohio; Shoeback of Austria. For probate judge, Early of New York. The same rule was followed in the county and local offices in every State and municipality. Illiterate negroes, also, were elected or appointed to highly responsible positions.

The State militia, as organized, was composed mainly of negroes to enforce the odious State laws enacted by a legislature even more radical in legislation than the examples given by Congress. To illustrate: In the election in Alabama, in November, 1869, for governor and members of the legislature, the Republicans asked Governor Smith to call out the negro militia to protect the courts. For political purposes, complaint was made, in 1870, that there were violent measures used by Democrats in courts and at the polls. Governor Smith, the Republican governor, denounced Sibley and others as agitators "who would like to have a Ku Klux outrage every week to assist in keeping up strife between the whites and the blacks, that they might be more certain of the votes of the latter. He would like to have a few colored men killed every week, to furnish semblance of truth to Spencer's libels upon the people of the State generally." (Noted Men of the Solid South.)

The legislature of Alabama, put in by Congress, contrary to law, "sat nearly the entire year. As soon as it got fairly down to business, it increased the former State aid to railroads by authorizing endorsements to the extent of \$16,000 per mile. Bribery and corruption became common to pass these pernicious grants of the State's credit. Only one road was completed. Five were built a few miles and abandoned. Fraudulent bonds were demanded and issued. The bond brokers and railroad schemers conspired to rob the State of many millions of



dollars. The legislature also authorized cities, towns and counties to issue bonds to railroad builders, and many were fleeced, as these same organizations were controlled by the same element elected in the same way as was the legislature."

"The North Carolina legislature authorized the governor to proclaim martial law in every county, to arrest and try all accused persons by court-martial . . . to raise two regiments to execute his will . . . one regiment of negroes and the other of renegades . . . and proceeded to arrest honorable citizens to be tried by court-martial in time of peace. With rare patience, the people of North Carolina restrained their indignation and resolved to await the election of 1870." This procedure was general in all the States under the reconstruction law.

The Republican party accomplished its object, in preserving its power, but only for a time. In the Forty-first Congress, beginning March 5, 1871, the twelve Southern States were represented as follows: Twenty-two Republican senators, 2 Democratic senators, 48 Republican representatives, and 13 Democratic representatives. Most of the members of Congress were from the North. President Lincoln had made a supposed case of this kind in 1862, and thus criticised it: "To send a parcel of Northern men here as representatives, elected as it would be understood and perhaps really so, at the point of the bayonet, would be disgraceful and outrageous" (*Noted Men of the Solid South*.) Under the iron hand of military government, both Federal and State, the Fourteenth and Fifteenth amendments were ratified and the credit of every State exhausted, but at the sacrifice of every principle of local self-government.

South Carolina is a sample of the other States (in 1873). "But the treasury of South Carolina has been so thoroughly gutted by the thieves who have hitherto had possession of the State government, there is nothing to steal. The note of any negro in the State is worth-





much on the market as a South Carolina bond. It would puzzle even a Yankee carpet-bagger to make anything out of the office of State treasurer under the circumstances." Governor Chamberlain, a Republican, said that when at the end of the Moses administration, he entered on his duties as governor, "two hundred trial justices were holding office by executive appointment, who could neither read nor write the English language." (Noted Men of the Solid South.)

#### BORDER STATES.

If anything, the border States of Maryland, Kentucky, West Virginia and Missouri, while passing through the same ordeal of adjustment, between war and peace, had a more revengeful and vindictive experience than the States which were reconstructed by Congress. The population of these States sympathized with the people of the South, but a minority, upheld by the army of the Union, were kept in power; and their legislation was bent to but one purpose, to retain themselves in power, which they did by disfranchising all who sympathized or were suspected of sympathizing with the South. In West Virginia, test oaths were freely used, and the laws framed only by those who could take them. To illustrate: "For five years after the war, in West Virginia, an ex-Confederate was not a citizen, could not hold office, could not practice law, could not sit as a juror, could not teach school, could not sue in the courts, could not make a defense for charges brought during his absence, could not be administrator or executor." This policy was pursued with more or less severity in the other border States. In Missouri, the constitution framed was most proscriptive, and could not be excelled in this particular.

#### UNION LEAGUES.

The Union League in the South was formed to establish the black man's party, and bind the negroes by secret organization to the Republican party, so they could be



detached and taken entirely from under the control of the white people of the South. The "Union League is the right arm of the Union Republican party of the United States, and no man should be initiated into the league who does not heartily endorse the principles and policy of the Union Republican party." There were two divisions of the league, one for the whites and the other almost entirely for negroes, with a few whites to instruct and lead them. With few exceptions, the whites of the South were excluded. Even brigadier-generals, commanding States, entered the league for political purposes. (Swayne.) The league was surrounded by mystery, had grips and mysterious signs, and the negroes were sworn "to vote only for and for none but those who advocate and support the great principles set forth by the league to fill any office of honor, profit, or trust in either State or general government." (By-Laws of the League.) This league, in practice, taught that the white men of the South were enemies of the negroes, and it excited the latter to deeds of disorder and interference in every way with the whites. The poor negro could not withstand the strong will of the whites from the North, who were controlling him, against all advice and friendly appeal from the Southern whites. Friction, conflict, disorder between whites and blacks were incited to prolong the important and lucrative offices held by the carpet-baggers. It was the stock in trade of the Republicans in the South to keep up the vindictive and hostile legislation of Congress, and it is needless to say that members of the league had the ear of Congress.

"But there was a companion to this abominable dynasty in the dangerous order of the Ku Klux Klan. The one caused the other. The Ku Klux Klan was the perilous effect of which the odious league was the unhealthy cause. The Klan was a veritable body, founded in a holy object, and often prostituted to violence under great provocation. The writer knows all about it, and shared



in its legislative work. It combined the best men of the State, old, virtuous, settled, cautious citizens. Its object was the preservation of order and the protection of society. It used mystery as its weapon. It was intended to aid the law, and prevent crime. In the license of the era, it was a matter of self-defense against plunder, assassination, and rape. Both the league and the Ku Klux Klan were excrescences of reconstruction, and the natural outcome of abnormal politics and abortive government." (Avery's History of Georgia.) The writer of this chapter never knew personally of this Klan. He saw the effect of it in a negro county of Mississippi (Noxubee), where there were ten negroes to one white person. The lawlessness and tendency to riot and override the laws of social life, became so great that a crisis appeared to be near, as shown by abusive language, disorderly meetings, and incendiary proceedings. This existed for months. One night about two hundred white men clothed in white sheets, in single file on horseback, without uttering a word, rode through the thickly-settled negro portions of the county. They appeared without warning at dark. They disappeared just before dawn. The effect was electrical. The negroes gave little more trouble in that county, notwithstanding the league and their secret organization.

#### THE CARPET-BAGGER.

"His like the world has never seen from the days of Cain or of the forty thieves in the fabled time of Ali Baba. Like the wind, he blows and we hear the sound thereof, but no man knoweth whence it cometh or whither it goeth. National historians will be in doubt how to class him. Ornithologists will claim him, because in many respects he is a bird of prey. He lives only on corruption, and takes his flight as soon as the carcass is picked. He is no product of the war. He is a 'canker of a calm world' and of peace, which is des-



potism enforced by bayonets. His valor is discretion; his industry perpetual strife; and his eloquence 'the parcel of a reckoning' of chances as he smells out a path which may lead from the White House to a custom house, a postoffice, the internal revenue bureau, or perchance to either wing of the Federal capitol. His shibboleth is 'The Republican Party.' From that party he sprung as naturally as a maggot from putrefaction. Wherever two or three or four negroes are gathered together, he, like a leprous spot, is seen, and his cry, like the daughter of the horse leech, is always, Give, give me office. Without office he is nothing; with office, he is a pest and public nuisance. Out of office he is a beggar; in office he grows rich till his eyes stick out with fatness. Out of office he is, hat in hand, the outside ornament of every negro's cabin, a plantation loafer and the nation's lazerrone; in office he is an adept in 'addition, division and silence.' Out of office he is the orphan ward of the administration and the general sign-post of penury; in office he is the complaining suppliant for social equality with Southern gentlemen." (Norwood.) This is a splendid picture in general of the carpet-bagger during the days of reconstruction.

Alabama had become insolvent, and "Governor Lewis. Republican, said to the legislature that he could not sell for money any of the State bonds." The State debt had grown to the enormous sum of \$25,500,000, besides county and city debts of vast sums. "Corruption marked the Republican management as its own. The scoundrel class was in office. Strife between whites and blacks still stirred up by Spencer and his henchmen. Immigration was prevented, emigration from the State by whites going steadily on. Capital shrank from the State into which it had corruptedly rushed a few years ago. For six years the State had been losing at all outlets." Such was Alabama. It was even worse in South Carolina, Louisiana and other States.





In North Carolina, July 4, 1868, "this new State government was organized. Senate, 38 Republicans, 12 Democrats, 12 carpet-baggers. Outside the legislature, in the lobby, a swarm of the same kind, . . . all of them disreputable. The treasury was robbed, the school fund stolen to pay per diems. The educational investments in securities were sold out at nearly one-third their par value to the Republican treasurer for himself and his associates. . . . In less than four months, this legislature authorized a State debt of over \$25,000,000 in bonds, in addition to \$16,000,000 for various minor schemes. The entire debt imposed by reconstruction on North Carolina exceeded \$38,000,000, while the taxable wealth of the State at that time was returned at only \$120,000,000. . . . Similar corruption in municipal bonds. Yet not a mile of railroad was built, although \$14,000,000 in bonds were actually issued. Not a child, white or black, was educated for two years; not a public building erected, no State improvements anywhere." (Noted Men of the Solid South.)

Alabama's debt, before Republican rule, was \$8,336,083; at the end, \$25,503,593.

In North Carolina, the assessed property in 1860 was \$292,000,000; taxes, \$543,000. In 1870, assessed property, \$130,000,000; taxes, \$1,160,000, showing a difference between local government and enforced military government under carpet-baggers.

In South Carolina, in 1860, the taxable property was \$490,000,000; taxes, \$400,000. In 1870 (Republican rule), assessed property, \$184,000,000; taxes, \$2,000,000 a year.

In Georgia, in 1860, the taxable property was \$672,322,777; in 1870, \$226,329,767. When Governor Bullock became governor, the State debt was \$5,827,000; at the date of his flight, the debt was reported to be \$12,500,000; bond endorsements amounted to \$5,733,000, aggregate over \$18,000,000.



In Florida, property decreased in value 45 per cent in eight years of Republican rule, from 1867 to 1875.

In Mississippi, 6,400,000 acres of land were forfeited to the State in payment of excessive taxation, and large amounts were collected as taxes and squandered.

In Louisiana, during Republican rule, New Orleans city property decreased in value \$58,104,864 in eight years. County property decreased more than one-half, or from \$99,266,839 to \$47,141,690. One hundred and forty millions of dollars were squandered with nothing to show for it; State debt increased more than \$40,000,000; city property depreciated 40 per cent, county property 50 per cent.

#### SUMMARY.

The terrible ordeal of reconstruction may be said to have lasted from 1865 to 1876, twelve years, before the whites got hold of the States again. No people had to undergo so dark a period with such complications, having 4,000,000 of slaves suddenly enfranchised, with no preliminary training to fit them for the great responsibility of the ballot. "Our ancestors placed suffrage upon the broad common-sense principle that it should be lodged in and exercised by those who could use it most wisely and most safely and most efficiently, to serve the ends for which government was instituted . . . not upon any abstract or transcendent notion of human rights, which ignored the existing facts of social life. . . . I shall not vote to degrade suffrage. I shall not vote to pollute and corrupt the foundation of political power in this country, either in my own State or in any other State." (Senator Buckalew, of Pennsylvania.) It seems strange now that statesmen of the Republican party in control of the government, even after so terrible a war, and mad with absolute power, could have gone so far in error as to place those who had been slaves but a few years before, and were now led by corrupt and reckless adven-



turers, in charge of framing governments for the Anglo-Saxon race in the South. It seems now that they could have seen they were attempting an impossible problem; but they did not, even when warned by cool-headed statesmen who did see it. Passion and prejudice reigned supreme. Those who were conservative were misled by the colored representations of designing partisans. The negroes were as clay in the hands of the potter. They had never before felt the strong hand of strong men, ruling them and using them in affairs, in which they had had no experience, for political ascendancy. The negroes were never very much blamed by the Southern people, for the whites felt that the influences surrounding the negro, backed by military power and the moral support of the government of the great republic and of the State governments, were irresistible under the circumstances.

The conduct of the true citizens of the South during the days of reconstruction surpassed in wisdom, endurance, patience, and subordination to law (military law), any traits they had displayed in the war. They never yielded moral support to the corrupt legislation surrounding them, but patiently waited for the time to come when they could act together to restore local self-government. This time came when the corrupt influences of those in power had passed beyond endurance. The better element of the Republicans in the South, composed of Northern men, could not stand the stealing and general corruption which threw the spoils mainly into the hands of the few officeholders. They began to separate from the extremists as they "saw the handwriting on the wall," and to approach the true citizens of the State. All thinking men now saw that there was no doubt that white civilization itself, the very existence of society, was at stake. The white people arose as one man to correct the evil. They appealed to all to help (white and black), no matter what had occurred in the past. The



moral pressure and presentation of the open frauds and crimes accomplished under form of law, were irresistible. It amounted almost to another revolution, and one after another, the States were recovered by the white people within their borders. Illegal and corrupt returning boards, under semblance of law, prevented the consummation for a time, as the Federal power was slow to relax its hold, but it was seen on every hand that the end was near, and that the corrupt governments, set up under the reconstruction law, remained only because held up on the points of the bayonets of the United States army.

The carpet-bag government in Louisiana fell in a day (September 14, 1874), and was powerless when the military (United States troops) were not interfering. One company of United States troops, after a few days, reinstated the corrupt government for a time. This was an object-lesson that every citizen of the North could understand, and the conservative men there began to change their views in regard to the South, and to understand that Congress had made a mistake in its zeal, as it supposed, to gather in the results of the war, and afford protection to the negro race in its freedom. It was shown, too, that no change could be made under Republican rule in the South, as was demonstrated by Governor Chamberlain's effort in South Carolina. Their régime was a stench in the nostrils of every respectable man, North or South. It could only be done under the Democratic party, and all good citizens flocked to its standard and worked under it, till what was desired was accomplished. "The conduct of the Republican party in the South was such as to repel patriotism and decency . . . and a monumental warning to those who seek party advantage through illegitimate legislative enactment." (Noted Men of the Solid South.)

The cost to the South was great, but her citizens did not repine, but began to work with a will to revoke all





improper and corrupt legislation, to restore economy in public expenditures, to reduce taxation, to do away with useless offices, to make the schools efficient, and to build up the waste places. The conservative element in Congress was strong enough to enforce "hands off." In fact, Congress, as early as May, 1872, had passed a general amnesty bill removing political disabilities from almost all citizens who had been disfranchised, still excepting those who had been officers in the judicial, military, or naval service of the Confederate States. The carpet-baggers had taken their "carpet-bags" and gone to a more congenial clime, where they lost their identity as a class, having the scorn and contempt of all respectable citizens.

The supreme court, too, had rendered several decisions tending to recall Congress from its proneness to legislate beyond the limits of the Constitution. The negroes, who could not resist being led to extremes in the hands of the "masterful" carpet-baggers, now easily and readily yielded to the will of the Southern whites, and began to return to more industrious habits and conditions, and were less disposed to spend their time as politicians and lawmakers. They began to realize that they were not competent to withstand the nerve and moral pressure of the white man, whether he was a carpet-bagger and using him for his own advantage, and for corrupt and vindictive purposes, or the Southern white man who intended to rule and preserve white civilization and society at all hazards. The normal condition of the Southern States, being again ruled by the whites, by the educated people and the property-holders, was accepted by the people of the North as the only true solution in the reconstruction of the States. The restoration of the governments of the States to their own people, left them heavily burdened with debts put upon them under the guise of law. They had to start with this great burden upon them in their work of restoration. Even after the States



were restored, for many years there was a large element of the Republican party that still desired to interfere in the internal management of the States. Some force bills were passed by Congress to carry into effect the Fourteenth and Fifteenth amendments. This uncertainty, in again resorting to extreme legislation, kept capital away and made it timid. It had become thoroughly panic-stricken during the corrupt days of reconstruction, and had fled from the South and sought other channels, mainly in the development of the Northwest. It showed no disposition to return for many years, even after recuperation had begun in earnest with Southern hands and Southern capital.

The struggle of Southern men during reconstruction, in fact, of the whole Southern people, under adverse political, social and commercial circumstances, was the most remarkable feature in those dark days. They never lost confidence in themselves, patiently bided their time, and achieved a most remarkable victory over all malignant influences. Although they had had such sad experience with the carpet-baggers, they at once invited immigration to assist in building up the South, but they preferred bona fide citizens, not the class which had lived off of them so long, and which had fled when the purse and power had been stripped from them.

It cannot now be a question that the policy of the Northern statesmen was a failure, and that the wisdom of Southern leaders was superior in their ideas of reconstruction. "Reconstruction accomplished not one useful result and left behind not one pleasant reflection." History will certainly condemn the legislation that entailed such misery, such corruption, such profligate expenditure of the money of an impoverished and crushed people, and in establishing negro governments at a time when the whites of the South had the best intentions of protecting the negroes in their new given freedom. "The experiment being tried, all interests, not least those of



the blacks themselves, were found to require that the superior race should rule. It seems strange that even any were so dull as to expect success of the opposite policy." Governor Chamberlain, of South Carolina (Republican), said: "The Republican party in power was not all nor nearly all Northern adventurers, Southern renegades, or depraved negroes. Among all the classes so described were worthy and able men, but the crude forces with which they dealt were temporarily too strong for their control or their resistance. Corruption ran riot; dishonesty flourished in shameless effrontery; incompetency was the rule in public offices." (Noted Men of the Solid South.)

Louisiana, South Carolina and Florida were not entirely reclaimed till after President Hayes was inaugurated in 1877. One of the first acts of the new president was to order the withdrawal of the United States troops from the South. As soon as this was done, the Republican governments in the Southern States at once fell to pieces, and the Democratic State governments, which had been legally elected and had claimed to be the true governments, took their places. The rule of the white people was once more inaugurated in all the lately seceded States. They had governed these States from their earliest colonial or territorial days, until the reconstruction policy of the presidents (Lincoln and Johnson) was overturned by the armed forces of the government, as the Confederate government had been overturned by the same force in 1865, and the negro governments established in their places in 1867, under the reconstruction laws of Congress. As already explained, this reconstruction might be styled "destruction," for it took what little the Southern people had left after coming out of the war which had impoverished them, and left their country devastated and devoid of nearly all property.

The assessed property in 1876 was about one-third of what it was in 1860. Two-thirds of the wealth of the



Southern people had been swept away, and the South was helpless and bankrupt. However, as soon as the white people realized that they again had control of their country, that the eleven years' trial of negro lawmaking and legislation was about ended, they at once went to work with a will to correct the corrupt and vicious legislation of the experiment of negro suffrage, in administering the affairs of the great States, and with heart and soul to reassert their influence and rights in the union of their fathers.

In so far as their material resources were concerned, they were about in the same fix that they were in 1863, in fact, worse off than when they laid down their arms. At that date the total debts of the States were about \$87,000,000. They had been compelled to repudiate all debts contracted for carrying on the war. In the ten years of negro legislation and government, conducted under carpet-baggers, the additional debt of \$300,000,000 was added to the burdens of the people of the South.

The Republicans in Congress gave the ballot to the negroes as a weapon of defense of their freedom and to keep the party in power. But the first result of negro suffrage was a saturnalia of ignorant and corrupt government such as the world has seldom seen. The debts of the Southern States were rolled up to enormous extent. At the close of the war the debts had aggregated \$87,000,000. Reconstruction added \$300,000,000, and a great part of this was squandered. (Judson.)

Public and private debts remained as a legacy to remind the people of the war and its consequences. These debts were paid by many, compromised by many, and in many cases could not be paid at all. As yet, the people were not sure that there were not to be further attempts at readjustment. Capital had long since fled from the South, and was diverted in other directions. Money could only be had at enormous rates of interest (75 per cent to 80 per cent). The North and West were enjoying the greatest financial prosperity in their history.





All capital was being used in booming and building up the Northwest into new States and increasing their material wealth. This was being done to its utmost limit, and there was no money to help the South. The great Western railroads were being built, backed by enormous grants of public lands by Congress, and these roads were planting immigrants (500,000 foreign) and citizens from other States in the West. Immigration had even gone westward from the people of the South who had despaired of better days. There was no immigration southward. The increase in population was only the natural one. There were but few banks, and Southern men had few friends among the great financiers anywhere. The South, in its looted and prostrated condition, offered no invitation to capital which promised even prospective returns. Northern capital strictly avoided the South in those gloomy days. To all appearances, the South was paralyzed. Her great wealth, as shown by the census of 1850 and 1860, which had been the accumulation from the earliest days, in slave property and material investments in all possible directions, had been swept away.

The social fabric of the people had been uprooted and turned upside down. The negroes had not only been freed as the result of the South's failure in the war, but they had been made lawmakers and put to governing States, whose people had been as progressive and aggressive as any element of the Anglo-Saxon race in any part of the world. The Southern people had before them the lamentable failure of their brothers at the North to restrain their bad blood and forego Anglo-Saxon determination, indifferently to friend or foe, to carry out their own purposes by putting negro governments over men of their own race for whom they showed at that time no sympathy or generosity.

But the white people of the South began to realize again that their destinies had fallen into their own hands. They recalled the terrible ordeal through which they



had passed, a fiery furnace, as it were, of devastation, war and reconstruction and destruction of over fifty years. Every true citizen realized the fearful conditions surrounding him to begin social, political and material life anew. A condition without a precedent in history confronted them. Their brothers of the North were still hostile, suspicious, distrustful, and watching them with vigilant eyes, possibly to try a new experiment in restoration.

Yet they were at least able to face the future and apply their wisdom and statesmanship to the upbuilding of a new civilization, having to accept the Thirteenth, Fourteenth and Fifteenth amendments to the Constitution irrevocably, although fastened on them by the bayonet, and having negro suffrage as a fixed fact, and that, too, in face of the great burdens imposed on them in the ten years' experiment. It looked as if the effort they could not avoid in the solution of the intricate problem was made hopeless by the conditions they had to accept. Two races differing in almost every respect, one a governing race with a proud prestige of success, the other a docile, inexperienced, uneducated race without a record, had to live side by side with equal political power and rights.

The new problem which Southern statesmen had to face and solve, was surrounded by every possible adverse condition. At the same time, the need most pressing above all others was to restore confidence and prosperity and provide employment to hands made idle by destruction of all manufacturing enterprises and all employments not strictly agricultural. Although the South was mainly agricultural, because her peculiar conditions made her so before the war, still she had been proportionally doing her share in all lines of development before the struggle. The almost total destruction of all these lines of industry, reduced her people in starting to the one primitive pursuit of every people—agriculture, as an immediate way of making a living. The Southern



people knew their great unequaled resources in climate, soil, rivers, seacoast, rainfall, iron, coal, timber, agriculture, and everything necessary to make a people rich and prosperous. They knew that they had every condition essential to success. They realized that the race question was settled possibly for a time, and with discretion on their part, passion and prejudice must necessarily die out. They knew that with patriotism, patience, and fidelity and good principles, success might be assured. They were conscious that in the ordeal through which they had passed, they had preserved their self-respect and honor, and there was nothing to be ashamed of in their conduct. And they now determined to enter with courage and skill the great future before them, relying on their strong arms and hearts and on their own meager resources, for it has been shown that there were no friends at hand to aid them materially. The only friends they had politically were the Democrats at the North, and these friends had never deserted them from the time the war closed.

#### PLUCK, ENERGY AND PUSH OF THE SOUTHERN PEOPLE.

Before showing what rapid strides the South made after the white people got control, in material development, in educational progress, social restoration, and in reinstating prosperity in every line of progress and industry, it is not inappropriate to show that the same pluck, energy and push which had always animated the people of the South still existed, and that those who now led in this restoration of prosperity were the same people who in ante-bellum days made the South the richest section of the great republic. Her record before the war in all branches showed her sons abreast not only with the citizens of any other section, but with the citizens of any other country in the world in every respect, in energy, thrift, and progress. There are those who would have the world believe that her citizens were slothful, that they were



incapable of using that energy and skill necessary to rebuild the waste places left by the war. Many writers in leading books of reference, showed a lack of knowledge and an untruthfulness as to facts that make it necessary to present proof. To show the falsity of their record, the last Encyclopedia Britannica, for instance, says: "Since the revolutionary days, the few thinkers of America born south of Mason and Dixon's line are outnumbered by those belonging to the single State of Massachusetts; nor is it too much to say, that mainly by their connection with the North, the Carolinas have been saved from sinking to the level of Mexico and the Antilles." No country has been so persistently falsified in history as the South has been; hers has been to make history, unfortunately, not to write it. Dr. J. L. M. Curry says: "History, poetry, art, public opinion have been most unjust to the South. By perverse reiterations its annals, its acts, its inner feelings, its purposes have been grossly misrepresented. History, as written, if accepted, in future years will consign the South to infamy."

In connection with this section or article, other articles will show that the people of the South were abreast with the people of any other section of the republic in fighting its battles, in commanding its armies, in protecting the national honor, in adding to the territory of the Union, in leading in judicial, political, and social development, in fact in all branches calling for the exercise of a progressive and aggressive citizenship, in aiding and taking part in the growth of our common country.

The manhood of the South has been equal to any emergency, political, judicial, material or social. I will treat only of the capacity for material and industrial growth by the Southern people, to show that there was no difference in these particulars in the decade from 1850 to 1860 preceding the war, from that developed in the decade 1880 to 1890 and afterward; that they were able to do





even more in face of disaster and untoward conditions than when surrounded by wealth and increasing prosperity; that they could create conditions to build up prosperity. When all the capital of the country was being used in building up the West, it was caused to seek the South (after a time) in its own interest, by a prosperity brought about in spite of unfavorable surroundings, and by the Herculean effort of her own impoverished people.

It is now proposed to show briefly that the white people of the South have always been abreast with their brethren of the North and West, and displayed as much push and business capacity as men of any other section of the country. Different conditions faced them, but with these different conditions they created wealth equally with other sections. Let us draw the record of the census of 1850 and 1860 to examine the facts. In this decade, the South only had one-fourth of the white population of the whole country, and counting slaves, her population was one-third of the entire population. Yet the census shows that in railroading, which is a good index of a country's progress, the South built in the ten years 7,562 miles, an increase of 400 per cent, while New England and the Middle States built 4,712 miles, an increase of 100 per cent. In 1850, the two Northern sections exceeded the South in miles by 2,463; in 1860, the South had caught up and was 387 miles ahead, thus showing how she was gaining in wealth then. The South increased her mileage 319 per cent, while the whole country increased only 234 per cent during the ten years. She also had a mile of railroad to as many people as the North had proportionally. She expended in the ten years, \$220,000,000 in building new railroads, mostly her own capital.

In diversified manufacturing enterprises, she was making rapid strides; for example, she made 24 per cent increase in manufacturing flour and meal. She made more than one-third increase in the amount of manufac-



tured plain and sawed lumber. In the iron industry, her gain was greater than in the whole country. In steam engines and machinery, she made a gain of over 200 per cent. The rest of the country made a gain of only 40 per cent. In cotton manufacturing in 1860, she had gained \$1,000,000 over 1850. She was just then realizing what a mine of wealth she had in her great product.

In banking capital, the South had 30 per cent of the total amount in the country. In 1860, of the total assessed property in the whole country, she had nearly one-half, or 44 per cent. In 1850 the South had 48 per cent of all the live stock (about one-half). She grew over one-half of all the corn raised, and, singular as it may seem now, she had over 56 per cent of all the hogs in the country, and 25 per cent of all the sheep.

In that decade the South raised more than one-half of all the agricultural products, besides producing all the cotton, sugar, rice and molasses. She also produced 41 per cent of all the corn raised, and nearly the entire crop of tobacco and sweet potatoes. She had 48 per cent of all the live stock of the country, one-half of the beeswax and honey. She slaughtered 33 per cent of all animals killed. In home manufacturing she made over 67 per cent of that of the whole country. She owned one-third of the total value of farms, and in the decade she increased their value \$1,300,000 over what it was in 1850. She had over 38 per cent of the total investment in agricultural implements in the whole country. The per capita valuation of property in the South, including slaves who owned no property, was \$568, while in New England and the Middle States (the richest) it was only \$528.

In educational income of all institutions, the South had about one-third of the amount for the one-fourth of the white population, as no education was provided for the negroes. In religious matters she had about as many churches in proportion to population as had the North.



and West, although that section had claimed precedence in morals. Fortunately the census is better authority than prejudiced writers in treating of the South. Certainly no unprejudiced person could say from this record that the people of the South lacked energy or thrift before the war. With a white population of only one-fourth, and only one-third including negroes, they were ahead in products, and had begun to climb up in those manufacturing industries claimed as showing peculiar energy and enterprise in our Northern brethren.

Before taking up the rapid recuperation of the South, in contrast with the progress made at the North and West from 1880 (for really no start had been made before then), let us glance again for a moment at her enormous loss in property. As before stated, she had lost valued property amounting to over \$5,000,000,000. "This vast sum is eight times as great as the combined capital of all the national banks in the United States, and is nearly as great as the aggregate capital invested in manufactures in the whole country. Blot out of existence in one night every manufacturing enterprise in the whole country, with all the capital employed, and the loss would not equal that sustained by the South as the result of the war." (Edmunds, 1896.)

In 1880, when the real start in recuperation was made, the real and personal property by the census was valued at \$7,641,000,000; that of the entire country at \$43,642,000,000. This shows that the South had about 17½ per cent of the total valuation of the entire country, against 44 per cent of that valuation twenty years previous, showing her greatly changed position as result of the war.

#### MATERIAL AND INDUSTRIAL DEVELOPMENT OF THE SOUTH.

Let us see what the South did in the decade 1880 to 1890, at first, almost alone. She increased the value of her property by \$3,800,000,000, while New England and



the Middle States increased the value of their property by \$3,900,000,000. The South gained over 50 per cent while the latter two sections gained 22 per cent only. In 1880 the total farm assets were valued at \$2,314,000,000. In 1890 the valuation was \$3,182,000,000, a gain of 37 per cent, while the increase in the rest of the country was 30 per cent, and that, too, in face of the very large inflow of immigrants and capital from Europe. The value of farm products in the South in 1880 was \$666,000,000, while in 1890 she produced \$773,000,000, a gain of 16 per cent during the ten years. At the same time the rest of the country gained only 9 per cent. Referring to the value of farm assets in 1880, the South, with one-fourth of that value, produced in 1890, 43 per cent of all the products raised. The South made, in 1890, 24 per cent on her investments in farming, while the rest of the country made only 13 per cent. "The South, in 1896, made one-third of the corn crop of the whole country, and has sold more corn than it bought; makes more than one-half of the wheat used." (Tradesman.) The cotton crop in 1880 was 5,000,000 bales; in 1895, 9,750,000 bales. The South produced in 1894 nearly three-fourths of the entire value of the crop.

In manufacturing, which has been the special industry of many sections of the North, the South has made her most rapid progress. In 1880 the South had \$257,244,500 invested in manufactures. In 1890 it was \$659,008,800, or a gain of 156 per cent. The gain in the entire country was 120¾ per cent. The value of manufactured products increased 100 per cent, while in the rest of the country it was only 69½ per cent. In 1890, in cotton manufacture, the South had \$21,976,000 invested. By 1895 the capital invested was about \$107,000,000. Twenty-five thousand miles of railroad have been built in the South in the last fifteen years, over \$1,000,000,000 having been spent in new roads and in improving old ones since 1880.





In 1880 the South produced 397,301 tons of pig iron; in 1895, 1,900,000 tons. In 1880 the South produced 6,048,000 tons of coal; in 1895, 30,000,000 tons. In 1880 there were 40 cottonseed-oil mills, with a capital of \$3,500,000; in 1896 there were 300 mills, with a capital of \$30,000,000. This is almost entirely a new industry, cottonseed furnishing both oil and the cake used as fertilizer and cattle feed.

The facts given are sufficient to show that the South is forging ahead in all manufacturing industries. She is establishing woolen mills, manufacturing establishments of all kinds, to work her crude materials into finished articles of commerce, into furniture, tools, building material, etc. She is using marble, granite, copper, clay, terra cotta and other minerals, and diversifying her industries in every way, producing what she needs rather than importing it. Before the war her agricultural resources paid so well, in fact so much better than her other industries, that she mainly confined herself to them. Now she is diversifying her agriculture on still more varied and scientific principles, keeping up in her great local advantages in this industry, and at the same time rapidly increasing her industries in every other line, providing employment for her people and all who cast their lot with her. In diversifying her agriculture, she has met with the success which always follows such a course. Her great cotton yield has been brought about by better selection of seed, in better handling of the staple, and in better fertilizing of the soil. While this is true, proportionally large crops of other kinds are planted and raised—sugar, corn, oats, wheat, tobacco, sorghum, rice and potatoes. She raises every crop raised at the North and West, and many others besides, which cannot be raised in those sections.

She is raising her own food and not buying nearly to the extent she did immediately following the war. Then she bought grain and meat almost exclusively, and



fined her crops mainly to cotton, sugar and tobacco. Everything was needed in the way of furniture and family supplies, and had to be bought anew, and in these dark days, only cotton brought money at once on the market, so this crop only could be mortgaged to get these necessities. Now this drain is all over, and the South is developing a great industry in early fruits and vegetables, amounting to \$50,000,000 a year in her oranges, apples and vegetables now shipped North. The South is reversing matters, and beginning to send food products North, having a surplus over her need. Her great cotton crop and other staple crops are now becoming surplus crops since she is feeding herself, and today the Southern planter and farmer is generally as comfortable as he was in the better days before disaster overtook him.

The growth of manufactures in the South is fully brought out by the statistics given in detail, and we may sum up the bearing of these industries by stating that in the ten years 1880 to 1890, the South so firmly established herself as to more than compete with the Middle and New England States in the manufacture of iron and cotton goods. The conditions are so favorable in economic advantage, the iron, coal and limestone frequently being found in juxtaposition in the same mountain, as to enable the mills almost to do away with the cost of transportation of ore, coal and coke as compared with this item of expense which in the North involves an average distance of from 300 to 600 miles. As early as 1884 and 1885 the South began shipping pig iron to eastern markets. Southern iron was sold at a profit, after paying freight rates, of from \$3 to \$5 per ton, and at all periods when the business is not profitable at the North, and the mills and furnaces shut down or run on short time, the Southern furnaces and mills continue to work and make money and supply the deficit caused by the shutting down at the North. It is now an established fact that



the South can more than compete with Northern furnaces, and it remains to be seen what the great iron manufacturing interests in Pennsylvania and the North generally will do to counteract the advantages in this industry in the South. It is not only in the manufacture of pig iron that the South has demonstrated her economic advantages, but she is now diversifying her work in iron in every possible way, by putting up other manufacturing establishments, such as rolling mills, pipe works, car and wheel works, foundries and machine shops, and turning out finished products, such as stoves, agricultural implements, car wheels, iron pipe, in fact every variety of articles and machines, even to the construction of locomotives and the smallest kinds of iron goods sold on the market. This new feature saves the cost of transportation on iron to the North, and also the freight on the finished product returned to the South, and affords employment to laborers and mechanics at the shops, giving employment and retaining money at Southern centers.

While this is going on, more and more iron is being shipped northward and sold at the doors of Northern furnaces. Shipments are even going beyond the borders of the United States, and it is conceded now that Southern manufacturers of iron will control the market in prices and facilities. "Those who have visited the districts were impressed with its remarkable advantages for the production of cheap iron. The ore, coke, coal and excellent limestone are in contiguity, and it is figured that the total cost of material at the furnace in the Birmingham district will average about \$1.12½ per ton of iron produced, against \$4 and \$5 in the Lehigh and Schuylkill valleys." (R. W. Raymond, mining engineer.) "But dealing with the industry as it exists to-day, a candid survey of the situation will lead to the admission that if it should come to a struggle between furnaces in eastern Pennsylvania, New Jersey and New York, which produce



chiefly foundry brands for open market, and the makers of the South, no inconsiderable number of the former would be unable to survive long." (Iron Age.)

"It is idle for Pennsylvania and other great iron and coal-producing States to close their eyes to the fact that we have reached the beginning of a great revolution in those products. . . . The tread of the iron and coal diggers of Alabama threatens the majesty of the Northern iron and coal fields."

With scarcely less advantage in economic conditions are the immense iron and coal fields of West Virginia, southwest Virginia, western North Carolina, east Tennessee, Georgia and Kentucky, an inexhaustible field of ores 700 miles in length and 200 miles in breadth, as rich almost in timber as in coal and iron. In 1896 the production of pig iron was 8,623,181 tons in the United States, less by 823,181 than the amount produced in 1895. There were produced in the South 1,834,451 tons—an increase of 132,000 tons over 1895, a shortage for the North, and an increase for the South. The South to-day presents the most inviting field for investment of any section of the Union.

The coal fields in the South are as extensive as the iron fields, and as already stated, coal and iron are frequently mined out of the same mountain, and the supply is inexhaustible. Coal and iron together give to the South advantages, from an economic standpoint, to be found in no other section of the same area in the world.

The cotton crop of the South alone is a wonderful source of wealth and gives her advantages possessed by no other country of equal area. She produces about 70 per cent of the entire cotton crop of the world, and her climatic conditions will give her this advantage for all time. This crop alone from 1865 to 1890 was valued at \$7,867,113,555, of which \$5,161,000,000 was exported. This crop is every year becoming more and more a surplus crop, and will be a mine of wealth to the country.





now that she has resumed her normal condition as a rich section well supplied with everything lost during the dark period of twenty years from 1861 to 1881. More and more of the money obtained for this crop will remain in the South, as she is now producing her own food crops and is self-sustaining. A great part of the money heretofore went North and West for manufactured products of iron, for coal and for provisions now produced at home. Statistics have already shown that the strides made in establishing mills for manufacturing in the South are very great.

It is fully understood now that the South has even greater advantages in cotton than in the iron industry for competing with the North. It is not whether she can do this, but whether the North can hold her own with the South. The coarser fabrics are now shipped to the East and sold at a profit at the doors of Northern mills, and the finer fabrics are being rapidly manufactured at cheaper rates. It is only a matter of time when the South, by multiplying her mills, will dictate prices to the world in cotton goods, coarse and fine. She has the advantage of from \$4 to \$6 start in having the mills in the cotton fields, as it takes that amount for freight, compressing, insurance, etc., necessary in transporting to the New England mills. "The mills of the Southern States possess a decided advantage over the mills of the North and Great Britain, in that they have the raw cotton at their doors, and that this alone represents a money value sufficient to give them control of the coarse goods has been fully demonstrated within the last ten years. This difference can be clearly shown by the following illustration: Let us assume a 40,000-spindle mill is located at any well-situated site in the cotton-growing section of the Southern States. This mill properly equipped with the latest and most approved style of machinery for the manufacture of standard 4-4 sheeting to Nos. 12 and 14 yarns, would cost complete \$300,000, and would consume



20,000 bales of cotton per annum. It is variously estimated that the difference in cost of a bale of cotton, 400 lbs., between the mills in Augusta, Ga., and Fall River, Mass., is from \$4 to \$6 a bale. Assume the lowest estimate of \$4 a bale, and you have 20,000 times 4, or \$80,000, in favor of the Augusta mill, or a saving of 10 per cent on the complete cost of the mill in cotton alone (C. R. Makepeace.)

This is a mathematical demonstration in favor of the South, of a splendid profit before starting in manufacturing, provided skilled labor is obtained. The premises, too, are not well taken in the reason given to bolster up the Northern mills. The labor in the Southern mills is cheaper for the same grade of skill than that of the employes in Northern mills, and is becoming more and more skilled, and equal to the turning out of the finest products. The mills are now yearly increasing their output in this direction, and adding the necessary machinery for the finer products, and all new mills are equipped with the latest and best machinery. The climate, too, is demonstrating the economic values in its effect on material, and the less expense in heating buildings owing to the milder temperature.

In its other crops the South has made great strides. She has more than doubled her grain crops, as well as cotton, since 1870. The percentage of gain in corn has been greater than that of any other section of the whole country. In corn, cotton, wheat, oats, potatoes and other crops, the South in 1889 increased their value \$25,000,000 over what it was in 1879. The agricultural products of the South amounted to about \$850,000,000 in 1889. She increased the value of her live stock in the decade \$177,747,296. Stock is fed at the South at a profit in saving winter shelter and feed, covering at least from three to four months, owing to the climate and longer grazing.

In foreign commerce, the South got one-half of the



increase of the whole country. In banking there was an increase of surplus of 146 per cent, while it was only 63½ per cent in the rest of the country. While in 1879 the South had only 220 banks, with a capital stock of \$45,408,985, in 1889 she had 472 banks with a capital of \$76,454,510. In 1889 she had increased her banks 113 per cent, while at the North the increase was only 13 per cent and in the West 80 per cent. In capital stock she increased the amount 70 per cent against the 4 per cent in the North and 95 per cent in the West. In 1897 the bank clearings in January, as compared with January, 1896, give a gain of 6 per cent; the Middle States a gain of 2½ per cent, and a decrease of from 5 per cent to 11 per cent in the West and on the Pacific coast.

What the South may be said to have accomplished, may be summed up in the language of Mr. D. A. Tompkins, who said:

(1) It has "shaken off the idea of dependence on the negro as a laborer, and the latter is falling into the relation of helper to the white laborer. (2) It has accumulated capital enough to undertake very extensive manufacturing without, in many cases, the need to borrow capital from the North. (3) It has demonstrated that the Southern man makes as successful a manufacturer and skilled mechanic as the Northern man or the Englishman, and that the climate is rather advantageous than otherwise to successful and profitable work. (4) In iron, cotton and lumber manufacturing, it is not a question whether the South can hold its own against other sections, but whether other sections can compete with the South.

Mr. Frederick Taylor, a banker of New York, said in 1889, after visiting the South: "The new South has been built up by the indomitable energy and by the hard work of the Southern people themselves." Hon. H. B. Pierce, of Massachusetts, said: "I predict for the new South an era of prosperity which shall eclipse any which has ever been achieved in any other section of our great country, so remarkable for its success in that line."



There is no portion of the Union surpassing the South in its lumber resources. The annual lumber production is valued at \$400,000,000, almost equaling the value of the cotton crop.

In education, equally great progress has been made. As soon as the whites secured control, they proceeded to perfect the system of public school education established in the days of reconstruction, but which was only organized to raise money to be squandered in those corrupt and looting days. Before the war, only such white children as could not be educated by their parents were educated at the public expense. Education was mainly provided in private schools by those able to educate their children. In the twenty years from 1875 to 1895, the South increased in population 54 per cent, in school attendance 130 per cent, school property from \$16,000,000 to \$51,000,000—\$2,000,000 a year. In 1896, Dr. A. D. Mayo, an educational expert, reports that education has cost the South since the war \$250,000,000, of which amount \$75,000,000 has been expended in the education of the negro in public schools, though he pays little tax toward their support. Dr. Mayo also says: "The sixteen Southern States are to-day paying as much for the public schools as the British parliament votes every year for the public school system of the British islands, between \$20,000,000 and \$30,000,000. Population of the British islands, 38,104,973."

In Georgia, "the whites pay taxes on \$436,000,000, while the negroes pay on \$15,000,000." Yet the negroes share the fund in common; no separation of the fund between the races, the separation is in the schools. The proportion of school population in 1893 between the races in Georgia was as 55 whites to 47 blacks. The tax in the other States to educate negroes, where they outnumber the whites, is still more burdensome on the white taxpayers. The tax paid by the South, when we consider the great difference in wealth and area between the two





sections, approximates in amount to that paid by the wealthier section, and when we consider how little tax is paid by the negro (not exceeding 5 per cent), is unsurpassed in generosity by any people in the world toward a class doing so little for their own education, or for the accumulation of wealth and consequent benefit from taxation for education.

"The six New England States, with 66,000 square miles area and a population of 5,000,000, had in 1890 a total assessed valuation of \$3,500,000,000. The whole South, with twelve times the area and four times the population, had \$3,750,000,000, practically the same amount of property from which to support schools for four times as many children, and those scattered over twelve times the area as New England. It is evident, then, that New England with the same levy can support her schools three times as long as the South, even when we omit from the estimate the facts that in the South the children are scattered over twelve times the area, and that a double set of schools must be maintained. These two factors greatly militate against effective concentration in organizing, administering and supporting a school system." (Supt. J. R. Preston, of Mississippi.)

The attendance in the colleges and universities in fifteen years has increased from 10,000 to 25,000—150 per cent. So it is seen the South has shrunk from no expense or effort to keep up an efficient system of education. She is doing more in proportion to her means than any other section.

The cities of the South have increased rapidly in wealth and population. The old cities have grown steadily in every way. Knoxville, Tenn., had in 1880, 9,000 inhabitants; assessed value of property, \$3,485,000. In 1890 she had 42,000 inhabitants, and property valued at \$9,500,000. Louisville, Ky., increased from 123,000 population to 227,000; Nashville, from 46,000 to 110,000; and other cities in like proportion in population and



wealth. New towns like Birmingham, Anniston, Rockville, Dallas, have sprung up as if by magic.

The inauguration of President Cleveland in 1885, when the South was making its great effort to restore its prosperity, gave good heart to the Southern people everywhere. His administration brought about the first genuine confidence between the people of the North and the South. He led the Southern people away from the traditions and many of the prejudices of the great war. He revived in them the spark of national patriotism, which needed some master spirit to ignite and cause it to glow with the spirit of their ancestors, who had defended the national honor when other sections were slow to do so. He called Southern men to offices of trust and honor. His was the happy privilege of doing more to bind up sectional wounds than any other president. He did it, too, without sacrifice of any vital principle established by the victory of the Union armies. The South owes Mr. Cleveland a debt of gratitude.

It is proper to state that while the South did by far the most in the great industrial upheaval in the decade of 1880 to 1890, she did this with her own resources, capital and manhood; that when the great revolution was apparent in 1885, Northern men began to notice it, and to lend their helping hands and capital. But the capitalists of the North did not fully realize the situation till the latter part of the decade, and now Northern capital and energies are mingling with those of the South in the development of wealth in the South, which beyond doubt now presents the safest field for investment of capital in all the Union. She is but at the very threshold of her industrial development.

The whole Southern people in the decade of 1880 to 1890 exerted themselves in every way to develop their resources, by State agricultural and mechanical exhibitions, by interstate farmers' conventions, by public meetings in various cities. To foster commerce between the



North and South, bankers' associations assembled in various places where Northern and Southern men met together to discuss finance. The great Southern exposition at New Orleans in 1884, and afterward in Atlanta (1895), did much to encourage the Southern people, and showed the people of the North our splendid natural resources, and displayed the push and earnestness of the Southern people.

Not long after the inauguration of President Cleveland (1885), General Grant, the great leader of the Union armies and twice president of the United States, died under peculiarly touching surroundings. A deadly disease seized him, and he passed slowly away before its steady progress. His heart seemed then to turn on the happy reunion of his country, and his utterances tended to bury sectional animosities. He said, "Let us have peace," and this terse epigram found lodgment in the hearts of his countrymen North and South. While the reconstruction policy was put in execution, during the time he was president, in all its rigor, still a retrospective view caused the Southern people to believe he had befriended them when he could judiciously do so. The temper of the victorious North was not such that any one man, however influential, no matter what his generous instincts were, could anticipate any change of policy prematurely. They felt that he had been generous to the soldiers of the South during the war whenever he had the power to be generous; also, that in executing the policy of Congress he was obeying orders in the spirit of his military training rather than in sympathy with that policy. He felt, too, as he stated, that if a law were wrong and impracticable, it would work out a good result by its strict enforcement, and this was really the effect in the consolidation and in the irresistible effort of the Southern people in wresting from the wreck the white civilization of the South, an effort almost equal to a revolution. They believed that his great common sense



enabled him to understand the surroundings at the time better than any one else. At an opportune moment he did befriend the people of the South in procuring additional legislation expediting reconstruction, and he did this at as early a moment as would have been prudent. He also foreshadowed the removal of troops from the South. He became impatient at the frequent calls for troops to hold up the rotten carpet-bag governments, and prepared public opinion at the North for the removal of troops from the South by his successor.

At his funeral, the president and his cabinet, composed in part of several eminent Southerners, many Southern statesmen and surviving Confederate soldiers, took part, and marched side by side with the mourning Northern, doing honor to the great dead. All over the South flags were lowered at halfmast in his honor, and legislatures passed suitable resolutions of respect.

#### NATIONAL PATRIOTISM AT THE SOUTH.

These two circumstances first evoked a display of national patriotism by the South. The people were then intensely considering the happy restoration of local self-government in their respective States. The national government, by its severe and radical treatment, had partially destroyed local self-government everywhere. Under its policy enormous debts had been piled upon them while they were facing the bayonet in the hands of the military power. To them local self-government and a stoppage of corrupt government were the great present boon, and the growth of national feeling was slow but steady, as the two sections better understood each other. Their time was taken up in undoing the false legislation then in force, and when necessary, in constructing new constitutions, in steering between Scylla and Charybdis by keeping within the new amendments, and at the same time in holding the political power in the hands of the white people; also in prevent-





ing a return to power of the negro element, which was in a majority in many sections of the South.

To accomplish this required the greatest skill, courage and patience. The means resorted to at times varied as the occasion demanded, not always approved by the best citizenship, but deemed necessary generally to effect the purpose. This period was a very trying one, and brought out prominently the leading characteristics of the Southern people in their resolve never again to submit to negroism and its baneful results. The Southern people knew that they alone could solve the great social problem of the races. They, white and black, lived together; they had seen that the effort made by strangers from the North, who had attempted to administer their affairs when local self-government had been suppressed, had proved to be a woeful failure.

They felt that the people of the North would soon see that it was better to permit the people of the South to solve their own difficult problems themselves and without further interference. As the people felt more secure, a more liberal legislation and policy were adopted toward the negro race, and they themselves see how much better everything works since they ceased to give so much attention to politics and more to their material wants and education. This period from 1885 to 1895 was really a period of readjustment to normal conditions in the South, and the people were really too busy and too anxious in their hard work of restoration and in making permanent their new boon of self-government, to take any great interest in national affairs.

The year 1895 was really the year when the North and South were again permanently cemented together in good feeling and in a broad national spirit. It is true this feeling had grown steadily since the inauguration of President Cleveland, but it bore substantial fruit in 1895. Then were the three prominent events of the year to emphasize fraternal feeling, and to encourage and broaden



the people of the South in their attachment to the government. They now fully recognize that theirs was the best government in the world; that the people had more freedom than under any other government; that all were getting back substantially to the government of the fathers; that the Constitution was once more erect in its majesty, true without the principles for which they had fought (State rights), but with a restoration of prosperity and a full acceptance of results, a good and beneficent government to them.

The first notable event was the dedication of a monument at Chicago to the Confederate soldiers who died during the war in prison in that city. The money to build this monument was mainly raised by broad-minded citizens of Chicago, and showed that the bloody chasm was a myth, and that we were again in heart and spirit one people with the same national aspirations. At first great opposition was manifested, as the dedication occurred on Decoration day of the dead Federal soldiers under the auspices of the Grand Army of the Republic. The officials of that organization objected, but its members, many of them, still aided in their unofficial capacity. The surviving Confederate generals and soldiers who attended the ceremony were most hospitably received and entertained. They had to pass through several hundred thousand people in going to the cemetery, and there was not a word, motion or sign in that vast assemblage or during a stay of several days that did not betoken the best of feeling and a broad nationality. The fable of the bloody chasm, it was found, did not exist. The First regiment of the Illinois National Guard (under Colonel Turner), 800 strong, fired three volleys at the close of the ceremonies and many of the Grand Army men in uniform listened attentively to Gen. Wade Hampton, who delivered the address.

Another significant event was the dedication of the battlefield of Chickamauga, in Georgia, as a national mil-



itary park by the law of Congress. The liberal legislation in this work, in putting Federal and Confederate conditions on an equality, in erecting out of the public treasury monuments, similar in every respect, over spots where Union and Confederate generals lost their lives, and equally honoring the valor of both as American soldiers rather than as former foes, had a wonderful effect. Then, too, cabinet officers, statesmen of all political parties, soldiers of the Union and of the Confederacy, assembled on the field and commingled in friendly intercourse, fighting the battle over again. Soldier organizations, North and South, held reunions and even reunions in common, attesting a new era of good feeling; indeed, all were now satisfied to be covered by the common flag of a common country. The addresses delivered were also of a marked character, breathing that free atmosphere of equality natural to American citizenship. No principle was sacrificed by either side in the maintenance that each side believed that it had been right in the advocacy of the principles for which men had fought on the great field.

The Atlanta exposition occurred also in 1895, and showed with what vigor the Southern people were progressing in their material development in every line. It gave the people who visited that great Southern city new life, new aspirations. They discovered in that great display that they were once more a rich people and had made great strides. All went to their homes feeling that they need not again have a return of despondency, but with renewed effort they could equal any section of the country in wealth and real prosperity.

#### FUTURE OF THE SOUTH.

The South is now really at the very beginning of her industrial development. Her great advantages in the extent of her resources, incident to her mild climate and wonderful natural proximity of ores, and demonstrated



advantages in the manufacture of her cotton and wool products, where the crop and timber are most convenient, her facilities for the raising of stock of all kinds, in feeding for a less time by several months, owing to milder climate, and the growing of almost every grain suitable for hay and feed—all these advantages have been fully demonstrated since 1880. Capitalists in Europe and this country now have no doubt as to the favorable surroundings for investment, and the large development of her newly discovered fields of industry in every line will surpass the sanguine expectations of her most ardent enthusiasts. In the North, owing to an earlier development and diversified industries, her fields are more fully occupied and opportunities for capitalists are not so encouraging or inviting.

It is a fact, too, that nearly all new railroad enterprises are pointing southward. The shipment of grain eastward from Chicago and the West to Boston, New York, Philadelphia and Baltimore for water transportation to Europe and South American ports, is about being diverted to south Atlantic and Gulf ports, which will shorten the land transportation and substitute the cheaper water transportation from one-third to one-half the distance. The Illinois Central railroad has erected docks and elevators in New Orleans equaling, if not surpassing, facilities and conveniences in this line at eastern ports, and thousands of carloads of grain have traveled over this road to these elevators. Kansas City, backed by foreign capital, is building a railroad to a gulf port, lessening the rail transportation of grain eastward by 767 miles.

The Mobile & Ohio railroad is now building a line from Columbus, Miss., to Montgomery, Ala., connecting with the great Plant system, giving direct lines to Brunswick, Ga., Jacksonville, Pensacola, and Tampa, Fla. This road now has extensive wharves and elevators in Mobile, Ala. These new lines and connections now being perfected by other roads will be ready for not only transport-





grain from the North and West, but the iron, cotton, and timber products (one-half of all the standing timber being in the South at the present time), to be manufactured into the various articles of commerce. The South is now making enough for home consumption, and is shipping largely besides, and will increase annually these shipments. These are no longer doubted facts, and there is now going on a movement toward the South of larger manufacturing interests, of capital, of railroad builders, of population. A most significant illustration of how immigration is increasing is the locating of a colony, composed of veterans of the Union army, in South Georgia, by ex-Governor Northen of that State. Scarcely over two years ago there was established in the piney woods of that State a town of 6,000 inhabitants with constant accessions in population and capital. The settlement has sprung up almost like magic, and has attracted great attention. It is one of the many such colonies now being contemplated and being established throughout the South, and must necessarily continue, as nearly all of the available arable land fit for settlement is now in the South, while much of the land settled by agriculturists in the extreme Northwest has been found unsuitable as farming land, owing to uncertain seasons and little rainfall.

The class immigrating southward is a most desirable class, being mainly Americans, or foreigners who have become thoroughly Americanized, and who prefer the South on account of the very cold weather in the North. Nearly all new emigrants from Europe prefer the North at first.

The cotton and iron manufacturing enterprises in the South did not experience the effects of the depression in money matters in the panics of 1892 and 1893 as did similar plants at the North. At Fall River, Mass., and other manufacturing centers, mills were run on half time; in fact, for many years the loss on this account in



wages and income has been almost one-half, while similar plants in the South have run on full time steadily and have supplied the shortage caused by the closing of the manufactories at the North.

### THE NEGRO PROBLEM.

With the account of the great strides made by the South since 1880, one will ask, What became of the great negro problem, which for nearly three hundred years has been a running sore in this country? In nearly every stage of our history, this vexed problem has caused division, irritation, bitter political discussions, sectional animosities and conflicting interests in material development. Even in the constitutional convention of 1789, our wisest statesmen knew and said that the States were divided between those having slaves and those not having them, or about getting rid of them. This division existed down to the war between the States; in fact, slavery was the irritating cause which divided the North and the South on sectional lines in the construction of the Constitution. The negro since the war was still the irritating cause which kept the sections wide apart, and was responsible for the harsh reconstruction epoch. He owed his freedom to a war necessity. He was the cause of the drastic political experiments inaugurated by Northern statesmen. From a slave he was made a full citizen, with full political rights.

These were thrust upon him suddenly, without any previous training or preparation. At the same time he was made to face the white man in the great problem of competition, while his aspirations and instincts were entirely different from the stronger ruling race; the one race thrifty, dominating, accumulative and full of enterprise and progress, the other not inclined to lay up wealth or better its condition. For awhile the negro was the ward of the nation, and money was lavishly spent to hold him in his new responsible position, but this had its end.



Thinking men knew that while he was not expected, owing to his unfortunate past, to be able to fight the battles of life with the superior race, still it was disappointing, as shown by the statistics, that the masses have been but little advanced in the acquisition of property and education. He is inclined to be wasteful and improvident; inclined to spend his money in baubles rather than in surrounding himself with comforts. It cannot be denied that he has improved in many ways, educationally, materially and morally, but as yet the signs are not of the most encouraging character that he will ever be successful in the great competition in life, which he will necessarily encounter side by side with the white man.

I hardly think it can be denied that prejudice exists against him as a race, both North and South. In his work he cannot compete with the white man in quality or amount. It is also evident that in all lines of employment except agriculture, he is steadily disappearing in numbers at the North, as compared with his hold in those employments years ago, when there was a sentiment in his favor. He is being more and more restricted in all the avenues of the various industries affording a living to workers. The places are being filled more and more by white employes. He is constantly failing in his ability to keep abreast of the white man in the struggle for employment. He is being pushed aside as the white man needs work and tries to get it, to such an extent that at the North he has but few lines of employment now left. Labor unions are discriminating against him in all mechanical trades, and in fact in all lines of work controlled by guilds, and this discrimination also exists where there are no labor unions. For a long time and until recently this feeling did not pervade the South, but it is growing, and where many negro mechanics got work for a long time, white mechanics are now strongly competing and demanding preference, and as they generally give better work, they are getting it more and more



to the exclusion of the negro. The white immigrants, too, from the North to the South, have little use for the negro after a few years, and more and more the negro will have to fight and struggle for a living like every other race; and it remains to be seen how he can exist side by side with his more progressive and assertive white neighbor, as the white race outnumbers him more and more, and becomes more aggressive.

Mr. Henry Garnett, in the summary of negro statistics in the Census Bureau for 1890, gives the following results: "The negroes, while increasing rapidly in the country, are diminishing in number relative to the whites. They are moving southward from the border States into those of the South Atlantic and the Gulf. They prefer rural life rather than urban life. The proportion of criminals among the negroes is much greater than among the whites, and that of the paupers is at least as great. In the matter of education, the number of negro attendants at school is far behind the number of whites, but is gaining rapidly on that race." These statistics show that in one hundred years the whites have multiplied eighteen times and the negroes nearly ten times. In 1790, the whites were 80.73 per cent of the population, the negroes 19.27 per cent. In 1890 the negroes constituted only 12½ per cent of the population.

In the criminal statistics, the proportion of negroes in jails was nearly four times as great as that of native white extraction, and the commitment of negroes for petty offenses is in much greater proportion than among the white race. The negroes also marry earlier and their lives are shorter than in the white race.

The Rev. L. W. W. Manaway, missionary of the African Methodist church in Mississippi, who has carefully collated statistics as to his race, says:

A great many of my race say that the white people send them to prison. I differ from them. . . . I found that out of 78 convictions of colored people, the test-





mony on which the convictions were had in 77 cases was furnished by colored people, and that the man convicted by white testimony received a sentence of one year in the penitentiary, and the average sentence of those convicted on colored testimony was from two to five years. . . . Last year there were twenty-two negroes killed over the crap table. . . . It is said abroad that the white people in the South are killing off the negroes. The statistics of crime which I have kept for years disprove the charge. It is true that pernicious crimes are committed which cause lynchings, but the same causes bring the same results in other States of the Union. I must not be understood as defending lynchings. Lynchings are wrong whenever or wherever engaged in. Every lyncher is a murderer. . . . The majority of crimes are not committed by the best colored citizens, but by shiftless people who float from one community to another with no visible means of support." (Daily Picayune, New Orleans, April 9, 1897.)

From a statistical standpoint, the outlook for the negro is not encouraging. I do not believe that any one can forecast the future of the negro. One thing is certain, when left to himself without the strong will and example of the white man in the black belts, he tends to retrograde; when outnumbered by the whites in the white belts, he assimilates more to the habits of white men, becomes a better laborer and a better citizen. The negro is certainly improving as a laborer all over the South since the last three or four years, and farming is getting more and more in its normal condition. Experimenting is passing away and both white and black races understand each other better, and all work is more strictly on business principles. Labor has got over its disorganization, and is realizing that unless good service is rendered, it is difficult to get on good lands or with good employers. Both white and black have paid old debts and are more careful in incurring new ones. Many mortgages have been lifted in the last three or four years, and good crops have been produced.



The white people are realizing fully now that the negro is a constant quantity at the South; that he has no idea of moving away and settling at the North or elsewhere; that he must be educated and fitted for citizenship as rapidly as possible; that it is better to help and encourage him than to repress him; and the whole drift now is to elevate him by education. It is worth of remark that although he was freed as a war measure, still the great government which freed him has done nothing to remove his illiteracy, poverty and ignorance, but the great burden has fallen on the impoverished white people of the South mainly, which was the most disorganized section of the Union as a result of the war, and they are taxing themselves with as liberal and unselfish a spirit as has been shown by any people under similar circumstances anywhere on the globe. It is not just to say either that the negro, who was and is the principal farm laborer, is not entitled to a large credit for the great and valuable crops raised in the South since 1880. It is true he was directed by the white people who owned the land, but the crops were made mostly through his labor. The white people went to work also on the farms and made a large part of the crops themselves. They worked harder and more industriously than ever, and in the white belts raised a large per cent of the crops. I believe that the next census will show a much better record for the colored race. I remark, then, that the great progress of the South is explained in the energy and push of the Southern whites, under the great necessity to retrieve and save their country and transmit its Anglo-Saxon civilization unimpaired, and as far as possible untarnished by negroism or its consequences; that the rapid accumulation of wealth was brought about in spite of the incubus of an inferior race, which was forcibly carried along and made to do its part. The negro has seen the great difference and feels it is best for both races. Repression of the negro vote will gradually pass



away, and he will become as regular a voter as his white brother, when he loses his identity as a political factor separate and distinct from others. White immigrants will move so rapidly now that the negro will be overshadowed everywhere, as he is now in the localities where the whites outnumber him two or three to one; they will be assimilated to the whites in thrift and citizenship; never the equal but always the weaker vessel which must not be imposed upon but must be protected.

#### MORALITY OF SOUTHERN PEOPLE.

The morality of the Southern white people will compare favorably with any country or section in the world. Unsympathizing pens have not considered their untoward surroundings in having contact with "an unassimilated and inferior race," that the "submersion of brains, political experience, land ownership, and habits of domination by ignorant members could have but one issue," which was plainly brought out in the reconstruction days and for many years following. The white people have given evidence of their morality in the growth of the religious denominations, and more especially in the prevalence of prohibition in the liquor business by local option laws, especially in Mississippi and Arkansas. About 90 per cent of the counties of Mississippi have prohibition by virtue of local option. It is even better in Arkansas, but in all these elections, the negro votes almost solid for whisky.

#### SOCIAL MATTERS.

It is a wise provision also that the races are kept separate in the schools, in churches and in railroad cars. Equal accommodations are granted under the laws. In some of the States no separation appears in railroad cars, and soon it will be the rule in all the States in this particular, but it will be a long time, if ever, before the children of the two races will attend schools in common, so long as the negro is numerous in particular localities.



The race instinct is implanted by a stronger hand than that of man, and a different arrangement where the races are anyway equal or the blacks more numerous, would result in constant collision and disorder. The younger generations of whites and blacks have far less disposition to adjustment in such matters than the older members of the respective races. The sensible negro never aspires to social equality; the broad men of the race distinctly state this; and any tendency in this direction is found only with the worse element and those disposed to create disorder and trouble. At the North it is hypocrisy to pretend that the negro is admitted in social circles equal with the whites. He is held more at arm's length there, even at the South, this, too, in face of the fact that the negro is the exception there and seldom met, as compared with the South, where in several States he outnumbered the whites, and in many localities, the same condition exists in almost every State.

Of late years one hears more of negroes not being admitted to hotels and restaurants and public resorts at the North than at the South. Social equality is not recognized North or South, and the sentiment is the same among the whites and blacks in both sections.

### LYNCHINGS.

Lynching to the extent it has existed in the South is indefensible. The crime invoking it began and has been continued solely by the irrepressible and worst element of the negro race, inaugurating a new crime, which was unknown and impossible in the days of slavery, and which from that fact and the existence of slavery, invested it with peculiar horror and atrocity. That the race instinct is strongly implanted in human society is undeniable, and when this crime is committed under the peculiarly harrowing surroundings of isolation in sparsely-settled communities, upon helpless and unprotected white women, combined with the murder in many cases of the





outraged female, it arouses a fierceness and revengeful spirit uncontrollable at times. It should be borne in mind, too, that a most abnormal state of society had preceded the advent of this crime of rape, for which the Southern people were not alone responsible and which they tried to prevent. What is now regarded as a great political mistake was committed in the sudden enfranchisement and investment of the negro race with all the privileges of citizenship, including suffrage, lawmaking, and governing at the point of the bayonet a superior race, who had always been aggressive in the assertion of every political right. This race was under a ban as a punishment for so-called rebellion and insurrection. Their hands were tied when this great political and social reversion of the races was put in operation and upheld by the military government of the United States from 1867 to 1880 (almost). When the military power of the government in this period stood aside, apparently to see what the new State governments would do alone, those governments inaugurated a similar system only worse, in that negro militia, armed to the teeth, took the place of the white United States troops, and most offensively flaunted their newly-invested rights in the faces of the white people of the South, a proud, sensitive race. The conventions and legislatures, called to inaugurate new State governments, were divested of every essence of the theory and tradition of local self-government, composed mainly of designing men called carpet-baggers, who could not succeed at their former homes, with not a particle of sympathy for the people who had always governed. They were their avowed enemies, using a large number of the most ignorant of the negro race to assist them. To illustrate: In the convention in Alabama, out of ninety-seven members of the one hundred and thirty-one, thirty-one were from Vermont, Connecticut, Massachusetts, Pennsylvania, Maine, New Jersey, New York, Ohio, Canada, and Scotland; bearing in mind, too,



that these were mainly white strangers to the people, and that they controlled the negro element. Some of the Southern whites, who could not get office from the people among whom they lived, except in such upheavals of society, united with them and were even more extreme than the white aliens; they, too, were striving for influence among the negroes to hold office by their votes, and had to keep abreast of or surpass their alien white colleagues to allay their suspicions of loyalty to the new order of things, in order to win the confidence of the negroes by posing as their foremost defenders in their newly given rights obtained by military power.

There were some good white men in these conventions and legislatures intent on trying to get the best possible government, but these were silenced. Instead of realizing the dangerous situation, the new lawmakers began discussing, with most inflammatory language and bearing, the matter of intermarriage of the races, the further disfranchisement of classes of whites who might throw obstacles to their proposed plans, and mixed schools in common for all children, white and black. When it is recalled now that in some of the States the negroes were largely in the majority, and in others nearly equally divided, this complete social upheaval was enough to turn the heads of the worst element of a more fortunate race than that of the negro. But even with these temptations the crime of rape was not committed then, for the shrewd carpet-bagger knew that this one offense would not be tolerated, and so long as they remained, it did not occur except in most isolated cases. The older negroes, too, and pleasure is taken in stating it, under the influence of even the great temptations and their previous living among the white people as slaves, never dreamed of such a crime, and held their growing sons for a time under that control which they had had under the system of slavery. No other race, under similar temptations and surroundings, would have done better.



They had no revenges of a personal character to inaugurate against their former masters. This new and hideous crime remained to be inaugurated by a younger generation of negroes, raised amidst the upheaval of those troublous times, while their fathers were mainly engaged in listening to inflammatory appeals, many of a social coloring, by designing and robbing strangers who held political power; and while their fathers themselves had laid aside their industrious habits of life and were leading a careless, wandering existence in their new-born freedom, not one-third of their time being given to productive labor.

Amid such surroundings the new generation of negro boys and men was raised. Parents, in a measure, gradually lost control of their boys in that loose period, and they grew up in idleness and with distorted and ugly ideas of their rights. They felt that they had to assert those rights personally by insolence and bravado toward the white males and females, among whom they had lived. The young negroes remembered that their fathers were held in place by the white troops of the government which had given them freedom. They saw soldiers of their own race parading almost every plantation and town to keep down the whites and hold the negroes in power. Even an ignorant negro boy could see that the "black man's party" was in power, and the "bottom rail on top."

Under these conditions, when the brains of the carpet-baggers were lost to the negroes by a change of government into the hands of the Southern property-holders and educated class, the young negroes could scarcely appreciate the import of the change, and they found that dreams of social equality had vanished forever. This dream had never taken strong hold on the older blacks, but it had seized the younger ones. They recalled all the discussions and talks of the dark days as to the intermarrying of the races, and the crime of raping a white



woman came into existence as a sequence. It occurred generally under most revolting and harrowing circumstances. It was in sparsely-settled districts where the crime was committed, in secluded paths and roads, when young girls were going to or returning from school, when wives were alone in their homes with children, their husbands being at work in the fields or otherwise engaged in the great struggle of breadwinning, and in communities generally where the blacks predominated in numbers. The feeling of utter lack of protection existed in such places, and those who lived under such terrible facts, felt that the sanctity of their homes could only be protected by taking the law into their own hands and meting out punishment to the brutes. They did it just as they would turn out to kill a mad dog in a small town, or crush a rattlesnake under their feet, when beloved ones were in such peril. Women were afraid to go about without a guard. Life became unbearable; for the peace and security of home are gone when rape is committed. They felt that if the brute was not lynched, the wretch might get loose and repeat the same crime.

These acts of lynching, of course, always shocked every law-abiding citizen. They struck terror to the negro. The law-abiding sentiment was weakened whenever a lynching occurred. The crime was indefensible, but those who condemn it must not forget the abnormal conditions. Those who engaged in lynching put themselves outside of the law, but at the same time those who committed rape put themselves also outside of the law. It would always be better to abide by the law, for human society and civilization are based on the principle that the individual gives up his right of protection of life and property to the State which must perform this duty. But in the isolated spots where the crime was generally committed, it was almost impossible in many cases to get the





legal protection promptly, and when it was needed, the community was swayed by a terrible cyclone of excitement and horror.

The conditions evoked, too, are most peculiar. The whites felt themselves outraged, and by a state of tutelage of the negro for which they were not responsible. This is no excuse for the crime of lynching. It is only stated to bring out the unfortunate facts incident to a great political crime in thrusting responsibilities on a weak and unfortunate race by a too rapid hotbed process of development, a procrustean operation.

The negroes felt outraged, too, for it appeared to them that only their race was lynched for the crime. They did not remember that white men, however loose in morals, did not find it necessary, in gratifying their beastly impulses for the other race, to commit the crime. This is no excuse for the white man to indulge his lustful desires. It was the misfortune of the negro race that in its condition of slavery and in the little time for improvement since free, habits of purity and chastity among them were not of a high grade. It was not to be expected that it should be otherwise. This is as much regretted by the conservative element of the negroes themselves as by their best well-wishers. At any rate, the negro was, as was natural, shocked and sullen and felt aggrieved. The two races in similar frame of mind from the peculiar circumstances, did not view, and have not as quickly viewed, the crime as it should have been. The example of the whites has been a bad one for the negroes themselves, for they, too, follow in the tracks of their neighbors. Only two years ago a negro girl near Enterprise, Miss., had to go through a lonely swamp to her home from work. She got a negro man to go with her for protection. Her dead body was found and her would-be protector was a fugitive, while outraged negroes, to protect their race from the great crime even among themselves, scoured



the swamps, woods and everywhere to catch the brute and lynch him. It should not be forgotten, too, that lynchings occur sometimes at the North under similar atrocious surroundings. Outraged communities in all parts of the world take the law in their own hands and lynch those who endanger the sanctity of home and society.

The negro element is hardly perceptible at the North; it is not in sufficient numbers to cause much friction. Still it does do it. Even mixed schools, where a small per centage of the scholars are negroes, have stirred up many communities, and considerable friction has resulted from the inborn race feeling implanted in every bosom. This presentation of facts is not given to excuse the lynching of negroes and whites, but to exhibit afresh the surroundings in the South in that new formative period after the war with its consequent chaos in society and morals. It is possible that some few lynchings may have been meted out to innocent parties, but barely possible. The greatest harm done always is in familiarizing public sentiment in witnessing such violations of law, and breaking down reliance on the law to redress grievances. The remedy lies in both races trying to put a stop to the crime which produces the violation of law by lynching.

The statistics show that the number of lynchings in 1896 within the limits of the United States was 131; 107 occurred in the South, and 24 in other parts of the Union, in Colorado, Illinois, Indiana, Minnesota, New York, Indian Territory and Oklahoma Territory. Of the negroes, 80 were lynched (40 for the crime of rape, 20 for murder and house burning). Fifty-one whites were lynched. So it appears that lynching is not meted out to negroes alone, but that nearly 40 per cent of those lynched were white men, and of the negroes 50 per cent of those lynched were killed for the crime of rape, and 18 per cent of the lynchings occurred out of the South. (Memphis Commercial-Appeal, January 5, 1897.)



The law-abiding citizens everywhere have always tried to prevent lynching. Leading citizens in every State have, from the inception of the crime, done all they could, by pen and speech, to hinder and check it. Every leading paper in the South, in fact I will say the press generally, has done its duty to stop it. Governors have exercised all their power, and have often prevented it. In South Carolina legislation disfranchises an officer who even appears to play into the hands of a mob, and debars him from office. It renders the county liable in damages to the amount of \$2,000 to go to the family of the lynched person. It is more frequent now that culprits are lodged in jail to await the slow process of law. Officers are doing their duty in protecting criminals and getting them beyond the reach of lynchers. Public sentiment is growing stronger and stronger in condemnation of the act. Whites and blacks alike are now working more together to root out the crime of rape, and have offenders tried as other criminals. Bishop W. J. Gaines, a colored man of the Methodist African church, says: "I am as emphatic in my condemnation of the lawless and godless crime of lynching as Bishop Turner can be, but he is entirely too radical. The best element of the white people is opposed to lynching as much as are the negroes. The governors and peace officers of the Southern States are doing all they can to bring about a proper condition of affairs. The best remedy for our evils is education and Christianity. The crimes for which lynching is the punishment are committed by the most ignorant of our race. It will take time to educate them." This is what he says in reply to Bishop Turner of the same race, who would have the negroes arm themselves and virtually inaugurate neighborhood war, and which some vile negroes would construe as a protection for those who committed rape, and which would result in the greatest calamity to the blacks if started. It is fortunate that so good an adviser is to be found as Bishop Gaines. I remark that



the people of the South are as moral and law-abiding as any people anywhere in the world. It would be well if those who judge them harshly would consider what they would have done themselves, surrounded by the most grave social problem the world has ever seen; viz., the race problem in its ugliest presentation in the South, and by the provocation of the mistake of statesmen.

#### SUPPLEMENTARY.

The preceding part of this article was completed in 1897. Since that time the great Republic, in the year 1898, has made wonderful strides in history making. It has engaged in a most successful war with Spain, to put an end to the bad government of Spanish rule in Cuba. The people of the United States, on the score of humanity, forced the legislative and executive departments to put an end to the apparently endless bad government and inhumanity, emphasizing the rule of Spain of her colonies in the Western continent. The destruction of the warship *Maine*, in the harbor of Havana by being blown up; the victory of Admiral Dewey at Manila; the destruction of Admiral Cervera's fleet by Commodores Sampson and Schley off Santiago de Cuba, and the capture of Santiago de Cuba by the American army under General Shafter, have been rapidly recurring events, which have thrilled the heart of every patriotic American with pride. These naval and military events, which may be classed almost alone for their brilliancy, when we consider the little loss of life incurred, and the results following in acquisition of territory to the United States, make an historical era hitherto unsurpassed in the history of our country.

One of the most remarkable results of this war has been the display of national patriotism and unity among the citizens of this great country—North, South, East and West. All sectional lines have apparently been blotted out forever; all bad blood, if any still lingered





either North or South, as a result of the great civil strife from 1861 to 1865, has disappeared and no longer exists. The President of the United States, upon the declaration of war by Congress, called for 200,000 volunteer troops to defend the honor of the flag, and to carry out the wishes of Congress in making war against Spain. These troops were apportioned among the several States in the Union in accordance with their population, and the call met with a prompt response from the citizenship of every State. In no part of the republic was the response more patriotic, more earnest, or more enthusiastic than in the ex-Confederate States which had been engaged in the war against the Union. About one-third of the volunteers called for by the President were furnished by the Southern States. The officers and enlisted men of these volunteer organizations were composed of ex-Confederate soldiers, their sons and their grandsons. Their conduct in the service of the United States was equally as honorable, as patriotic, and as enthusiastic as that of the troops from any other section of the Union. In camp, and while being hardened to service, they endured hardships and sacrifices with a spirit that showed they were worthy descendants of the men who, from 1861 to 1865, gave such evidence of manhood and heroism, in combating against superior numbers and resources.

In the preceding pages of this article, it was stated, that at the close of the war in 1865, the people of the South yielded to the inevitable with honesty and integrity of purpose; that in June, 1865, a little over two months after the surrender of Gen. Robert E. Lee's army in Virginia, there was not an armed Confederate soldier to be found anywhere; that the people of the South were ready, and showed their willingness to accept any results which the Federal government deemed necessary to impose upon them; that they gave most hearty support to the policies of Presidents Lincoln and Johnson, in inaugurating and putting into effect what was



termed the "presidential reconstruction;" that they endured with great patience and calm judgment, the dark days of congressional reconstruction, and while protesting against what seemed to them undue harshness in the legislation of Congress, they bode their time, till the corrupt negro governments established during the reconstruction period, virtually fell of their own weight and impracticability; that so soon as the white people of the South again came into possession of their State governments, their prosperity began to dawn; that they devoted their time and energies to the preservation of that local self-government, rescued from ignorance and corruption, but not considered finally established; that they began to repeal all bad laws, and to work for the restoration of their waste places resulting from four years of dreadful war and twelve years of bad negro government, and that during all this period the people of the South conscientiously tried to perform their full duty as citizens of the United States. Their delicate surroundings under the peculiar circumstances, did not admit of undue demonstration of national feeling, but whenever an opportunity was offered them, they gave unmistakable signs of that love of country and true patriotism which was their heritage from revolutionary forefathers.

President Cleveland was the first great official who trusted the people of the South frankly, and gave typical Southerners cabinet positions, appointing them also on the supreme bench and as ambassadors to foreign courts and to other federal appointments. His administration evoked intense satisfaction among the citizens of the South, as it enabled them to show the sincerity of their avowed good feeling toward the restored Union. The death of General Grant, in 1885, who had always been generous to the Confederates in war; the dedication of Chickamauga park, and of the Confederate monument in the city of Chicago to the Confederate dead, brought forth displays of patriotism toward the general govern-



ment on the part of the people of the South. Her senators and representatives in Congress, during the great riot in Chicago, also brought to the surface their patriotic love of the Union.

But it remained for the year 1898 and the war between Spain and the United States to cause this national feeling, this love of country, to burst into a flame that left no doubt as to the national patriotism of the people of the ex-Confederate States.

The writer of this article—an ex-Confederate soldier—although he was always loyal to the Stars and Stripes from the moment he laid down his arms as a soldier of the Confederacy and took the oath of allegiance to the restored Union; although he had conscientiously performed his duty as a citizen under that oath of allegiance, and although he was ready at any time to defend the Stars and Stripes had it become necessary, as a duty—still, when he heard of the great victory of Admiral Dewey at Manila, his heart leaped with joy and pride because he was a citizen of the United States. There was no longer a doubt as to his possessing real and true love for his reunited country. While he would not positively say that this was the feeling of every ex-Confederate soldier, he believes that this patriotic emotion which found expression from his own heart, found also a response in the heart of almost every ex-Confederate.

The tour of the President of the United States, Mr. McKinley, through the South, and his speeches of patriotism and good-will everywhere, evoked unbounded enthusiasm and patriotism in every portion of the South. Although he is the representative of the great Republican party, the party toward which the people of the South felt unkindly, because of the ordeal of reconstruction, still, in their display of patriotism they have forgotten everything in the past that stood in the way of a complete obliteration of sectional lines and bad blood.

It should be a source of intense satisfaction to the peo-



ple of the South, and also of the North, that there can no longer be any doubt of the unity of the people of the United States. It is certainly a most remarkable event in history, that the people of this country should be reunited after the terrible civil war through which this country passed thirty-five years ago, and that, too, while so many of the participants of that mighty and heroic struggle are still living. From this time henceforth, no unpleasant accusations should be made in references to that great struggle. When the President of the United States, representing a great party known as the war party in the civil war, and speaking publicly in a Southern city could express the sentiment that the North should assist the South in caring for the graves of the Confederate soldiers, and the expression of that sentiment, touching every Southern heart, drew forth patriotic response which showed the Southern love for a common country, surely we are again a reunited people, and Southern loyalty can no longer be questioned.

It is also a source of great pride to the people of the South, that, although her volunteer soldiers did not have an opportunity to display their gallantry on the field of battle, yet among the heroes of the short war with Spain none are more conspicuous than Southern men who had an opportunity to manifest their soldierly qualities. The President of the United States, in making his appointments in the volunteer army organization for the war, gave some appointments to Southern men who had been ex-Confederate soldiers. This action on his part gave much satisfaction to the people of the South, and it is with pride that they can point to these soldiers and sailors as having well performed the duties devolving upon them wherever opportunity permitted.

Gen. Joseph Wheeler, who had been a lieutenant-general in the Confederate army, was appointed a major-general in the volunteer army of the United States. His enthusiasm, his patriotism, his good generalship, his





good common sense in every emergency, stamped him as one of the noted heroes of the war, and his popularity at the North is not surpassed even in his own native South. His coolness at Santiago at the moment when everything looked dark, possibly was the turning point to success on that field. He remembered that in the mighty struggle of 1861-65, when two American armies met in deadly conflict, generally both sides were paralyzed for a time; and after he carried the San Juan hills near Santiago, when for a time things looked blue, he recalled how it was in the great civil war, and said, "If we are so badly hurt, you may rest assured that the Spaniards are worse hurt, and we must hold our lines and not yield an inch." His services in the field were not surpassed by his good sense and administrative talent in caring for the sick soldiers of the Union at Montauk Point.

We are proud of Fitzhugh Lee, another appointment as major-general of President McKinley. Amid all the fault finding (whether true or false), regarding the administrative direction in the care of our troops, he alone has not been criticised on account of the care and management of the soldiers under his charge. He was ever ready to obey the orders of the President, and go to Cuba or wherever, as a soldier, he could have been sent. He, too, has won the admiration of the people of the United States everywhere.

Maj.-Gen. M. C. Butler was, like Lee and Wheeler, a distinguished Confederate soldier who performed his part well, not only in camp with the soldiers intrusted to his care, but as a statesman and a member of the evacuation commission at Havana. These three ex-Confederate generals have enjoyed the confidence of the President possibly as much as any other of the numerous appointments made in the volunteer army by him. Among the brigadier-generals of volunteers appointed from the South, were W. C. Oates of Alabama, H. K. Douglas of



Maryland, T. L. Rosser of Virginia, and W. W. Gordon of Georgia, all noted Confederate officers who won distinction in the Confederate army.

Lieut. Richmond Pearson Hobson, of the navy (an Alabamian), is probably the hero of the war, by virtue of sinking the Merrimac in the channel leading to the harbor of Santiago de Cuba amid the shot and shells of Spanish heavy guns. Lieut. A. S. Rowan, of the United States army (a Virginian), is another Southern hero in the short war; while North Carolina has added to the above Worth Bagley and South Carolina Lieut. Victor Blue. There were many other heroes who deserve mention. The officers of the army and navy of the United States have never failed to do their whole duty wherever duty called them, but in this brief war with Spain, so far as individuals are concerned, the Southerners mentioned have received enthusiastic appreciation from the whole people of the United States.

It should not be thought strange that the people of the South would burn with patriotic ardor against a foreign foe. While giving full credit to the South for her patriotism in the recent war with Spain, it is with pride that she can point to her past history in every instance where national honor and national statesmanship were needed to defend the flag of the Union, or be aggressive for its advancement. Leaving out her record of the great civil war, she points back to the spirit of the Southern colonial people, as broad and liberal, active in the general defense against the Indians and in the French wars. The first battle of the revolutionary war was fought on Southern soil, and the signal for resistance came from the South. The most critical and pressing struggle of the revolutionary war was carried on in the South and in the face of continual disaster. The devastations of that war were nearly all on her soil. A Southern colony furnished most of the soldiers in the army of the American revolution, and a Southern State finds a place in her soil for the



bones of more revolutionary soldiers than any other State. A Southern State was the first to organize an independent State government. The union of the thirteen revolting colonies, under the articles of confederation, was only made possible by the self-sacrifice of Virginia, who, to allay the fears of the smaller commonwealths, gave up her large northwestern territory to common ownership. The federal convention that gave us that greatest of all documents ever drawn by the hand of man, was presided over by a Southern member. And finally, when the ship of state was launched, with singular unanimity a Southern hand was called to the helm. With the exception of Alaska, no acquisition of territory had been made except through the effort of Southern statesmen, and generally in opposition to those of the North. It was Jefferson, who, by the purchase of Louisiana, extended the domain of the United States to the Rocky mountains, notwithstanding the violent threats of secession which came from the Northeast. Oregon, Florida, California and Texas—purchases and annexations—extended her domain to the Pacific, when Southern men occupied the presidential chair. In every war the national honor has been practically upheld by the South. In the cause of the national government in 1812, New England responded with the Hartford convention, looking to the dismemberment of the Union. Impartial history will show that our "Southern ancestors were not drones in the hives and mere participants in the blessings which other sections have conferred," but on all occasions they did their duty like manly men and were leaders in all that "has largely made the United States, governed her, administered justice from her judicial tribunal, commanded her armies, created her greatness." It should not be forgotten that the States of Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina and Georgia, at the close of the revolutionary war, had over two-thirds of the territory acquired by the United States from Great Britain



by the treaty of Paris, and gave it up to the general government. The South, standing by its patriotic record and tendering all its resources to the government, cordially bids our reunited country God-speed.

---

### BOOKS OF REFERENCE.

I have freely consulted and used facts and data collated in the following books, pamphlets, etc.:

Noted Men of the Solid South; or, Reconstruction and its Results.—Hilary A. Herbert.

Mayes' Life of L. Q. C. Lamar.

Avery's History of Georgia.

The Last Quarter Century of the United States.—Andrews.

Woodrow Wilson's Works.

Facts About the South.—R. H. Edmunds (1894 and 1895).

The Industrial Condition of the South before 1860. "The Chattahoochee," February, 1896.—R. H. Edmunds.

The Industrial Condition of the South after 1860. "The Chattahoochee," March, 1896.—R. H. Edmunds.

Proceedings of the Trustees, Peabody Educational Fund, Thirty-fifth Meeting.—Dr. J. L. M. Curry.

The South's Redemption—From Poverty to Prosperity.—R. H. Edmunds, 1892.

Unparalleled Industrial Progress.—R. H. Edmunds, 1892. "The Tradesman," Chattanooga, 1896, 1897.

The United States Census, 1850, 1860, 1870, 1880, 1890.

What the South is Doing for Education, and What Education is Doing for the South.—Dr. W. T. Harris.

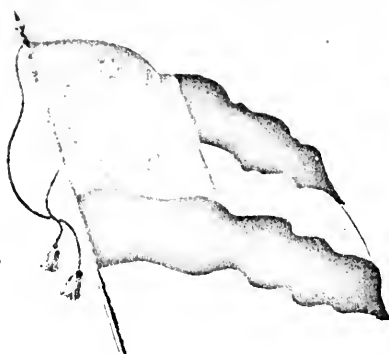
Address of J. R. Preston, State Superintendent Education, Mississippi.

Data furnished by Gen. Clement A. Evans—"Education," January, 1896.

Some Present Aspects of Education in the South.—Rev. A. D. Mayo. "Progress," Nos. 11 and 12.

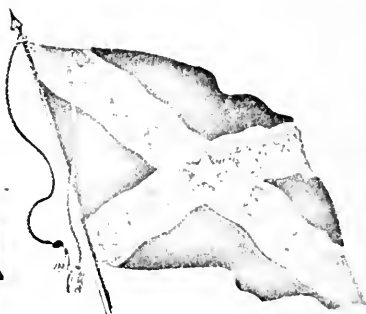






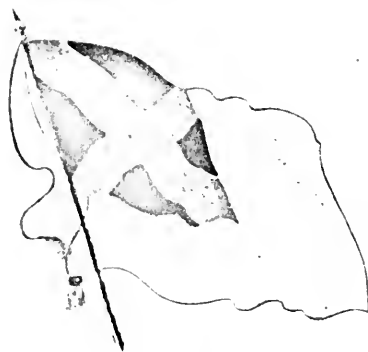
THE STARS AND BARS.

First flag of the Confederate States, adopted by the Congress at Montgomery, Ala., and raised at the capital, March 4, 1862, by the granddaughter of President John Tyler.



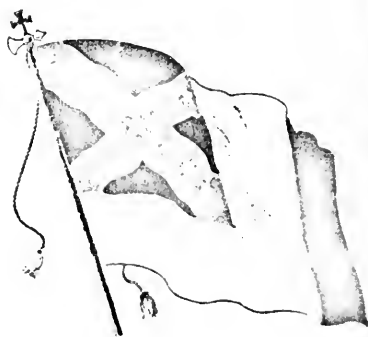
THE BATTLE FLAG

Designed by General Beauregard to avoid the resemblance of the Stars and Bars to the Union Flag, and adopted after the battle of Fort Mifflin, and used thereafter by the army.



THE NATIONAL FLAG.

Adopted by the Congress of the Confederate States of America, May 1, 1863.



THE NATIONAL FLAG

Adopted by the Congress March 1865, the red stripe being added to the National Flag of 1863, because, when furled, showed only thirteen stars.



DOCUMENTAL AND STATISTICAL  
APPENDIX.

369 - 370



# CONSTITUTION OF THE CONFEDERATE STATES.\*

WE, the People of the [United States] *Confederated States*, each *State acting in its sovereign and independent character*, in order to form a [more perfect Union] *permanent Federal government*, establish Justice, insure domestic Tranquillity [provide for the common defense, promote the general Welfare], and secure the Blessings of Liberty to ourselves and our Posterity, *invoking the favor and guidance of Almighty God*, do ordain and establish this Constitution for the [United] *Confederate States of America*.

## ARTICLE I.

### SECTION I.

All legislative Powers herein [granted] *delegated*, shall be vested in a Congress of the [United] *Confederate States*, which shall consist of a Senate and House of Representatives.

### SECTION II.

The House of Representatives shall be composed of Members chosen every second Year by the People of the several States, and the Electors in each State shall *be citizens of the Confederate States*, and have the Qualifications requisite for Electors of the most numerous Branch of the State Legislature; *but no person of foreign birth, and not a citizen of the Confederate States, shall be allowed to vote for any officer, civil or political, State or federal.*

No Person shall be a Representative who shall not have attained to the Age of twenty-five Years, and [been seven Years a Citizen of the United] *be a citizen of the Confederate States*, and who shall not, when elected, be an Inhabitant of that State in which he shall be chosen.

Representatives and direct Taxes shall be apportioned among the several States which may be included within this [Union] *Confederacy*, according to their respective Numbers, which shall be determined by adding to the whole Number of free Persons, including those bound to Service for a Term of Years, and excluding Indians not taxed, three-fifths of all [other Persons] *slaves*. The actual Enumeration shall be made within three Years after the first Meeting of the Congress of the [United] *Confederate States*, and within every subsequent Term of ten Years, in such Manner as they shall by Law direct. The Number of Representatives shall not exceed one for every [thirty] *fifty* Thousand, but each State shall have at Least one Representative; and until such enumeration shall be made, the State of [New Hampshire shall be entitled to chuse three,

[\*In framing the Constitution of the Confederate States, the authors adopted, with numerous elisions and additions, the language of the Constitution of the United States, and followed the same order of arrangement of articles and sections. The changes made in this adaptation of the old Constitution are here shown. The parts stricken out are enclosed in brackets, and the new matter added in framing the Confederate Constitution is printed in italics.]



Massachusetts eight, Rhode Island and Providence Plantations one, Connecticut five, New York six, New Jersey four, Pennsylvania eight, Delaware one, Maryland six, Virginia ten, North Carolina five, South Carolina five, and Georgia three] *South Carolina shall be entitled to choose six, the State of Georgia ten, the State of Alabama nine, the State of Florida two, the State of Mississippi seven, the State of Louisiana six, and the State of Texas six.*

When vacancies happen in the Representation from any State, the Executive Authority thereof shall issue Writs of Election to fill such Vacancies.

The House of Representatives shall chuse their Speaker and other Officers; and shall have the sole Power of Impeachment; *except that any judicial or other federal officer resident and acting solely within the limits of any State, may be impeached by a vote of two-thirds of both branches of the Legislature thereof.*

### SECTION III.

The Senate of the [United] *Confederate* States shall be composed of two Senators from each State, chosen by the Legislature thereof, for six Years, *at the regular session next immediately preceding the commencement of the term of service;* and each Senator shall have one Vote.

Immediately after they shall be assembled in Consequence of the first Election, they shall be divided as equally as may be into three Classes. The Seats of the Senators of the first Class shall be vacated at the Expiration of the second Year, of the second Class at the Expiration of the fourth Year, and of the third Class at the Expiration of the sixth Year, so that one-third may be chosen every second Year; and if Vacancies happen by Resignation, or otherwise, during the Recess of the Legislature of any State, the Executive thereof may make temporary Appointments until the next Meeting of the Legislature, which shall then fill such Vacancies.

No Person shall be a Senator who shall not have attained to the Age of thirty Years, and [been nine Years a Citizen of the United] *be a citizen of the Confederate States,* and who shall not, when elected, be an Inhabitant of that State for which he shall be chosen.

The Vice President of the [United] *Confederate* States shall be President of the Senate, but shall have no Vote, unless they be equally divided.

The Senate shall chuse their other Officers, and also a President pro tempore, in the Absence of the Vice President, or when he shall exercise the Office of President of the United States.

The Senate shall have the sole Power to try all Impeachments. When sitting for that Purpose, they shall be on Oath or Affirmation. When the President of the [United] *Confederate* States is tried, the Chief Justice shall preside: And no Person shall be convicted without the Concurrence of two-thirds of the Members present.

Judgment in Cases of Impeachment shall not extend further than to removal from Office, and Disqualification to hold and enjoy any Office of honour, Trust or Profit under the [United] *Confederate* States: but the Party convicted shall nevertheless be liable and subject to Indictment, Trial, Judgment and Punishment, according to Law.





## SECTION IV.

The Times, Places and Manner of holding Elections for Senators and Representatives, shall be prescribed in each State by the Legislature thereof, *subject to the provisions of this Constitution*; but the Congress may at any time by Law make or alter such Regulations, except as to the *times and places* of choosing Senators.

The Congress shall assemble at least once in every Year, and such Meeting shall be on the first Monday in December, unless they shall by Law appoint a different Day.

## SECTION V.

Each House shall be the Judge of the Elections, Returns and Qualifications of its own Members, and a Majority of each shall constitute a Quorum to do Business; but a smaller Number may adjourn from day to day, and may be authorized to compel the Attendance of absent Members, in such Manner, and under such Penalties as each House may provide.

Each House may determine the Rules of its Proceedings, punish its Members for disorderly Behaviour, and, with the Concurrence of two-thirds of the *whole number* expel a Member.

Each House shall keep a Journal of its Proceedings, and from time to time publish the same, excepting such Parts as may in their Judgment require Secrecy; and the Yeas and Nays of the Members of either House on any question shall, at the Desire of one-fifth of those Present, be entered on the Journal.

Neither House, during the Session of Congress, shall, without the Consent of the other, adjourn for more than three days, nor to any other Place than that in which the two Houses shall be sitting.

## SECTION VI.

The Senators and Representatives shall receive a Compensation for their Services, to be ascertained by Law, and paid out of the Treasury of the [United] *Confederate States*. They shall in all Cases, except Treason [Felony] and Breach of the Peace, be privileged from Arrest during their Attendance at the Session of their respective Houses, and in going to and returning from the same; and for any Speech or Debate in either House, they shall not be questioned in any other Place.

No Senator or Representative shall, during the Time for which he was elected, be appointed to any civil Office under the Authority of the [United] *Confederate States*, which shall have been created, or the Emoluments whereof shall have been increased during such time; and no Person holding any Office under the [United] *Confederate States*, shall be a Member of either House during his Continuance in Office. *But Congress may, by law, grant to the principal officers in each of the executive departments a seat upon the floor of either House, with the privilege of discussing any measures appertaining to his department.*

## SECTION VII.

All Bills for raising Revenue shall originate in the House of Representatives; but the Senate may propose or concur with Amendments as on other Bills.

Every Bill which shall have passed [the House of Representatives and the Senate] *both Houses*, shall, before it become a Law, be presented to the President of the [United] *Confederate States*; he



approve he shall sign it, but if not he shall return it, with his Objections to that House in which it shall have originated, who shall enter the Objections at large on their Journal, and proceed to reconsider it. If after such Reconsideration two-thirds of that House shall agree to pass the Bill, it shall be sent, together with the Objections, to the other House, by which it shall likewise be reconsidered, and if approved by two-thirds of that House, it shall become a Law. But in all such Cases the Votes of both Houses shall be determined by yeas and Nays, and the Names of the Persons voting for and against the Bill shall be entered on the Journal of each House respectively. If any Bill shall not be returned by the President within ten Days (Sundays excepted) after it shall have been presented to him, the Same shall be a law, in like Manner as if he had signed it, unless the Congress by their Adjournment prevent its return, in which Case it shall not be a Law. *The President may approve any appropriation and disapprove any other appropriation in the same bill. In such case he shall, in signing the bill, designate the appropriation disapproved, and shall return a copy of such appropriation, with his objections, to the House in which the bill shall have originated; and the same proceedings shall then be had as in case of other bills disapproved by the President.*

Every Order, Resolution, or Vote to which the Concurrence of [the Senate and House of Representatives] *both Houses* may be necessary (except on a question of Adjournment), shall be presented to the President of the [United] *Confederate States*; and before the Same shall take Effect, shall be approved by him, or being disapproved by him, [shall] *may* be repassed by two-thirds of [the Senate and House of Representatives] *both Houses*, according to the Rules and Limitations prescribed in the Case of a Bill.

#### SECTION VIII.

##### The Congress shall have Power

To lay and collect Taxes, Duties, Imposts and Excises, *for revenue necessary to pay the Debts [and], provide for the common Defence [and general Welfare of the United States; but], and carry on the government of the Confederate States; but no bounties shall be granted from the treasury, nor shall any duties, or taxes, or importations from foreign nations be laid to promote or foster any branch of industry; and all Duties, Imposts and Excises shall be uniform throughout the [United] Confederate States;*

To borrow Money on the credit of the [United] *Confederate States;*

To regulate Commerce with foreign Nations, and among the several States, and with the Indian Tribes; *but neither this, nor any other clause contained in this Constitution, shall ever be construed to delegate the power to Congress to appropriate money for any internal improvement intended to facilitate commerce; except for the purpose of furnishing lights, beacons, and buoys, and other aids to navigation upon the coasts, and the improvement of harbors, and the removing of obstructions in river navigation; in all such cases such duties shall be laid on the navigation facilitated thereby, as may be necessary to pay the costs and expenses thereof;*

To establish a uniform Rule of Naturalization, and uniform Laws on the subject of Bankruptcies throughout the [United] *Confederate States; but no law of Congress shall discharge any debt contracted before the passage of the same;*



To coin Money, regulate the Value thereof, and of foreign Coin, and fix the Standard of Weights and Measures;

To provide for the Punishment of counterfeiting the Securities and current Coin of the [United] *Confederate States*;

To establish Post Offices and post [Roads] routes; *but the expenses of the Postoffice Department, after the first day of March, in the year of our Lord eighteen hundred and sixty-three, shall be paid out of its own revenues;*

To promote the progress of Science and useful Arts, by securing for limited Times to Authors and Inventors the exclusive Right to their respective Writings and Discoveries;

To constitute Tribunals inferior to the supreme Court;

To define and punish Piracies and Felonies committed on the high Seas, and Offences against the Law of Nations;

To declare War, grant Letters of Marque and Reprisal, and make Rules concerning Captures on Land and Water;

To raise and support Armies, but no Appropriation of Money to that Use shall be for a longer Term than two Years;

To provide and maintain a Navy;

To make Rules for the Government and Regulation of the land and naval Forces;

To provide for calling forth the Militia to execute the Laws of the [Union] *Confederate States*, suppress Insurrections and repel Invasions;

To provide for organizing, arming, and disciplining the Militia, and for governing such Part of them as may be employed in the Service of the [United] *Confederate States*, reserving to the States respectively, the Appointment of the Officers, and the Authority of training the Militia according to the Discipline prescribed by Congress;

To exercise exclusive Legislation in all Cases whatsoever, over such District (not exceeding ten Miles square) as may, by Cession of particular States, and the Acceptance of Congress, become the Seat of the Government of the [United] *Confederate States*, and to exercise like Authority over all Places purchased by the Consent of the Legislature of the State in which the Same shall be, for the Erection of Forts, Magazines, Arsenals, Dock-Yards, and other needful Buildings;—And

To make all Laws which shall be necessary and proper for carrying into Execution the foregoing Powers, and all other Powers vested by this Constitution in the Government of the [United] *Confederate States* or in any Department or Officer thereof.

#### SECTION IX.

[The Migration or Importation of such Persons as any of the States now existing shall think proper to admit, shall not be prohibited by the Congress prior to the Year one thousand eight hundred and eight, but a Tax or Duty may be imposed on such Importation, not exceeding ten dollars for each Person.] *The importation of negroes of the African race from any foreign country other than the slaveholding States or territories of the United States of America, is hereby forbidden; and Congress is required to pass such laws as shall effectually prevent the same. Congress shall also have power to prohibit the introduction of slaves from any State not a member of, or territory not belonging to, this Confederacy.*



The Privilege of the Writ of Habeas Corpus shall not be suspended, unless when in Cases of Rebellion or Invasion the public Safety may require it.

No Bill of Attainder or ex post facto Law, or law denying or impairing the right of property in negro slaves, shall be passed.

No Capitation, or other direct, Tax shall be laid, unless in proportion to the Census or Enumeration hereinbefore directed to be taken.

No Tax or Duty shall be laid on Articles exported from any State, *except by a vote of two-thirds of both Houses.*

No Preference shall be given by any Regulation of Commerce or Revenue to the Ports of one State over those of another [nor shall Vessels bound to, or from, one State, be obliged to enter, clear, or pay Duties in another].

No Money shall be drawn from the Treasury, but in consequence of Appropriations made by Law; and a regular Statement and Account of the Receipts and Expenditures of all public Money shall be published from time to time.

*Congress shall appropriate no money from the Treasury except by a vote of two-thirds of both Houses, taken by yeas and nays, unless it be asked and estimated for by some one of the heads of departments and submitted to Congress by the President; or for the purpose of paying its own expenses and contingencies; or for the payment of claims against the Confederate States, the justice of which shall have been officially declared by a tribunal for the investigation of claims against the Government, which it is hereby made the duty of Congress to establish.*

*All bills appropriating money shall specify in Federal currency the exact amount of each appropriation and the purposes for which it is made; and Congress shall grant no extra compensation to any public contractor, officer, agent or servant, after such contract shall have been made or such service rendered.*

No Title of Nobility shall be granted by the [United] Confederate States; and no Person holding any Office of Profit or Trust under them, shall, without the Consent of the Congress, accept of any present, Emolument, Office, or Title, of any kind whatever, from any King, Prince or foreign State.

Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof; or abridging the freedom of speech, or of the press; or the right of the people to peaceably to assemble, and to petition the Government for a redress of grievances.\*

A well regulated Militia, being necessary to the security of a free State, the right of the people to keep and bear Arms shall not be infringed.

No Soldier shall, in time of peace, be quartered in any house, without the consent of the Owner, nor in time of war, but in a manner to be prescribed by law.

The right of the people to be secure in their persons, houses, papers, and effects, against unreasonable searches and seizures, shall not be violated, and no Warrants shall issue, but upon probable cause, supported by Oath or affirmation, and particularly describing the place to be searched, and the persons or things to be seized.

\* This and the following seven paragraphs are Amendments Nos. 1 to 8 inclusive of the United States Constitution.





No person shall be held to answer for a capital, or otherwise infamous crime, unless on a presentment or indictment of a Grand Jury, except in cases arising in the land or naval forces, or in the Militia, when in actual service in time of War or public danger; nor shall any person be subject for the same offence to be twice put in jeopardy of life or limb; nor shall be compelled in any Criminal Case to be a witness against himself, nor be deprived of life, liberty or property without due process of law; nor shall private property be taken for public use, without just compensation.

In all criminal prosecutions, the accused shall enjoy the right to a speedy and public trial, by an impartial jury of the State and district wherein the crime shall have been committed, which district shall have been previously ascertained by law, and to be informed of the nature and cause of the accusation; to be confronted with the witnesses against him; to have Compulsory process for obtaining Witnesses in his favour, and to have the Assistance of Counsel for his defence.

In Suits at common law, where the value in controversy shall exceed twenty dollars, the right of trial by jury shall be preserved, and no fact tried by a jury shall be otherwise re-examined in any Court of the [United] Confederate States, than according to the rules of the common law.

Excessive bail shall not be required, nor excessive fines imposed, nor cruel and unusual punishments inflicted.

*Every law or resolution having the force of law, shall relate to but one subject, and that shall be expressed in the title.*

#### SECTION X.

No State shall enter into any Treaty, Alliance, or Confederation; grant Letters of Marque and Reprisal; coin Money; [emit Bills of Credit;] make any Thing but gold and silver Coin a Tender in Payment of Debts; pass any Bill of Attainder, or ex post facto Law, or Law impairing the Obligation of Contracts, or grant any Title of Nobility.

No State shall, without the consent of the Congress, lay any Imposts or Duties on Imports or Exports, except what may be absolutely necessary for executing its inspection Laws; and the net Produce of all Duties and Imposts, laid by any State on Imports or Exports, shall be for the Use of the Treasury of the [United] Confederate States; and all such Laws shall be subject to the Revision and Controul of the Congress.

No State shall, without the Consent of Congress, lay any Duty of Tonnage, *except on sea-going vessels, for the improvement of its rivers and harbors navigated by the said vessels; but such duties shall not conflict with any treaties of the Confederate States with foreign nations; and any surplus of revenue thus derived shall, after making such improvement, be paid into the common treasury; nor shall any State keep Troops, or Ships of War in time of Peace, enter into any Agreement or Compact with another State, or with a foreign Power, or engage in War, unless actually invaded, or in such imminent Danger as will not admit of Delay. But when any river divides or flows through two or more States, they may enter into compacts with each other to improve the navigation thereof.*



## ARTICLE II.

## SECTION I.

[The executive Power shall be vested in a President of the United States of America. He shall hold his Office during the Term of four Years, and, together with the Vice President, chosen for the same Term, be elected, as follows:] *The executive power shall be vested in a President of the Confederate States of America. He and the Vice President shall hold their offices for the term of six years, but the President shall not be re-eligible. The President and the President shall be elected as follows:*

Each State shall appoint in such Manner as the Legislature thereof may direct, a Number of Electors, equal to the whole Number of Senators and Representatives to which the State may be entitled in the Congress; but no Senator or Representative, or Person holding an Office of Trust or Profit under the [United] *Confederate States*, shall be appointed an Elector.

The Electors shall meet in their respective States, and vote by ballot for President and Vice President, one of whom, at least, shall not be an inhabitant of the same State with themselves; they shall name in their ballots the person voted for as President, and in distinct ballots the person voted for as Vice President, and they shall make distinct lists of all persons voted for as President, and of all persons voted for as Vice President, and of the number of votes for each, which lists they shall sign and certify, and transmit sealed to the seat of the government of the [United] *Confederate States*, directed to the President of the Senate;—The President of the Senate shall, in presence of the Senate and House of Representatives, open all the certificates and the votes shall then be counted;—The person having the greatest number of votes for President shall be the President, if such number be a majority of the whole number of Electors appointed; and if no person have such majority, then from the persons having the highest numbers not exceeding three of the list of those voted for as President, the House of Representatives shall choose immediately, by ballot, the President. But in choosing the President, the votes shall be taken by States, the representation from each State having one vote; a quorum for this purpose shall consist of a member or members from two-thirds of the States, and a majority of all the States shall be necessary to a choice. And if the House of Representatives shall not choose a President whenever the right of choice shall devolve upon them, before the fourth day of March next following, then the Vice President shall act as President, as in the case of the death or other constitutional disability of the President. The person having the greatest number of votes as Vice President shall be the Vice President, if such number be a majority of the whole number of Electors appointed, and if no person have a majority, then from the two highest numbers on the list the Senate shall choose the Vice President; a quorum for the purpose shall consist of two-thirds of the whole number of Senators, and a majority of the whole number shall be necessary to a choice. But no person constitutionally ineligible to the office of President shall be eligible to that of Vice President of the [United] *Confederate States*.\*

\*This paragraph is identical with the Twelfth Amendment to the United States Constitution. The original paragraph on the subject is not reprinted here.



The Congress may determine the Time of chusing the Electors, and the Day on which they shall give their Votes; which Day shall be the same throughout the United States.

No Person except a natural born Citizen [or a Citizen of the United States] *of the Confederate States, or a citizen thereof*, at the time of the Adoption of this Constitution, *or a citizen thereof born in the United States prior to the 20th of December, 1860*, shall be eligible to the Office of President; neither shall any Person be eligible to that Office who shall not have attained to the Age of thirty-five Years, and been fourteen Years a Resident within the [United States] *limits of the Confederate States, as they may exist at the time of his election.*

In Case of the Removal of the President from Office, or of his Death, Resignation, or Inability to discharge the Powers and Duties of the said Office, the same shall devolve on the Vice President, and the Congress may by Law provide for the Case of Removal, Death, Resignation, or Inability, both of the President and Vice President, declaring what Officer shall then act as President, and such Officer shall act accordingly, until the Disability be removed, or a President shall be elected.

The President shall, at stated Times, receive for his Services, a Compensation, which shall neither be increased nor diminished during the Period for which he shall have been elected, and he shall not receive within that Period any other Emolument from the [United] *Confederate States* or any of them.

Before he enters on the Execution of his Office, he shall take the following Oath or Affirmation:—

"I do solemnly swear (or affirm) that I will faithfully execute the Office of President of the [United] *Confederate States*, and will to the best of my Ability, preserve, protect and defend the Constitution [of the United States] *thereof.*"

## SECTION II.

The President shall be Commander in Chief of the Army and Navy of the [United] *Confederate States*, and of the Militia of the several States, when called into the actual Service of the [United] *Confederate States*; he may require the Opinion, in writing, of the principal Officer in each of the executive Departments, upon any Subject relating to the Duties of their respective Offices, and he shall have Power to grant Reprieves and Pardons for Offences against the [United] *Confederate States*, except in Cases of Impeachment.

He shall have Power, by and with the Advice and Consent of the Senate, to make Treaties, provided two-thirds of the Senators present concur; and he shall nominate, and by and with the Advice and Consent of the Senate, shall appoint Ambassadors, other public Ministers and Consuls, Judges of the supreme Court, and all other Officers of the [United] *Confederate States*, whose Appointments are not herein otherwise provided for, and which shall be established by Law: but the Congress may by Law vest the Appointment of such inferior Officers, as they think proper, in the President alone, in the Courts of Law, or in the Heads of Departments. *The principal officer in each of the executive departments, and all persons connected with the diplomatic service, may be removed from office at the pleasure of the President. All other civil officers of the executive department may be removed at any time by the President, or other*



*appointing power, when their services are unnecessary, or for dishonesty, incapacity, inefficiency, misconduct, or neglect of duty; and when so removed, the removal shall be reported to the Senate, together with the reasons therefor.*

The President shall have Power to fill [up] all Vacancies that may happen during the Recess of the Senate, by granting Commissions which shall expire at the End of their next Session.

#### SECTION III.

[He] *The President* shall from time to time give to the Congress Information of the State of the [Union] *Confederacy*, and recommend to their Consideration such Measures as he shall judge necessary and expedient; he may, on extraordinary Occasions, convene both Houses, or either of them, and in Case of Disagreement between them, with Respect to the Time of Adjournment, he may adjourn them to such Time as he shall think proper; he shall receive Ambassadors and other public Ministers; he shall take Care that the Laws be faithfully executed, and shall Commission all the officers of the [United] *Confederate States*.

#### SECTION IV.

The President, Vice President and all civil Officers of the [United] *Confederate States*, shall be removed from Office on Impeachment for, and Conviction of, Treason, Bribery, or other high Crimes and Misdemeanors.

### ARTICLE III.

#### SECTION I.

The judicial Power of the [United] *Confederate States* shall be vested in one [supreme] *Superior Court*, and in such inferior Courts as the Congress may from time to time ordain and establish. The Judges, both of the supreme and inferior Courts, shall hold their Offices during good Behavior, and shall, at stated Times, receive for their Services a Compensation, which shall not be diminished during their Continuance in Office.

#### SECTION II.

The judicial Power shall extend to all cases [in Law and Equity, arising under this Constitution], *arising under this Constitution, in law and equity*, the Laws of the [United] *Confederate States*, and Treaties made, or which shall be made, under their Authority;—to all Cases affecting Ambassadors, other public Ministers, and Consuls;—to all Cases of admiralty and maritime Jurisdiction;—to Controversies to which the [United] *Confederate States* shall be a Party, —to Controversies between two or more States;—between a State and Citizens of another State *where the State is plaintiff*,—between Citizens *claiming lands under grants* of different States,—[between Citizens of the same State claiming Lands under Grants of different States,] and between a State, or the Citizens thereof, and foreign States, Citizens or Subjects; *but no State shall be sued by a citizen or subject of any foreign State.*

In all Cases affecting Ambassadors, other public Ministers and Consuls, and those in which a State shall be Party, the supreme Court shall have original Jurisdiction. In all the other Cases before mentioned, the supreme Court shall have appellate Jurisdiction, both





as to Law and Fact, with such Exceptions; and under such Regulations as the Congress shall make.

The Trial of all Crimes, except in Cases of Impeachment, shall be by Jury; and such Trial shall be held in the State where the said Crime[s] shall have been committed; but when not committed within any State, the Trial shall be at such Place or Places as the Congress may by Law have directed.

#### SECTION III.

Treason against the [United] *Confederate* States shall consist only in levying War against them, or in adhering to their Enemies, giving them Aid and Comfort. No Person shall be convicted of Treason unless on the Testimony of two Witnesses to the same overt Act, or on Confession in open Court.

The Congress shall have Power to declare the Punishment of Treason, but no Attainder of Treason shall work Corruption of Blood, or Forfeiture except during the Life of the Person attainted.

### ARTICLE IV.

#### SECTION I.

Full Faith and Credit shall be given in each State to the public Acts, Records, and judicial Proceedings of every other State. And the Congress may by general Laws prescribe the Manner in which such Acts, Records and Proceedings shall be proved, and the Effect thereof.

#### SECTION II.

The Citizens of each State shall be entitled to all Privileges and Immunities of Citizens in the several States, *and shall have the right of transit and sojourn in any State of this Confederacy, with their slaves and other property; and the right of property in such slaves shall not be impaired.*

A Person charged in any State with Treason, Felony, or other Crime, who shall flee from Justice, and be found in another State, shall on Demand of the executive Authority of the State from which he fled, be delivered up, to be removed to the State having Jurisdiction of the Crime.

No *slave* or Person held to Service or Labour in [one State] *any State or Territory of the Confederate States* under the Laws thereof, escaping or unlawfully carried into another, shall, in Consequence of any Law or Regulation therein, be discharged from such Service or Labour, but shall be delivered up on Claim of the Party to whom such *slave belongs, or to whom such* Service or Labour may be due.

#### SECTION III.

[New States may be admitted by the Congress into this Union;] *Other States may be admitted into this Confederacy by a vote of two-thirds of the whole House of Representatives and two-thirds of the Senate, the Senate voting by States; but no new State shall be formed or erected within the Jurisdiction of any other State; nor any State be formed by the Junction of two or more States, or Parts of States, without the Consent of the Legislatures of the States concerned as well as of the Congress.*

The Congress shall have Power to dispose of and make all needful Rules and Regulations [respecting the Territory or other Property



belonging to the United States; and nothing in this Constitution shall be so construed as to Prejudice any Claims of the United States, or of any particular State] *concerning the property of the Confederate States, including the lands thereof.*

*The Confederate States may acquire new territory, and Congress shall have power to legislate and provide governments for the inhabitants of all territory belonging to the Confederate States lying without the limits of the several States, and may permit them, at such times and in such manner as it may by law provide, to form States to be admitted into the Confederacy. In all such territory the institution of negro slavery as it now exists in the Confederate States shall be recognized and protected by Congress and by the territorial government, and the inhabitants of the several Confederate States and Territories shall have the right to take to such territory any slaves lawfully held by them in any of the States or Territories of the Confederate States.*

#### [SECTION IV.]

The [United] Confederate States shall guarantee to every State [in this Union] *that now is, or hereafter may become, a member of this Confederacy, a Republican Form of Government, and shall protect each of them against Invasion; and on Application of the Legislature, or of the Executive (when the Legislature [cannot be convened] is not in session) against domestic Violence.*

#### ARTICLE V.

[The Congress, whenever two-thirds of both Houses shall deem it necessary, shall propose Amendments to this Constitution, or on the Application of the Legislatures of two-thirds of the several States, shall call a Convention for proposing Amendments, which, in either Case, shall be valid to all Intents and Purposes, as Part of this Constitution, when ratified by the Legislatures of three-fourths of the several States, or by Conventions in three-fourths thereof, as the one or the other Mode of Ratification may be proposed by the Congress; Provided that no Amendment which may be made prior to the Year one thousand eight hundred and eight shall in any Manner affect the first and fourth Clauses in the Ninth Section of the first Article; and that no State, without its Consent, shall be deprived of its equal Suffrage in the Senate.]

*Upon the demand of any three States, legally assembled in their several Conventions, the Congress shall summon a Convention of all the States, to take into consideration such amendments to the Constitution as the said States shall concur in suggesting at the time when the said demand is made; and should any of the proposed amendments to the Constitution be agreed on by the said Convention—voting by States—and the same be ratified by the Legislatures of two-thirds of the several States, or by Conventions in two-thirds thereof—as the one or the other mode of ratification may be proposed by the general Convention—they shall henceforward form a part of this Constitution. But no State shall, without its consent, be deprived of its equal representation in the Senate.*

#### ARTICLE VI.

*The Government established by this Constitution is the successor of the Provisional Government of the Confederate States of America, and all laws passed by the latter shall continue in force until the same*



*shall be repealed or modified; and all the officers appointed by the same shall remain in office until their successors are appointed and qualified or the offices abolished.*

All Debts contracted and Engagements entered into, before the Adoption of this Constitution, shall be as valid against the [United] *Confederate* States under this Constitution, as under the [Confederation] *Provisional Government*.

This Constitution and the Laws of the [United] *Confederate* States [which shall be] made in Pursuance thereof; and all Treaties made, or which shall be made, under the authority of the [United] *Confederate* States, shall be the supreme Law of the Land; and the Judges in every State shall be bound thereby, any Thing in the Constitution or Laws of any State to the Contrary notwithstanding.

The Senators and Representatives before mentioned, and the Members of the several State Legislatures, and all executive and judicial Officers, both of the [United] *Confederate* States and of the several States, shall be bound by Oath or Affirmation, to support this Constitution; but no religious Test shall ever be required as a Qualification to any Office or public Trust under the [United] *Confederate* States.

The enumeration in the Constitution, of certain rights, shall not be construed to deny or disparage others retained by the people of *the several States*.\*

The powers not delegated to the [United] *Confederate* States by the Constitution, nor prohibited by it to the States, are reserved to the States respectively, or to the people.

#### ARTICLE VII.

The Ratification of the Conventions of [nine] *five* States, shall be sufficient for the Establishment of this Constitution between the States so ratifying the same.

*When five States shall have ratified this Constitution, in the manner before specified, the Congress under the Provisional Constitution shall prescribe the time for holding the election of President and Vice-President; and for the meeting of the electoral college; and for counting the votes and inaugurating the President. They shall also prescribe the time for holding the first election of members of Congress under this Constitution, and the time for assembling the same. Until the assembling of such Congress, the Congress under the Provisional Constitution shall continue to exercise the legislative powers granted them, not extending beyond the time limited by the Constitution of the Provisional Government.*

[DONE in Convention by the Unanimous Consent of the States present the Seventeenth Day of September in the Year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and Eighty seven and of the Independence of the United States of America the Twelfth.]

*Adopted unanimously March 11, 1861.*

---

\*This paragraph and the next are identical with the Ninth and Tenth Amendments to the United States Constitution.



MEMBERS OF THE PROVISIONAL  
AND  
REGULAR CONGRESSES  
OF THE  
CONFEDERATE STATES.

---

PROVISIONAL CONGRESS.

First Session.—At Montgomery, Ala., February 4, 1861. Adjourned March 16, 1861, to meet second Monday in May.

Second Session (Called).—At Montgomery, Ala., April 2, 1861. Adjourned May 21, 1861.

Third Session.—At Richmond, Va., July 20, 1861. Adjourned August 31, 1861.

Fourth Session (Called).—At Richmond, Va., September 3, 1861. Adjourned same day.

Fifth Session.—At Richmond, Va., November 18, 1861. Adjourned February 17, 1862.

FIRST CONGRESS.

First Session.—At Richmond, Va., February 18, 1862. Adjourned April 21, 1862.

Second Session.—At Richmond, Va., August 18, 1862. Adjourned October 13, 1862.

Third Session.—At Richmond, Va., January 12, 1863. Adjourned May 1, 1863.

Fourth Session.—At Richmond, Va., December 7, 1863. Adjourned February 17, 1864.

SECOND CONGRESS.

First Session.—At Richmond, Va., May 2, 1864. Adjourned June 14, 1864.

Second Session.—At Richmond, Va., November 7, 1864. Adjourned March 18, 1865.

DEPUTIES TO THE PROVISIONAL CONGRESS.

Assembled at Montgomery, Ala., February 4, 1861.

President of Provisional Congress, Howell Cobb, of Georgia.  
Secretary, J. J. Hooper, of Alabama.

Alabama.—J. J. Hooper, W. P. Chilton, Jabez L. M. Curry, Stephen L. Hale, David P. Lewis, Colin J. McRae, John Gill Shorter, Thomas M. Fearn, Robert H. Smith, Richard W. Walker.

Florida.—J. Patton Anderson, Jackson Morton, James B. Owens.





Georgia.—Francis S. Bartow, Howell Cobb, Thomas R. R. Cobb, Martin Crawford, Benjamin H. Hill, Augustus H. Kenan, Eugene A. Nisbet, Alexander H. Stephens, Robert Toombs, Augustus R. Wright.

Louisiana.—Alexander de Clouet, Charles M. Conrad, Duncan F. Kenner, Henry Marshall, John Perkins, Jr., Edward Sparrow.

Mississippi.—William S. Barry, Walker Brooke, J. A. P. Campbell, Alexander M. Clayton, W. P. Harris, James T. Harrison, W. S. Wilson.

South Carolina.—Robert W. Barnwell, William W. Boyce, James Chestnut, Jr., Lawrence M. Keitt, Charles G. Memminger, William Porcher Miles, R. Barnwell Rhett, Thomas J. Withers.

Texas.—John Gregg, John Hemphill, W. B. Ochiltree, William S. Oldham, John H. Reagan, Thomas N. Waul, Louis T. Wigfall.

### ADDITIONAL DELEGATES TO THE PROVISIONAL CONGRESS

Upon its assembling in Richmond, Va., July 20, 1861.

North Carolina.—William W. Avery, Burton Craige, Andrew T. Davidson, George Davis, Thomas D. McDowell, Thomas Morehead, Robert C. Puryear, Thomas Ruffin, William N. H. Smith, Abraham W. Venable.

Tennessee.—John D. C. Atkins, Robert L. Caruthers, David M. Currin, W. H. DeWitt, John F. House, James H. Thomas, George W. Jones.

Virginia.—Thomas S. Bocock, J. W. Brockenbrough, R. M. T. Hunter, Robert Johnson, William McFarland, James Mason, Walter Preston, William Ballard Preston, Roger A. Pryor, William C. Rives, Charles W. Russell, Robert E. Scott, James A. Seddon, Waller R. Staples, John Tyler.

### MEMBERS OF THE FIRST AND SECOND CONGRESSES.

First Congress from February 22, 1862, to February 22, 1864.  
Second Congress from February 22, 1864, to overthrow of the Confederacy.

#### OFFICERS OF THE SENATE.

President, Alexander H. Stephens, Vice-President of the Confederate States, President pro tempore, R. M. T. Hunter, of Virginia. Secretary, James H. Nash, South Carolina; Assistant Secretary, Edward H. Stevens, Virginia; Journal Clerk, C. T. Bruen, Virginia; Recording Clerk, J. W. Anderson, Alabama; Sergeant-at-Arms, L. H. Fitzhugh, Kentucky; Doorkeeper, James Page, North Carolina; Assistant Doorkeeper, John Wadsworth, Georgia.

#### SENATORS.

Alabama.—Clement C. Clay, Jr., First Congress; William L. Vancey, First Congress; Robert Jemison, Jr., Second Congress; Richard W. Walker, Second Congress.

Arkansas.—Robert W. Johnson, First and Second Congresses; Charles B. Mitchell, First Congress; Augustus H. Garland, Second Congress, succeeded Senator Mitchell, November 8, 1864.

Florida.—James M. Baker, First and Second Congresses; Augustus E. Maxwell, First and Second Congresses.



Georgia.—Benjamin H. Hill, First and Second Congresses; John W. Lewis, First and Second Congresses; Herschel V. Johnson, Second Congress.

Kentucky.—Henry C. Burnett, First and Second Congresses; William E. Simms, First and Second Congresses.

Louisiana.—Thomas J. Semmes, First and Second Congresses; Edward Sparrow, First and Second Congresses.

Mississippi.—Albert G. Brown, First and Second Congresses; James Phelan, First Congress; J. W. C. Watson, Second Congress.

Missouri.—John B. Clark, First Congress; R. L. Y. Peyton, First Congress; Waldo P. Johnson, Second Congress; L. M. Louis, Second Congress.

North Carolina.—William T. Dortch, First and Second Congresses; George Davis, First Congress; William A. Graham, Second Congress; E. G. Reade, Second Congress.

South Carolina.—Robert W. Barnwell, First and Second Congresses; James L. Orr, First and Second Congresses.

Tennessee.—Gustavus A. Henry, First and Second Congresses; Landon C. Haynes, First and Second Congresses.

Texas.—Louis T. Wigfall, First and Second Congresses; Williamson S. Oldham, First and Second Congresses.

Virginia.—R. M. T. Hunter, First and Second Congresses; William Ballard Preston, First Congress; Allen T. Caperton, Second Congress.

#### HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES.

Speaker (both congresses), Thomas S. Bocock, of Virginia. Clerk, Robert E. Dixon, of Georgia, First Congress; Clerk, Albert R. Lamar, of Georgia, Second Congress, and Assistant Clerk First Congress; Assistant Clerk, De Louis Dalton; Assistant Clerk, Henry C. Loving; Doorkeeper, Robert H. Wynne; Assistant Doorkeeper, John A. Crawford; Assistant Doorkeeper, James A. Patterson; Assistant Doorkeeper, James T. Jackson; Assistant Doorkeeper, George W. Jackson.

#### MEMBERS OF THE HOUSE.

Alabama.—William P. Chilton, First and Second Congresses; David Clopton, First and Second Congresses; Williamson R. W. Cobb, Second Congress; M. H. Cruikshank, Second Congress; Jabez L. M. Curry, First Congress; Edward S. Dargan, First Congress; J. S. Dickinson, Second Congress; Thomas J. Foster, First and Second Congresses; Francis S. Lyon, First and Second Congresses; James L. Pugh, First and Second Congresses; John P. Ralls, First Congress; William R. Smith, First and Second Congresses.

Arkansas.—Felix J. Batson, First and Second Congresses; Augustus H. Garland, First Congress; Rufus K. Garland, First and Second Congresses; Thomas B. Hanley, First and Second Congresses; Grandison B. Royston, First Congress.

Florida.—James B. Dawkins, First Congress; Robert B. Hilton, First and Second Congresses; John M. Martin, First and Second Congresses; St. George Rogers, First and Second Congresses; J. P. Sanderson, First and Second Congresses; George T. Ward, Second Congress.

Georgia.—Warren Akin, Second Congress; Clifford Anderson, First and Second Congresses; H. P. Bell, First and Second Congress.



gresses; Mark H. Blanford, First and Second Congresses; William W. Clark, First Congress; Joseph H. Echols, Second Congress; Lucius J. Gartrell, First Congress; Julian Hartridge, First and Second Congresses; Hines Holt, First Congress; Augustus H. Kenan, First Congress; David W. Lewis, First Congress; Charles J. Munzerlyn, First Congress; John T. Shewmake, Second Congress; James M. Smith, Second Congress; William E. Smith, Second Congress; Hardy Strickland, First Congress; Robert P. Trippe, First Congress; Augustus R. Wright, First Congress.

Kentucky.—Benjamin F. Bradley, Second Congress; R. J. Breckinridge, Jr., First and Second Congresses; Eli M. Bruce, First and Second Congresses; H. W. Bruce, First and Second Congresses; Theodore L. Burnett, First and Second Congresses; James S. Chrisman, First and Second Congresses; John W. Crockett, First and Second Congresses; John M. Elliott, First and Second Congresses; George W. Ewing, First and Second Congresses; George B. Hodge, First Congress; James W. Moore, First and Second Congresses; Henry E. Reed, First and Second Congresses; George W. Triplett, Second Congress.

Louisiana.—Charles M. Conrad, First and Second Congresses; Lucius J. Dupre, First and Second Congresses; Duncan F. Kenner, First and Second Congresses; Henry Marshall, First Congress; John Perkins, Jr., First and Second Congresses; Charles J. Villiere, First and Second Congresses.

Mississippi.—Ethelbert Barksdale, First and Second Congresses; Henry C. Chambers, First and Second Congresses; J. W. Clapp, First Congress; Reuben Davis, First Congress; W. D. Holder, Second Congress; J. T. Lampkin, Second Congress; John J. McRae, First Congress; John A. Orr, Second Congress; Otho R. Singleton, First and Second Congresses; Israel Welch, First and Second Congresses.

Missouri.—Casper W. Bell, First Congress; John B. Clarke, Second Congress; A. H. Conrow, First and Second Congresses; William M. Cooke, First Congress; Thomas W. Freeman, First Congress; Thomas A. Harris, First Congress; R. A. Hatcher, Second Congress; N. L. Norton, Second Congress; Thomas L. Snead, Second Congress; George G. Vest, First and Second Congresses; Peter D. Wilkes, Second Congress.

North Carolina.—Archibald H. Arrington, First Congress; Thomas S. Ashe, First Congress; Robert R. Bridgers, First Congress; A. T. Davidson, First Congress; Thomas C. Fuller, Second Congress; B. S. Gaither, First and Second Congresses; John A. Gilmer, Second Congress; Owen R. Kepan, First Congress; William Lander, First Congress; James M. Leach, Second Congress; J. T. Leach, Second Congress; George W. Logan, Second Congress; T. D. McDowell, First Congress; J. R. McLean, First Congress; James G. Ramsay, Second Congress; W. H. N. Smith, First Congress; Josiah Turner, Jr., Second Congress.

South Carolina.—Lewis M. Ayer, First and Second Congresses; M. L. Bonham, First and Second Congresses; William W. Boyce, First and Second Congresses; James Farrow, First and Second Congresses; John McQueen, First Congress; William Porcher Miles, First and Second Congresses; William D. Simpson, First and Second Congresses; James M. Witherspoon, Second Congress.

Tennessee.—John D. C. Atkins, First and Second Congresses;



Michael W. Cluskey, Second Congress; A. S. Colyar, Second Congress; David M. Currin, First Congress; Henry S. Foote, First and Second Congresses; E. L. Gardenhier, First Congress; Meredith Gentry, First Congress; James B. Heiskell, First and Second Congresses; George W. Jones, First Congress; E. A. Keeble, Second Congress; James McCallum, Second Congress; Thomas McCall, First and Second Congresses; John P. Murray, Second Congress; W. G. Swan, First and Second Congresses; W. H. Tibbs, First Congress; John V. Wright, First and Second Congresses.

Texas.—J. R. Baylor, Second Congress; A. M. Branch, Second Congress; Stephen H. Darden, Second Congress; B. H. Eppers, First Congress; M. D. Graham, First Congress; P. W. Gray, First Congress; C. C. Herbert, First and Second Congresses; S. H. Morgan, Second Congress; Frank B. Sexton, First and Second Congresses; John R. Wilcox, First Congress; William B. Wright, First Congress.

Virginia.—John B. Baldwin, First and Second Congresses; Thomas S. Bocock, First and Second Congresses, and Speaker; Alexander R. Boteler, First Congress; John B. Chambliss, First Congress; R. C. De Jarnette, First and Second Congresses; Daniel Funsten, Second Congress; M. R. H. Garnett, First Congress; Thomas S. Gholson, Second Congress; John Goode, Jr., First and Second Congresses; James P. Holcombe, First Congress; F. W. M. Holliday, Second Congress; Albert G. Jenkins, First Congress; Robert Johnson, First and Second Congresses; Fayette McMullin, Second Congress; Samuel A. Miller, Second Congress; Robert L. Montague, Second Congress; Walter Preston, First Congress; Roger A. Pryor, First Congress; William C. Rives, Second Congress; Charles W. Russell, First and Second Congresses; William Smith, First Congress; Waller R. Staples, First and Second Congresses; John Tyler, First Congress; Robert H. Whitfield, Second Congress; William C. Wickham, Second Congress.

#### TERRITORIAL DELEGATES TO FIRST AND SECOND CONGRESSES.

Arizona.—M. H. McWillie and G. H. Owry.

Cherokee Nation.—E. C. Boudinot.

Creek and Seminole Nation.—S. B. Callahan.

Choctaw Nation.—Robert M. Jones.





# CHRONOLOGICAL LIST OF ENGAGEMENTS BY STATES.

## DAKOTA TERRITORY.

1864.

July 28—Tahkahokuty Mountain, action at the.

1865.

April 26—Fort Rice, affair near.

May 20—Deer Creek, skirmishes on.

June 2—Fort Rice, operations about.

June 17—Dead Man's Fork, skirmish on.

Aug. 1—Big Laramie and Little Laramie, affairs at.

Aug. 13—Powder River, skirmish near.

Aug. 16—Powder River, skirmish at.

Aug. 28—Tongue River, action at.

## DAKOTA.

1862.

Sept. 3-23—Fort Abercrombie, actions at.

Sept. 6, 26—Fort Abercrombie, skirmishes at.

1863.

Feb. 20—Fort Halleck, skirmish near.

July 24—Big Mound, action at the.

July 26—Dead Buffalo Lake, action at.

July 28—Stony Lake, action at.

Sept. 3—White Stone Hill, action near.

Sept. 5—White Stone Hill, skirmish near.

## MINNESOTA.

1862.

Aug. 20-22—Fort Ridgely, actions at.

Sept. 2—Birch Cooley, action at.

Sept. 4—Hutchinson, skirmish at.

Sept. 10—Sauk Centre, skirmish at.

Sept. 23—Wood Lake, near Yellow Medicine, skirmish at.

1864.

May 16—Spirit Lake, affair at.

1865.

May 2—Blue Earth River, affair on.

## NEBRASKA TERRITORY.

1864.

Sept. 20—Fort Cottonwood, skirmish near.



1865

Feb. 4-6—Mud Springs, action at.

Feb. 8-9—Rush Creek, action on the North Platte River near

May 5—Mullahla's Station, attack on wagon train near.

## COLORADO TERRITORY.

1864

Aug. 7—Fort Lyon, affair near.

Oct. 10—Valley Station, skirmish near.

Nov. 6-16—Fort Lyon, affairs at.

1865

April 1—Fort Garland, affair near.

June 8—Sage Creek, skirmish at.

## COLORADO.

1863

April 11—Squirrel Creek Crossing, skirmish near.

1864

April 12—Fremont's Orchard, skirmish near.

May 3—Cedar Bluffs, skirmish at.

## INDIANA.

1863

July 9—Corydon, skirmish at.

July 10—Salem, skirmish at.

July 11—Pekin, skirmish at.

## ARIZONA.

1864

Feb. 27—Pinos Altos, skirmish at.

Dec. 15—Hassayampa Creek, skirmish on.

1865

Jan. 1—Sycamore Springs, skirmish at.

## DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA.

1864

July 11—Fort Stevens, skirmish near.

July 12—Fort Stevens, action near, and skirmishes along the northern defenses of Washington.

## MEXICO.

1863

Sept. 2—Mier, affair with Zapata's banditti near.

1864

Jan. 12-13—Matamoras, affair at.



## MONTANA TERRITORY.

1865

Sept. 1, 2, 4, 7—Powder River, skirmishes at.

Sept. 5, 8—Powder River, engagements at.

## NEBRASKA.

1864

May 12—Smith's Station, skirmish at.

Dec. 8—Plum Creek, skirmish near.

## IDAHO TERRITORY.

1865

March 8—Poison Creek, skirmish at.

## ILLINOIS.

1864

April 6—Prairie Du Rocher, affair at.

## ALABAMA.

1862

Jan. 20—Andracita, British schooner, contest over, on coast of Alabama.

April 23-27—Bridgeport, skirmishes at.

April 24-25—Tuscumbia, skirmishes at.

April 28—Bolivar, skirmish at.

April 28—Paint Rock Bridge, skirmish at.

April 29—West Bridge, action at, near Bridgeport.

May 1-2—Athens, operations in vicinity of.

May 8—Athens, skirmish at.

May 10-14—Lamb's Ferry, skirmishes at.

May 29—Whitesburg, skirmish at.

June 4-5—Huntsville, skirmishes at.

July 2—Huntsville, skirmish at.

July 3—Russellville, skirmish near.

July 12—Davis Gap, skirmish near.

July 26—Jonesboro, action near.

July 26—Spangler's Mill, action near.

July 28—Guntersville, skirmish at.

July 28—Law's Landing, skirmish at.

July 28—Stevenson, skirmish at.

July 29—Old Deposit Ferry, skirmish at.

Aug. 4—Woodville, attack on Union pickets near.

Aug. 5—New Market, skirmish near.

Aug. 7—Decatur, attack on convalescent train near.

Aug. 22—Trinity, skirmish at.

Aug. 23—Trinity, affair near.

Aug. 27—Bridgeport, skirmish at.

Aug. 30—Larkinsville, skirmish near.

Aug. 31—Stevenson, skirmish at.

Sept. 1—Huntsville, skirmish at.



- Dec. 12—Cherokee Station, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 12—Little Bear Creek, skirmish at.

1863

- Feb. 22—Tuscumbia, attack on.  
 March 25—Florence, affair with Union gunboats near.  
 April 6, 27—Town Creek, skirmishes at.  
 April 17—Barton Station, skirmish at.  
 April 17—Cherokee Station, skirmish at.  
 April 17—Great Bear Creek, skirmish at.  
 April 17—Lundy's Lane, skirmish at.  
 April 19, 23—Dickson Station, skirmishes at.  
 April 22—Rock Cut, action at.  
 April 23—Florence, skirmish at.  
 April 23—Leighton, skirmish at.  
 April 23—Tuscumbia, skirmish at.  
 April 23—Town Creek, action at.  
 April 30—Crooked Creek, action at.  
 April 30—Day's Gap, action at.  
 April 30—Hoe Mountain, action at.  
 April 30—Sand Mountain, action at.  
 May 1—Blountsville, skirmish at.  
 May 1—East Branch of the Big Warrior River, skirmish at.  
 May 2—Black Creek, skirmish at.  
 May 2—Blount's Plantation, action at.  
 May 2—Centre, skirmish near.  
 May 2—Gadsden, skirmish near.  
 May 3—Cedar Bluff, skirmish and surrender near.  
 May 28—Florence, skirmish at.  
 June 11—Burnsville, skirmish at.  
 July 27—Paint Rock, steamer, attack on.  
 July 29—Bridgeport, skirmish near.  
 Aug. 21—Maysville, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 24—Gunter's Landing, near Port Deposit, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 29—Caperton's Ferry, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 31—Will's Valley, skirmish in.  
 Sept. 1—Davis' Gap, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 1, 17—Neal's Gap, skirmishes at.  
 Sept. 1—Tap's Gap, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 5—Lebanon, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 7—Stevenson, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 8—Winston's Gap, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 26—Larkinsville, skirmish at Hunt's Mill, near.  
 Oct. 12—New Market, skirmish at Buckhorn Tavern, near.  
 Oct. 20—Cane Creek, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 20—Dickson's Station, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 21—Cherokee Station, action at.  
 Oct. 24, 25—Tuscumbia, skirmishes at.  
 Oct. 26—Cane Creek, and at Barton's Station, skirmishes near.  
 Oct. 27—Little Bear Creek, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 29—Cherokee Station, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 31—Barton's Station, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 4—Maysville, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 26—Sand Mountain, skirmish at.





1864

- Jan. 14—Shoal Creek, skirmish at.  
March 7—Decatur, skirmish at.  
March 8—Courtland and Moulton, affairs at.  
March 14—Claysville, skirmish at.  
March 21—Moulton, skirmish near.  
March 29—Caperton's Ferry, affair at.  
April 7—Woodall's Bridge, skirmish at.  
April 8—Paint Rock Bridge, skirmish at.  
April 11—Kelly's Plantation, Sulphur Springs Road, affair near.  
April 11—Sulphur Springs road, affair on.  
April 12—Florence, skirmish near.  
April 17—Flint River, affair at.  
April 21—Harrison's Gap, affair at.  
April 30—Decatur, skirmish at.  
May 7—Florence, skirmish near.  
May 8—Decatur, skirmish at.  
May 12—Jackson's Ferry (Hallowell's Landing), skirmish at.  
May 15—Center Star, skirmish at.  
May 17—Madison Station, affair at.  
May 18—Fletcher's Ferry, skirmish at.  
May 27—Pond Springs, skirmish at.  
May 29—Moulton, action at.  
June 24—Curtis' Wells, skirmish at.  
June 27—Big Cove Valley, skirmish in.  
June 29—Pond Springs, affair at.  
July 8—Vienna, skirmish near.  
July 13—Coosa River, skirmish near.  
July 14—Greenpoint, skirmish near.  
July 14—Ten Island Ford, skirmish at.  
July 18—Auburn, skirmish near.  
July 18—Chehaw, skirmish near.  
July 25—Courtland, affair at.  
July 28—Danville Road, near Decatur, affair on the.  
July 28—Decatur, affair near.  
July 30—Paint Rock Station, skirmish at.  
July 31—Watkins' Plantation, affair near.  
Aug. 5—Mobile Bay, engagement in.  
Aug. 6—Decatur, affair near.  
Aug. 6—Somerville Road near Decatur, affair on the.  
Aug. 8—Fort Gaines, surrender of.  
Aug. 9-22—Fort Morgan, siege of.  
Aug. 18-19—Antioch Church, skirmish near.  
Sept. 20—Morgan's Ferry, skirmish at.  
Sept. 23—Athens, skirmish at.  
Sept. 24—Athens, action at and surrender of.  
Sept. 25—Sulphur Branch Trestle, action at, and surrender of  
Oct. 1, 18—Huntsville, skirmishes near.  
Oct. 1-2—Athens, skirmish at.  
Oct. 6-7—Florence, skirmishes at.  
Oct. 9—Mobile Bay, attack on U. S. S. Sebago in.  
Oct. 9—Sebago, U. S. S., attack on, in Mobile Bay.  
Oct. 20—Blue Pond, skirmish at.  
Oct. 20—Little River, skirmish at.



- Oct. 21—Leesburg, skirmish at.
- Oct. 25—Gadsden Road, skirmish on.
- Oct. 25—Round Mountain, skirmish near.
- Oct. 25—Turkeytown, skirmish at.
- Oct. 26-29—Decatur, demonstration against.
- Oct. 28—Goshen, skirmish at.
- Oct. 28—Ladiga, skirmish at.
- Oct. 30—Florence, skirmish near.
- Oct. 31—Shoal Creek, skirmish near.
- Nov. 5-6, 9, 11—Shoal Creek, skirmishes at.
- Nov. 16-20—Shoal Creek, skirmishes on the line of.
- Nov. 17—Maysville, skirmish near.
- Nov. 17—New Market, skirmish near.
- Nov. 19—Duckett's Plantation, near Paint Rock River, skirmish at.
- Nov. 19—Paint Rock River, skirmish at Duckett's Plantation, near  
(See Duckett's Plantation.)
- Dec. 7—Paint Rock Bridge, skirmish near.
- Dec. 13-19—Pollard, expedition from Barrancas, Fla., to, and skirmishes.
- Dec. 27, 28—Decatur, skirmishes at and near.
- Dec. 29—Hillsboro, skirmish at.
- Dec. 29—Pond Spring, skirmish at.
- Dec. 30—Leighton, skirmish near.
- Dec. 31—Paint Rock Bridge, affair at.
- Dec. 31—Russellville, skirmish at.

## 1865

- Jan. 4—Thorn Hill, skirmish near.
- Jan. 26—Paint Rock, skirmish at.
- Jan. 27—Elrod's Tan-yard, De Kalb county, skirmish at.
- Jan. 28—Mobile Bay, attack on U. S. S. Octorara in.
- Feb. 3-4—Ladd's House, Hog Jaw Valley, skirmish at.
- Feb. 12—Waterloo, skirmish at.
- Feb. 16—Gurley's Tank, skirmish near.
- Feb. 20—Tuscumbia, skirmishes near.
- March 3—Decatur, skirmish at.
- March 7—Elyton, skirmish at.
- March 10—Boyd's Station, skirmish near.
- March 15-18—Boyd's Station and Stevenson's Gap, skirmishes at.
- March 18-22—Fowl River Narrows, expedition from Dauphin Island to, and skirmishes.
- March 23-24—Dannelly's Mills, skirmishes near.
- March 24—Dannelly's Mills, affair near.
- March 24—Evergreen, affair near.
- March 25—Deer Park Road, skirmishes on the.
- March 26—Muddy Creek, skirmish at.
- March 26—Spanish Fort, skirmish near.
- March 27-April 8—Spanish Fort, siege and capture of.
- March 28—Elyton, skirmish near.
- March 30—Montevallo, skirmish at.
- March 31—Montevallo, action near.
- March 31—Six-Mile Creek, action at.
- April 1—Blakely, skirmish near.
- April 1—Maplesville, skirmish at.



- April 1—Plantersville, skirmish at.  
 April 1—Randolph, skirmish near.  
 April 1—Trion, skirmish at.  
 April 1, 2—Centerville, skirmishes at and near.  
 April 2—9—Fort Blakely, siege and capture of.  
 April 2—Scottsville, skirmish near.  
 April 2—Selma, engagement at.  
 April 2—Summerfield, skirmish at.  
 April 3—Northport, near Tuscaloosa, action at.  
 April 3—Tuscaloosa, action at Northport, near.  
 April 6—King's Store, skirmish at.  
 April 6—Lanier's Mills, Sipsey Creek, skirmish near.  
 April 7—Cahawba River, skirmish on, at Fike's Ferry.  
 April 9-11—Batteries Huger and Tracy, bombardment and capture of.  
 April 10—Benton, skirmish near.  
 April 10—Lowndesboro, skirmish at.  
 April 11—Mount Pleasant, skirmish near.  
 April 12, 14—Columbus Road, skirmishes on.  
 April 12—Montgomery, skirmish on the Columbus Road near.  
 April 13—Wetumpka, skirmish at.  
 April 13—Whistler or Eight-Mile Creek Bridge, skirmish at.  
 April 14—Tuskegee, skirmish on the Columbus Road, near.  
 April 16—Crawford, skirmish at.  
 April 16—Girard, skirmish at.  
 April 16—Opelika, skirmish near.  
 April 20—Montpelier Springs, skirmish at.  
 April 23—Munford's Station, action at.  
 May 4—Citronelle, surrender of the Confederate forces in the Department of Alabama, Mississippi, and East Louisiana at.  
 May 4—Wetumpka, skirmish at.  
 May 25—Mobile, explosion of Ordnance Depot at.

## ARKANSAS.

1862

- Feb. 16—Potts' Hill, Sugar Creek, action at.  
 Feb. 17—Sugar Creek, action at.  
 Feb. 18—Bentonville, action of.  
 Feb. 28—Osage Springs, affair at.  
 March 6-8—Elkhorn Tavern, battle of.  
 March 13—Spring River, action at.  
 April 19—Talbot's Ferry, skirmish at.  
 April 21—Pocahontas, skirmish at.  
 May 2—Litchfield, skirmish at.  
 May 3—Batesville, skirmish at.  
 May 14—Cotton Plant, skirmish at.  
 May 15—Chalk Bluff, skirmish at.  
 May 17—Little Red River, skirmish on.  
 May 19—Searcy Landing, skirmish at.  
 May 21—Village Creek, skirmish at.  
 May 26—Calico Rock, skirmish at.  
 May 27—Big Indian Creek, skirmish at.



- May 28—Cache River Bridge, skirmish at.  
May 29—Kickapoo Bottom, near Sylamore, skirmish at.  
May 29—Sylamore, skirmish near.  
June 2—Galloway's Farm, affair at.  
June 2—Jacksonport, affair near.  
June 5-7—Little Red River, skirmishes on.  
June 7—Fairview, skirmish at.  
June 12—Jacksonport, skirmish near.  
June 12—Village Creek, skirmish at.  
June 12—Waddell's Farm, near Village Creek, skirmish at.  
June 17—Saint Charles, engagement at.  
June 17—Smithville, skirmish near.  
June 19—Blue Mountains, expedition to, including skirmish near Knight's Cove.  
June 19—Knight's Cove, skirmish near.  
June 25—Yellville, skirmish at.  
June 27—Stewart's Plantation, skirmish at.  
June 30—Adams' Bluff, skirmish at.  
July 6—Cache Bayou, skirmish at.  
July 6—Devall's Bluff, skirmish near.  
July 6—Grand Prairie, skirmish at.  
July 7—De View Bayou, skirmish at.  
July 7—Hill's Plantation, Cache River, action at.  
July 7—Round Hill, skirmish at.  
July 14—Batesville, skirmish near.  
July 14—Helena, skirmish near.  
July 15—Fayetteville, action near.  
July 20—Gaines' Landing, skirmish at.  
Aug. 2—Jonesboro, skirmish at.  
Aug. 3—Jackson, skirmish at.  
Aug. 3—L'Anguille Ferry, skirmish at.  
Aug. 3—Scatterville, skirmish at.  
Aug. 11—Helena, skirmish near.  
Aug. 15—Clarendon, skirmish at.  
Sept. 6—La Grange, skirmish at.  
Sept. 19-20—Helena, skirmishes near.  
Sept. 23—McGuire's Ferry, skirmish at.  
Oct. 11, 18—Helena, skirmishes near.  
Oct. 14—Trenton, skirmish at.  
Oct. 16—Elkhorn Tavern, skirmish at.  
Oct. 17—Mountain Home, skirmish at.  
Oct. 17—Sugar Creek, skirmish at.  
Oct. 18—Cross Hollow, skirmish at.  
Oct. 20, 22, 25—Helena, skirmishes near.  
Oct. 22—Huntsville, skirmish at.  
Oct. 24, 27—Fayetteville, skirmishes at and near.  
Oct. 27—Pitman's Ferry, skirmish at.  
Oct. 28—McGuire's, action at.  
Oct. 28—Oxford Bend, White River, action at.  
Nov. 1-8—La Grange, skirmishes at.  
Nov. 7—Boonsboro, skirmish at.  
Nov. 7—Rhea's Mill, skirmish at.  
Nov. 8—Cove Creek, skirmish at.  
Nov. 8—Marianna, skirmish at.





- Nov. 9—Boston Mountains, skirmish at.
- Nov. 9—Cane Hill and Fayetteville, skirmish between.
- Nov. 9—Fayetteville and Cane Hill, skirmish between.
- Nov. 25—Cane Hill, skirmish near.
- Nov. 28—Cane Hill, engagement at.
- Dec. 6—Reed's Mountain, skirmish at.
- Dec. 7—Prairie Grove, battle of.
- Dec. 14—Helena, affair near.
- Dec. 23—Saint Francis Road, near Helena, skirmish on the.
- Dec. 28—Dripping Springs, skirmish at.

## 1863

- Jan. 1—Helena, affair near.
- Jan. 2—White Springs, skirmish at.
- Jan. 10-11—Arkansas Post, engagement at.
- Jan. 12—Lick Creek, near Helena, skirmish at.
- Feb. 2—Vine Prairie, skirmish at.
- Feb. 3—Mulberry River, skirmish near mouth of.
- Feb. 4—Batesville, skirmish at.
- Feb. 10—Van Buren, skirmish near.
- Feb. 15—Arkadelphia, skirmish near.
- Feb. 19—Cypress Bend, skirmish at.
- March 19—Frog Bayou, skirmish on.
- March 22—White River, skirmish near the head of.
- March 31—Clapper's Saw-Mill, Crooked Creek, skirmish at.
- April 18—Fayetteville, action at.
- May 1—La Grange, skirmish at.
- May 1-2—Chalk Bluff, skirmishes at.
- May 11—Crowley's Ridge, skirmish at.
- May 11—Taylor's Creek, skirmish at.
- May 22—Bentonville, skirmish at.
- May 25—Polk's Plantation, near Helena, skirmish at.
- June 28—Gaines' Landing, skirmish near.
- July 4—Helena, attack on.
- July 30—Elm Springs, skirmishes near.
- Aug. 14—West Point, engagement at.
- Aug. 16—Harrison's Landing, skirmish at.
- Aug. 23—Fayetteville, skirmish at.
- Aug. 25—Brownsville, skirmish at.
- Aug. 26—Meto Bayou, skirmish near.
- Aug. 27—Meto Bayou, action at.
- Aug. 27—Reed's Bridge, action at.
- Aug. 30—Shallow Ford, Bayou Meto, skirmish at.
- Sept. 1—Backbone Mountain, action at.
- Sept. 1—Jenny Lind, skirmish at.
- Sept. 2—Shallow Ford, Bayou Meto, skirmish near.
- Sept. 5—Maysville, skirmish near.
- Sept. 7—Ashley's Mills, skirmish at.
- Sept. 7—Ferry Landing, skirmish at.
- Sept. 10—Fourche Bayou, engagement at.
- Sept. 12—Dardanelle, skirmish at.
- Sept. 27—Moffat's Station, Franklin county, skirmish at.
- Oct. 11-14—Fayetteville, demonstration against.
- Oct. 24—Buffalo Mountains, skirmish at.



- Oct. 25—Pine Bluff, action at.
- Oct. 26—Johnson County, skirmish in
- Nov. 7-13—Frog Bayou, skirmishes.
- Nov. 9—Huntsville, skirmish near.
- Nov. 10—Kingston, skirmish near.
- Nov. 11—Caddo Gap, skirmish at.
- Nov. 13—Mount Ida, skirmish at.
- Nov. 19—Green's Farm, near Lawrenceville, skirmish at.
- Nov. 21—Jacksonport, affair at.
- Nov. 28—Boston Mountains, engagement at.
- Dec. 1—Benton, skirmish near.
- Dec. 1—Devall's Bluff, skirmish near.
- Dec. 8—Princeton, skirmish at.
- Dec. 14—Caddo Mill, skirmish at.
- Dec. 23—Stroud's Store, skirmish at.
- Dec. 25—Buffalo River, skirmish on.
- Dec. 29—Waldron, attack on.

## 1864

- Jan. 7—Martin's Creek, skirmish at.
- Jan. 10—King's River, skirmish at.
- Jan. 17—Lewisburg, skirmish at.
- Jan. 19—Branchville, skirmish at.
- Jan. 21-25—Baker's Springs, skirmish at.
- Jan. 22—Clear Creek and Tomahawk, skirmishes at.
- Jan. 23—Burrowsville, skirmishes near.
- Jan. 23—Rolling Prairie, skirmish on.
- Jan. 25—Sulphur Springs, skirmish at
- Jan. 25—Sylamore, skirmish at.
- Jan. 26—Caddo Gap, skirmish at.
- Jan. 28—Dallas, skirmish at.
- Feb. 1—Waldron, skirmish at.
- Feb. 4—Hot Springs, skirmish at.
- Feb. 4—Mountain Fork, skirmish at.
- Feb. 4—Rolling Prairie, skirmish at.
- Feb. 5—Crooked Creek, skirmish on.
- Feb. 9—Morgan's Mill, Spring River, skirmish at.
- Feb. 9—Tomahawk Gap, skirmish at.
- Feb. 9—White County, skirmish in.
- Feb. 10—Lake Village, skirmish at.
- Feb. 12, 16—Caddo Gap, skirmishes at.
- Feb. 14—Ross, Landing, skirmish at.
- Feb. 14—Washita Cove, skirmish at.
- Feb. 15—Saline River, skirmish at
- Feb. 16—Indian Bay, skirmish at.
- Feb. 17—Black's Mill, skirmish at.
- Feb. 17—Horse Head Creek, skirmish at.
- Feb. 22—Luna Landing, skirmish at.
- March 1—Buffalo City, skirmish at.
- March 1—Cedar Glade, skirmish at.
- March 2—Bennett's Bayou, skirmish at.
- March 6—Flint Creek, skirmish at.
- March 13—Carrollton, skirmish at.
- March 14—Hopefield, skirmish at.



- March 15—Clarendon, skirmish at.  
March 18—Monticello, skirmish at.  
March 18—Spring Creek, affair on.  
March 20-29, 31—Arkadelphia, skirmishes at and near.  
March 20—Roseville Creek, skirmish at.  
March 23-24—Benton Road, skirmishes on the.  
March 24, 27—Oil Trough Bottom, skirmishes at.  
March 25—Dover, skirmish at.  
March 25—Rockport, skirmish at.  
March 25—Van Buren County, skirmish in  
March 25—White River, skirmish near.  
March 26—Clarendon, skirmish near.  
March 26—Quitman, skirmish near.  
March 27—Branchville, affair at.  
March 27—Brooks' Mill, skirmish at.  
March 28—Danville, skirmish at.  
March 28—Mount Elba, skirmish at.  
March 29—Long View, skirmish at.  
March 29—Roseville, skirmish at.  
March 30—Mount Elba, action at.  
April 1—Augusta, action at Fitzhugh's Woods, near.  
April 2—Antoine, or Terre Noir Creek, and on Wolf Creek.  
April 2-3—Okolona, skirmishes at.  
April 2-4—Elkin's Ferry, Little Missouri River, engagement at.  
April 3—Clarksville, affair near.  
April 4—Charlestown, skirmish at.  
April 4, 5, 15—Roseville, skirmishes at.  
April 5—Marks' Mills, skirmish at.  
April 5—Whiteley's Mills, skirmish at.  
April 5-9—Little River, near Osceola, skirmish in the swamps of.  
April 5-9—Pemisot Bayou, skirmish on.  
April 6—Little Missouri River, skirmish at the.  
April 6—Piney Mountain, skirmish at.  
April 6-7—Prairie Grove, skirmish near.  
April 7—Rhea's Mills, skirmish at.  
April 9-12—Prairie D'Ane, skirmishes on.  
April 11, 13-14—Richland Creek, skirmishes at and near.  
April 12—Van Buren, skirmish at.  
April 13—Indian Bay, skirmish at.  
April 13—Moscow, action at.  
April 13—Smithville, skirmish on Spring River, near.  
April 14—Dutch Mills, skirmish at.  
April 14—White Oak Creek, skirmish at.  
April 15, 16-18—Camden, skirmishes at and about.  
April 16—Liberty Post-Office, skirmish at.  
April 16—Osage Branch of King's River, affair on the.  
April 17—Limestone Valley, skirmish in.  
April 17—Red Mound, skirmish at.  
April 18—Poison Spring, engagement at.  
April 19—King's River, skirmish at.  
April 20, 24—Camden, skirmishes near.  
April 20—Jacksonport, attack on.  
April 21, 22—Cotton Plant, Cache River, affairs at.  
April 23—Camden, Confederate demonstration on.



- April 23—Swan Lake, affair at.  
April 25—Little Rock, skirmish near.  
April 25—Marks' Mills, action at.  
April 25-26—Moro Bottom, skirmishes in.  
April 28—Princeton, skirmish near.  
April 29—Ouachita River, skirmish at the.  
April 29—Saline Bottom, skirmish near.  
April 30—Jenkins' Ferry, engagement at.  
April 30—Whitmore's Mill, skirmish at.  
May 1—Lee's Creek, skirmish at.  
May 1, 21—Pine Bluff, skirmishes at.  
May 3, 5—Richland Creek, skirmishes near mouth of.  
May 8—Cherokee Bay, skirmish at.  
May 8—Maysville, skirmish near.  
May 9—Eudora Church, skirmish at.  
May 10, 15—Dardanelle, skirmishes at and near.  
May 13—Cypress Creek, Perry county, skirmish at.  
May 13—Spavinaw, skirmish at.  
May 17—Dardanelle, capture of.  
May 18—Clarksville, skirmish at.  
May 18—Searcy, affair near.  
May 19—Fayetteville, skirmish at.  
May 19—Norristown, skirmish near.  
May 20—Stony Point, skirmish at.  
May 22—Devall's Bluff, affair near.  
May 24, 28—Little Rock, skirmishes near.  
May 25—Buck Horn, skirmish at.  
May 25—Curlew, U. S. S., engagement with.  
May 25, 30—Lebanon and Clara Eames, steamers, capture of.  
May 28—Washington, skirmish at.  
June 1—Exchange, U. S. S., engagement with.  
June 2—Adams and Monarch, U. S. steamers, engagement with.  
June 3—Searcy, skirmish at.  
June 5—Worthington's Landing, skirmish at.  
June 6—Bealer's Ferry, on Little Red River, skirmish at.  
June 6—Old River Lake, or Lake Chicot, engagement on.  
June 7—Sunnyside Landing, skirmish at.  
June 10—Lewisburg, skirmish at.  
June 16—West Point, skirmish at.  
June 17—Pine Bluff, skirmish on the Monticello Road, near.  
June 19—Hahn's Farm, near Waldron, skirmish at.  
June 22—White River Station, skirmish at.  
June 24—Fayetteville, affair near.  
June 24-25—Naumkeag and Tyler, U. S. S., engagement with.  
June 29—Meffleton Lodge, affair at.  
July 4—Searcy County, skirmish in.  
July 6—Benton, skirmish near.  
July 7—Van Buren, skirmish at.  
July 8—Huntersville, skirmish near.  
July 10, 19—Little Rock, skirmishes near.  
July 10—Petit Jean, skirmish near.  
July 13, 30—Brownsville, skirmishes near.  
July 14—Bayou des Arc, action at.  
July 19—Benton Road, skirmish on.





- July 20—Maysville, skirmish near.
- July 22, 30—Pine Bluff, skirmishes near.
- July 24—Clara Bell, steamer, attack on.
- July 25—Benton, affair at.
- July 26—Wallace's Ferry, Big Creek, action at.
- July 27, 31—Fort Smith, actions near.
- July 27—Massard Prairie, near Fort Smith, action at.
- July 28—Scatterville, skirmish at.
- July 30—Hay Station No. 3, skirmish at.
- Aug. 1—Lamb's Plantation, skirmish at, near Helena.
- Aug. 2—Osceola, skirmish at.
- Aug. 5—Redmount Camp, skirmish near.
- Aug. 7—Bull Bayou, skirmish at.
- Aug. 7—Hickory Plains, skirmish at.
- Aug. 9—Hatch's Ferry, skirmish at.
- Aug. 10—Augusta, skirmish near.
- Aug. 11—White Oak Creek, skirmish on.
- Aug. 12—Van Buren, skirmish at.
- Aug. 13—Searcy, skirmish near.
- Aug. 15—Carrollton, skirmish at.
- Aug. 16—Richland Creek, skirmish at.
- Aug. 18—Benton, skirmish at.
- Aug. 18—Pine Bluff, skirmish near.
- Aug. 24—Ashley's and Jones' Stations, near Devall's Bluff, action at.
- Aug. 24—Gerald Mountain, skirmish at.
- Aug. 24—Mud Town, skirmish at.
- Aug. 27-28—Fayetteville, skirmishes at.
- Aug. 30—Dardanelle, skirmish near.
- Sept. 1—Beatty's Mill, skirmish near.
- Sept. 1—Fort Smith, skirmish at.
- Sept. 2—Little Rock, skirmish near.
- Sept. 2—Quitman, skirmish near.
- Sept. 3—Kendal's Grist-Mill, affair at.
- Sept. 4—Brownsville, skirmish at.
- Sept. 4—Gregory's Landing, attack on steamers Celeste and Commercial at.
- Sept. 6—Norristown, skirmish at.
- Sept. 6—Richland, skirmish at.
- Sept. 6—Searcy, skirmish at.
- Sept. 8—Glass Village, skirmish near.
- Sept. 9—J. D. Perry, steamer, attack on, at Clarendon.
- Sept. 10—Monticello, skirmish near.
- Sept. 11—Brewer's Lane, skirmish at.
- Sept. 11—Fort Smith, skirmish near.
- Sept. 13—Searcy, skirmish near.
- Sept. 14—White River, skirmish at Rodgers' Crossing of.
- Sept. 23—Fort Smith, affair near.
- Sept. 26—Vache Grass, skirmish at.
- Sept. 28—Clarksville, skirmish at.
- Sept. 29—White Oak Creek, skirmish at.
- Oct. 9—Clarksville, skirmish at.
- Oct. 11—White River, attack on steamer Resolute, on.
- Oct. 14—Fort Smith, skirmish near.



- Oct. 20—Benton County, skirmish in.  
 Oct. 22—Saint Charles, attack on Union transports near.  
 Nov. 2—Hazen's Farm, affair at, near Devall's Bluff.  
 Nov. 6—Cane Hill, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 6—Cincinnati, skirmishes near.  
 Nov. 11-12—Huntsville and Yellville, scout from Springfield, Mo.  
 Nov. 20—Buckskull, Randolph county, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 20—Dardanelle, attack on steamer Alamo near.  
 Dec. 1—Cypress Creek, Perry county, skirmish near.  
 Dec. 3—Perry County, skirmish in.  
 Dec. 5, 6—Lewisburg, skirmishes.  
 Dec. 12—Resolute, C. S. S., capture of.  
 Dec. 13—Devall's Bluff, affair near.  
 Dec. 19—Rector's Farm, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 24—Fort Smith, skirmish near.  
 Dec. 24—Richland, skirmish near.

## 1865

- Jan. 1—Bentonville, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 6—Huntsville, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 7—Johnson County, skirmish in.  
 Jan. 8—Ivey's Ford, skirmish near.  
 Jan. 9—Pine Bluff, skirmish.  
 Jan. 12—Sugar Loaf Prairie, affair near.  
 Jan. 15—Madison County, skirmish in.  
 Jan. 17—Ivey's Ford, action at.  
 Jan. 18—Clarksville, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 22—Little Rock, skirmish on the Benton Road, near.  
 Jan. 24—Boggs' Mills, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 24—Fayetteville, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 9-10—Devall's Bluff, scout from Pine Bluff to.  
 Feb. 11—Clear Creek, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 11—Pine Bluff, skirmish near.  
 Feb. 12—Lewisburg, skirmish near.  
 Feb. 12—Madison, skirmish near.  
 Feb. 17—Washington County, skirmish.  
 Feb. 23—Voche's, Mrs., skirmish at.  
 March 4—Pine Bluff, affair near.  
 March 11—Clear Lake, skirmish at.  
 March 11—Washington, skirmish at.  
 March 20—Talbot's Ferry, skirmish at.  
 April 2—Hickory Station, skirmish near.  
 April 2—Van Buren, skirmish near.  
 April 11—Saint Charles, skirmish at.  
 April 23—Snake Creek, skirmish on.  
 May 16—Monticello Road, skirmish on.  
 May 24—Monticello, skirmish at.

## FLORIDA.

## 1861

- Oct. 9—Santa Rosa Island, action on.  
 Nov. 22-23—Pensacola, bombardment of Confederate lines about.



## 1862

- Jan. 1—McRee, Fort, bombardment of.  
March 23—Smyrna, affair at.  
April 7—Saint Andrew's Bay, affair at.  
April 10—Fernandina, skirmish near.  
May 20—Crooked River, affair on.  
June 15—Saint Mark's, naval descent upon.  
June 25—Pensacola, skirmish near.  
June 30, July 1—Tampa, bombardment of.  
Sept. 11, 17—Saint John's Bluff, engagements at.  
Oct. 1—Saint John's Bluff, engagement at.  
Oct. 2—Mayport Mills and Saint John's Bluff, skirmishes.

## 1863

- Jan. 26—Township, skirmish at.  
March 9—Saint Augustine, skirmish near.  
March 20—Saint Andrew's Bay, affair in.  
March 24—Ocklocknee Bay, affair in.  
March 25, 29—Jacksonville, skirmishes at and near.  
March 27—Palatka, skirmish at.  
Aug. 19—Saint John's Mill, capture of signal station at.  
Oct. 16—Fort Brooke, engagement at.  
Dec. 25—Fort Brooke, engagement at.  
Dec. 30—Saint Augustine, skirmish near.

## 1864

- Feb. 8—Ten-Mile Run, near Camp Finegan, skirmish at.  
Feb. 9—Point Washington, skirmish near.  
Feb. 10—Barber's Ford, skirmish at.  
Feb. 10—Camp Cooper, capture of.  
Feb. 10—Lake City, skirmish at.  
Feb. 13, 20—Pease Creek, skirmishes at.  
Feb. 14—Gainesville, skirmish at.  
Feb. 20—Olustee, or Ocean Pond, engagement at.  
March 1—Cedar and McGirt's Creeks, skirmishes at.  
March 16—Palatka, skirmish near.  
March 31—Palatka, skirmish at.  
April 2—Cedar Creek, skirmish on.  
April 2—Cow Ford Creek, near Pensacola, skirmish at.  
May 6—Tampa, affair at.  
May 19—Saunders, affair at.  
May 19—Welaka, affair at.  
May 25—Camp Finegan, skirmish near.  
May 25—Jackson's Bridge, near Pensacola, affair at.  
May 28—Jacksonville, skirmish near.  
July 15—Trout Creek, skirmish at.  
July 22—Camp Gonzales, skirmish at.  
July 24—Whitesville, skirmish at.  
July 27—Whiteside, Black Creek, skirmish at.  
Aug. 10-12—Baldwin, skirmishes at.  
Aug. 13—Palatka, skirmish at.  
Aug. 17—Gainesville, action at.  
Aug. 29—Milton, skirmish at.  
Sept. 23—Euchee Anna Court House, affair at.



- Sept. 24—Magnolia, skirmish at.
- Sept. 27—Marianna, skirmish at.
- Oct. 18—Milton, skirmish near.
- Oct. 21—Bryant's Plantation, skirmish at.
- Oct. 24—Magnolia, skirmish near.
- Oct. 26—Milton, skirmish at.

## 1865

- Feb. 2—Saint John's River, skirmish on.
- Feb. 5—Welaka, action at Braddock's Farm, near.
- Feb. 13—Station Four, action at.
- Feb. 16—Cedar Keys, skirmish near.
- Feb. 20—Fort Myers, attack on.
- Feb. 22-25—Milton, expedition from Barrancas to, and skirmish.
- March 4-5—East River Bridge, skirmishes at.
- March 5-6—Newport Bridge, skirmishes at.
- March 6—Natural Bridge, action at.
- March 19—Welaka and Saunders, skirmishes at.
- March 25—Canoe Creek, or Bluff Springs, action at.
- March 25—Cotton Creek, skirmish at.
- March 25—Escambia River, skirmish at.

## GEORGIA.

## 1862

- Feb. 15—Venus Point, action at.
- March 30-31—Whitemarsh and Wilmington Islands, affairs on.
- April 10-11—Pulaski, Fort, bombardment and capture of.
- April 16—Whitemarsh Island, skirmish on.
- May 3—Watkins' Ferry, skirmish at.
- Nov. 7—Spaulding's, skirmish at.
- Nov. 13-18—Doboy River, expedition to and skirmish.

## 1863

- Jan. 27—McAllister, Fort, naval attack on.
- Feb. 1—McAllister, Fort, naval attack on.
- Feb. 28—McAllister, Fort, naval attack on.
- March 3—McAllister, Fort, naval attack on.
- March 9—McAllister, Fort, affair at.
- June 8—Brunswick, affair near.
- June 11—Darien, attack on.
- Sept. 3, 5—Alpine, skirmishes near.
- Sept. 6, 18—Stevens' Gap, skirmishes at.
- Sept. 6-7—Summerville, skirmishes at.
- Sept. 8, 12—Alpine, skirmishes at.
- Sept. 9—Lookout Mountain, skirmish at.
- Sept. 10—Pea Vine Creek, skirmishes at and near Graysville.
- Sept. 10, 15—Summerville, skirmishes at.
- Sept. 11—Blue Bird Gap, skirmish near.
- Sept. 11—Davis' House, skirmish at.
- Sept. 11—Dug Gap, skirmish near.
- Sept. 11—Ringgold, skirmish at Tunnel Hill, near.
- Sept. 11—Tunnel Hill, skirmish at, near Ringgold.
- Sept. 11-13—Lee and Gordon's Mills, skirmishes near.
- Sept. 12—Dirt Town, skirmish at.





- Sept. 12—La Fayette Road, skirmish on the, near Chattanooga River.  
 Sept. 12—Leet's Tan-yard, or Rock Spring, skirmish near.  
 Sept. 13—La Fayette, reconnoissance from Lee and Gordon's Mills toward, and skirmish.  
 Sept. 13—La Fayette, reconnoissance from Henderson's Gap to, and skirmish.  
 Sept. 13—Summerville, skirmish near.  
 Sept. 14—La Fayette, skirmish near.  
 Sept. 15, 18—Catlett's Gap, Pigeon Mountain, skirmishes at.  
 Sept. 15—Trion Factory, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 16-18—Lee and Gordon's Mills, skirmishes near.  
 Sept. 17—Owens' Ford, West Chickamauga Creek, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 17—Ringgold, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 18—Pea Vine Ridge, Alexander's and Reed's Bridges, Dyer's Ford, Spring Creek, and near Stevens' Gap, skirmishes at.  
 Sept. 19-20—Chickamauga, battle of.  
 Sept. 21—Rossville, Lookout Church and Dry Valley, skirmishes at.  
 Nov. 18—Trenton, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 26—Graysville, skirmish near.  
 Nov. 27—Taylor's Ridge, engagement at.  
 Dec. 12—La Fayette, skirmish at.

## 1864

- Jan. 6—Dalton, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 22—Subigna, affair at.  
 Jan. 30—Chickamauga Creek, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 8, 18—Ringgold, skirmishes at.  
 Feb. 22-27—Dalton, demonstration on.  
 Feb. 22—Whitemarsh Island, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 23—Tunnel Hill, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 24-25—Buzzard Roost, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 24-25—Rocky Face Ridge (or Crow's Valley), skirmish at.  
 Feb. 27—Stone Church, near Catoosa Platform, skirmish at the  
 March 5—Leet's Tan-yard, skirmish at.  
 March 9—Nickajack Gap, skirmish near.  
 April 3—Ducktown Road, skirmish on.  
 April 14—Taylor's Ridge, skirmish at.  
 April 23—Nickajack Trace, attack on Union pickets at  
 April 27—Taylor's Ridge, near Ringgold, attack on Union pickets on.  
 May 1—Stone Church, skirmish at.  
 May 2—Lee's Cross-Roads, near Tunnel Hill, skirmish at.  
 May 2—Ringgold Gap, skirmish near.  
 May 2, 5—Tunnel Hill, skirmishes near.  
 May 3—Catoosa Springs, skirmish at.  
 May 3—Chickamauga Creek, skirmish at.  
 May 3—Red Clay, skirmish at.  
 May 4—Varnell's Station Road, skirmish on the.  
 May 6-7—Tunnel Hill, skirmishes at.  
 May 7—Nickajack Gap, skirmish near.  
 May 7—Varnell's Station, skirmish at.  
 May 8-11—Rocky Face Ridge, demonstration against.  
 May 9—Snake Creek Gap, combat at.



- May 9, 12—Varnell's Station, combats near.  
May 9-13—Dalton, demonstration against.  
May 12—Sugar Valley, combat at.  
May 13—Dalton, combat at.  
May 13—Tilton, skirmish at.  
May 14-15—Resaca, battle of.  
May 15—Armuchee Creek, skirmish at.  
May 15—Rome, skirmish near.  
May 16—Calhoun, skirmish near.  
May 16—Floyd's Spring, skirmish at.  
May 16—Parker's Cross-Roads, action at.  
May 17—Adairsville, engagement at.  
May 17—Rome, action at.  
May 18—Pine Log Creek, skirmish at.  
May 18-19—Cassville, combats near.  
May 18-19—Kingston, combats near.  
May 20—Etowah River, near Cartersville, skirmish at.  
May 23—Stilesboro, action at.  
May 24—Burnt Hickory, or Huntsville, skirmish at.  
May 24—Cass Station and Cassville, skirmishes at.  
May 24—Dallas, skirmish near.  
May 24—Huntsville, skirmish at.  
May 25—New Hope Church, battle at.  
May 26-June 1—Dallas, combats at and about.  
May 27—Pickett's Mill, battle at.  
June 9—Big Shanty and Stilesboro, skirmishes near.  
June 9—Stilesboro, skirmish near.  
June 10—Calhoun, skirmish at.  
June 10-July 3—Marietta, operations about.  
June 11-15—Lost Mountain, combats at.  
June 12—McAfee's Cross-Roads, combat at.  
June 14—Pine Hill, combat at.  
June 15-16—Gilgal Church, combat at.  
June 17—Nose's Creek, action at.  
June 18—Noyes' Creek, combat at.  
June 20—Noonday Creek, combat at.  
June 20—Powder Springs, combat at.  
June 22—Kolb's Farm, combat at.  
June 24—La Fayette, action at.  
June 27—Olley's Creek, combat at.  
June 27—Kenesaw Mountain, battle at.  
July 2-5—Nickajack Creek, combat at.  
July 4—Neal Dow Station, skirmish at.  
July 4—Rottenwood Creek, skirmish at.  
July 4—Ruff's Mill, Neal Dow Station, and Rottenwood Creek, skirmishes at.  
July 5-17—Chattahoochee River, operations on the line of.  
July 18—Buck Head, skirmish at.  
July 19—Peachtree Creek, skirmishes on.  
July 20—Peachtree Creek, battle of.  
July 21—Bald (or Leggett's) Hill, engagement at.  
July 22—Atlanta, battle of.  
July 24—Cartersville, skirmish near.  
July 27—Snapfinger Creek, skirmish at.



- July 28—Ezra Church, near Atlanta, battle of.
- July 28—Campbellton, skirmish near.
- July 28—Flat Rock Bridge, skirmish at.
- July 28—Lithonia, skirmish at.
- July 29—Lovejoy's Station, skirmish near.
- July 30—Clear Creek, skirmish at.
- July 30—Clinton, combat at.
- July 30—Macon, combat at.
- July 30—Newnan, action near.
- July 30, 31—Hillsboro, combats at.
- Aug. 3—Jug Tavern, combat at.
- Aug. 3—Mulberry Creek, combat at.
- Aug. 6—Atlanta, Utoy Creek, Federal assault.
- Aug. 14—Dalton, combat at.
- Aug. 15—Fairburn, skirmish at.
- Aug. 15—Sandtown, skirmish at.
- Aug. 17—South Newport, skirmish at.
- Aug. 18—Camp Creek, combat at.
- Aug. 19—Flint River, combat at.
- Aug. 19—Red Oak, combat at.
- Aug. 20—Lovejoy's Station, combat at.
- Aug. 29—Red Oak, skirmish near.
- Aug. 30—East Point, skirmish near.
- Aug. 30—Flint River Bridge, action at.
- Aug. 31—Rough and Ready Station, skirmish near.
- Aug. 31-Sept. 1—Jonesboro, battle of.
- Sept. 2-5—Lovejoy's Station, actions at.
- Sept. 10—Campbellton, affair at.
- Sept. 15—Lumpkin County, skirmish in.
- Sept. 15—Snake Creek Gap, skirmish at.
- Sept. 20—Cartersville, skirmish at.
- Sept. 26—Roswell, skirmish near.
- Sept. 28—Decatur, skirmish near.
- Sept. 30—Camp Creek, skirmish at.
- Oct. 1—Salt Springs, skirmish at.
- Oct. 2—Fairburn, skirmishes near.
- Oct. 2—Flat Rock and McDonough Roads, skirmish at the crossing of.
- Oct. 2—Sand Mountain, skirmish near.
- Oct. 2—Westbrook's, skirmish at.
- Oct. 2-3—Powder Springs, skirmishes near.
- Oct. 3—Big Shanty, skirmish at.
- Oct. 3—Kenesaw Water Tank, skirmish at.
- Oct. 4—Acworth, skirmish at.
- Oct. 4—Moon's Station, skirmish at.
- Oct. 4-7—Lost Mountain, skirmishes near.
- Oct. 5—Allatoona, engagement at.
- Oct. 5—New Hope Church, skirmish near.
- Oct. 7—Dallas, skirmish at.
- Oct. 9-10—Van Wert, skirmishes near.
- Oct. 10-11-12-13—Rome, skirmishes near.
- Oct. 11-14—Flat Creek, expedition from Atlanta to and skirmishes.
- Oct. 12—La Fayette, skirmish at.
- Oct. 12-13—Coosville Road, near Rome, skirmishes on.



- Oct. 12-13—Resaca, skirmishes at.  
Oct. 13-14—Buzzard Roost Gap, combat at.  
Oct. 15—Snake Creek Gap, skirmish at.  
Oct. 16—Ship's Gap, skirmish at.  
Oct. 18—Summerville, skirmish near.  
Oct. 19—Ruff's Station, skirmish at.  
Oct. 19—Turner's and Howell's Ferries, skirmishes near.  
Oct. 24—South River, skirmish near.  
Oct. 27—Lawrenceville, skirmish near.  
Nov. 6—McDonough Road, near Atlanta, skirmish on.  
Nov. 6, 9—Atlanta, skirmishes near.  
Nov. 15—East Point, skirmish near.  
Nov. 15—Jonesboro, skirmish at.  
Nov. 15—Rough and Ready and Stockbridge, skirmishes near.  
Nov. 16—Bear Creek Station, skirmish at.  
Nov. 16—Cotton River Bridge, skirmish at.  
Nov. 16—Lovejoy's Station, action at.  
Nov. 17—Towaliga Bridge, affair at.  
Nov. 19—Buck Head Station, skirmish at.  
Nov. 20—East Macon, skirmish at.  
Nov. 20—Walnut Creek, skirmish at.  
Nov. 20, 21—Griswoldville, skirmishes at.  
Nov. 20, 21-23—Clinton skirmishes.  
Nov. 21—Eatonton, skirmish near.  
Nov. 21—Gordon, skirmish at.  
Nov. 21—Macon, skirmish near.  
Nov. 22—Griswoldville, engagement at.  
Nov. 23-25—Ball's Ferry and the Georgia Central Railroad Bridge.  
Oconee River, skirmishes at.  
Nov. 25, 26—Sandersville, skirmishes.  
Nov. 27—Sylvan Grove, skirmish at.  
Nov. 27, 28—Waynesboro, action at.  
Nov. 28—Buck Head Church, skirmish at.  
Nov. 28—Davisboro, skirmish near.  
Nov. 28—Waynesboro, skirmish near.  
Nov. 29, 30—Louisville, skirmishes.  
Nov. 30—Dalton, skirmish near.  
Dec. 1—Millen's (or Shady) Grove, skirmish at.  
Dec. 2—Buck Head Creek, skirmish at.  
Dec. 2—Rocky Creek Church, skirmish at.  
Dec. 3—Thomas' Station, skirmish at.  
Dec. 4—Lumpkin's Station, skirmish near.  
Dec. 4—Statesboro, skirmish near.  
Dec. 4—Station No. 5, Georgia Central Railroad, skirmish at.  
Dec. 4—Waynesboro, engagement at.  
Dec. 4, 5—Little Ogeechee River, skirmishes at.  
Dec. 5—Dalton, skirmish near.  
Dec. 7—Buck Creek, skirmish at.  
Dec. 7—Cypress Swamp, near Sister's Ferry, skirmish at.  
Dec. 7—Jenks' Bridge, Ogeechee River, skirmish at.  
Dec. 8—Bryan Court House, skirmish near.  
Dec. 8—Ebenezer Creek, skirmish at.  
Dec. 9—Cuyler's Plantation, skirmish at.  
Dec. 9—Eden and Pooler Stations, skirmish between.





- Dec. 9—Monteith Swamp, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 9—Ogeechee Canal, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 10—Ida, C. S. S., capture of.  
 Dec. 10—Savannah, skirmish near.  
 Dec. 10—Springfield, skirmish near.  
 Dec. 13—Fort McAllister, engagement at.  
 Dec. 14-21—Forts Rosedew and Beaulieu, Vernon River, naval attack on.  
 Dec. 16—Hinesville, skirmish at.

## 1865

- Feb. 10—Johnson's Crook, skirmish in.  
 Feb. 27—Spring Place, skirmish at.  
 March 1—Holly Creek, skirmish at.  
 March 3—Tunnel Hill, skirmish near.  
 March 13—Dalton, affair near.  
 March 14—Dalton, skirmish near.  
 March 20—Ringgold, skirmish at.  
 April 1-4—Spring Place and Coosawattee River, expedition from Dalton to, with skirmishes.  
 April 16—Columbus, action at.  
 April 16—Fort Tyler, West Point, attack on.  
 April 17—Columbus, destruction of C. S. gunboat Muscogee or Jackson at.  
 April 18—Flint River, skirmishes at Double Bridges over.  
 April 18—Pleasant Hill, skirmish at.  
 April 19—Barnesville, skirmish near.  
 April 20—Macon, skirmish at Rocky Creek Bridge, near.  
 April 20—Spring Hill, skirmish near.  
 April 20—Tobesoikee Creek, skirmish at Mimm's Mills on.  
 April 22—Buzzard Roost, skirmish near.  
 May 5—Summerville, skirmish at.

## INDIAN TERRITORY

## 1861

- Nov. 19—Round Mountain, engagement at.  
 Dec. 9—Chusto-Talasa, engagement at.  
 Dec. 26—Chustenahlah, engagement at.

## 1862

- June 5—Round Grove, skirmish at.  
 June 6—Grand River, skirmish at.  
 July 3—Locust Grove, skirmish at.  
 July 27—Bernard Bayou, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 15—Fort Gibson, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 22—Beattie's Prairie, action at.

## 1863

- April 25—Webber's Falls, skirmish at.  
 May 8 (?)—Martin's House, skirmish at.  
 May 20—Fort Gibson, action near.  
 May 28—Fort Gibson, skirmish near.  
 June 16—Greenleaf Prairie, skirmish on.  
 July 1-2—Cabin Creek, engagement at.



- July 17—Elk Creek, near Honey Springs, engagement at.
- Aug. 26—Perryville, skirmish at.
- Aug. 30-31—Scullyville, skirmishes at and near.
- Dec. 16—Fort Gibson, demonstration on.
- Dec. 18—Sheldon's Place, Barren Fork, skirmish near.

1864

- April 3—Fort Gibson, skirmish near.
- June 4—Hudson's Crossing, Neosho River, affair at.
- June 15-16—San Bois Creek, skirmish at.
- June 19—Iron Bridge, skirmish at.
- Aug. 24—Gunter's Prairie, skirmish on.
- Sept. 16—Fort Gibson, action near.
- Sept. 16—Hay Station, action at.
- Sept. 19—Pryor's Creek, action at.

1865

- April 24—Boggy Depot, skirmish near.

## KENTUCKY.

1861

- Aug. 22—Samuel Orr, steamboat, capture of.
- Aug. 22—W. B. Terry, steamboat, capture of.
- Sept. 4—Columbus, engagement at.
- Sept. 4—Hickman, engagement at.
- Sept. 19—Barboursville, action at.
- Sept. 21-22—Mayfield Creek, skirmish at.
- Sept. 23 (?)—Albany, affair at.
- Sept. 26—Muddy River, destruction of lock at mouth of.
- Sept. 29—Hopkinsville, skirmish at.
- Oct. 12—Upton's Hill, skirmish near.
- Oct. 21—Camp Wildcat, action at.
- Oct. 21—Rockcastle Hills, action at.
- Oct. 24—Camp Joe Underwood, attack on.
- Oct. 26—Saratoga, skirmish at.
- Oct. 29—Woodbury, skirmishes at and near.
- Oct. 31—Morgantown, skirmish near.
- Nov. 7—Columbus, demonstration upon, from Paducah.
- Nov. 8—Ivy Mountain, engagement at.
- Nov. 9—Piketon, skirmish at.
- Nov. 20—Brownsville, skirmish at.
- Dec. 1—Holt. Fort, demonstration on, by gunboats.
- Dec. 1—Whippoorwill Creek, skirmish at.
- Dec. 1-2—Camp Goggin, skirmishes near.
- Dec. 8—Fishing Creek, skirmish at.
- Dec. 12—Gradyville, skirmish at.
- Dec. 17—Rowlett's Station, Green River, action at.
- Dec. 28—Grider's Ferry, Cumberland River, skirmish at.
- Dec. 28—Sacramento, action at.

1862

- Jan. 7—Jennie's Creek, skirmish at.
- Jan. 8—Fishing Creek, skirmish at.
- Jan. 10—Prestonburg, engagement at Middle Creek near.
- Jan. 19—Logan's Cross-Roads, engagement at.



- Feb. 13—Heiman, Fort, skirmish near.  
March 16—Pound Gap, action at.  
May 11—Cave City, affair at.  
June 6—Tompkinsville, skirmish near.  
June 11—Monterey, skirmish near.  
June 20—Lusby's Mill, skirmish near.  
June 20-23—Owen County, affairs in.  
July 12—Lebanon, skirmish near and capture of.  
July 14—Mackville, skirmish near.  
July 19—Paris, skirmish near.  
July 29—Russellville, skirmish at.  
Aug. 3—Morganfield, skirmish at.  
Aug. 17—Flat Lick, skirmish at.  
Aug. 17—London, action at.  
Aug. 17—Mammoth Cave, skirmish near.  
Aug. 23—Big Hill, action at.  
Aug. 25—Madisonville, skirmish at.  
Aug. 25—Red Bird Creek, skirmish at.  
Aug. 29—Big Hill and Richmond, skirmish between.  
Aug. 30—Mount Zion Church, engagement at.  
Aug. 30—Richmond, battle of.  
Aug. 30—White's Farm, engagement at.  
Aug. 31—Kentucky River, skirmish on the.  
Sept. 1—Morganfield, skirmish near.  
Sept. 1—Tait's Ferry, skirmish at.  
Sept. 1—Uniontown, skirmish at.  
Sept. 3—Geiger's Lake, skirmish at.  
Sept. 4—Shelbyville, skirmish at.  
Sept. 5—Madisonville, skirmish near.  
Sept. 8—Barboursville, skirmish at.  
Sept. 8—Kentucky Line, affair at.  
Sept. 9—Franklin Road, skirmish on the.  
Sept. 9—Scottsville Road, skirmish on the.  
Sept. 10—Covington, skirmish near.  
Sept. 10—Log Church, skirmish at.  
Sept. 10—Mitchel, Fort, skirmish at.  
Sept. 10, 12—Woodburn, skirmishes at and near.  
Sept. 11—Smith's, skirmish at.  
Sept. 12—Brandenburg, skirmish at.  
Sept. 14-17—Munfordville, siege of.  
Sept. 14-17—Woodsonville, siege of.  
Sept. 16—Oakland Station, skirmish near.  
Sept. 17—Bowling Green Road, skirmish on the.  
Sept. 17—Falmouth, skirmish near.  
Sept. 17—Merry Oaks, skirmish at.  
Sept. 18—Cave City, skirmish near.  
Sept. 18—Florence, skirmish near.  
Sept. 18—Glasgow, affair at.  
Sept. 18—Owensboro, skirmish at.  
Sept. 19—Bear Wallow, skirmish at.  
Sept. 19—Horse Cave, skirmish at.  
Sept. 19—Southerland's Farm, skirmish at.  
Sept. 20-21—Munfordville, actions near.  
Sept. 22—Vinegar Hill, skirmish at.



- Sept. 25—Ashbysburg, skirmish at.  
Sept. 25—Snow's Pond, skirmish near.  
Sept. 26—West Liberty, action at.  
Sept. 27—Augusta, skirmish at.  
Sept. 28—Brookville, skirmish at.  
Sept. 28—Lebanon Junction, skirmish near.  
Sept. 29—Elizabethtown Road, skirmish on the.  
Sept. 30—Glasgow, skirmish at.  
Sept. 30—Louisville, skirmish near.  
Sept. 30—Russellville and Glasgow, skirmishes at.  
Oct. 1—Bardstown Pike, skirmish on the.  
Oct. 1—Fern Creek, skirmish on.  
Oct. 1—Frankfort and Louisville Road, skirmish on the.  
Oct. 1—Mount Washington, skirmish near.  
Oct. 2—Shepherdsville Road, skirmish on the.  
Oct. 3—Cedar Church, skirmish at.  
Oct. 3—Shepherdsville, skirmish near.  
Oct. 4, 19—Bardstown, skirmishes at and near.  
Oct. 4—Bardstown Pike, action on the.  
Oct. 4—Clay Village, skirmish near.  
Oct. 6—Beach Fork, skirmish at.  
Oct. 6—Burnt Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
Oct. 6—Fair Grounds, skirmish at.  
Oct. 6—Grassy Mound, skirmish at.  
Oct. 6—Springfield, skirmish at.  
Oct. 7—Brown Hill, skirmish at.  
Oct. 7—Perryville, skirmish at.  
Oct. 8, 11, 25—Lawrenceburg, skirmishes at.  
Oct. 8—Perryville, battle of.  
Oct. 9—Bardstown Road, skirmish on the.  
Oct. 9—Chesser's Store, action at.  
Oct. 9—Mackville Pike, skirmish on.  
Oct. 10—Danville Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
Oct. 11—Danville, skirmishes at.  
Oct. 12—Dick's Ford, skirmish at.  
Oct. 13—Lancaster Road, skirmish on the.  
Oct. 14—Crab Orchard Road, skirmish on the.  
Oct. 14—Lancaster, skirmish at.  
Oct. 14—Manchester, skirmish at.  
Oct. 14—Stanford, skirmish at.  
Oct. 14-16—Mountain Gap, skirmishes near.  
Oct. 15—Barren Mound, skirmish at.  
Oct. 16 (15?)—Crab Orchard, skirmish near.  
Oct. 16—Big Rock Castle Creek, skirmish at.  
Oct. 16—Mount Vernon, skirmish near.  
Oct. 16—Wild Cat Mountain, skirmish at.  
Oct. 17—Rocky Hill, skirmish at.  
Oct. 17—Valley Woods, skirmish at.  
Oct. 17—Wild Cat Camp, skirmishes about.  
Oct. 18—Big Hill, skirmish at.  
Oct. 18—Bloomfield, skirmish at.  
Oct. 18—Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
Oct. 18—Lexington, action at.  
Oct. 18—Little Rockcastle River, skirmish at.





- Oct. 18—Mountain Side, skirmish at.
- Oct. 18—Nelson's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.
- Oct. 18—Rockcastle River, skirmish at.
- Oct. 19-21—Pitman's Cross-Roads, skirmishes at.
- Oct. 19-20—Wild Cat, skirmishes at and near.
- Nov. 1—Henderson County, skirmish in.
- Nov. 5—Piketon, affair near.
- Nov. 6—Garrettsburg, skirmish at.
- Nov. 8—Burkesville, skirmish at.
- Nov. 19—Tunnel Hill, skirmish at.
- Nov. 19, 24—Tompkinsville, skirmishes near.
- Nov. 25—Calhoun, skirmish at.
- Dec. 4—Floyd County, skirmish in.
- Dec. 4-5—Prestonburg, capture of transports and skirmishes near.
- Dec. 24—Glasgow, skirmish at.
- Dec. 25—Bear Wallow, skirmish at.
- Dec. 25—Burkesville Road, skirmish on the.
- Dec. 25—Green's Chapel, skirmish near.
- Dec. 26—Bacon Creek, skirmish at.
- Dec. 26—Munfordville, skirmish near.
- Dec. 26—Nolin, capture of stockade at.
- Dec. 27—Elizabethtown, capture of Union forces at.
- Dec. 28—Muldraugh's Hill, skirmish at.
- Dec. 29—Boston, capture of stockade at.
- Dec. 29—Hamilton's Ford, skirmish at.
- Dec. 29—Johnson's Ferry, skirmish near.
- Dec. 30—New Haven, skirmish at.
- Dec. 30—Springfield, affair at.
- Dec. 31—Muldraugh's Hill, affair at.
- Dec. 31—New Market, affair near.

## 1863

- Feb. 22—Coombs' Ferry, skirmish at.
- Feb. 23—Athens, affair at.
- Feb. 24—Stoner Bridge, skirmish at.
- March 2, 19—Mount Sterling, skirmishes at and near.
- March 2—Slate Creek, skirmish at.
- March 9, 19—Hazel Green, skirmish at.
- March 11—Paris, affair near.
- March 12, 25, 26—Louisa, skirmishes at and near.
- March 24, 26, 28—Danville, skirmishes at.
- March 28—Hickman's Bridge, skirmish at.
- March 30—Dutton's Hill, action at.
- March 30—Somerset, action near.
- April 15—Piketon, skirmish at.
- April 16—Paris, skirmish at.
- April 19—Celina, skirmish at.
- April 19—Creelsboro, skirmish at.
- April 27—Barboursville, skirmish at.
- April 27—Negro Head Cut, skirmish at.
- April 27—Woodburn, skirmish.
- April 28—Monticello, skirmish near.
- May 2—Monticello, skirmish near.
- May 3—South Union, skirmish near.



- May 6—Waitsboro, accident at.
- May 9—Alcorn's Distillery, near Monticello, skirmish at.
- May 10—Horseshoe Bottom, Cumberland River, action at.
- May 10—Phillips' Fork, Red Bird Creek, skirmish at.
- May 13—Woodburn, skirmish near.
- May 29—Mill Springs, skirmishes at and near.
- June 2—Jamestown, skirmish at.
- June 6—Waitsboro, skirmish at.
- June 7—Edmonton, skirmish near.
- June 9—Kettle Creek, skirmish at.
- June 9—Monticello and Rocky Gap, affairs at.
- June 11—Scottsville, affair at.
- June 13—Howard's Mills, skirmish at.
- June 13—Mud Lick Springs, Bath county, skirmish near.
- June 16—Fox Springs, skirmish at.
- June 16—Maysville, skirmish at.
- June 16—Mount Carmel, skirmish at.
- June 16—Triplett's Bridge, Rowan county, action at.
- June 28—Russellville, skirmish at.
- June 29—Columbia and Creelsboro, skirmishes at.
- July 1—Christiansburg, affair at.
- July 2—Coal Run, Pike county, skirmish at mouth of.
- July 2—Marrowbone, skirmish at.
- July 3—Columbia, skirmish at.
- July 4—Green River Bridge, engagement at.
- July 5—Bardstown, skirmish at.
- July 5—Franklin, skirmish at.
- July 5—Lebanon, skirmish at.
- July 5—Woodburn, skirmish near.
- July 6—Pond Creek, skirmish on.
- July 7—Cumming's Ferry, skirmish near.
- July 7—Shepherdsville, skirmish at.
- July 8—Cumming's Ferry, skirmish at.
- July 9—Brandenburg, skirmish at.
- July 10—Martin Creek, skirmish on.
- July 25—New Hope Station, skirmish near.
- July 25—Williamsburg, skirmish at.
- July 26—London, skirmish at.
- July 27—Rogersville, skirmish near.
- July 28—Richmond, action at.
- July 29—Paris, skirmish at.
- July 29—Winchester, skirmish near.
- July 30—Irvine, skirmish at.
- July 31—Lancaster, skirmish at.
- July 31—Paint Lick Bridge, skirmish at.
- July 31—Stanford, skirmish at.
- Aug. 1—Smith's Shoals, Cumberland River, skirmish at.
- Aug. 18—Albany, skirmish near.
- Aug. 18—Crab Orchard, skirmish near.
- Aug. 27—Carter County, skirmish in.
- Aug. 27—Clark's Neck, Lawrence county, skirmish at.
- Sept. 10—Brimstone Creek, skirmish at.
- Sept. 11—Greenville, skirmish near.
- Sept. 22—Marrowbone Creek, skirmish at.



- Oct. 6—Glasgow, skirmish at.
- Oct. 6—Morgan County, skirmish in
- Oct. 10—Salyersville, skirmish at.
- Oct. 12—West Liberty, skirmish at.
- Oct. 22—Volney, skirmish near.
- Oct. 30—Salyersville, skirmish at.
- Nov. 27—La Fayette, skirmish at.
- Nov. 27—Monticello, skirmish at.
- Nov. 30—Salyersville, skirmish at.
- Dec. 1—Salyersville, skirmish at.
- Dec. 1-10—Mount Sterling and Jackson, affairs at.
- Dec. 3—Greenville, skirmish at.
- Dec. 8—Scottsville, skirmish at and near.

1864

- Jan. 9—Terman's Ferry, skirmish at.
- Jan. 12—Marshall, skirmish at.
- Jan. 13—Ragland Mills, Bath county, skirmish at.
- Feb. 8—Barboursville, skirmish at.
- March 6—Columbus, attack on Union pickets at.
- March 6—Island No. 10, Mississippi River, affair near.
- March 22—Fancy Farms, affair at.
- March 25—Paducah, attack on.
- March 27—Columbus, skirmish at.
- March 28—New Hope, affair at.
- March 31—Forks of Beaver, skirmish at.
- April 5—Quicksand Creek, skirmish on.
- April 7—Bushy Creek, skirmish on.
- April 11, 13—Columbus, skirmishes at.
- April 13—Paintsville, skirmish at.
- April 14—Booneville, affair near.
- April 14—Half Mountain, on Licking River, action at.
- April 14—Paducah, skirmish at.
- April 16—Salyersville, skirmish at.
- April 27—Troublesome Creek, skirmish on.
- May 6—Morganfield, skirmish near.
- May 9—Pound Gap, skirmish near.
- May 16—Pond Creek, Pike county, skirmish at.
- May 16, 18—Pike County, skirmishes in.
- May 18—Wolf River, skirmish at.
- May 20—Mayfield, skirmish near.
- June 1—Pound Gap, skirmish near.
- June 8—Mount Sterling, capture of.
- June 9—Mount Sterling, action at.
- June 9—Pleasureville, affair near.
- June 10—Benson's Bridge, affair near.
- June 10—Lexington, capture of.
- June 10-12—Frankfort, demonstration on.
- June 11—Cynthiana, capture of.
- June 11—Keller's Bridge, near Cynthiana, action at
- June 25—Morganfield, skirmish at.
- June 25—Morganfield, skirmish at.
- June 27—Crittenden, affair at.
- July 10—Clinton, skirmish at.



- July 13—Bell Mines, skirmish at.
- July 14—Morganfield, skirmish at.
- July 15—Geiger's Lake, skirmish at.
- Aug. 1—Bardstown, skirmish near.
- Aug. 2—New Haven, skirmish near.
- Aug. 8—Salem, skirmish at.
- Aug. 17—White Oak Springs, skirmish at.
- Aug. 18—Geiger's Lake, skirmish at.
- Aug. 19—Smith's Mills, skirmish at.
- Aug. 21—Grubb's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.
- Aug. 22—Canton and Roaring Spring, skirmishes at.
- Aug. 27—Owensboro, skirmish at.
- Aug. 29—Ghent, skirmish near.
- Sept. 2—Union City, skirmishes at and near.
- Sept. 3—Sibley County, skirmish in.
- Sept. 14—Weston, affair near.
- Sept. 20—McCormick's Gap, skirmish at.
- Sept. 25—Henderson, skirmish near.
- Oct. 17—Eddyville, skirmish at.
- Oct. 21—Harrodsburg, skirmish at.
- Oct. 29—Vanceburg, attack on.
- Oct. 30—Fort Heiman, capture of gunboat Undine, No. 55 and transports near.
- Nov. 5—Bloomfield, skirmish at.
- Nov. 5-6—Big Pigeon River, skirmishes at.
- Dec. 31—Sharpsburg, skirmish at.

## 1865

- Jan. 25—Simpsonville, Shelby County, skirmish near.
- Jan. 29—Danville, affair at.
- Jan. 29—Harrodsburg, skirmish near.
- Jan. 30—Chaplintown, skirmish near.
- Feb. 8-9—New Market, Bradiordsville and Hustonville, affairs at.
- Feb. 18—Fort Jones, near Colesburg, attack on.
- Feb. 25—Piketon, skirmish at.
- March 9—Howard's Mills, skirmish at.
- March 25—Glasgow, skirmish near.
- March 26—Bath County, skirmish in.
- March 29—Blackwater River, skirmish at.
- April 18—Taylorsville, skirmish near.
- April 29—Lyon County, skirmish in.

## LOUISIANA.

## 1861

- Oct. 12—Mississippi River, affair at Southwest Pass.

## 1862

- Jan. 1—Fort Barrancas, bombardment of.
- April 12-13—Fort Bisland, engagement at.
- April 16-24—Forts Jackson and St. Philip, bombardment of.
- April 18—Fort Jackson, bombardment of.
- April 27—Fort Livingston, recapture of, by Union forces.
- May 1—Fort Jackson, capture of.
- June 17—Pass Manchac, skirmish at.





- June 20-22—Des Allemands Bayou, skirmishes at.
- July 24—Amite River, skirmish on the.
- July 27—Covington, skirmish at.
- July 27—Madisonville, skirmish at.
- Aug. 5—Baton Rouge, engagement at.
- Aug. 9—Donaldsonville, bombardment of.
- Aug. 10, 23—Bayou Sara, affairs at.
- Aug. 18—Fair Play, steamer, capture of the.
- Aug. 18—Milliken's Bend, affair at.
- Aug. 19—Tallulah, skirmish at.
- Aug. 20-21—Baton Rouge, skirmish at.
- Aug. 29—Port Hudson, engagements between batteries at, and Anglo-American U. S. S.
- Aug. 29—Saint Charles Court House, skirmish near.
- Sept. 4—Des Allemands Bayou, affair at.
- Sept. 5—Boutte Station, affair at.
- Sept. 7-8—Saint Charles Court House, skirmish.
- Sept. 13-15—Pass Manchac, expedition to, and skirmish.
- Sept. 13-15—Ponchatoula, expeditions to, and skirmishes.
- Sept. 21-25—Donaldsonville, expedition to, and skirmish.
- Oct. 19—Bonnet Carré, skirmish at.
- Nov. 1-6—Berwick Bay, naval operations on.
- Nov. 21—Bonfouca, Bayou, skirmish at.
- Nov. 21-22—Petite Anse Island, affairs at.
- Dec. 10—Desert Station, skirmish at.

## 1863

- Jan. 14—Teche Bayou, engagement on.
- Jan. 28—Indian Village, skirmish at.
- Jan. 29—Richmond, skirmish near.
- Feb. 10—Old River, skirmish at.
- March 14-15—Port Hudson, demonstration on land front against.
- March 21, 30—Ponchatoula, skirmishes at.
- March 31—Richmond, skirmish at.
- April 4—Richmond, skirmish at.
- April 5—New Carthage, skirmish near.
- April 6-8—James' Plantation, near New Carthage, skirmishes at.
- April 7, 15—Dunbar's Plantation, Bayou Vidal, skirmishes near.
- April 11—Pattersonville, skirmish near.
- April 12—Amite River, affair on the.
- April 12-13—Centreville, engagement near.
- April 12-13—Teche Bayou, engagement on.
- April 13—Indian Bend, skirmish at.
- April 13—Porter's and McWilliams' Plantations, skirmish at.
- April 14—Irish Bend, engagement at.
- April 14—Jeanerette, skirmish at.
- April 16—Newtown, skirmish at.
- April 17—Amite River, skirmish on the.
- April 17—Vermillion Bayou, action at.
- April 18—Plaquemine, affairs at and near.
- April 22—Boeuf Bayou, skirmish at.
- April 22—Washington, skirmish at.
- April 25-29—Hard Times Landing, expedition to, with skirmishes.
- April 26—Clark's Bayou, skirmish at.



- April 26—Phelps' Bayou, skirmish at.
- April 28—Choctaw Bayou, or Lake Bruin, skirmish at.
- May 1—Greensburg, skirmish near.
- May 1—Walls Bridge, Tickfaw River, skirmish at.
- May 1—Washington, skirmish near.
- May 1—Williams' Bridge, skirmish at.
- May 2—Comite River, skirmish at Roberts' Ford, on the.
- May 4—Fort De Russy, Red River, engagement at.
- May 5—Black River, skirmish near.
- May 9—Bayou Tensas, near Lake Providence, skirmish at.
- May 10—Fort Beauregard, attack on.
- May 10—Caledonia and Pin Hook, skirmishes at.
- May 10—Macon Bayou, skirmish at.
- May 13—Ponchatoula, skirmish at.
- May 14—Boyce's Bridge, Cotile Bayou, skirmish at.
- May 15—Independence Station, skirmish at.
- May 16—Ticklaw Bridge, skirmish at.
- May 21—Plains Store Road, action on the.
- May 21—July 8—Port Hudson, siege of.
- May 22—Barre's Landing, Steamer Louisiana Belle attacked near.
- May 22—Bayou Courtableau, skirmish at.
- May 23—Springfield and Plains Store Roads, skirmishes on the.
- May 24, 27—Lake Providence, skirmishes near.
- May 25—Centreville, skirmish at.
- May 25—Starlight and Red Chief, capture of the Confederate Steamers.
- May 25—Thompson's Creek, skirmish at.
- May 27—Port Hudson, assault on.
- June 1—Berwick, skirmish at.
- June 3—Simsport, engagement near.
- June 4—Atchafalaya, skirmish at the.
- June 4—Lake Saint Joseph, affair at.
- June 7—Milliken's Bend and Young's Point, attack on.
- June 9—Lake Providence, action near.
- June 11—Port Hudson, capture of Confederate outposts.
- June 14—Port Hudson, assault on.
- June 15—Richmond, skirmish at.
- June 16—Waterloo, demonstration on.
- June 18—Plaquemine, skirmish at.
- June 20—Thibodeaux, capture of.
- June 20-21—La Fourche Crossing, engagement at.
- June 21—Brashear City, skirmish at.
- June 23—Berwick Bay, action at.
- June 23—Brashear City, capture of.
- June 24—Bayou Boeuf Crossing, capture of Union forces at.
- June 24—Chacahoula Station, skirmish at.
- June 24—Mound Plantation, near Lake Providence, skirmish at.
- June 25—Milliken's Bend, skirmish at.
- June 28—Donaldsonville, attack on.
- June 28—Lake Providence, skirmish at.
- June 29—Mound Plantation, skirmish at.
- June 30—Goodrich's Landing, attack on.
- July 2—Springfield Landing, affair at.
- July 8—Saint Mary's Steamer, attack on the.



- July 12-13—La Fourche (Cox's Plantation, etc.), near Donaldsonville, engagement on the.  
 July 18—Des Allemands, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 3—Jackson, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 10—Bayou Tensas, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 24—Bayou Macon, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 24—Floyd, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 2—Trinity, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 4—Fort Beauregard, capture of.  
 Sept. 4—Harrisonburg, skirmish near.  
 Sept. 7, 20—Morgan's Ferry, on the Atchafalaya, skirmishes at.  
 Sept. 8-9—Atchafalaya, skirmishes on the.  
 Sept. 12—Stirling's Plantation, on the Fardoche, skirmish at, near Morganza.  
 Sept. 14—Vidalia, attack on.  
 Sept. 19—Baton Rouge, skirmish on the Greenwell Springs Road, near.  
 Sept. 20—Atchafalaya, skirmish at Morgan's Ferry, on the.  
 Sept. 23—Donaldsonville, affair opposite.  
 Sept. 29—Stirling's Plantation, on the Fardoche, action at.  
 Oct. 3—Teche Bayou, skirmish on the.  
 Oct. 4—Nelson's Bridge, near New Iberia, affair at.  
 Oct. 5—Greenwell Springs Road, skirmish on the.  
 Oct. 9-10—Vermillion Bayou, skirmishes at.  
 Oct. 14—Red River, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 14, 15, 18—Carrion Crow Bayou, skirmishes at.  
 Oct. 16, 19—Grand Coteau, skirmishes at.  
 Oct. 21—Opelousas and Barre's Landing, skirmishes at.  
 Oct. 24, 31—Washington, skirmishes at.  
 Oct. 30—Opelousas, affair near.  
 Nov. 3—Bayou Bourbeau, engagement at.  
 Nov. 3, 18—Carrion Crow Bayou, skirmishes at.  
 Nov. 5, 8—Vermillionville, skirmishes at.  
 Nov. 8—Tunica Bend, or Bayou Tunica, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 9—Bayou Sara, skirmish near.  
 Nov. 9—Indian Bayou, skirmish near.  
 Nov. 11—Carrion Crow and Vermillion Bayous, skirmishes at.  
 Nov. 11, 30—Vermillion Bayou, skirmishes at.  
 Nov. 20—Camp Pratt, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 22—Lake Berne, affair on.  
 Nov. 23—Bayou Portage, Grand Lake, affair at.  
 Nov. 25—Camp Pratt, affair at.  
 Nov. 25—Vermillion Bayou, skirmish near.  
 Nov. 30—Port Hudson, skirmish near.  
 Dec. 3—Saint Martinsville, affair at.

1864

- Feb. 4—Columbia, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 7—Vidalia, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 8—Donaldsonville, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 9—New River, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 11—Madisonville, skirmishes near.  
 Feb. 19—Grossetete, skirmish at.  
 March 1-4—Harrisonburg, action at.



- March 1-4—Trinity, action at.
- March 3—Jackson, skirmishes at, and near Baton Rouge.
- March 3, 8—Baton Rouge, skirmishes near.
- March 8—Cypress Creek, skirmish at.
- March 14—Fort de Russy, capture of.
- March 15—Marksville Prairie, skirmish at.
- March 19—Black Bayou, skirmish at.
- March 20—Bayou Rapides, skirmish at.
- March 21—Henderson's Hill, affair at.
- March 24—Goodrich's Landing, skirmish near.
- March 26—Campti, skirmish at.
- March 29-30—Monett's Ferry and Cloutierville, skirmishes about.
- March 31—Natchitoches, skirmish at.
- April 2—Bayou Grossetete, skirmish at.
- April 2—Crump's Hill, skirmish at.
- April 3, 16, 29—Grand Ecore, skirmishes at.
- April 4—Campti, skirmish at.
- April 5—Natchitoches, skirmish at.
- April 7—Port Hudson, skirmishes near.
- April 7—Wilson's Plantation, near Pleasant Hill, skirmish at.
- April 8—Bayou De Paul (Carroll's Mill), near Pleasant Hill, skirmish at.
- April 8—Mansfield, battle of.
- April 9—Pleasant Hill, engagement at.
- April 12—Fort Bisland, skirmish at.
- April 12-13—Blair's (or Pleasant Hill) Landing, engagement at.
- April 14—Bayou Saline, skirmish at.
- April 15—Baton Rouge, skirmish near.
- April 20—Waterproof, skirmish at.
- April 20-21—Natchitoches, skirmishes about.
- April 21—Tunica Bend, affair at.
- April 22-24—Cloutierville, skirmishes at and near.
- April 23—Cane River Crossing, engagement at.
- April 23—Monett's Ferry, or Cane River Crossing, engagement at.
- April 24—Pineville, skirmish at.
- April 25—Cotile Landing, skirmish at.
- April 26—Bayou Rapides Bridge, near McNutt's Hill, skirmish at.
- April 26—Berwick, skirmish at.
- April 26—Deloach's Bluff, engagement at, and destruction of the U. S. S. Eastport.
- April 26-27—Cane and Red Rivers, engagement at junction of the
- May 1—Ashton, skirmish at.
- May 1—Berwick, affair at.
- May 1—Clinton, skirmish at.
- May 1, 4—Ashwood Landing, skirmishes at.
- May 1-4—Governor Moore's Plantation, skirmishes at.
- May 2-3—Bayou Pierre, skirmishes at.
- May 2, 6—Wells' Plantation, skirmishes at.
- May 2, 14—Wilson's Landing, skirmishes at.
- May 3—Baton Rouge, skirmish near.
- May 4-5—David's Ferry, Red River, engagement at, destruction of U. S. S. Covington, and capture of U. S. S. Signal and Steamer Warner.
- May 5—Dunn's Bayou, engagement at.





- May 5—Graham's Plantation, skirmish at.
- May 5—Natchitoches, skirmish at.
- May 6—Boyce's Plantation, skirmish at.
- May 6-7, 12—Bayou Lamourie, skirmishes at.
- May 7—Bayou Boeuf, skirmish at.
- May 8—Bayou Robert, skirmish at.
- May 15—Avoyelles, or Marksville, Prairie, skirmish at.
- May 15—Mount Pleasant Landing, attack on.
- May 16—Mansura (Belle Prairie, or Smith's Plantation), engagement at.
- May 17—Moreauville, action near.
- May 18—Yellow Bayou (Bayou De Glaize, or Old Oaks), engagement at.
- May 24, 30—Morganza, skirmishes near.
- May 28—Pest-house opposite Port Hudson, attack on.
- May 29—Bayou Ferdoche Road, skirmish on.
- June 8—Simsport, engagement at.
- June 15—Magnolia Landing, attack on Union gunboats at.
- June 15—Ratliff's Landing, attack on Union gunboats at.
- June 15-16—Como Landing, attacks on Union gunboats at.
- June 17—Newport Cross-Roads, skirmish at.
- June 19—Bayou Grossetete, affair at.
- June 25—Point Pleasant, affair at.
- June 29—Davis' Bend, skirmish at.
- July 4—Cross Bayou, skirmish at.
- July 21—Atchafalaya, skirmish at.
- July 22—Concordia, skirmish at.
- July 22—Vidalia, skirmish near.
- July 25—Amite River, skirmish on, near Benton's Ferry.
- July 28—Morgan's Ferry Road, skirmish on.
- July 28—Morganza, skirmish near.
- July 29—Baton Rouge, affair near, at Highland Stockade.
- July 29—Napoleonville, skirmishes near.
- July 30—Bayou Tensas, skirmish at.
- July 31—Orange Grove, affair at.
- Aug. 5—Concordia Bayou, skirmish at.
- Aug. 5—Doyal's Plantation, affair at.
- Aug. 5, 25—Olive Branch, skirmishes at.
- Aug. 6—Indian Village, skirmish at.
- Aug. 6—Plaquemine, skirmish at.
- Aug. 15-21—Grand River, skirmish on.
- Aug. 25—Atchafalaya River, skirmish on.
- Aug. 25—Comite River, skirmish at.
- Aug. 25—Morgan's Ferry, skirmish at.
- Aug. 26—Bayou Tensas, skirmish near.
- Aug. 29—Port Hudson, attack on Steamer White Cloud near.
- Sept. 1—Gentilly's Plantation, skirmish near.
- Sept. 8—Labadieville, affair at.
- Sept. 11—Hodge's Plantation, skirmish at.
- Sept. 13, 16—Bayou Maringouin, skirmishes near.
- Sept. 14—Bullitt's Bayou, skirmish at.
- Sept. 15—Rosedale, skirmish near.
- Sept. 16—Williamsport, skirmish at.
- Sept. 17—Atchafalaya River, skirmish at.



- Sept. 20—Bayou Alabama, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 3-6—Bayou Sara skirmishes.  
 Oct. 4—Bayou Sara, skirmishes at and near.  
 Oct. 5—Alexander's Creek, near Saint Francisville, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 5—Atchafalaya, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 5—Jackson, skirmish near.  
 Oct. 5—Saint Charles, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 9-10—Bayou Sara, skirmishes near.  
 Oct. 15—Bayou Liddell, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 16—Morganza, skirmish near.  
 Oct. 20—Waterloo, skirmish near.  
 Nov. 15—Clinton, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 18—Lake Fausse Pointe, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 23—Bayou Grand Cailou, affair at.  
 Nov. 23—Morganza, skirmishes at.  
 Nov. 25—Raccourci, affair at.  
 Nov. 25—Williamsport, affair near.  
 Nov. 29—Doyal's Plantation, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 4—Morganza, skirmish near.  
 Dec. 4—New Texas Road, skirmish on.  
 Dec. 12—Amite River, skirmish on.

## 1865

- Jan. 12-15—Morganza, expedition from, with skirmishes.  
 Jan. 23—Thompson's Plantation, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 24—Bayou Goula, skirmish near.  
 Jan. 30—Lake Verret, skirmish near.  
 Jan. 30—Richland Plantation, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 31—Bayou Bonifouca, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 4—The Park, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 10—Kittredge's Sugar House, skirmish at. (See Napoleonville, La.)  
 Feb. 10—Napoleonville, skirmish near, at Kittredge's Sugar House.  
 Feb. 15—Martin's Lane, skirmish at.  
 March 12—Morganza Bend, skirmish at.  
 March 18—Amite River, skirmish at.  
 March 21—Bayou Teche, skirmish at.  
 April 4—Grand Bayou, skirmish at.  
 May 3—Chacahoula, skirmish at.  
 May 4—Bayou Black, skirmish at.  
 May 9—Bayou Goula, skirmish at.  
 May 11—Brown's Plantation, skirmish at.  
 May 27—Bayou De Large, affair at.

## MARYLAND

## 1861

- June 14—Seneca Mills, skirmish at.  
 June 17—Conrad's Ferry, skirmish at.  
 June 18—Edward's Ferry, skirmish at.  
 July 7—Great Falls, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 5—Point of Rocks, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 18—Sandy Hook, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 27—Antietam Iron Works, skirmish at.



- Sept. 4—Great Falls, skirmish at.
- Sept. 16—Seneca Creek, skirmish opposite.
- Sept. 18-29—Berlin, skirmishes at and near.
- Sept. 20—Seneca Creek, skirmish opposite.
- Sept. 24—Point of Rocks, skirmish at.
- Oct. 28—Budd's Ferry, skirmish near.
- Nov. 14—Mattawoman Creek, affair at mouth of.
- Dec. 19—Point of Rocks, skirmish at.
- Dec. 25—Fort Frederick, skirmish at.

## 1862

- Jan. 5—Hancock, bombardment of.
- Sept. 3-4—Edward's Ferry, skirmish at.
- Sept. 4—Monocacy Aqueduct, skirmish at.
- Sept. 4-5—Berlin, skirmishes at.
- Sept. 4-5, 7—Point of Rocks, skirmishes at.
- Sept. 4, 5, 8—Poolesville, skirmishes at.
- Sept. 9—Barnesville, skirmish at.
- Sept. 9—Monocacy Church, skirmish at.
- Sept. 10-11—Sugar Loaf Mountain, skirmishes at.
- Sept. 11, 19, 20—Williamsport, skirmishes near.
- Sept. 12—Frederick City, skirmishes at.
- Sept. 12-13—Maryland Heights, action on.
- Sept. 13—Catoctin Mountain, skirmish at.
- Sept. 13—Jefferson, skirmish at.
- Sept. 13—Middletown, skirmish at.
- Sept. 13—South Mountain, skirmish at.
- Sept. 14—Boonsboro Gap, battle of.
- Sept. 14—Crampton's Pass, battle of.
- Sept. 14—Slaughter's Gap, battle of.
- Sept. 14—South Mountain, battle of.
- Sept. 14—Turner's Pass, battle of.
- Sept. 15—Antietam Creek, skirmish on.
- Sept. 16-17—Antietam, battle of.
- Sept. 20—Hagerstown, skirmish near.
- Oct. 9—Four Locks, skirmish at.
- Oct. 10—Fairview Heights, capture of signal station on.
- Oct. 10—Green Spring Furnace, skirmish at.
- Oct. 10—McCoy's Ferry, skirmish at.
- Oct. 12—White's Ford, skirmish at.

## 1863

- April 26—Altamont, affair at.
- April 26—Cranberry Summit, affair at.
- April 26—Oakland, skirmish at.
- June 10—Seneca Mills, skirmish at.
- June 15—Williamsport, skirmish near.
- June 17—Catoctin Creek and Point of Rocks, skirmishes at.
- June 20—Middletown, skirmish at.
- June 21—Frederick, skirmish at.
- June 24—Sharpsburg, skirmish at.
- June 28—Offutt's Cross-Roads and Seneca, skirmish between.
- June 28—Rockville, skirmish near.
- June 29—Lisbon and Poplar Springs, affairs at.
- June 29—Muddy Branch, skirmish at.



June 29-30—Westminster, skirmishes at.  
 July 4—Emmitsburg, skirmish near.  
 July 5—Smithsburg, skirmish at.  
 July 6—Hagerstown, action at.  
 July 6—Williamsport, action at.  
 July 7—Downsville, skirmish at.  
 July 7—Funkstown, skirmish at.  
 July 8—Boonsboro, action at.  
 July 8, 14—Williamsport, skirmishes near.  
 July 9—Benevola (or Beaver Creek), skirmish at.  
 July 10—Clear Spring, skirmish near.  
 July 10—Old Antietam Forge, near Leitersburg, skirmish at.  
 July 10, 13—Funkstown, skirmishes at and near.  
 July 10-13—Hagerstown, skirmishes at and near.  
 July 10-13—Jones' Cross-Roads, near Williamsport, skirmishes at.  
 July 14—Falling Waters, action at.  
 Aug. 27—Edward's Ferry, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 22—Rockville, skirmish at.

## 1864

July 5—Keedysville, affair at.  
 July 5—Noland's Ferry, affair at.  
 July 5—Point of Rocks, skirmish at.  
 July 5, 7—Solomon's Gap, affairs at.  
 July 6—Antietam, affair at the.  
 July 6—Hagerstown, capture of.  
 July 7—Brownsville, affair at.  
 July 7—Hager's (or Catoclin) Mountain, affair at.  
 July 7—Middletown, skirmish at.  
 July 7, 8, 11—Frederick, skirmishes at.  
 July 8—Antietam Bridge, skirmish at.  
 July 8—Sandy Hook, skirmish at.  
 July 9—Monocacy, battle of the.  
 July 9—Urbana, skirmish at.  
 July 10—Monocacy, skirmish near.  
 July 10—Rockville, skirmish at.  
 July 13—Rockville, affair at.  
 July 25—Williamsport, skirmish at.  
 July 29—Clear Spring, skirmish at.  
 July 29—Hagerstown, skirmish at.  
 July 30—Emmitsburg, affair at.  
 July 30—Monocacy Junction, skirmish at.  
 July 31—Hancock, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 1—Cumberland, attack on.  
 Aug. 1—Flintstone Creek, affair at.  
 Aug. 2—Hancock, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 2—Old Town, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 4—Antietam Ford, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 5, 15—Hagerstown, skirmishes at.  
 Aug. 5—Keedysville, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 5—Williamsport and Hagerstown, skirmishes at.  
 Aug. 22—Cove Point, affair at.  
 Aug. 26—Williamsport, affair at.  
 Oct. 14—Adamstown, skirmish at.





1865

Feb. 21—Cumberland, raid on.

## MISSISSIPPI.

1861

Sept. 17—Ship Island, affair at.

1862

- April 3-4—Biloxi and Pass Christian, affairs at.  
 April 24-25—Corinth Road, skirmishes on the.  
 April 29-June 10—Corinth, advance upon and siege of.  
 May 3-22—Farmington, skirmishes at and near.  
 May 4—Farmington Heights, skirmish at.  
 May 8—Glendale, skirmish at.  
 May 9—Corinth, skirmish near.  
 May 9—Farmington, engagement at.  
 May 17—Corinth, action at Russell's house, near.  
 May 21-29—Corinth, skirmishes near.  
 May 26—Grand Gulf, affair at.  
 May 29—Booneville, skirmish near.  
 May 30—Booneville, expedition to and capture of.  
 June 2—Rienzi, affair at.  
 June 3—Blackland, skirmish at.  
 June 4—Osborn's Creek, skirmish at.  
 June 4—Wolf's Creek, skirmish at.  
 June 9—Grand Gulf, engagement at.  
 June 11—Booneville, skirmish near.  
 June 14—Baldwyn, skirmish at.  
 June 14—Clear Creek, skirmish at.  
 June 21—Coldwater Station, skirmish at.  
 June 24—Grand Gulf, skirmish near.  
 June 24—Hamilton's Plantation, skirmish at.  
 June 28—Blackland, skirmishes at and near.  
 June 28—Vicksburg, bombardment of.  
 July 1—Booneville, action near.  
 July 1—Holly Springs, skirmish at.  
 July 5—Hatchie River, skirmish on the.  
 July 15, 22—Arkansas C. S. S., engagements with.  
 July 20—Hatchie Bottom, affair at.  
 July 24—White Oak Bayou, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 2—Austin, Tunica County, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 2—Totten's Plantation, Coahoma County, skirmish near.  
 Aug. 11—Brown's Plantation, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 16—Horn Lake Creek, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 23—Greenville, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 25—Bolivar, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 26—Rienzi, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 27—Kossuth, skirmish near.  
 Aug. 28—Corinth, skirmish near.  
 Aug. 31—Marietta, skirmish near.  
 Sept. 6—Olive Branch, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 9—Cockrum's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 9, 18—Rienzi, skirmish near.  
 Sept. 12—Coldwater Railroad Bridge, skirmish at.



- Sept. 13, 20, 27—Iuka, skirmishes near.  
 Sept. 14—Burnsville, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 19—Barnett's Corners, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 19—Bolivar, attack on Queen of the West, near.  
 Sept. 19—Iuka, engagement at.  
 Sept. 19—Peyton's Mill, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 19—Prentiss, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 20—Fulton Road, skirmish on the.  
 Sept. 28—Friar's Point, skirmish near.  
 Oct. 1, 7—Ruckersville, skirmishes at and near.  
 Oct. 2—Baldwyn, skirmish near.  
 Oct. 2—Ramer's Crossing, Mobile & Ohio Railroad, skirmish near.  
 Oct. 3-4—Corinth, battle of.  
 Oct. 5—Corinth, attack on the camp of the "Union brigade" at.  
 Oct. 7—Box Ford, Hatchie River, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 7—Ripley, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 5—Jumpertown, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 6—Worsham's Creek, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 6-8—Old Lamar, skirmishes at.  
 Nov. 8—Hudsonville, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 13—Holly Springs, skirmish near.  
 Nov. 28—Tallahatchie River, skirmish on the.  
 Nov. 29—Lumpkin's Mill, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 30—Chulahoma, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 1—Hudsonville, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 1—Mitchell's Cross-Roads, skirmish near.  
 Dec. 1—Yocknapatalfa River, skirmish on the.  
 Dec. 3—Free Bridge, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 3—Oakland, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 3—Prophet Bridge, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 3—Spring Dale Bridge, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 4, 18—Water Valley, skirmishes at and near.  
 Dec. 5—Coffeeville, engagement at.  
 Dec. 20—Coldwater, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 20—Holly Springs, capture of.  
 Dec. 21—Davis' Mill, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 23, 25—Ripley, skirmishes near.  
 Dec. 27—Snyder's Mill, Yazoo River, affair at.  
 Dec. 27-28—Chickasaw Bayou, skirmishes at.  
 Dec. 29—Chickasaw Bluffs, assault on.

## 1863

- Jan. 1—Bath Springs, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 3—Burnsville, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 3—Berwick Bay, Steamer, capture of.  
 Feb. 16, 19—Yazoo Pass, skirmishes at and near.  
 Feb. 19—Coldwater River, skirmish near.  
 Feb. 23—Deer Creek, skirmish on.  
 Feb. 23—Fish Lake Bridge, skirmish at.  
 March 11, 13, 16—Fort Pemberton, engagements at.  
 March 15-16—Hernando, skirmishes near.  
 March 22—Deer Creek, skirmish on.  
 March 23—Hartford, U. S. S., attack on Warrenton batteries by.



- March 23—Monongahela, U. S. S., attack on Warrenton batteries by.
- March 31—Grand Gulf, engagement at.
- April 2, 4—Fort Peniberton, engagements at.
- April 7-10—Deer Creek, skirmishes on.
- April 11—Courtney's Plantation, skirmish at.
- April 18—Hernando, action at.
- April 18-19—New Albany, skirmishes at.
- April 19—Perry's Ferry, Coldwater River, skirmish at.
- April 19—Pontotoc, skirmish at.
- April 21—Palo Alto, skirmish at.
- April 24—Birmingham, skirmish at.
- April 28—Union Church, skirmish at.
- April 29—Brookhaven, skirmish at.
- April 29—Grand Gulf, bombardment of.
- April 29—Haynes' Bluff, demonstration on.
- April 29-May 1—Drumgould's Bluff, demonstration on.
- April 30-May 1—Snyder's Mill, engagement at.
- May 1—Anderson's Hill, battle of.
- May 1-14—Bayou Pierre, skirmishes on.
- May 1—Haynes' Bluff, demonstration on.
- May 1—Port Gibson, battle of.
- May 3—Forty Hills, skirmish at.
- May 3—Ingraham Heights, skirmish at.
- May 3—Jones' Cross-Roads, skirmish at.
- May 3—North Fork of Bayou Pierre, skirmish on the.
- May 3—Willow Springs, skirmish at.
- May 3, 4—Hankinson's Ferry, Big Black River, skirmishes at.
- May 5—Big Sandy Creek, skirmish at.
- May 5—Blackland, action near.
- May 5—King's Creek, near Tupelo, action at.
- May 8, 9—Big Sandy Creek, skirmishes at and near.
- May 9-10—Utica, skirmishes at and near.
- May 11—Coldwater River, skirmish at the.
- May 12—Fourteen-Mile Creek, skirmish at.
- May 12—Greenville, skirmish at.
- May 12—Raymond, engagement at.
- May 13—Baldwin's Ferry, skirmish at.
- May 13—Hall's Ferry, skirmish at.
- May 13—Mississippi Springs, skirmish at.
- May 13—Raymond, skirmish near.
- May 14—Jackson, engagement at.
- May 14—Walnut Hill, skirmishes at and near.
- May 15—Bolton Station, skirmish at and capture of.
- May 15, 31—Edwards Station, skirmishes near.
- May 16—Baker's Creek, battle of.
- May 16—Champion's Hill, battle of.
- May 17—Big Black River Bridge, engagement at.
- May 17—Bridgeport, skirmish near.
- May 18—Greenville, skirmish near Island No. 82, above.
- May 18—Haynes' Bluff, capture of.
- May 19-July 4—Vicksburg, siege of.
- May 23—Haynes' Bluff, skirmish at.
- May 23—Liverpool Landing, skirmish at.



- May 23—Senatobia, skirmish near.  
 May 24-28—Austin, skirmishes near.  
 May 24—Raymond, capture of.  
 May 24-29—Mechanicsburg, skirmishes at.  
 May 27—Cincinnati, U. S. S., engagement with Vicksburg batteries.  
 May 27—Greenwood, attack on Union gunboats, near.  
 June 4—Mechanicsburg, skirmish at.  
 June 6, 10—Edwards Station, skirmishes at.  
 June 9—Macon Ford, Big Black River, skirmish at.  
 June 11—Burnsville, skirmish at.  
 June 11—Corinth, skirmish at Smith's Bridge, near.  
 June 12—Birdsong Ferry, skirmish at.  
 June 16—Quinn's Mills, skirmish at.  
 June 16-17—Holly Springs, skirmishes near.  
 June 17—Commerce, attack on transports in Mississippi River near.  
 June 17—Obion River, skirmish on the.  
 June 18—Belmont, skirmish at.  
 June 18—Birdsong Ferry, affair on Big Black River, at.  
 June 18—Coldwater Bridge, skirmish at.  
 June 19—Hernando, action on the Coldwater, near.  
 June 19—New Albany, skirmish at.  
 June 19, 20—Panola, skirmishes near.  
 June 20—Matthews' Ferry, skirmish on the Coldwater, at.  
 June 20—Mud Creek, skirmish at.  
 June 20—Rocky Ford, Tallahatchie River, skirmish near.  
 June 20—Senatobia, skirmish near.  
 June 21—Hudsonville, skirmish at.  
 June 22—Bear Creek, action near.  
 June 22—Big Black River, skirmish on.  
 June 22—Jones' Plantation, near Birdsong Ferry, skirmish at.  
 June 25—Ellisville, skirmish at Rocky Creek, near.  
 June 28—Jones' Ferry, Big Black River, skirmish at.  
 June 29-30—Big Black River, skirmishes at Messinger's Ferry the.  
 July 1—Edwards Station, skirmish at.  
 July 1—Hankinson's Ferry, Big Black River, skirmish at.  
 July 3-4—Big Black River, skirmishes at Messinger's Ferry the.  
 July 6—Jones' and Messinger's Ferries, skirmishes at.  
 July 7—Baker's Creek, skirmish near.  
 July 7—Iuka, action at.  
 July 7—Ripley, skirmish at.  
 July 7—Queen's Hill, skirmish at.  
 July 8—Bolton Station, skirmish near.  
 July 8-9—Clinton, skirmishes near.  
 July 9-22—Jackson, skirmishes near.  
 July 12—Canton, skirmish near.  
 July 12—Jackson, assault on.  
 July 14—Iuka, skirmish near.  
 July 16—Bolton Station, skirmish at.  
 July 16—Clinton, skirmish at.  
 July 16—Grant's Ferry, skirmish on Pearl River, at.





- July 17—Bear Creek, skirmish near Canton, at.  
July 18—Brookhaven, skirmish at.  
July 19—Brandon, action at.  
July 31—Natchez, skirmish near.  
Aug. 3—Ripley, skirmish at.  
Aug. 5—Mount Pleasant, skirmish at.  
Aug. 8—Rienzi, skirmish at.  
Aug. 12—Big Black River Bridge, skirmish at.  
Aug. 13—Jacinto, skirmish at.  
Aug. 14—Craven's Plantation, skirmish at.  
Aug. 16—Corinth, skirmish near.  
Aug. 17—Grenada, skirmish at.  
Aug. 17—Panola, skirmish near.  
Aug. 18—Payne's Plantation, near Grenada, skirmish at.  
Aug. 20—Panola, skirmish at.  
Aug. 21—Coldwater, skirmish at the.  
Aug. 27—Mount Pleasant, skirmish at.  
Sept. 7—Glendale, skirmish near.  
Sept. 7—Holly Springs, skirmish at.  
Sept. 7—Jacinto (or Glendale), skirmish near.  
Sept. 11—Baldwin's Ferry, Big Black River, skirmish at.  
Sept. 28—Brownsville, skirmish at.  
Sept. 29—Benton, skirmish at Moore's Ford, near.  
Oct. 3—Forked Deer Creek, skirmish at.  
Oct. 5—New Albany, skirmish at.  
Oct. 6—Lockhart's Mill, on Coldwater River, skirmish at.  
Oct. 8—Salem, action at.  
Oct. 10—Port Gibson, skirmish at Ingraham's Plantation, near.  
Oct. 11—Hernando, skirmish near.  
Oct. 12—Byhalia, skirmish at Ingram's Mill, near.  
Oct. 12—Quinn and Jackson's Mill, skirmish at.  
Oct. 13—Wyatt, action at.  
Oct. 15—Brownsville, skirmish at.  
Oct. 15-16—Canton Road, near Brownsville, skirmishes on the.  
Oct. 16—Clinton and Vernon Cross-Roads, skirmish at Treadwell's, near.  
Oct. 17—Bogue Chitto Creek, action at.  
Oct. 17—Livingston, skirmish at Robinson's Mills, near.  
Oct. 17—Sartoria, skirmish near.  
Oct. 18—Clinton, skirmish on the Livingston road, near.  
Oct. 19—Smith's Bridge, skirmish at.  
Oct. 20—Treadwell's Plantation, skirmish at.  
Oct. 22—Brownsville, skirmish at.  
Oct. 26—Vincent's Cross-Roads, near Bay Springs, skirmish at.  
Oct. 31—Yazoo City, skirmish at.  
Nov. 1, 3—Quinn and Jackson's Mill, Coldwater River, skirmishes at.  
Nov. 2, 12—Corinth, skirmishes at.  
Nov. 5—Holly Springs, skirmish at.  
Nov. 11—Natchez, skirmish near.  
Nov. 14, 15—Danville, skirmishes at.  
Nov. 17—Bay Saint Louis, skirmish at.  
Nov. 22—Camp Davies, skirmish at.  
Nov. 22—Fayette, skirmish at.



- Nov. 28—Molino, skirmish near.
- Dec. 1—Ripley, skirmish at.
- Dec. 4—Ripley, affair at.
- Dec. 7—Independence, skirmish at.
- Dec. 9—Okolona, skirmish at.
- Dec. 17, 24—Rodney, skirmishes at.
- Dec. 22—Fayette, skirmish at.
- Dec. 23—Corinth, skirmish near.
- Dec. 26—Port Gibson, skirmish at.
- Dec. 28—Mount Pleasant, skirmish at.
- Dec. 29—Coldwater, skirmish at.

## 1864

- Jan. 6—Delta, Steamer, attack on, on the Mississippi River.
- Jan. 16—Oak Ridge, skirmish at.
- Jan. 18—Grand Gulf, skirmish at.
- Jan. 25—Mount Pleasant, skirmish at.
- Feb. 3—Liverpool Heights, Yazoo River, action at.
- Feb. 4—Bolton Depot, skirmish near.
- Feb. 4—Champion's Hill, skirmish at.
- Feb. 4—Edwards' Ferry, skirmish at.
- Feb. 4—Liverpool Heights, Yazoo River, skirmish opposite.
- Feb. 4—Queen's Hill, skirmish at.
- Feb. 5—Baker's Creek, skirmish on.
- Feb. 5—Clinton, skirmish at.
- Feb. 6, 10—Hillsboro, skirmishes at.
- Feb. 7—Brandon, skirmish at.
- Feb. 7—Satartia, skirmish at.
- Feb. 7, 8, 10—Morton, skirmishes at and near.
- Feb. 8—Coldwater Ferry, affair at.
- Feb. 8-9—Senatobia, skirmishes at and near.
- Feb. 11—Raiford's Plantation, near Byhalia, affair at.
- Feb. 12—Holly Springs, skirmish at.
- Feb. 12—Wall Hill, affair at.
- Feb. 13—Wyatt, skirmish at.
- Feb. 13-14—Chunky Creek and Meridian, skirmishes between.
- Feb. 13-14, 19—Meridian, skirmishes near.
- Feb. 15-17—Marion Station, skirmishes at.
- Feb. 16—Lauderdale Springs, skirmish at.
- Feb. 17—Houlka Swamp, near Houston, skirmish in the.
- Feb. 17—Pontotoc, skirmish near.
- Feb. 18—Aberdeen, skirmish at.
- Feb. 19—Egypt Station, skirmish at.
- Feb. 21—Ellis' Bridge, skirmish at.
- Feb. 21—Prairie Station, skirmish at.
- Feb. 21—West Point, skirmish at.
- Feb. 21-22—Union, skirmishes at.
- Feb. 22—Ivey's Hill, or Farm, skirmish at.
- Feb. 22—Okolona, engagement near.
- Feb. 22—Tallahatchie River, skirmish on the.
- Feb. 23—New Albany, skirmish near.
- Feb. 24, 26, 29—Canton, skirmishes at and near.
- Feb. 24—Tippah River, skirmish at.
- Feb. 27—Madisonville, affair at.



- Feb. 27—Sharon, skirmish at.  
Feb. 28—Pearl River, skirmishes on.  
Feb. 28—Yazoo City, skirmish near.  
March 2—Canton, skirmish at.  
March 3, 7-8—Brownsville, skirmishes at.  
March 3—Liverpool, skirmish at.  
March 4—Rodney, skirmish at.  
March 5—Yazoo City, attack on.  
March 22—Langley's Plantation, Issaquena County, skirmish at.  
March 26—Clinton, skirmish at.  
March 27—Livingston, skirmish at.  
March 30—Snyder's Bluff, attack on outpost at.  
April 3—Clinton, skirmish at.  
April 17—Holly Springs, skirmish at.  
April 19-23—Mechanicsburg, skirmishes at and near.  
April 21—Red Bone, skirmish at.  
April 25—Natchez, skirmish near.  
May 7-9—Benton, skirmishes at.  
May 15—Luce's Plantation, skirmish at.  
May 20, 27—Greenville, skirmishes at.  
May 22—Mount Pleasant, skirmish near.  
May 29—Yazoo River, skirmish at.  
June 4—Vicksburg, skirmish near.  
June 7—Ripley, skirmish at.  
June 8—Indian Bayou, affair at.  
June 10—Guntown, engagement near.  
June 11—Ripley, action at.  
June 11—Salem, skirmish at.  
June 12—Davis' Mills, skirmish at.  
June 23—Okolona, skirmish at.  
June 25—Ashwood, skirmish at.  
July 6—Bolivar, skirmish near.  
July 7—Jackson, engagement near.  
July 7—Ripley, skirmish near.  
July 8—Kelly's Mill, skirmish near.  
July 10—Cherry Creek and Plentytude, skirmishes at.  
July 11-12—Pontotoc, skirmishes at and near.  
July 13—Camargo Cross-Roads, action near.  
July 13—Utica, skirmish at.  
July 14—Port Gibson, skirmish at.  
July 14-15—Harrisburg, near Tupelo, engagement at.  
July 15—Old Town Creek, action at.  
July 16—Ellistown, skirmish at.  
July 16—Grand Gulf, skirmish at.  
July 22—Coldwater River, skirmish at.  
Aug. 7-9, 10—Tallahatchie River, skirmishes at the.  
Aug. 9, 13-14, 19—Hurricane Creek, skirmishes at.  
Aug. 9—Oxford, skirmish at.  
Aug. 14—Lamar, skirmish at.  
Aug. 23—Abbeville, skirmish at.  
Aug. 29—Mississippi River, attack on steamer White Cloud on.  
Sept. 6—Natchez and Liberty Road, skirmish on, near the Eight-Mile Post.



- Sept. 22-23—Rolling Fork, skirmishes near.  
 Sept. 28—Brownsville, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 29—Moore's Bluff, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 30—Port Gibson, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 2—Fayette, descent on  
 Oct. 4-12—Woodville, expedition from Natchez to, and skirmishes, etc.  
 Oct. 10—Eastport, action at  
 Oct. 15—Hernando, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 25—Steele's Bayou, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 14-21—Brookhaven, expedition to, from Baton Rouge, La. and skirmishes.  
 Nov. 27—Big Black Bridge, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 1—Concord Church, action at.  
 Dec. 10—Chickasawha Bridge, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 21-22—Franklin Creek, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 25—Verona, engagement at.  
 Dec. 27—Okolona, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 28—Egypt, engagement at.

## 1865

- Jan. 2—Franklin, engagement at.  
 Jan. 2—Lexington, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 3—Mechanicsburg, skirmish near.  
 Jan. 4—The Ponds, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 19—Corinth, skirmish at.  
 May 3-6—Fort Adams, operations about.  
 May 3-6—Port Gibson, expedition from Rodney to, with skirmishes.

## MISSOURI.

## 1861

- June 24—Jackson, skirmish at.  
 July 4—Farmington, skirmish at.  
 July 5—Brier Fork, action at.  
 July 5—Carthage, engagement near.  
 July 5—Dry Fork, action at.  
 July 9-11—Monroe Station, skirmishes near and at.  
 July 15—Mexico, skirmish at.  
 July 15-17—Wentzville, skirmish at.  
 July 17—Fulton, skirmish at.  
 July 17-19—Parkersville, skirmish at.  
 July 18—Harrisonville, action near.  
 July 18—Martinsburg, skirmish at.  
 July 22—Etna, skirmish at.  
 July 22—Forsyth, skirmish at.  
 July 24—Blue Hills, action at.  
 July 25—Dug Springs, skirmish at.  
 July 25-27—Harrisonville, skirmishes at.  
 July 26—McCulla's Store, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 1—Edina, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 2—Dug Springs, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 3—McCulla's Store, skirmish at.





- Aug. 5—Athens, skirmish at.  
Aug. 10—Springfield, battle of.  
Aug. 10—Wilson's Creek, battle of.  
Aug. 11 or 12—Hamburg, affair at.  
Aug. 16-21—Kirksville, operations around.  
Aug. 17—Brunswick, skirmish at.  
Aug. 17—Hunnewell, affair at.  
Aug. 17—Palmyra, affair at.  
Aug. 19—Klapsford, skirmish at.  
Aug. 19-20—Fish Lake, skirmish at.  
Aug. 19-20—Charleston, skirmishes at.  
Aug. 21-22—Jonesboro, skirmishes at.  
Aug. 23—Medoc, skirmish at.  
Aug. 28—Ball's Mill, skirmish at.  
Aug. 29—Morse's Mills, skirmish at.  
Sept. 1—Bennight's Mills, skirmish at.  
Sept. 2—Dallas, skirmish at.  
Sept. 2—Dry Wood, action at.  
Sept. 5—Papinsville, skirmish at.  
Sept. 6—Monticello Bridge, skirmish at.  
Sept. 8-10—Lucas Bend, engagements at.  
Sept. 13-20—Lexington, siege of.  
Sept. 14—Old Randolph, skirmish at.  
Sept. 17—Blue Mills Landing, action at.  
Sept. 17—Morristown, skirmish at.  
Sept. 22—Osceola, skirmish at and destruction of.  
Sept. 27—Norfolk, skirmish near.  
Oct. 13—Pomme de Terre, skirmish on the.  
Oct. 13—Wet Glaze, action at.  
Oct. 14—Bird's Point, skirmish at Underwood's Farm near.  
Oct. 14—Linn Creek, affair at.  
Oct. 15—Blackwell's Station, skirmishes near and at.  
Oct. 16—Linn Creek, skirmish near.  
Oct. 17-18—Fredericktown, skirmishes at.  
Oct. 18—Warrensburg, skirmish at.  
Oct. 19—Big Hurricane Creek, action at.  
Oct. 21—Fredericktown, engagement at.  
Oct. 25—Springfield, action at.  
Oct. 27—Spring Hill, skirmish near.  
Nov. 6—Little Santa Fe, action at.  
Nov. 7—Belmont, engagement at.  
Nov. 11—Little Blue, action at.  
Nov. 18—Price's Landing, attack on steamboat Platte Valley at.  
Nov. 20—Butler, skirmish at.  
Nov. 20—Little Santa Fe, skirmish at.  
Nov. 24—Johnstown, skirmish at.  
Nov. 24—Lancaster, skirmish at.  
Nov. 26—Independence, skirmish at.  
Nov. 30—Grand River, skirmish at.  
Dec. 1—Shanghai, skirmish at.  
Dec. 3—Salem, action at.  
Dec. 9—Union Mills, skirmish at.  
Dec. 11—Bertrand, skirmish near.



- Dec. 13—Charleston, skirmish at.
- Dec. 18—Blackwater Creek, skirmish on the.
- Dec. 18—Milford, skirmish at.
- Dec. 23—Dayton, skirmish at.
- Dec. 24—Wadesburg, skirmish at.
- Dec. 27—Hallsville, skirmish near.
- Dec. 28—Mount Zion Church, action at.
- Dec. 29—City of Alton, steamboat, attack on.
- Dec. 29—Commerce, descent on.

1862

- Jan. 1-3—Dayton, expedition to, skirmish near, and destruction of.
- Jan. 3—Hunnewell, skirmish at.
- Jan. 8—Charleston, skirmish at.
- Jan. 8—Roan's Tan-Yard, Silver Creek, action at.
- Jan. 9—Columbus, skirmish at.
- Jan. 22—Knobnoster, skirmish at.
- Feb. 8—Bolivar, affair at.
- Feb. 9—Marshfield, skirmish at.
- Feb. 12—Springfield, skirmish at.
- Feb. 14—Crane Creek, skirmish at.
- Feb. 15—Flat Creek, skirmish near.
- Feb. 19—West Plains, skirmish at.
- Feb. 22—Independence, skirmish at.
- Feb. 23-24—Pea Ridge Prairie, reconnoissance to and skirmish on.
- Feb. 23-25—Saint Francisville, reconnoissance to and skirmish near.
- Feb. 25—Keytesville, skirmish at.
- Feb. 28-April 8—New Madrid, advance upon and siege of.
- March 1—Sikeston, skirmish near.
- March 7—Bob's Creek, skirmish at.
- March 7—Fox Creek, skirmish at.
- March 7 and 18—Point Pleasant, engagements at.
- March 9—Big Creek, skirmish on.
- March 9—Mountain Grove, skirmish at.
- March 10—La Fayette County, skirmish in.
- March 15-16—Marshall, skirmish near.
- March 17—Riddle's Point, action at.
- March 19—Leesville, skirmish near.
- March 21—McKay's Farm, affair at.
- March 22—Little Santa Fe, skirmish at.
- March 22—Post Oak Creek, skirmish on.
- March 25—Monagan Springs, skirmish at.
- March 25-28—Moniteau County, expedition in, and skirmish en route.
- March 26—Gouge's Mill, skirmish near.
- March 26—Humansville, action at.
- March 26—Post Oak Creek, action on.
- March 29—Blackwater Creek, skirmish on the.
- March 30—Clinton, skirmish near.
- March 31—Pink Hill, skirmish at.
- April 1—Doniphan, skirmish at.
- April 1—Little Sni, skirmish on the.



- April 2—Walkersville, skirmish near.  
April 8—Medicine Creek, skirmish at.  
April 8—Warrensburg, skirmish near.  
April 9—Jackson, skirmish at.  
April 11—Shiloh, skirmish near.  
April 14—Diamond Grove, skirmish at.  
April 14—Montevallo, skirmish at.  
April 14—Santa Fe Road, skirmish near the.  
April 15—Lost Creek, skirmish at.  
April 16—Blackwater, skirmish on.  
April 17-28—Warsaw, skirmishes at.  
April 25—Monagan Springs, skirmish at.  
April 25—Osage River, skirmish on, near Monagan Springs.  
April 26—Neosho, skirmish at.  
April 26—Turnback Creek, skirmish at.  
May 7—Horse Creek, skirmish at.  
May 10—Bloomfield, skirmish at.  
May 15—Butler, skirmish near.  
May 17—Independence, skirmish near.  
May 26—Crow's Station, near Licking, skirmish at.  
May 26—Miami, skirmish at.  
May 26—Waverly, skirmish at.  
May 27—Monagan Springs, skirmish near.  
May 27—Osceola, skirmish near.  
May 31—Florida, skirmish at.  
May 31—Neosho, skirmish near.  
May 31—Salt River, skirmish on.  
May 31—Waynesville, skirmish near.  
June 1—Eleven Points, skirmish at.  
June 2—Little Blue River, skirmish on the.  
June 5—Sedalia, skirmish near.  
June 11—Deep Water, skirmish at.  
June 11—Pink Hill, skirmish at.  
June 17—Eminence, skirmish at.  
June 17—Warrensburg, skirmish near.  
June 18—Hambright's Station, skirmish at.  
June 23—Pineville, skirmish at.  
June 23—Raytown, skirmish near.  
June 26—Cherry Grove, Schuyler County, skirmish at.  
July 1—Cherry Grove, Schuyler County, skirmish near.  
July 6—Salem, skirmish at.  
July 7—Inman Hollow, skirmish at.  
July 7—Newark, skirmish near.  
July 8—Black Run, skirmish at.  
July 8-11—Pleasant Hill, skirmishes at and near.  
July 9—Lotspeich Farm, on Sugar Creek, skirmish at.  
July 9—Wadesburg, skirmish near.  
July 11—Big Creek Bluffs, near Pleasant Hill, skirmish at.  
July 11—Cassville, skirmish at.  
July 11—Sears' House, near Pleasant Hill, skirmish at.  
July 18—Memphis, skirmish near.  
July 20—Greenville, skirmish at.



- July 20—Taberville, skirmish at.  
July 22—Florida, skirmish near.  
July 23—Blackwater, skirmish near the.  
July 23—Boles' Farm, skirmish at.  
July 24—Fulton, skirmish near.  
July 24—Moore's Mill, skirmish at.  
July 24, 25—Santa Fe, skirmishes near.  
July 25-26—Mountain Store, skirmishes near.  
July 27—Brown's Spring, skirmish at.  
July 28—Bollinger's Mill, skirmishes at and near.  
July 28—Cross Timbers, skirmish at.  
July 28—Fulton, action near.  
July 28—Moore's Mill, action at.  
July 29—Arrow Rock, skirmish at.  
July 29—Bloomfield, skirmish near.  
July 30—Clark's Mill, Chariton County, skirmish at.  
Aug. 1—Carrollton, skirmish near.  
Aug. 1—Grand River, skirmish at.  
Aug. 1—Ozark, skirmish at.  
Aug. 2, 19—Clear Creek, skirmishes on.  
Aug. 2-11—Taberville, skirmishes near.  
Aug. 3—Chariton Bridge, skirmish at.  
Aug. 4—Forsyth, skirmish near.  
Aug. 4—Gayoso, skirmish at.  
Aug. 4—White River, skirmish on.  
Aug. 5—Cravensville, skirmish near.  
Aug. 5-7—Montevallo, skirmishes near.  
Aug. 6—Kirksville, action at.  
Aug. 6—Salem, skirmish at.  
Aug. 7—Rocky Bluff, Platte County, skirmish at.  
Aug. 8—Newtonia, skirmish at.  
Aug. 8—Panther Creek, skirmish at.  
Aug. 8—Stockton, Macon County, skirmish near.  
Aug. 9—Sears' Ford, skirmish at.  
Aug. 9—Walnut Creek, skirmish at.  
Aug. 10—Linn Creek, skirmish at.  
Aug. 10—Switzler's Mill, skirmish at.  
Aug. 11—Compton's Ferry, Grand River, skirmish at.  
Aug. 11—Independence, action at and surrender of.  
Aug. 11—Little Compton, Grand River, skirmish at.  
Aug. 11—Sinking Creek, skirmish on.  
Aug. 12—Humansville and Stockton, skirmish between.  
Aug. 12—Van Buren, skirmish at.  
Aug. 13—Muscle Fork, Chariton River, skirmish at.  
Aug. 13—Yellow Creek, skirmish at.  
Aug. 14—Barry, skirmish near.  
Aug. 16—Lone Jack, action at.  
Aug. 18—White Oak Ridge, skirmish at.  
Aug. 20—Pilot Knob, skirmish at.  
Aug. 21—Neosho, skirmish near.  
Aug. 23—Columbus, skirmish near.  
Aug. 23—Four Mile, skirmish at.  
Aug. 23—Hickory Grove, skirmish at.





- Aug. 23—Wayman's Mill, on Spring Creek, skirmish near.  
Aug. 24—Bloomfield, affair near.  
Aug. 24—Coon Creek, near Lamar, skirmish on.  
Aug. 24—Crooked Creek, near Dallas, skirmish on.  
Aug. 24—Dallas, skirmish near.  
Aug. 24—Lamar, skirmish near.  
Aug. 28—Ashley, skirmish at.  
Aug. 28—Howard County, skirmish in.  
Aug. 29—Bloomfield, skirmish near.  
Aug. 29—California House, skirmish at.  
Aug. 29—Iberia, skirmish near.  
Aug. 31—Little River Bridge, skirmish at.  
Sept. 1, 3, 5—Neosho, skirmishes near.  
Sept. 1—Putnam, skirmish at.  
Sept. 1—Spring River, skirmish at.  
Sept. 4—Prairie Chapel, skirmish at.  
Sept. 6—Roanoke, skirmish near.  
Sept. 7—Lancaster, skirmish at.  
Sept. 9—Big Creek, skirmish at.  
Sept. 11—Bloomfield, action at.  
Sept. 13—Bragg's Farm, near Whaley's Mill, skirmish near.  
Sept. 13—Newtonia, skirmish near.  
Sept. 13—Strother Fork of Black River, Iron County, skirmish on.  
Sept. 19—Hickory Grove, skirmish at.  
Sept. 19—Mount Vernon, affair at.  
Sept. 20—Shirley's Ford, Spring River, action at.  
Sept. 21—Cassville, skirmish near.  
Sept. 24—Granby, skirmish at.  
Sept. 30—Newtonia, engagement at.  
Oct. 2—Columbia, skirmish near.  
Oct. 3—Jollification, skirmish at.  
Oct. 4—Granby, affair at.  
Oct. 4, 7—Newtonia, skirmishes near.  
Oct. 5—Cole Camp, skirmish at.  
Oct. 5—Sims' Cove, skirmish near.  
Oct. 6—Liberty, skirmish at.  
Oct. 6—Sibley, skirmish at.  
Oct. 7, 13—New Franklin, skirmishes at and near.  
Oct. 12—Arrow Rock, skirmish near.  
Oct. 14—Hazel Bottom, skirmish at.  
Oct. 16—Auxvasse Creek, Callaway County, skirmish at.  
Oct. 16—Portland, affair at.  
Oct. 16—Shell's Mill, skirmish at.  
Oct. 17—Lexington, skirmish at.  
Oct. 18—California House, skirmish at.  
Oct. 18—Uniontown, Scotland County, skirmish near.  
Oct. 20—Marshfield, skirmish near.  
Oct. 22—Van Buren, skirmish near.  
Oct. 23—Clarkston, skirmish at.  
Oct. 25—Eleven Points River, skirmish near.  
Oct. 25—Pike Creek, skirmish near.  
Oct. 29—Island Mound, skirmish at.  
Nov. 3—Harrisonville, Cass County, skirmish near.



- Nov. 5—Lamar, action at.
- Nov. 7—Clark's Mill, Douglas County, action at.
- Nov. 9—Drywood, skirmish at.
- Nov. 9—Huntsville, skirmish at.
- Nov. 15—Yocum Creek, skirmish at.
- Nov. 17-18—Keytesville, operations about.
- Nov. 19—Pineville, skirmish at.
- Nov. 26-29—La Fayette County, affairs in.
- Nov. 30-Dec. 6—Ozark Mountains, expedition to the, and skirmishes.

## 1863

- Jan. 6—Lawrence, Fort, skirmish at.
- Jan. 8—Springfield, engagement at.
- Jan. 11—Hartville, engagement at.
- Jan. 21—Columbia, skirmish near.
- Jan. 27—Bloomfield, affair at.
- Feb. 2-13—Mingo Swamp, scouts and skirmishes, etc.
- Feb. 8—Independence, skirmish near.
- March 1-2—Bloomfield, capture of, and skirmish near.
- March 9—Sherwood, skirmish near.
- March 22—Blue Springs, near Independence, skirmish at.
- April 17—White River, skirmish at.
- April 20—Patterson, skirmish at.
- April 22—Fredericktown, skirmish at.
- April 24—Mill Creek Bridge, skirmish at.
- April 26—Cape Girardeau, action at.
- April 26, 27—Jackson, skirmishes.
- April 27—White Water Bridge, skirmish near.
- April 29—Castor River, skirmish at.
- April 30—Bloomfield, skirmish at.
- May 9—Stone County, skirmish in.
- May 15—Big Creek, skirmish at.
- May 15—Centre Creek, skirmish at.
- May 15—Pleasant Hill, skirmish near.
- May 18—Hog Island, Bates County, affair at.
- May 18—Sherwood, skirmish near.
- May 19—Richfield, Clay County, skirmish near.
- May 26—Carthage, skirmish near.
- June 1—Doniphan, skirmish near.
- June 1—Rocheport, skirmishes near.
- June 1—Waverly, affair at.
- June 17—Wellington, affair near.
- June 17—Westport, skirmish near.
- June 23—Papinsville, skirmish near.
- June 23—Sibley, skirmish at and destruction of.
- July 4—Black Fork Hills, affair in the.
- July 7—Drywood, skirmish near.
- July 11—Stockton, skirmish at.
- July 12—Switzler's Mill, Chariton County, skirmish near.
- July 24—Dade County, skirmish in.
- July 27—Cassville, affair near.
- July 30—Lexington, skirmish near.



- Aug. 1—Little Blue, skirmish at Taylor's Farm, on the.
- Aug. 1—Round Ponds, near Castor River, affair at.
- Aug. 2—Stumptown, skirmish at.
- Aug. 6-11—Spring River Mills, scout to, and skirmishes.
- Aug. 8—Ball Town, affair on Clear Creek, near.
- Aug. 9—Garden Hollow, near Pineville, skirmish at.
- Aug. 9, 13—Pineville, skirmishes.
- Aug. 10—Dayton, skirmish at.
- Aug. 13—Ash Hills, skirmish at the.
- Aug. 14—Jack's Ford, skirmish near.
- Aug. 14—Wellington, skirmish near.
- Aug. 22—Big Creek, skirmish at.
- Aug. 23—Bennett's Bayou, skirmishes on.
- Aug. 25—Independence, skirmish near.
- Aug. 25—Waynesville, skirmish near.
- Aug. 25-26—Hopewell, skirmishes near.
- Aug. 26—Clear Fork, skirmish at.
- Aug. 29—Texas Prairie, skirmish at.
- Sept. 4—Quincy, affair at.
- Sept. 13—Salem, attack on and skirmish near.
- Sept. 15—Enterprise, skirmish near.
- Sept. 15—Jackson County, skirmish in.
- Sept. 22-25—La Fayette County, skirmishes.
- Oct. 4—Bowers' Mill, skirmish at.
- Oct. 4—Neosho, action at.
- Oct. 4—Neosho, skirmish at Widow Wheeler's, near.
- Oct. 4—Oregon, skirmish at.
- Oct. 5—Greenfield, skirmish at.
- Oct. 5—Stockton, skirmish at.
- Oct. 5, 10—Syracuse, skirmishes.
- Oct. 6—Humansville, affair near.
- Oct. 7—Warsaw, skirmish near.
- Oct. 9—Cole Camp, skirmish near.
- Oct. 10—La Mine Bridge, affair at.
- Oct. 10—Tipton, affair at.
- Oct. 11-12—Boonville, skirmishes at.
- Oct. 12—Dug Ford, near Jonesboro. skirmish at.
- Oct. 12—Merrill's Crossing, skirmish at.
- Oct. 13—Marshall, action at.
- Oct. 14—Man's Creek, Shannon County, skirmish near.
- Oct. 14—Scott's Ford, skirmish at.
- Oct. 15—Cross Timbers, skirmish at.
- Oct. 16—Deer Creek, skirmish on.
- Oct. 16—Humansville, skirmishes at and near.
- Oct. 16—Johnstown, skirmish at.
- Oct. 17—Cedar County, skirmish in.
- Oct. 18—Carthage, skirmish at.
- Oct. 19—Honey Creek, affair on.
- Oct. 21—Greenton Valley, near Hopewell, affair in.
- Oct. 24—Harrisonville, skirmish near.
- Oct. 26—King's House, near Waynesville, skirmish at.
- Oct. 29—Warsaw, affair near.
- Nov. 4—Lexington, skirmish near.



Nov. 4-6—Neosho, skirmishes at and near.

Nov. 29-30—Bloomfield, attack on.

Dec. 23-25—Centreville, attack on, etc.

Dec. 25—Pulliam's, skirmish at.

1864

Jan. 14—Bollinger County, skirmish in.

Jan. 23—Cowskin Bottom, Newton County, affair at.

Feb. 2—Halcolm Island, skirmish on.

Feb. 5—Cape Girardeau, skirmish near.

Feb. 10—Pocahontas, skirmish at.

Feb. 12—California House, affair near the.

Feb. 12—Macon, skirmish at.

Feb. 15—Charleston, affair near.

Feb. 18—Piney River, affair near headwaters of the.

Feb. 19—Independence, skirmish near.

Feb. 22—Lexington, skirmish at.

Feb. 27—Poplar Bluff, affair near.

March 27—Deepwater Township, affair in

March 30—Greenton, affair near.

April 1—Bloomfield, affair near.

April 11—Chariton County, affair in.

April 18—Hunnewell, affair at.

April 19-20—Charleston, skirmishes near.

April 23—Independence, skirmish at.

April 26—Wayne County, skirmish in.

April 27—Dayton, skirmish at.

April 28-30—Johnson County, skirmishes in.

May 2—Bee Creek, affair on.

May 13—Cuba, skirmish near.

May 16—Drywood Creek, skirmish near

May 20—Lamar, skirmish at.

May 21—Blue River, affair on the.

May 26—Lane's Prairie, Maries county, affair on.

May 27—Shanghai, skirmish near.

May 28—Pleasant Hill, skirmish at.

May 28—Warrensburg, skirmish at.

May 30-31—Mill and Honey Creeks, skirmishes on.

June 3—Neosho, skirmish near.

June 7—Sikeston, affair at.

June 9—Breckinridge, affair near.

June 10—Saint James, affair near.

June 11—Ridgeley, skirmish at.

June 12—Kingsville, skirmish near.

June 12—Montevallo, affair at.

June 14—Lexington, skirmish near.

June 15—White Hare, skirmish near.

June 16—Big North Fork, near Preston, affair on.

June 16—Preston, affair near.

June 17—Columbia, skirmish near.

June 26—Sedalia and Marshall Road, affair near the.

June 27-28—Dunksburg, affairs near.

July 1—Fayette, skirmish near.





- July 3—Platte County, skirmish in.
- July 4—Clay County, skirmish in.
- July 6—Little Blue, Jackson County, western Missouri, skirmish near the.
- July 7—Parkville, attack on.
- July 8—Richmond, skirmish near.
- July 10—Platte City, affair at.
- July 10—Warder's Church, skirmish at.
- July 12—Columbus, skirmish at.
- July 13—Camden Point, action at.
- July 13—Versailles, affair at.
- July 14—Bloomfield, skirmish near.
- July 14—Fredericksburg, skirmish near.
- July 15—Huntsville, attack on.
- July 15—Lindley, affair at, in Grundy County.
- July 16—Clear Fork, near Warrensburg, skirmish on the.
- July 16—Fayette Road, near Huntsville, skirmish on the.
- July 16, 24—Huntsville, skirmishes.
- July 16—Warrensburg, skirmish near.
- July 17—Fredericksburg, Ray county, action near.
- July 19—Webster, Washington County, attack on.
- July 20—Arrow Rock, attack on.
- July 21—Carthage, skirmish near.
- July 21—Plattsburg, attack on.
- July 22—Camden Point and Union Mills, skirmishes near.
- July 22—Wright County, skirmish in.
- July 23—Allen, skirmish at.
- July 23—Liberty, skirmish near.
- July 26—Shelbina, attack on.
- July 27—Blackwater River, skirmish on.
- July 28—Big Creek, skirmish on.
- July 30—Chapel Hill, skirmish near.
- July 30—Chariton Road, skirmish on.
- July 30—Keytesville, skirmish near.
- July 30—Union Church, skirmish at.
- Aug. 1—Diamond Grove Prairie, skirmish at.
- Aug. 1—Independence, skirmish near.
- Aug. 1—Rolla, skirmish at.
- Aug. 3—Fayette, skirmish near.
- Aug. 4—Elk Chute, skirmish at.
- Aug. 4—Rutledge, skirmish at.
- Aug. 7—Arrow Rock, skirmishes at.
- Aug. 7—Buffalo Creek, skirmish on.
- Aug. 7—Enterprise, skirmishes at and near.
- Aug. 7—Huntsville, skirmish near.
- Aug. 8—Norris Creek, skirmish on.
- Aug. 8-9—Little Missouri River, action on the.
- Aug. 11—Hartville, skirmish at.
- Aug. 12—Fredericksburg, skirmish at.
- Aug. 12—Holden, skirmish near.
- Aug. 15—Dripping Spring, skirmish at.
- Aug. 16, Sept. 16—Columbia, skirmishes at.
- Aug. 20, 28—Rocheport, skirmishes near.



- Aug. 21—Diamond Grove, skirmish at
- Aug. 23—Webster, affair at.
- Aug. 26—Pleasant Hill, skirmish near.
- Aug. 31—Steelville, affair at.
- Sept. 1—Lone Jack, skirmish near.
- Sept. 1—Tipton, attack on.
- Sept. 2—Mount Vernon, skirmish near.
- Sept. 3, 23—Rocheport, skirmishes near.
- Sept. 6—Brunswick, affair near.
- Sept. 7-8—Boone County, skirmishes in.
- Sept. 7, 27—Centralia, affairs at.
- Sept. 8—Gayoso, skirmish near.
- Sept. 8—Hornersville and Gayoso, skirmishes near.
- Sept. 9—Warrensburg, affair near, on the Warrensburg Road.
- Sept. 10—Dover, skirmish near.
- Sept. 10—Pisgah, skirmish near.
- Sept. 10—Roanoke, skirmish near.
- Sept. 12, 28—Caledonia, skirmishes at.
- Sept. 13, 22—Longwood, skirmishes at and near.
- Sept. 18—Lexington, skirmish near.
- Sept. 18—Thomasville, skirmish at.
- Sept. 19—Doniphan, affair at.
- Sept. 20—Keytesville, surrender of.
- Sept. 20—Ponder's Mill, Little Black River, skirmish at.
- Sept. 22—Carthage, skirmish at.
- Sept. 22—Patterson, affair at.
- Sept. 22—Sikeston, skirmish near.
- Sept. 24—Fayette, attack on
- Sept. 24, 25—Farmington, skirmishes at.
- Sept. 24—Jackson, skirmish at.
- Sept. 25—Huntsville, affair at.
- Sept. 26—Arcadia Valley, Shut-in Gap, and Ironton, skirmishes at
- Sept. 26, 27—Ironton, skirmishes at.
- Sept. 27—Arcadia and Ironton, skirmishes at.
- Sept. 27—Fort Davidson, Pilot Knob, attack on.
- Sept. 27—Mineral Point, skirmish at.
- Sept. 28—Centralia, skirmish near.
- Sept. 29—Cuba, affair at.
- Sept. 29-Oct. 1—Leasburg, or Harrison, skirmishes at.
- Sept. 30—Waynesville, skirmish at.
- Oct. 1—Franklin, skirmish at.
- Oct. 1—Lake Springs, skirmish near.
- Oct. 1—Union, skirmish at.
- Oct. 3—Hermann, skirmish at.
- Oct. 4—Richwoods, skirmish at.
- Oct. 5-6—Osage River, skirmishes on the.
- Oct. 6—Co'e County, skirmish in.
- Oct. 7—Moreau Creek, skirmish at.
- Oct. 7—Tyler's Mills, Big River, skirmish at.
- Oct. 7, 8—Jefferson City, skirmishes at and near.
- Oct. 8, 18, 29—Barry County, skirmishes in.
- Oct. 9, 11-12—Boonville, skirmishes.
- Oct. 9—California, skirmish at.



- Oct. 9—Russellville, skirmish at.
- Oct. 11—Brunswick, skirmish at.
- Oct. 14—Danville, attack on.
- Oct. 14, 26—Glasgow, skirmishes near
- Oct. 15—Glasgow, action at.
- Oct. 15—Paris, surrender of.
- Oct. 15—Sedalia, affair at.
- Oct. 16—Ridgely, capture of.
- Oct. 17—Carrollton, surrender of.
- Oct. 17—Lexington, skirmish near.
- Oct. 19—Lexington, action at.
- Oct. 19—Montevallo, skirmish near.
- Oct. 20—Dover, skirmish at.
- Oct. 21—Little Blue, action at the.
- Oct. 22—Big Blue (Byram's Ford, etc.), action at the.
- Oct. 22—Independence, action at.
- Oct. 22—State Line, action at.
- Oct. 23—Big Blue, engagement at the.
- Oct. 23—Westport, engagement at.
- Oct. 25—Charlotte, battle of.
- Oct. 25—Clinton, attack on.
- Oct. 25—Marmiton, or battle of Charlotte, engagement at the.
- Oct. 26—Albany, skirmish at.
- Oct. 28—Newtonia, engagement at.
- Oct. 29—Upshaw's Farm, Barry County, skirmish at.
- Oct. 29—Warrenton, skirmish near.
- Nov. 1—Big Piney, skirmish on.
- Nov. 1—Greenton, affair at.
- Nov. 1—Lebanon, skirmish near.
- Nov. 1—Rolla, skirmish at.
- Nov. 1—Waynesville, skirmish near.
- Nov. 1-2—Quincy, skirmishes at.
- Nov. 3—Vera Cruz, skirmish at.
- Nov. 5—Charleston, skirmish at.
- Nov. 6—Sikeston, skirmish near.
- Nov. 9—Licking, Texas county, skirmish near.
- Nov. 10—Neosho, skirmish at.
- Nov. 12—Centreville, skirmish near.
- Nov. 18—Fayette, skirmish at.
- Nov. 19—Reeves' Mill, skirmish at.
- Nov. 26—Osage, skirmish at.
- Nov. 28—Fulton, skirmish near.
- Dec. 2—Big Piney, skirmish on.
- Dec. 3—New Madrid, skirmish near.
- Dec. 7—Franklin, affair near, at the Moselle Bridge.
- Dec. 7—Moselle Bridge, affair at.
- Dec. 8—Tuscumbia, affair at.
- Dec. 14—Cape Girardeau, skirmish near.
- Dec. 18—Little River, New Madrid County, skirmish on.
- Dec. 30—Canuthersville, skirmish near.

1865

Jan. 9-11—Texas County, skirmishes in.



- Jan. 10—Glasgow, skirmish near.  
 Jan. 11—Lexington, skirmish near.  
 Jan. 30—La Fayette County, skirmish in.  
 Feb. 12—Columbia, skirmish near.  
 Feb. 12—Macon, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 13—Mississippi County, skirmish in.  
 Feb. 20—Center Creek, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 24—Switzler's Mill, affair at.  
 Feb. 27—Sturgeon, skirmish near.  
 March 3, 7—Bloomfield, skirmishes near.  
 March 4—Dunklin County, skirmish in.  
 March 11—Little Blue River, affair near.  
 March 12—Lone Jack, affair near.  
 March 19-23—Columbus, scout from Warrensburg to, with  
     skirmish near Greenton.  
 March 24—Rolla, affair near.  
 March 28—Bull Creek, Christian County, skirmish at.  
 March 29—Southwest Missouri, skirmish in.  
 April 15—Patterson, skirmish at McKenzie's Creek near.  
 April 22—Big Gravois, skirmish near mouth of.  
 April 22, 25—Linn Creek, skirmishes.  
 April 23—Spring Valley, skirmish at.  
 April 24—Miami, skirmish near.  
 April 27—James Creek, affair near.  
 May 3—Boonville, skirmishes on Missouri River, near.  
 May 4—Star House, near Lexington, skirmish at.  
 May 5—Perche Hills, skirmish in.  
 May 8—Readsville, skirmish near.  
 May 14—Little Piney, skirmish on.  
 May 20—Longwood, skirmish on the Blackwater near.  
 May 22—Valley Mines, skirmish at.  
 May 23—Waynesville, skirmish near.  
 May 24—Rocheport, skirmish near.  
 May 26-27—Carroll and Ray Counties, scout and skirmishes in.  
 May 27—Chariton County, skirmish in.  
 May 27—Switzler's Mill, Chariton County, skirmish at.

## NEW MEXICO.

1861

- July 25—Mesilla, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 23—Craig, Fort, skirmish near.  
 Sept. 25—Canada Alamosa, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 26—Thorn, Fort, skirmish near.

1862

- Feb. 21—Valverde, engagement at.  
 March 3—Cubero, capture of.  
 March 26—Apache Canon, skirmish at.  
 March 28—Glorieta, engagement at.  
 March 28—Pigeon's Ranch, engagement at.  
 April 15—Peralta, skirmish at.  
 April 25—Socorro, skirmish at.  
 May 21—Paraje, skirmish at.





May 23—Craig, Fort, affair near.  
 July 15—Apache Canon, skirmish at.

1863

Jan. 29—Pinos Altos Mines, skirmish at.  
 March 27—Bonito Rio, skirmish on the.  
 April 25—Apache Pass, skirmish at.  
 May 7—Cajoude Arivaypo, skirmish at.  
 June 16—Jornada del Muerto, skirmish on the.

1864

Jan. 26—San Andres Mountains, affair in the.  
 April 7. 15—Spencer's Ranch, near Presidio del Norte, skirmish at.  
 May 4—Doubtful Canon, skirmish in.  
 Aug. 12—San Andres Mountains, affair in the.  
 Aug. 26—Sacramento Mountains, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 1—Red River, skirmish on.

1865

June 14—Santa Fe Road, action on.

## NORTH CAROLINA.

1861

Aug. 28-29—Hatteras Inlet, capture of Confederate batteries at.  
 Oct. 4—Chicamacomico, affair at.

1862

Feb. 8—Roanoke Island, battle of.  
 Feb. 18-21—Winton, expedition to and skirmish.  
 March 14—New Bern, battle of.  
 March 23-April 26—Macon, Fort, siege of.  
 March 31—Deep Gully, Trenton Road, skirmish near.  
 April 7—Foy's Plantation, skirmish at.  
 April 7—Newport, skirmish near.  
 April 13—Gillett's Farm, Pebbly Run, skirmish at.  
 April 19—South Mills, Camden County, engagement at.  
 April 19—Trent Road, skirmish on the.  
 April 27—Haughton's Mill, Pollocksville Road, skirmish near.  
 April 29—Batchelder's Creek, skirmish near.  
 May 2—Deep Gully, Trenton Road, skirmish at.  
 May 15-16—Trenton Bridge, Young's Cross-Roads, and Pollocksville, skirmishes near.  
 May 22—Trenton and Pollocksville Cross-Roads, skirmish at the.  
 June 5—Tranter's Creek, action at.  
 July 9—Hamilton, capture of.  
 July 26—Mill Creek, skirmish at.  
 July 26-29—Young's Cross-Roads, reconnoissance to and skirmish.  
 Aug. 30—Plymouth, skirmish near.  
 Sept. 6—Washington, attack on.  
 Nov. 2—Little Creek, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 2—Rawle's Mill, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 11—New Bern, demonstration on.  
 Nov. 18—Core Creek, skirmish at.



- Dec. 10—Plymouth, attack on.
- Dec. 11-12—Kinston Road, skirmishes on the.
- Dec. 13-14—Southwest Creek, skirmishes at.
- Dec. 14—Kinston, engagement at.
- Dec. 15—White Hall Bridge, affair at.
- Dec. 16—Goshen Swamp, affair at.
- Dec. 16—Mount Olive Station, affair at.
- Dec. 16—White Hall, engagement at.
- Dec. 17—Goldsboro Bridge, engagement at.
- Dec. 17—Thompson's Bridge, skirmish at.
- Dec. 27—Elizabeth City, skirmish at.

## 1863

- Jan. 19—White Oak Creek, skirmish at.
- Jan. 20—Jacksonville, skirmish near.
- Feb. 7—Edenton, skirmish near.
- Feb. 10—Batchelder's Creek, skirmish at.
- Feb. 13—Sandy Ridge, skirmish at.
- Feb. 13—Washington, skirmish near.
- Feb. 23—Caswell, Fort, engagement at.
- March 3—Fairfield, skirmish near.
- March 4—Swan Quarter, skirmish near.
- March 6-8—Kinston, demonstration on.
- March 7—Core Creek, skirmish near.
- March 7—Dover, skirmish near.
- March 13-14—Deep Gully, skirmishes at and near.
- March 14—Anderson, Fort, attack on.
- March 23—Winfield, skirmish at.
- March 24—Rocky Hock Creek, skirmish at.
- March 30—Rodman's Point, skirmish at.
- March 30-April 20—Washington, siege of, and pursuit of Confederate forces.
- April 1, 4, 5—Rodman's Point, engagements at.
- April 2—Hill's Point, engagement at.
- April 6—Nixonton, skirmish at.
- April 9—Blount's Creek, action at.
- April 16—Hill's Point, affair at.
- April 16—Rodman's Point, affair at.
- April 17-18—Core Creek, skirmish near.
- April 19—Big Swift Creek, skirmish at.
- April 20—Sandy Ridge, skirmish at.
- April 28—Wise's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.
- May 5—Peletier's Mill, skirmish at.
- May 20-23—Kinston, demonstration on.
- May 22—Gum Swamp, skirmish at.
- May 23—Batchelder's Creek, skirmish at.
- July 5—Kenansville, skirmish at.
- July 5—Warsaw, skirmish at.
- July 6—Free Bridge, near Trenton, skirmish at.
- July 6—Trenton, skirmish near.
- July 17-20—Swift Creek Village, skirmish at.
- July 20—Sparta, skirmish at.
- July 20—Tarboro and Sparta, skirmishes at.



July 21—Street's Ferry, skirmish at.  
 July 22—Scupperton, skirmish at.  
 July 26—Potecasi Creek, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 14—Washington, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 18—Pasquotank, skirmish near.  
 Sept. 12—South Mills, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 16-17—Pungo Landing, affairs at.  
 Oct. 17—Camden Court House, skirmish near.  
 Oct. 23, 26—Warm Springs, skirmishes at.  
 Oct. 27—Cherokee County, skirmish in.  
 Oct. 30—Ford's Mill, near New Bern, affair at.  
 Oct. 30—New Bern, affair at.  
 Nov. 4—Rocky Run, skirmish near.  
 Nov. 25—Greenville, skirmish near.  
 Nov. 26—Warm Springs, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 26—Plymouth, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 1—Cedar Point, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 10—Hertford, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 16—Free Bridge, skirmish near.  
 Dec. 18—Indiantown, or Sandy Swamp, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 30—Greenville, skirmish near.

## 1864

Jan. 4, 11—Lockwood's Folly Inlet, affairs at.  
 Jan. 30—Windsor, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 1—Batchelder's Creek, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 2—Bogue Sound Blockhouse, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 2—Gales' Creek, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 2, 6—Newport Barracks, skirmishes at and near.  
 Feb. 7—Waccomo Neck, affair at.  
 Feb. 16—Fairfield, affair at.  
 March 26—Black Jack Church, skirmish near.  
 April 1—Plymouth, skirmish near.  
 April 5—Blount's Creek, affair near.  
 April 17—Beaver Creek, skirmish at.  
 April 17-20—Plymouth, capture of.  
 April 27-29—Masonboro Inlet, affairs at.  
 May 4—Trent Road, skirmish on.  
 May 5—Albemarle, C. S. S., engagement with.  
 May 5—Trent River, skirmish on the south side of.  
 June 22—Southwest Creek, skirmish at.  
 June 28—Camp Vance, capture of.  
 Aug. 2—Murphy, skirmish near.  
 Dec. 7-27—Fort Fisher, operations against.

## 1865

Jan. 13—Fort Fisher, bombardment of, by naval fleet.  
 Jan. 13-15—Fort Fisher, combined military and naval operations against.  
 Jan. 15—Fort Fisher, assault and capture of.  
 Jan. 16-17—Fort Caswell blown up, and works at Smithville and Reeves' Point abandoned by Confederates.  
 Jan. 19—Half-Moon Battery, skirmish at.



- Feb. 11—Sugar Loaf, action near.  
Feb. 17—Smithville, skirmish near.  
Feb. 18—Fort Anderson, action at.  
Feb. 18—Orton Pond, skirmish at.  
Feb. 19—Fort Anderson, capture of.  
Feb. 19-20—Town Creek, skirmish at.  
Feb. 21—Eagle Island, skirmish at.  
Feb. 21—Fort Strong, skirmish at.  
Feb. 22—Northeast Ferry, skirmish at.  
Feb. 22—Smith's Creek, skirmish at.  
March 4—Phillips' Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
March 7—Rockingham, skirmish at.  
March 7—Southwest Creek, skirmish at.  
March 8-10—Kinston, or Wise's Forks, battle of.  
March 11, 13—Fayetteville, skirmishes at and near.  
March 15—Smith's Mills, Black River, skirmish near.  
March 15—South River, skirmish at.  
March 16—Averasboro (or Taylor's Hole Creek), battle of.  
March 16—Little Cohera Creek, skirmish at.  
March 17—Averasboro, skirmish at.  
March 17, 20—Falling Creek, skirmishes at and near.  
March 18—Benton's Cross-Roads, skirmish near.  
March 18—Bushy Swamp, skirmish at.  
March 18—Mingo Creek, skirmish at.  
March 19—Goldsboro, skirmish at Neuse River Bridge, near.  
March 19-20, 23—Cox's Bridge, Neuse River, skirmishes at and near.  
March 19-21—Bentonville, battle of.  
March 22—Black Creek, skirmish at.  
March 22—Hannah's Creek, skirmish at.  
March 22—Mill Creek, skirmish at.  
March 24—Moccasin Creek, skirmish near.  
March 28—Boone, skirmish at.  
March 28—Snow Hill, skirmish near.  
March 29—Moseley Hall, skirmish near.  
March 29—Wilkesboro, skirmish at.  
March 31—Gulley's, skirmish at.  
March 31—Hookerton, skirmish at.  
April 1—Snow Hill, skirmish near.  
April 2—Goldsboro, skirmish near.  
April 5-7—Neuse River, destruction of U. S. transports on.  
April 8—Martinsville, action at.  
April 10—Boonville, skirmish at.  
April 10—Moccasin Swamp, skirmish at.  
April 10—Nahunta Station, skirmish near.  
April 11—Beulah, skirmish near.  
April 11—Mocksville, skirmish near.  
April 11—Pikeville, affair near.  
April 11—Shallow Ford, skirmish at.  
April 11—Smithfield, skirmish near.  
April 12—Grant's Creek, near Salisbury, skirmish at.  
April 12—Raleigh, action near.  
April 12—Salisbury, engagement at.





- April 12—Salisbury, skirmish at Grant's Creek, near.
- April 12—Swift Creek, action at.
- April 13—Raleigh, skirmish near.
- April 13, 14—Morrisville, skirmishes at and near.
- April 14—Saunders' Farm, affair near.
- April 15—Chapel Hill, skirmish near.
- April 17—Catawba River, near Morganton, action at.
- April 22—Howard's Gap, Blue Ridge Mountains, skirmish at.
- April 23—Hendersonville, action near.
- April 26—Bennett's House, near Durham Station, surrender of the Confederate army in North Carolina at.

## OHIO.

1863

- June 16-20—Holmes County, affairs in.
- July 14—Camp Dennison, skirmish at.
- July 17—Berlin, skirmish at.
- July 17—Hamden, skirmish near.
- July 18—Pomeroy, skirmish at.
- July 20—Cheshire, skirmish near.
- July 20—Coal Hill, skirmish at.
- July 20—Hockingport, skirmish near.
- July 22—Eagleport, skirmish at.
- July 23—Rockville, skirmish at.
- July 24—Athens, skirmish at.
- July 24—Washington, skirmish at.
- July 25—Springfield, skirmish near.
- July 25—Steubenville, skirmish near.
- July 26—Salineville, skirmish at.

## PENNSYLVANIA.

1862

- Oct. 10—Chambersburg, capture of.
- Oct. 11—Gettysburg, skirmish near.

1863

- June 22—Greencastle, skirmish at.
- June 25—McConnellsburg, skirmish near.
- June 26—Gettysburg, skirmish near.
- June 28—Fountain Dale, skirmish at.
- June 28—Wrightsville, skirmish at.
- June 28-29—Oyster Point, skirmish near.
- June 29—McConnellsburg, skirmish at.
- June 30—Fairfield, skirmish at.
- June 30—Hanover, action at.
- June 30—Sporting Hill, near Harrisburg, skirmish at.
- July 1—Carlisle, skirmish at.
- July 1-3—Gettysburg, battle of.
- July 2—Chambersburg, skirmish near.
- July 2—Hunterstown, skirmish at.



- July 3—Fairfield, action at.
  - July 4—Fairfield Gap, skirmish at.
  - July 4—Monterey Gap, action at.
  - July 5—Cunningham's Cross-Roads, s skirmish at.
  - July 5—Fairfield, skirmish near.
  - July 5—Greencastle, skirmish near.
  - July 5—Green Oak, skirmish near.
  - July 5—Mercersburg, skirmish near.
  - July 5—Stevens' Furnace (or Caledonia Iron Works), skirmish at.
- 1864
- July 29—Mercersburg, skirmish at.
  - July 30—McConnellsburg, skirmish at.
  - July 30—Chambersburg, burning of.

## SOUTH CAROLINA.

1861

- April 12-14—Sumter, Fort, bombardment of.
- Nov. 7—Beauregard, Fort, bombardment and capture of.
- Nov. 7—Walker, Fort, bombardment and capture of.
- Dec. 17—Chisolm's Island, skirmish on.

1862

- Jan. 1—Port Royal Ferry, Coosaw River, engagement at.
- Feb. 10—Barnwell Island, skirmish on.
- March 20—Buckingham, affair at.
- March 20—Hunting Island, affair at.
- March 29—Edisto Island, affair on.
- April 19—Edisto Island, skirmish on.
- April 29—Pineberry Battery, engagement at.
- April 29—Willstown, engagement at.
- April 29—White Point, engagement at.
- May 20—Cole's Island, bombardment of.
- May 21—Battery Island, affair near.
- May 25—James and Dixon's Islands, affair between.
- May 29—Pocotaligo, skirmish at.
- June 3, 8, 10—James Island, skirmishes on.
- June 6—Port Royal Ferry, affair at.
- June 13—White House, near Hilton Head, affair at.
- June 16—Secessionville, engagement at.
- June 21—Simmons' Bluff, engagement at.
- July 4—Port Royal Ferry, affair at.
- July 9-10—Pocotaligo, demonstration against.
- Aug. 13—Black River, engagement on.
- Aug. 21—Pinckney Island, affair on.
- Sept. 10—Kilkenny River, skirmish on the.
- Oct. 18—Kirk's Bluff, affair at.
- Oct. 22—Caston's Plantation, engagement at.
- Oct. 22—Frampton's Plantation, engagement at.
- Oct. 24—Saint Helena Island, affair on.

1863

- Jan. 31—Bull Island, affair on.
- Jan. 31—Charleston, attack on blockading squadron off.



- April 7—Charleston Harbor, engagement in.  
 April 7—Sumter, Fort, attack on.  
 April 10—Folly Island, skirmish on.  
 April 27—Murray's Inlet, affair at.  
 May 4—Murray's Inlet, affair at.  
 May 19—Pope's Island, skirmish at.  
 May 31—James Island, affair on.  
 June 18—Edisto Island, skirmish on.  
 June 21—Dixon's Island, affair on.  
 July 10—Willstown Bluff, Pon Pon River, engagement at.  
 July 11, 18—Battery Wagner, Morris Island, assaults on.  
 July 16—Grimball's Landing, James Island, engagement near.  
 July 18-Sept. 7—Battery Wagner, Morris Island, siege of.  
 July 20—Legare's Point, bombardment of.  
 Aug. 2—Chesterfield, steamer, attack on, at Cummings Point.  
 Aug. 4—Vincent's Creek, affair at the mouth of.  
 Aug. 17-Dec. 31—Fort Sumter, bombardment of.  
 Aug. 21-Dec. 31—Charleston, bombardment of.  
 Aug. 25-26—Morris Island, assault on, and capture of Confederate rifle-pits.  
 Sept. 7—Battery Island, affair on.  
 Sept. 7-8—Charleston Harbor, engagement in.  
 Sept. 8-9—Fort Sumter, boat attack on.  
 Oct. 19—Murrell's Inlet, affair at.  
 Nov. 16—Sullivan's Island Batteries, engagement between U. S. Monitors and.  
 Nov. 19-20—Fort Sumter, boat demonstration upon.  
 Nov. 24—Cunningham's Bluff, skirmish near.  
 Dec. 5—Murrell's Inlet, affair at.  
 Dec. 25—Marblehead, U. S. S., attack on, in Stono River.  
 Dec. 25—Stono River, attack on U. S. S. Marblehead in.

## 1864

- Jan. 7—Waccamaw Neck, affair on.  
 Feb. 9, 11—Bugbee Bridge, skirmish near.  
 March 25—McClellansville, affair at.  
 March 31—Spring Island, affair at.  
 April 8—James Island, demonstration on.  
 April 15—Battery Island, demonstration on.  
 May 10—Pine Island, skirmish on.  
 May 13—James Island, affair on.  
 May 16—Ashepoo River, skirmish on the.  
 May 21-23—James Island, demonstration on.  
 July 2, 16—James Island, skirmishes on.  
 July 2—Secessionville, skirmish near.  
 July 3—Fort Johnson and Battery Simkins, assault on.  
 July 3, 7—John's Island, skirmishes on.  
 July 3—King's Creek, skirmish at.  
 July 3—White Point, skirmish near.  
 July 4-9—Battery Pringle, attack on.  
 July 9—Burden's Causeway, John's Island, action at.  
 July 10—Fort Johnson and Battery Simkins, attack on.



- Nov. 29—Boyd's Landing, skirmish near.  
 Nov. 30—Honey Hill, engagement at, near Grahamville.  
 Dec. 6-9—Charleston & Savannah Railroad, demonstration  
 against.  
 Dec. 20—Pocotaligo Road, skirmish near.

## 1865

- Jan. 3—Hardeeville, skirmish near.  
 Jan. 20—Salkehatchie River, reconnaissance from Pocotaligo  
 and skirmish.  
 Jan. 26—Pocotaligo, skirmish near.  
 Jan. 27—Ennis Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 28—Combahee River, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 29—Robertsville, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 30—Lawtonville, skirmish near.  
 Feb. 1—Hickory Hill, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 1—Whippy Swamp Creek, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 2—Barker's Mill, Whippy Swamp, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 2—Duck Branch, near Loper's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 2—Lawtonville, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 2—Rivers' and Broxton's Bridges, Salkehatchie River,  
 skirmishes at.  
 Feb. 3—Dillingham's Cross-Roads, or Duck Branch, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 3—Duck Branch, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 3—Rivers' Bridge, Salkehatchie River, action at.  
 Feb. 4—Angle's Post-Office, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 4—Buford's Bridge, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 5—Combahee Ferry, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 5—Duncanville, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 6—Barnwell, skirmish near.  
 Feb. 6—Cowpen Ford, Little Salkehatchie River, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 6—Lane's Bridge, action at Fishburn's Plantation, near.  
 Feb. 6—Little Salkehatchie River, skirmish at Cowpen Ford.  
 Feb. 7—Blackville, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 7—Edisto Railroad Bridge, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 8—Cannon's Bridge, South Edisto River, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 8—Walker's or Valley Bridge, Edisto River, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 8—White Pond, skirmish near.  
 Feb. 8—Williston, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 9—Binnaker's Bridge, South Edisto River, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 9—Holman's Bridge, South Edisto River, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 10—James Island, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 10—Johnson's Station, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 11—Aiken, action at.  
 Feb. 11—Battery Simkins, attack on.  
 Feb. 11—Johnson's Station, action at.  
 Feb. 11-12—Orangeburg, skirmishes about.  
 Feb. 14—Gunter's Bridge, North Edisto River, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 14—Wolf's Plantation, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 15—Bates' Ferry, Congaree River, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 15—Congaree Creek, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 15—Savannah Creek, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 15—Two League Cross-Roads, near Lexington, skirmish at.





- Feb. 16-17—Columbia, skirmishes about.  
 Feb. 22—Wateree River, skirmish near.  
 Feb. 22, 23, 24—Camden, skirmishes.  
 Feb. 25—West's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 26—Lynch's Creek, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 26—Stroud's Mill, skirmish near.  
 Feb. 27—Cloud's House, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 27—Mount Elon, skirmish near.  
 Feb. 28—Cheraw, skirmish near.  
 Feb. 28—Rocky Mount, skirmish near.  
 March 1—Wilson's Store, skirmish at.  
 March 2—Chesterfield, skirmish at.  
 March 2—Thompson's Creek, near Chesterfield, skirmish at.  
 March 3—Big Black Creek, affair near.  
 March 3—Blakeny's, skirmish near.  
 March 3—Hornsboro, skirmish near.  
 March 3—Juniper Creek, near Cheraw, skirmish at.  
 March 3—Thompson's Creek, near Cheraw, skirmish at.  
 March 4-6—Florence, expedition from near Cheraw to, and skirmishes.  
 March 5—Cheraw, skirmish near.  
 March 8—Love's or Blue's Bridge, skirmish at.  
 March 10—Monroe's Cross-Roads, engagement at.  
 April 9—Dingle's Mill, skirmish near Sumterville at.  
 April 15—Statesburg, skirmish near.  
 April 18—Boykins' Mill, skirmish at.  
 April 19—Denkins' Mill, skirmish at.  
 April 19—Statesburg, skirmish at Beech Creek near.

## TENNESSEE.

1861

- Sept. 29—Travisville, affair at.

1862

- Jan. 17-22—Fort Henry, demonstration on.  
 Feb. 2—Morgan County, skirmish in.  
 Feb. 12-16—Fort Donelson, siege and capture of.  
 Feb. 14—Cumberland Gap, skirmish near.  
 March 1—Pittsburg, engagement at.  
 March 9—Granny White's Pike, skirmish on.  
 March 11—Paris, skirmish near.  
 March 14—Jacksboro, skirmish at.  
 March 16—Pittsburg Landing, skirmishes near.  
 March 21-23—Cumberland Gap, reconnoissance to and skirmish.  
 March 24—Camp Jackson, skirmish at.  
 March 31—Adamsville, skirmish near.  
 March 31—Purdy Road, skirmish on, near Adamsville.  
 April 3, 17, 28, 29—Monterey, skirmishes near and at.  
 April 4—Lawrenceburg, skirmish at.  
 April 4—Pittsburg Landing, skirmishes near.  
 April 6-7—Pittsburg Landing, battle of.  
 April 6-7—Shiloh, battle of.  
 April 11—Wartrace, skirmish at.



- April 15-27—Pea Ridge, skirmishes at.  
April 24—Lick Creek, skirmish at.  
April 24—Shelbyville Road, skirmish on.  
April 26—Atkins' Mill, skirmish at.  
April 29—Cumberland Gap, skirmish near.  
May 1, 4, 11—Pulaski, skirmishes near and at.  
May 5—Lebanon, action at.  
May 5—Lockridge's Mill, skirmish at.  
May 9—Elk River, skirmish on, near Bethel.  
May 10—Plum Point, naval engagement at.  
May 20—Elk River, skirmishes at.  
May 24—Winchester, skirmishes at.  
June 1—Jasper, skirmish near.  
June 4—Sweeden's Cove, near Jasper, skirmish at.  
June 4, 10—Winchester, skirmishes at.  
June 6—Memphis, naval engagement off, and capture of.  
June 7—Jackson, capture of.  
June 7—Readyville, skirmish at.  
June 10, 16—Wilson's Gap, skirmishes at.  
June 10, 16—Winchester, skirmishes at.  
June 10—Rogers' Gap, skirmish at.  
June 11-13—Big Creek Gap, skirmishes at.  
June 21—Battle Creek, skirmishes at.  
June 21—Rankin's Ferry, skirmish at.  
June 25—La Fayette Station, affair near.  
June 30—Powell River, affair at.  
June 30—Rising Sun, skirmish at.  
July 5—Walden's Ridge, affair at.  
July 13—Murfreesboro, action at.  
July 13—Wolf River, skirmish near.  
July 15—Wallace's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
July 17—Mount Pleasant, skirmish near.  
July 17—Columbia, skirmish at.  
July 21—Nashville, skirmish around.  
July 25—Clinton's Ferry, skirmish at.  
July 26—Tazewell, skirmish at.  
July 27—Lower Post Ferry, affair near.  
July 27—Toone's Station, affair near.  
July 28—Humboldt, skirmish at.  
July 29—Denmark, affair near.  
July 29—Hatchie Bottom, affair at.  
Aug. 3—Nonconnah Creek, skirmish on.  
Aug. 5—Sparta, skirmish at.  
Aug. 6—Tazewell, skirmish near.  
Aug. 7, 18—Dyersburg, skirmishes near.  
Aug. 7—Wood Springs, skirmish at.  
Aug. 11—Kinderhook, affair near.  
Aug. 11—Saulsbury, skirmish at.  
Aug. 11—Williamsport, skirmish near.  
Aug. 13—Gallatin, skirmish near.  
Aug. 13—Huntsville, skirmish at.  
Aug. 13, 31—Medon, skirmishes at and near.  
Aug. 14—Mount Pleasant, skirmish near.



- Aug. 16—Meriwether's Ferry, Obion River, skirmish at.
- Aug. 17—Pine Mountain, skirmish at.
- Aug. 20—Drake's Creek, skirmish near.
- Aug. 20—Edgefield Junction, skirmishes near.
- Aug. 20—Manscoe Creek, skirmish at.
- Aug. 21—Gallatin, action near.
- Aug. 21—Hartsville Road, action on the.
- Aug. 23-25—Donelson, Fort, skirmishes at and near.
- Aug. 26—Cumberland Iron Works, skirmish at.
- Aug. 26-27—Cumberland Gap, skirmishes near.
- Aug. 27—Battle Creek, attack on Fort McCook.
- Aug. 27—Pulaski, skirmish near.
- Aug. 27—Reynolds' Station, skirmish near.
- Aug. 27—Richland Creek, skirmishes on and near.
- Aug. 27—Murfreesboro, skirmish near.
- Aug. 27—Round Mountain, skirmish at.
- Aug. 27—Woodbury, skirmish near.
- Aug. 29—Short Mountain Cross-Roads, skirmish at.
- Aug. 30—Altamont, skirmish at.
- Aug. 30—Bolivar, skirmishes at and near.
- Aug. 30—Little Pond, skirmish at.
- Aug. 30—Medon Station, skirmishes at and near.
- Aug. 31—Rogers' Gap, skirmish at.
- Aug. 31—Toone's Station, skirmish near.
- Sept. 1—Britton's Lane, skirmish at.
- Sept. 1—Denmark, affair near.
- Sept. 2—Memphis, skirmish near.
- Sept. 2—Nashville, skirmish around.
- Sept. 5—Burnt Bridge, skirmish at.
- Sept. 5—Humboldt, skirmish near.
- Sept. 6—New Providence, skirmish at.
- Sept. 7—Murfreesboro, skirmish near.
- Sept. 7—Pine Mountain, skirmish at.
- Sept. 7—Riggin's Hill, skirmish at.
- Sept. 9-10—Columbia, skirmishes near.
- Sept. 18-23—Fort Donelson, operations about and skirmishes.
- Sept. 19-20—Brentwood, skirmishes at.
- Sept. 20-22—Grand Junction, expedition to and skirmish.
- Sept. 21—Van Buren, skirmish near.
- Sept. 23—Wolf Creek Bridge, skirmish at.
- Sept. 26—Pocahontas, skirmish at.
- Sept. 30—Goodlettsville, skirmish at.
- Oct. 1—Davis' Bridge, skirmish at.
- Oct. 1, 5, 13, 20—Nashville, skirmishes around.
- Oct. 3—La Fayette Landing, affair near.
- Oct. 4—Middleton, skirmish near.
- Oct. 5—Big Hatchie, engagement at.
- Oct. 5—Big Hill, skirmish near.
- Oct. 5—Chewalla, skirmish near.
- Oct. 5—Davis' Bridge, Hatchie River, engagement at.
- Oct. 5—Hatchie Bridge, engagement at.
- Oct. 5—Metamora, engagement at.
- Oct. 5-15—Neely's Bend, Cumberland River, skirmishes at.



- Oct. 5—Fort Riley, skirmish at.
- Oct. 7—La Vergne, skirmish near.
- Oct. 9—Humboldt, affair near.
- Oct. 10—Medon Station, skirmishes at and near.
- Oct. 13—Lebanon Road, skirmish on the.
- Oct. 17—Island No. 10, skirmish at.
- Oct. 20—Gallatin Pike, skirmish on the.
- Oct. 20—Hermitage Ford, skirmish at.
- Oct. 21—Woodville, skirmish at.
- Oct. 22-25—Waverly, expeditions to, with skirmishes.
- Oct. 23—Richland Creek, skirmishes on and near.
- Oct. 23, 28—Waverly, skirmishes near.
- Oct. 24—White Oak Springs, skirmish near.
- Nov. 5—Nashville, action at.
- Nov. 7—Tyree Springs, skirmish at.
- Nov. 7—White Range, skirmish at.
- Nov. 7-8—Gallatin, skirmishes at and near.
- Nov. 8—Cumberland River, skirmish on the.
- Nov. 9—Lebanon, skirmish at.
- Nov. 9—Silver Springs, skirmish at.
- Nov. 18—Double Bridge, skirmish at.
- Nov. 18—Rural Hill, skirmish at.
- Nov. 25—Clarksville, skirmish at.
- Nov. 26—Somerville, skirmish near.
- Nov. 27—Mill Creek, skirmish at.
- Nov. 28—Carthage Road, skirmishes on the.
- Nov. 28—Hartsville, skirmish near.
- Nov. 28—Rome, skirmish near.
- Dec. 1, 26, 30—Nolensville, skirmishes at and near.
- Dec. 3, 14—Nashville, attacks on forage train near.
- Dec. 4—Holly Tree Gap, skirmish near.
- Dec. 4—Stewart's Ferry, Stone's River, capture of outpost near.
- Dec. 7—Hartsville, action at.
- Dec. 9—Brentwood, skirmish near.
- Dec. 9—Dobbins' Ferry, skirmish at.
- Dec. 9, 11—La Vergne, skirmishes at and near.
- Dec. 11, 23, 24—Nashville, skirmishes near.
- Dec. 11, 21, 25—Wilson's Creek Pike, skirmishes on the.
- Dec. 12—Cherokee Station, skirmish at.
- Dec. 12, 26, 27—Franklin, skirmishes at.
- Dec. 14—Franklin Pike, skirmish on the.
- Dec. 18—Lexington, skirmish at.
- Dec. 19—Carroll Station, affair at.
- Dec. 19—Jackson, engagement near.
- Dec. 19—Spring Creek, affair at.
- Dec. 20—Forked Deer River, skirmish at railroad crossing on.
- Dec. 20—Humboldt, capture of, by Confederates.
- Dec. 20—Humboldt, recapture of, by Union forces.
- Dec. 21—Rutherford's Station, affair at.
- Dec. 24—Bolivar, skirmishes at and near.
- Dec. 24—Middleburg, skirmish at.
- Dec. 25—Prim's Blacksmith Shop, skirmish at.
- Dec. 26—Knob Gap, skirmish at.





- Dec. 26, 27, 30—La Vergne, skirmishes at and near.
- Dec. 26, 29—Wilkinson's Cross-Roads, skirmishes at and near.
- Dec. 27, 29, 30—Huntingdon, skirmishes at and near.
- Dec. 27—Jefferson Pike, skirmish on the.
- Dec. 27—Murfreesboro Pike, skirmish on the.
- Dec. 27—Stewart's Creek Bridge, Jefferson's Pike, skirmish at.
- Dec. 27—Stewart's Creek Bridge, Murfreesboro Pike, skirmish at.
- Dec. 27—Triune, skirmish at.
- Dec. 28—Perkins' Mill, skirmish at.
- Dec. 29—Lizzard's, skirmish at.
- Dec. 29-30—Murfreesboro, skirmishes at and near.
- Dec. 30—Blountsville, capture of Confederates at.
- Dec. 30—Carter's Depot, capture of.
- Dec. 30—Clarksburg, skirmish at.
- Dec. 30—Jefferson, skirmish at.
- Dec. 30—Rock Spring, skirmish at.
- Dec. 31—Murfreesboro, battle of.
- Dec. 31—Overall's Creek, skirmish at.
- Dec. 31—Parker's Cross-Roads, engagement at.
- Dec. 31—Red Mound, engagement at.
- Dec. 31—Stone's River, battle of.

## 1863

- Jan. 1—Clifton, skirmishes near.
- Jan. 1-5—La Vergne, skirmishes at and near.
- Jan. 1—Stewart's Creek, skirmish at.
- Jan. 2—Fort Donelson, skirmish near.
- Jan. 3—Cox's Hill, skirmish at.
- Jan. 3—Somerville, action at.
- Jan. 3—Stone's River, battle of.
- Jan. 3—Murfreesboro, battle of.
- Jan. 4—Manchester Pike, skirmish on the.
- Jan. 4—Monterey, skirmish at.
- Jan. 5—Franklin, skirmish at.
- Jan. 5—Lytle's Creek, skirmish at.
- Jan. 5—Nolensville, skirmish near.
- Jan. 5—Shelbyville Pike, skirmish on the.
- Jan. 5—Wilkinson's Cross-Roads, skirmish near.
- Jan. 8—Knob Creek, skirmish at.
- Jan. 8—Ripley, skirmish near.
- Jan. 10—Clifton, skirmish at.
- Jan. 11—Lowry's Ferry, skirmish at.
- Jan. 12—Ashland, affair at.
- Jan. 13—Chambers' Creek, skirmish at.
- Jan. 13—Hamburg, skirmish near.
- Jan. 13—Harpeth Shoals, affair at.
- Jan. 16—Waverly, expedition to, with skirmish.
- Jan. 19—Woodbury, skirmish near.
- Jan. 21—Shelbyville Pike, skirmishes on the.
- Jan. 23—Bradyville Pike, skirmishes on the.
- Jan. 23—Carthage, skirmish at.
- Jan. 23—Murfreesboro, skirmishes at and near.



- Jan. 24—Woodbury, skirmishes at and near.
- Jan. 25—Mill Creek, skirmish near.
- Jan. 27—Germantown, affair near.
- Jan. 28—Collierville, skirmish near.
- Jan. 28—Nashville, skirmish near.
- Jan. 28—Yorkville, skirmish near.
- Jan. 30—Dyersburg, skirmish at.
- Jan. 31—Middleton, skirmish at.
- Jan. 31—Rover, skirmish.
- Jan. 31—Unionville, skirmish at.
- Feb. 3—Cumberland Iron Works, skirmish at.
- Feb. 3—Fort Donelson, attack on.
- Feb. 4-7—Murfreesboro, skirmish.
- Feb. 9, 18—Moscow, affairs near
- Feb. 13—Rover, skirmish.
- Feb. 15—Auburn, skirmishes near.
- Feb. 15—Cainsville, skirmish near.
- Feb. 15—Nolensville, skirmish near.
- Feb. 16—Bradyville, skirmish.
- Feb. 20—Shelbyville Pike, skirmish on the.
- Feb. 22—Manchester Pike, skirmish on the.
- Feb. 27—Bloomington, skirmish near.
- March 1—Bradyville, skirmish.
- March 1, 6—Woodbury, skirmishes.
- March 2—Eagleville, skirmish near.
- March 2—Petersburg, skirmish near.
- March 3—Bear Creek, skirmish near.
- March 4, 31—Franklin, skirmishes.
- March 4, 13, 15—Rover, skirmishes.
- March 4—Unionville, skirmishes at.
- March 5—Chapel Hill, skirmish.
- March 5—Thompson's Station, engagement at.
- March 6—Christiana, skirmish.
- March 6—Middleton, skirmish at.
- March 8—Harpeth River, skirmish on the.
- March 8, 21—Triune, skirmishes at and near.
- March 9-10—Covington, skirmishes near.
- March 9, 4-14, 8-12, 23—Thompson's Station, skirmishes at and near.
- March 10-22—Murfreesboro, skirmishes.
- March 10-11—Rutherford Creek, skirmishes at.
- March 10-16—La Fayette and Moscow, scout to, and skirmish.
- March 14—Davis' Mill, skirmish at.
- March 15—La Fayette Depot, skirmish at.
- March 16, 29—Moscow, skirmishes.
- March 19—College Grove, skirmish near.
- March 19—Liberty, skirmish at.
- March 19—Richland Station, skirmish at.
- March 19—Spring Hill, skirmish at.
- March 20—Milton, action near.
- March 20—Vaught's Hill, action at.
- March 21—Salem, skirmish at.
- March 24—Davis' Mill Road, skirmish on, near La Grange.



- March 24—La Grange, skirmish on Davis' Mill Road, near.  
March 25—Brentwood and Little Harpeth River, actions at.  
March 25—Little Harpeth River, action at.  
March 27—Woodbury Pike, skirmish on the.  
March 28—Somerville, skirmish at.  
March 29—Belmont, action near.  
March 31—Eagleville, skirmish near.  
April 1—Columbia Pike, skirmish on the.  
April 1—Eagleville, skirmish near.  
April 2, 27—Carter Creek Pike, skirmishes on the.  
April 2, 3, 6, 7—Liberty, skirmishes at.  
April 3—Smith's Ford, skirmish at.  
April 3—Snow Hill, skirmish at.  
April 4—Lewisburg Pike, skirmish on the.  
April 4—Memphis, skirmish on Nonconnah Creek, near.  
April 4—Nonconnah Creek, near Memphis, skirmish on.  
April 4—Woodbury, skirmish.  
April 5—Davis' Mill, skirmish at.  
April 6—Green Hill, skirmish near.  
April 9—Franklin, skirmish.  
April 9—Obion River, skirmish near the.  
April 10—Antioch Station, affair at.  
April 10—Franklin, engagement at.  
April 10—La Vergne, skirmish near.  
April 12—Stewartsboro, skirmish at.  
April 13—Chapel Hill, skirmish.  
April 16—Eagleville, skirmish near.  
April 18, 22—Hartsville, skirmishes at.  
April 19—Trenton, skirmish at.  
April 23—Shelbyville Pike, skirmish on the.  
April 26—College Grove, affair near.  
April 26—Duck River Island, engagement at.  
April 26—Little Rock Landing, engagement at.  
May 2—Thompson's Station, skirmish.  
May 4—Nashville, affair near.  
May 5—Rover, skirmish.  
May 11—La Fayette, skirmish at.  
May 12—Linden, skirmish at.  
May 17—Bradyville Pike, skirmish on the.  
May 18—Horn Lake Creek, skirmish on.  
May 20—Collierville, skirmish at.  
May 20—Salem, skirmish at.  
May 22—Middleton, skirmish at.  
May 22—Yellow Creek, skirmish at.  
May 24, 25—Woodbury, skirmishes.  
May 29-30—Hamburg Landing, skirmishes at.  
May 30—Jordan's Store, skirmish at.  
June 3—Murfreesboro, skirmish.  
June 4—Franklin, engagement at.  
June 4—Liberty, skirmish at.  
June 4—Marshall Knob, skirmish near.  
June 4—Snow Hill, skirmish at.  
June 5—Smithville, skirmish at.



- June 6—Shelbyville Pike, skirmish on the.  
June 8, 9, 19—Triune, skirmishes at and near.  
June 11—Triune, action at.  
June 14—Green Hill, skirmish near.  
June 15—Trenton, affair near.  
June 17—Memphis, attack on Union transports near.  
June 17—Montgomery, affair near.  
June 17—Wartburg, affair at.  
June 19—Lenoir's Station, affair at.  
June 19-20—Knoxville, skirmishes at.  
June 20—Dixon Springs, skirmish at.  
June 20—Rogers' Gap, skirmish at.  
June 20—Strawberry Plains, skirmish at.  
June 21—Powder Springs Gap, skirmish at.  
June 22—Powell Valley, skirmish at.  
June 23, 28—Rover, skirmishes.  
June 23—Uniontown, skirmish at.  
June 24—Big Spring Branch, skirmish at.  
June 24—Bradyville, skirmish.  
June 24—Christiana, skirmish.  
June 24-26—Hoover's Gap, skirmishes at.  
June 24-27—Liberty Gap, skirmishes at.  
June 24—Middleton, skirmish at.  
June 25, 27—Fosterville, skirmishes at.  
June 25, 27—Guy's Gap, skirmishes at.  
June 26—Beech Grove, skirmish at.  
June 27—Fairfield, skirmish at.  
June 27—Shelbyville, action at.  
June 29—Decherd, skirmish at.  
June 29—Hillsboro, skirmish near.  
June 29—Lexington, skirmish near.  
June 29-30—Tullahoma, skirmishes near.  
July 1—Bobo's Cross-Roads, skirmish near.  
July 1, 2—Bethpage Bridge, Elk River, skirmishes at and near.  
July 2—Estill Springs, skirmish at.  
July 2—Morris' Ford, Elk River, skirmish at.  
July 2—Pelham, skirmish at.  
July 2—Rock Creek Ford, Elk River, skirmish at.  
July 3—Boiling Fork, skirmish at.  
July 3—Winchester, skirmish near.  
July 4—University Depot, skirmish near.  
July 5—Yellow Creek, skirmish at.  
July 10—Bolivar, skirmish at.  
July 10—Union City, capture of outpost at.  
July 13-15—Forked Deer River, skirmishes on.  
July 13, 15—Jackson, skirmish at and near.  
July 15—Pulaski, skirmish at.  
July 17—Stone's River, skirmish on.  
July 18—Memphis, skirmish near.  
July 29—Donelson, Fort, skirmish near.  
July 30—Grand Junction, skirmish at.  
Aug. 3—Denmark, skirmish near.  
Aug. 9—Sparta, skirmish at.





- Aug. 17—Calikiller Creek, near Sparta, skirmish at.  
Aug. 19—Weems' Springs, skirmish at.  
Aug. 21—Chattanooga, bombardment of.  
Aug. 21—Shellmound, action at.  
Aug. 26-27—Harrison's Landing, skirmishes at.  
Aug. 27-28—Narrows, near Shellmound, skirmish at the.  
Aug. 28—Jacksboro. skirmish at.  
Aug. 31—Winter's Gap, skirmish at.  
Sept. 5—Paducah, Ky., and Union City, skirmish.  
Sept. 5—Tazewell, skirmish at.  
Sept. 6—Sweet Water, skirmishes near.  
Sept. 6—Wartrace, skirmish at.  
Sept. 7—Lookout Valley, skirmish in.  
Sept. 8—Limestone Station and Telford's Station, actions at.  
Sept. 9—Friar's Island, skirmish at.  
Sept. 10, 25—Athens, skirmishes at.  
Sept. 12—Rheatown, skirmish at.  
Sept. 13—Clark's Creek Church, skirmish at.  
Sept. 13—Paris, skirmish at.  
Sept. 14—Henderson, skirmish near.  
Sept. 16—Montezuma, skirmish at.  
Sept. 18, 26—Calhoun, skirmishes at.  
Sept. 18—Cleveland, skirmish at.  
Sept. 18—Fort Donelson, affair near.  
Sept. 18—Kingsport, skirmish at.  
Sept. 19—Bristol, skirmish at.  
Sept. 19—Como, skirmish at.  
Sept. 20-21, 22—Carter's Depot, skirmishes at.  
Sept. 20-21—Zollicoffer, action at.  
Sept. 21, 28—Jonesboro, skirmishes at.  
Sept. 22—Blountsville, engagement at.  
Sept. 22, 23, 26—Chattanooga, skirmishes.  
Sept. 22—Missionary Ridge and Shallow Ford Gap, near Chattanooga, skirmishes at.  
Sept. 23—Cumberland Gap, skirmish at.  
Sept. 23—Summertown and Lookout Mountain, skirmishes at.  
Sept. 24—Zollicoffer, skirmish at.  
Sept. 25—Calhoun and Charleston, skirmishes at.  
Sept. 26—Winchester, skirmish near.  
Sept. 27—Locke's Mill, near Moscow, skirmish at.  
Sept. 27—Philadelphia, skirmish near.  
Sept. 28—Buell's Ford, skirmish at.  
Sept. 29—Friendship Church, skirmish at.  
Sept. 29—Leesburg, skirmish at.  
Sept. 30—Cotton Port Ford, Tennessee River, skirmish at.  
Sept. 30—Swallow Bluffs, skirmish at.  
Oct. 1—Mountain Gap, near Smith's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
Oct. 2, 8—Chattanooga, skirmishes near.  
Oct. 2—Dunlap, skirmish near.  
Oct. 2—Greeneville, skirmish at.  
Oct. 2—Jasper, skirmish on the Valley Road, near.  
Oct. 2—Pitt's Cross-Roads, Sequatchie Valley, skirmish at.  
Oct. 3—Bear Creek, skirmish at.



- Oct. 3—Beersheba, skirmish at Hill's Gap, near.
- Oct. 4—McMinnville, skirmish near.
- Oct. 5—Blue Springs, skirmish at.
- Oct. 5—Murfreesboro, skirmish at Stone's River Railroad Br. near.
- Oct. 5, 6—Readyville, skirmishes.
- Oct. 6—Christiana, affair at.
- Oct. 6—Fosterville, skirmish at Garrison's Creek, near.
- Oct. 7—Shelbyville, skirmish at Sims' Farm, near.
- Oct. 7—Farmington, action at.
- Oct. 9—Cleveland, skirmish at.
- Oct. 9—Cowan, affair at the railroad tunnel, near.
- Oct. 9—Elk River, skirmish at.
- Oct. 9—Sugar Creek, skirmish at.
- Oct. 10—Blue Springs, action at.
- Oct. 10—Hartsville, skirmish near.
- Oct. 10-11—Sweet Water, skirmishes at.
- Oct. 11—Collierville, action at.
- Oct. 11—Henderson's Mill and Rheatown, skirmishes at.
- Oct. 14—Blountsville, skirmish at.
- Oct. 14—Loudon, skirmish near.
- Oct. 15—Bristol, skirmish at.
- Oct. 15—Philadelphia, skirmish near.
- Oct. 16—Island No. 10, skirmish near.
- Oct. 19—Spurgeon's Mill, skirmish at.
- Oct. 19—Zollicoffer, skirmish at.
- Oct. 20, 25-26—Philadelphia, actions at.
- Oct. 21—Sulphur Springs, skirmish at.
- Oct. 22—New Madrid Bend, skirmish at.
- Oct. 26—Jones' Hill, skirmish at.
- Oct. 27—Brown's Ferry, skirmish at.
- Oct. 27—Clinch Mountain, skirmish at.
- Oct. 27—Columbia, scout from, toward Pulaski, and skirmish.
- Oct. 28—Clarksville, skirmish at.
- Oct. 28, 30—Leiper's Ferry, Holston River, skirmishes at.
- Oct. 28-29—Wauhatchie, engagement at.
- Oct. 29—Centreville, skirmish at.
- Oct. 30—Holston River, skirmish at Leiper's Ferry on the.
- Nov. 1—Eastport, skirmish at.
- Nov. 1—Fayetteville, skirmish at.
- Nov. 2—Centreville, skirmish at.
- Nov. 3—Collierville, action at.
- Nov. 3—Lawrenceburg, skirmish at.
- Nov. 3—Piney Factory, skirmish at.
- Nov. 4—Little Tennessee River, skirmish at Motley's Ford, on.
- Nov. 5—La Fayette, skirmish at.
- Nov. 5—Loudon County, skirmish in.
- Nov. 5—Moscow, skirmish at.
- Nov. 6—Rogersville, action near.
- Nov. 12—Cumberland Gap, skirmish near.
- Nov. 13—Blythe's Ferry, Tennessee River, skirmish at.
- Nov. 13—Palmyra, skirmish at.



- Nov. 14—Maryville, Little River, Rockford, and Huff's Ferry, skirmishes at.
- Nov. 15—Lenoir's Station, skirmish at.
- Nov. 15—Loudon, skirmish near.
- Nov. 15—Pillowville, skirmish at.
- Nov. 15—Stock Creek, skirmish at.
- Nov. 16—Campbell's Station, engagement at.
- Nov. 16-23—Kingston, skirmishes at and about.
- Nov. 16—Knoxville, skirmish near.
- Nov. 17-Dec. 4—Knoxville, siege of.
- Nov. 19—Colwell's Ford, skirmish at.
- Nov. 19—Meriwether's Ferry, near Union City, skirmish at.
- Nov. 19—Mulberry Gap, skirmish at.
- Nov. 20, 24, 26, 27—Sparta, skirmishes at and near.
- Nov. 22—Winchester, skirmish at.
- Nov. 23—Knoxville, action at.
- Nov. 23—Orchard Knob, or Indian Hill, and Bushy Knob, skirmishes at.
- Nov. 24—Kingston, action at.
- Nov. 24—Lookout Mountain, battle of.
- Nov. 24—Missionary Ridge, skirmish at foot of.
- Nov. 25—Missionary Ridge, battle of.
- Nov. 25—Yankeetown, skirmish near.
- Nov. 26—Charleston, skirmish at.
- Nov. 26—Chickamauga Station, skirmish at.
- Nov. 26—Pea Vine Valley, skirmish in.
- Nov. 26—Pigeon Hills, skirmish at.
- Nov. 27—Cleveland, skirmish at.
- Nov. 29—Fort Sanders, Knoxville, assault on.
- Nov. 30—Charleston, affair at.
- Nov. 30—Yankeetown, skirmish at.
- Dec. 1—Maynardville, skirmish near.
- Dec. 2—Philadelphia, skirmish at.
- Dec. 2, 5—Walker's Ford, Clinch River, skirmishes at.
- Dec. 3—Log Mountain, skirmish at.
- Dec. 3-4—Wolf River Bridge, near Moscow, action at.
- Dec. 4—Kingston, skirmish near.
- Dec. 4, 27—La Fayette, skirmishes at.
- Dec. 4-5—Loudon, skirmishes at and near.
- Dec. 5—Crab Gap, skirmish at.
- Dec. 6—Clinch Mountain, skirmish at.
- Dec. 6—Fayetteville, affair near.
- Dec. 7—Eagleville, skirmish at.
- Dec. 7, 16, 18—Rutledge, skirmishes at.
- Dec. 9-13—Bean's Station, skirmishes at and near.
- Dec. 9—Cumberland Mountain, affair at, on road to Crossville.
- Dec. 10—Gatlingsburg, skirmish at.
- Dec. 10—Long Ford, skirmish at.
- Dec. 10, 14—Morristown, skirmishes at and near.
- Dec. 10—Russellville, affair at.
- Dec. 12—Cheek's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.
- Dec. 12-13—Russellville, skirmishes at.
- Dec. 12—Shoal Creek, skirmish on.



- Dec. 12—Wayland Springs, skirmish near.  
 Dec. 13—Dandridge's Mill, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 13—Farley's Mill, Holston River, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 13—La Grange, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 14—Bean's Station, engagement at.  
 Dec. 14—Granger's Mill, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 15, 18—Bean's Station, skirmishes at.  
 Dec. 15—Livingston, skirmish near.  
 Dec. 16-19—Blain's Cross-Roads, skirmishes at and near.  
 Dec. 18, 28—Charleston, skirmishes at.  
 Dec. 19—Stone's Mill, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 21—Clinch River, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 21—McMinnville, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 22, 29—Cleveland, skirmishes at.  
 Dec. 23—Mulberry Village, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 24—Estenaula, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 24—Hays' Ferry, near Dandridge, action at.  
 Dec. 24—Jack's Creek, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 24—Peck's House, near New Market, skirmishes at, and  
     Mossy Creek Station.  
 Dec. 26, 29—Mossy Creek, actions at.  
 Dec. 26—New Castle, skirmish near.  
 Dec. 26—Somerville, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 27—Collierville, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 27—Grisson's Bridge, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 27—Huntingdon, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 27—Moscow, skirmish near.  
 Dec. 27, 29—Talbot's Station, skirmishes at.  
 Dec. 28—Calhoun, action at, and skirmish at Charleston.  
 Dec. 29—La Vergne, skirmish at.
- 1864
- Jan. 1, 14—Dandridge, skirmishes at.  
 Jan. 2, 25—La Grange, skirmishes at.  
 Jan. 5—Lawrence's Mill, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 10, 12—Mossy Creek, skirmishes near.  
 Jan. 13—Sevierville, affair at.  
 Jan. 14—Middleton, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 14—Schultz's Mill, Cosby Creek, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 16—Kimbrough's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 16—White County, skirmish in.  
 Jan. 16-17—Bend of Chucky Road, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 19—Big Springs, near Tazewell, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 19, 24—Tazewell, skirmishes at and near.  
 Jan. 20—Tracy City, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 21-22—Strawberry Plains and Armstrong's Ferry, skirmishes  
     at.  
 Jan. 22—Armstrong's Ferry, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 23—Newport, skirmish near.  
 Jan. 26—Flat Creek and Muddy Creek, skirmishes at.  
 Jan. 26—Sevierville, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 26, 27—Knoxville, skirmishes near.  
 Jan. 27—Fair Garden, engagement near.  
 Jan. 27—Kelly's Ford and McNutt's Bridge, skirmishes at





- Jan. 28—Fain's Island, Indian Creek, Island Ford, Kelly's Ford,  
and Swann's Island, skirmishes at.  
Jan. 28—Lee's House, on Cornersville Pike, affair at.  
Feb. 6—Bolivar—affair at.  
Feb. 9—Hardin County, skirmish in.  
Feb. 13—Fentress County, skirmish in.  
Feb. 18—Maryville, skirmish near.  
Feb. 18—Mifflin, skirmish at.  
Feb. 18—Sevierville, skirmish at.  
Feb. 20—Flat Creek, skirmish at.  
Feb. 20—Knoxville, skirmish near.  
Feb. 20—Sevierville Road, near Knoxville, skirmish on.  
Feb. 20—Strawberry Plains, skirmish at.  
Feb. 22—Calikiller Creek, skirmish on.  
Feb. 22—Powell's Bridge, skirmish at.  
Feb. 26—Sulphur Springs, skirmish at.  
Feb. 26—Washington, capture of.  
Feb. 27—Sequatchie Valley, skirmish in the.  
Feb. 28—Dukedom, skirmish at.  
March 5—Panther Springs, skirmish at.  
March 11—Calikiller Creek, skirmish on.  
March 12—Union City, skirmish near.  
March 13—Cheek's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
March 13—Spring Hill, skirmish at.  
March 14—Bent Creek, skirmish at.  
March 15—Flat Creek Valley, skirmish in.  
March 17—Manchester, skirmish at.  
March 21—Reynoldsburg, skirmish at.  
March 24—Murfreesboro, skirmish near.  
March 24—Union City, capture of.  
March 27—Louisville, affair at.  
March 28—Obey's River, skirmish on.  
March 29—Bolivar, skirmish near.  
April 2—Cleveland, skirmish at.  
April 3, 9—Raleigh, skirmishes near.  
April 3, 10—Cypress Swamp, skirmishes at.  
April 12—Fort Pillow, capture of.  
April 12—Pleasant Hill Landing, skirmish at.  
April 13—Mink Springs, near Cleveland, skirmish at.  
April 15—Greeneville, skirmish near.  
April 16—Rheatown, skirmish at.  
April 19-20—Waterhouse's Mill and Boiling Springs, skirmishes at.  
April 22—Duck River, skirmish on.  
April 29—Berry County, skirmish in.  
May 2—Bolivar, skirmish at.  
May 10—Winchester, affair with guerrillas at.  
May 13—Pulaski, skirmish at.  
May 19—Dandridge, skirmish at.  
May 24—Nashville, skirmish near.  
May 25—Cripple Creek, Woodbury Pike, skirmish near.  
May 30—Greeneville, skirmish at.  
June 9, 29—La Fayette, skirmishes at.  
June 13, 23—Collierville, skirmishes.



- June 14—Bean's Station, skirmish at.
- June 15—Moscow, skirmish near.
- June 20, 26—White's Station, skirmishes at.
- June 21—Decatur County, skirmish in.
- June 23—La Fayette, attack on train near.
- July 2—Byhalia (Miss.) Road, south of Collierville, skirmish at.
- July 2, 24—Collierville, skirmishes near.
- July 3—La Grange, skirmish near.
- July 20—Blount County, skirmish in.
- July 22-23, 30—Clifton, skirmishes at.
- July 28—Long's Mills, skirmish at, near Mulberry Gap.
- Aug. 1—Athens, skirmish at.
- Aug. 2—Morristown, skirmish at.
- Aug. 3-4—Triune, skirmishes at.
- Aug. 4—Tracy City, skirmish at.
- Aug. 8—La Fayette, skirmish at.
- Aug. 18—Charleston, skirmish at.
- Aug. 20—Pine Bluff, skirmish at.
- Aug. 21—Memphis, attack on.
- Aug. 21, Oct. 8—Rogersville, skirmishes at.
- Aug. 23—Blue Springs, skirmish at.
- Aug. 31—Clifton, skirmish at.
- Sept. 4—Greeneville, skirmish at.
- Sept. 4—Park's Gap, skirmish at.
- Sept. 6—Readyville, skirmish at.
- Sept. 10—Woodbury, skirmish at.
- Sept. 12—Memphis, skirmish near.
- Sept. 25—Johnsonville, skirmish near.
- Sept. 26—Richland Creek, skirmish at, near Pulaski.
- Sept. 26, 27—Pulaski, skirmishes.
- Sept. 27—Lobelville and Beardstown, skirmishes at.
- Sept. 28—Leesburg, skirmish at.
- Sept. 28—Rheatown, skirmish near.
- Sept. 28—Wells' Hill, skirmish at.
- Sept. 29—Centreville, skirmish at.
- Sept. 29—Jonesboro, skirmish at.
- Sept. 29—Lynchburg, skirmish near.
- Sept. 30—Carter's Station, skirmish at.
- Sept. 30—Duvall's Ford, skirmish at.
- Oct. 1—Carter's Station, skirmish at.
- Oct. 1—Clinch River and Laurel Creek Gap, skirmishes at.
- Oct. 2—Columbia, skirmish near.
- Oct. 4, 20, 25—Memphis, skirmishes near.
- Oct. 6—Kingsport, skirmish at.
- Oct. 7—Kingston, skirmish at.
- Oct. 10—Bean's Station, skirmish near.
- Oct. 10—Gallatin, affair near.
- Oct. 10—Thorn Hill, near Bean's Station, skirmish at.
- Oct. 11—Fort Donelson, skirmish near.
- Oct. 12—Greeneville, skirmish at.
- Oct. 15—Mossy Creek, skirmish at.
- Oct. 16—Bull's Gap, skirmish near.



- Oct. 18—Clinch Mountain, skirmish at.
- Oct. 21—Clinch Valley, near Sneedville, skirmish in.
- Oct. 27—Fort Randolph, attack on steamer Belle Saint Louis at.
- Oct. 27—Mossy Creek and Panther Springs, skirmishes at.
- Oct. 28—Morristown, action at.
- Oct. 28—Russellville, skirmish at.
- Oct. 29—Nonconnah Creek, skirmish at.
- Oct. 30—Bainbridge, skirmish at.
- Nov. 1—Union Station, skirmishes at.
- Nov. 2-3—Davidson's Ferry, Tennessee River, attack on gunboats at.
- Nov. 4-5—Johnsonville, action at.
- Nov. 11—Russellville, skirmish at.
- Nov. 11-13—Bull's Gap, action at.
- Nov. 14—Russellville, action near.
- Nov. 15—Collierville, skirmish near.
- Nov. 16-17—Strawberry Plains, skirmishes at.
- Nov. 17—Flat Creek, skirmish at.
- Nov. 22—Lawrenceburg, action at.
- Nov. 23—Fouche Springs, skirmish at.
- Nov. 23—Henryville, skirmish at.
- Nov. 23—Mount Pleasant, action at.
- Nov. 24—Campbellsville, action at.
- Nov. 24—Lynnville, skirmish at.
- Nov. 24-27—Columbia, skirmishes in front of.
- Nov. 28—Duck River, skirmishes at crossings of.
- Nov. 28—Shelbyville, skirmish at.
- Nov. 29—Columbia Ford, action at.
- Nov. 29—Mount Carmel, skirmish at.
- Nov. 29—Rally Hill, skirmish near.
- Nov. 29—Spring Hill, engagement at.
- Nov. 29, 30—Thompson's Station, affairs at.
- Nov. 30—Franklin, battle of.
- Dec. 1—Owen's Cross-Roads, action at.
- Dec. 2-4—Nashville & Chattanooga Railroad, operations against stockades and blockhouses on.
- Dec. 4, 6—Bell's Mills, actions at.
- Dec. 4—White's Station, skirmish at.
- Dec. 5-7—Murfreesboro, demonstrations against.
- Dec. 12—Big Creek, near Rogersville, skirmish at.
- Dec. 13—Kingsport, action at.
- Dec. 13—Murfreesboro, attack on railroad train near.
- Dec. 14—Bristol, affair at.
- Dec. 14—Memphis, skirmish near, on the Germantown road.
- Dec. 15—Murfreesboro, capture of railroad train near.
- Dec. 15-16—Nashville, battle of.
- Dec. 17—Franklin, action at.
- Dec. 17—Hollow Tree Gap, action at.
- Dec. 17—West Harpeth River, action at.
- Dec. 18—Spring Hill, skirmish at.
- Dec. 19—Curtis' Creek, skirmish at.
- Dec. 19—Rutherford's Creek, skirmish at.



- Dec. 20—Columbia, skirmish at.
- Dec. 22—Duck River, skirmish at.
- Dec. 23—Warfield's, skirmish at, near Columbia.
- Dec. 24—Lynnville, skirmish at.
- Dec. 24-25—Richland Creek, skirmishes at.
- Dec. 25—King's (or Anthony's) Hill, or Devil's Gap, action at.
- Dec. 25—White's Station, skirmish near.
- Dec. 26—Sugar Creek, action at.

## 1865

- Jan. 28—Athens, action at.
- Feb. 1—McLemore's Cove, skirmish in.
- Feb. 5—McMinnville, skirmish near.
- Feb. 6—Corn's Farm, Franklin County, affair at.
- Feb. 9—Memphis, skirmish near.
- Feb. 10—Triune, affair near.
- Feb. 16—Athens and Sweet Water, attacks upon the garrisons of.
- Feb. 21-22—Greeneville, skirmishes near.
- March 1—Philadelphia, skirmish near.
- March 5—Tazewell, skirmish at.
- March 8—Jackson County, skirmish in.
- March 18—Livingstone, skirmish at.
- March 19, 22—Celina, skirmishes at.
- March 25—Brawley Forks, skirmish at.
- March 28—Germantown, skirmish at.
- March 31—Magnolia, skirmish at.
- April 1—White Oak Creek, skirmish at.
- April 3, 14—Mount Pleasant, skirmishes at.
- April 18—Germantown, skirmish near.

## TEXAS.

## 1862

- Feb. 22—Aransas Bay, engagement in.
- April 5-6—San Luis Pass, affair at.
- May 14-25—Galveston, blockade of, and operations about.
- July 4—Velasco, attack on United States vessels near.
- Aug. 10—Nueces River, affair on, near Fort Clark.
- Aug. 11—Velasco, affair at.
- Aug. 12—Breaker, Schooner, capture of.
- Aug. 16-18—Corpus Christi, bombardment of.
- Sept. 13-14—Flour Bluffs, operations at.
- Sept. 24-25—Sabine Pass, engagement at.
- Sept. 27—Taylor's Bayou, affair on.
- Oct. 29—Sabine Pass, affair at.
- Oct. 31, Nov. 1—Lavaca, bombardment of.
- Nov. 20—Matagorda, affair at.
- Dec. 7—Padre Island, affair at.

## 1863

- Jan. 21—Sabine Pass, attack on blockading squadron at.
- April 18—Sabine Pass, affair at.
- May 3—Saint Joseph's Island, affair at.
- May 30—Point Isabel, affair at.





- Sept. 8—Sabine Pass, attack on.  
 Nov. 17—Aransas Pass, capture of Confederate battery at.  
 Nov. 22-30—Fort Esperanza, Matagorda Island, expedition against  
 and capture of.  
 Nov. 23—Cedar Bayou, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 29—Matagorda Peninsula, skirmish on.

1864

- Jan. 8-9—Caney Bayou, bombardment of Confederate works at  
 the mouth of.  
 Feb. 7—Caney Bayou, affair at the mouth of.  
 Feb. 22—Indianola, affair near.  
 March 13—Los Patricios, skirmish at.  
 March 17, 22—Corpus Christi, affairs at.  
 March 19—Laredo, attack on.  
 March 21—Velasco, affair at.  
 June 19—Eagle Pass, affair at.  
 June 25—Rancho Las Rinas, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 9—Point Isabel, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 6—Brazos Santiago, skirmish at the Palmetto Ranch, near.  
 Oct. 13—Elm Creek, skirmish on.  
 Oct. 14—Boca Chica Pass, skirmish at.

1865

- Jan. 8—Dove Creek, Concho River, action at.  
 May 12-13—Palmetto Ranch, skirmishes at.  
 May 13—White's Ranch, skirmish at.

## KANSAS.

1861

- Sept. 1—Fort Scott, skirmish at.

1862

- March 12—Aubrey, skirmish near.  
 Nov. 6-11—Fort Scott, expedition from, and skirmishes.  
 Nov. 8—Cato, skirmish near.

1863

- June 8—Fort Scott, affair near.  
 Aug. 21—Brooklyn, skirmish near.  
 Aug. 21—Lawrence, burning of.  
 Aug. 21—Paola, skirmish near.  
 Sept. 6—Fort Scott, attack on train between Carthage, Mo., and.  
 Oct. 6—Baxter Springs, action at.

1864

- May 16—Big Bushes, near Smoky Hill, action at.  
 Aug. 1—Baxter Springs, scout to, with skirmish.  
 Sept. 21—Council Grove, affair near.  
 Sept. 25—Walnut Creek, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 26—Osage Mission, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 25—Fort Lincoln, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 25—Little Osage River, or Mine Creek, engagement on.  
 Oct. 25—Marais des Cygnes, engagement at the.  
 Oct. 25—Mound City and Fort Lincoln, skirmishes at.



Nov. 28—Cow Creek, skirmish on.

Dec. 4—Cow Creek, skirmish on.

1865

Jan. 20—Point of Rocks or Nine-Mile Ridge, skirmish at.

Jan. 31—Oxford, skirmish near.

Feb. 1—Fort Zarah, skirmish at.

Feb. 12-20—Fort Riley and Fort Larned, operations about.

April 23—Fort Zarah, affair near.

May 20—Pawnee Rock, affair near.

June 9—Chavis Creek, skirmish at, near Cow Creek Station.

June 12—Pawnee Rock, skirmish near.

June 12—Plum Butte, skirmish near.

## VIRGINIA.

1861

May 9—Gloucester Point, exchange of shots between U. S. S. Yankee and batteries at.

May 18-19—Sewell's Point, engagement with U. S. S. Monticello at.

May 23—Hampton, demonstration upon.

May 31-June 1—Aquia Creek, attack on batteries at.

June 1—Arlington Mills, skirmish at.

June 1—Fairfax Court House, skirmish at.

June 5—Pig Point, attack on Confederate battery at.

June 10—Big Bethel, engagement at.

June 17—Vienna, action near.

June 24—Rappahannock River, affair on the.

June 27—Mathias Point, attack on.

July 5—Newport News, skirmish at.

July 12—Newport News, skirmish near.

July 17—Fairfax Court House, skirmish at.

July 18—Blackburn's Ford, action at.

July 18—McLean's Ford, operations at.

July 18—Mitchell's Ford, skirmish at.

July 19—Back River Road, affair on the.

July 21—First Manassas, battle of.

Aug. 8—Lovettsville, skirmish at.

Aug. 18—Pohick Church, skirmish at.

Aug. 23—Potomac Creek, engagement between batteries at mouth of, and U. S. Steamers Release and Yankee.

Aug. 27-28—Ball's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.

Aug. 28-30—Bailey's Corners, skirmishes near.

Aug. 31—Munson's Hill, skirmish at.

Sept. 10-11—Lewinsville, action and skirmish at.

Sept. 15—Pritchard's Mill, skirmish at.

Sept. 16—Magruder's Ferry, skirmish at.

Sept. 18—Munson's Hill, affair at.

Sept. 25—Lewinsville, skirmish at.

Sept. 28—Vanderburgh's House, affair at.

Oct. 2-3—Springfield Station, skirmishes at.

Oct. 4—Edwards Ferry, skirmish near.

Oct. 15—Little River Turnpike, skirmish on.



- Oct. 21—Ball's Bluff, engagement at.
- Oct. 21—New Market Bridge, skirmish near.
- Oct. 22—Edwards Ferry, action at.
- Nov. 16—Doolan's Farm, capture of Union foraging party at.
- Nov. 18-27—Fairfax Court House, skirmishes near.
- Nov. 26—Vienna, skirmish near.
- Nov. 26-27—Dranesville, expedition to and skirmish at.
- Dec. 2—Annandale, skirmish at.
- Dec. 4—Burke Station, skirmish at.
- Dec. 20—Dranesville, engagement at.

## 1862

- Jan. 9—Elk Run, skirmish at.
- Jan. 9—Pohick Run, skirmish at.
- Jan. 29—Lee's House, affair at.
- Feb. 24—Lewis Chapel, affair at.
- March 5—Bunker Hill, skirmish at.
- March 5—Pohick Church, skirmish near.
- March 7—Winchester, skirmish near.
- March 8-9—Hampton Roads, naval engagement in.
- March 9—Sangster Station, skirmish at.
- March 11—Stephenson Station, skirmish at.
- March 18—Middletown, skirmish at.
- March 19—Strasburg, skirmish at.
- March 22—Kernstown, skirmishes at.
- March 23—Kernstown, battle of.
- March 23—Winchester, battle of.
- March 25—Mount Jackson, skirmish at.
- March 28—Bealeton Station, affair at.
- March 29—Rappahannock Station, affair at.
- April 1—Salem, skirmish at.
- April 2—Stony Creek, near Edenburg, skirmish at.
- April 4—Cockletown, skirmish at.
- April 4—Howard's Mill, skirmish at.
- April 5—Warwick and Yorktown Roads, skirmish near junction of.
- April 5-May 4—Yorktown, siege of.
- April 7, 16—Columbia Furnace, skirmishes at.
- April 11, 22, 26—Yorktown, affairs at and skirmishes near.
- April 12, 21—Monterey, skirmishes at.
- April 16—Burnt Chimneys, engagement at.
- April 16—Lee's Mill, engagement at.
- April 17—Piedmont, skirmish at.
- April 17—Rude's Hill, skirmish at.
- April 17-19—Falmouth, skirmishes near.
- April 19—Shenandoah River, South Fork of, skirmish on, near Luray.
- April 22—Luray, skirmish near.
- April 24—Harrisonburg, skirmish near.
- April 27—McGaheysville, skirmish at.
- May 1—Rapidan Station, skirmish at.
- May 2—Louisa Court House, skirmish at.
- May 2—Trevilian's Depot, skirmish at.



- May 5—Columbia Bridge, skirmish at.
- May 5—Williamsburg, battle of.
- May 6—Harrisonburg, skirmish near.
- May 7—Barkhamsville, engagement at.
- May 7—Eltham's Landing, engagement at.
- May 7—Somerville Heights, action at.
- May 7—West Point, engagement at.
- May 8—Bull Pasture Mountain, engagement near.
- May 8—McDowell, engagement near.
- May 8—Sewell's Point, engagement near.
- May 9—McDowell, skirmish near.
- May 9—New Kent Court House, skirmishes at and near.
- May 9—Slatersville, skirmish at.
- May 11—Bowling Green Road, skirmish on.
- May 12—Monterey, skirmish at.
- May 13—Baltimore Cross-Roads, skirmish near.
- May 13—Rappahannock River, affair on.
- May 14-15—Gaines' Cross-Roads, Rappahannock County, skirmishes near.
- May 15—Darling, Fort, engagement at.
- May 15, 24—Linden, skirmishes at.
- May 18, 21—Woodstock, skirmishes at.
- May 19—City Point, James River, skirmish at.
- May 23—Antioch Church, skirmish at.
- May 23—Buckton Station, skirmish at.
- May 23—Ellison's Mill, skirmish at.
- May 23—Hogan's, skirmish at.
- May 23-24—New Bridge, skirmishes at and near.
- May 23, 30—Front Royal, actions at.
- May 24—Berryville, skirmish at.
- May 24—Middletown, action at.
- May 24—Newtown, action at.
- May 24—Strasburg, skirmish near.
- May 25—Winchester, engagement at.
- May 27—Hanover Court House, engagement at.
- May 27—Kinney's Farm, engagement at.
- May 27—Loudoun Heights, skirmish at.
- May 30—Fair Oaks, skirmish.
- May 30—Zuni, skirmish near.
- May 31—Front Royal, skirmish near.
- May 31-June 1—Seven Pines, battle of.
- June 1—Mount Carmel, skirmish at.
- June 2—Woodstock, skirmish near.
- June 3, 16—Mount Jackson, skirmishes near.
- June 3—Tom's Brook, skirmish at.
- June 6—Harrisonburg, action near.
- June 8—Cross Keys, battle of.
- June 8, 18, 27—Fair Oaks, skirmishes at and near.
- June 8-9—Port Republic, engagements at.
- June 13—Garlick's Landing, attack on.
- June 13—Hawe's Shop, skirmish at.
- June 13—New Market, skirmish at.
- June 18—Nine-Mile Road, skirmish on the, near Richmond.





- June 18-19—Winchester, skirmishes near.  
June 19—Charles City Road, skirmish on, near Richmond.  
June 20—Gill's Bluff, James River, affair at.  
June 21—Fair Oaks Station, skirmish near.  
June 24—Milford, skirmish at.  
June 25—Ashland, skirmish near.  
June 25-29—Bottom's Bridge, operations about.  
June 25—French's Field, engagement at.  
June 25—King's School-House, engagement at.  
June 25—Oak Grove, engagement at.  
June 25—Orchard, The, engagement at.  
June 26—Atlee's Station, skirmish at.  
June 26—Beaver Dam Creek, battle of.  
June 26—Ellison's Mill, battle of.  
June 26—Hanover Court House, skirmish near.  
June 26-27—Hundley's Corner, skirmishes at.  
June 26—Meadow Bridge, skirmish at.  
June 26—Mechanicsville, battle of.  
June 26—Point of Rocks, Appomattox River, engagement at.  
June 27—Chickahominy, battle of the.  
June 27—Cold Harbor, battle of.  
June 27—Gaines' Mill, battle of.  
June 27-28—Garnett's and Golding's Farms, actions at.  
June 28—Dispatch Station, skirmish at.  
June 28—Tunstall's Station, operations about.  
June 28—White House, operations about, and destruction of stores at.  
June 29—Allen's Farm, engagement at.  
June 29—James River Road, skirmish on the.  
June 29—Jordon's Ford, White Oak Swamp, skirmish at.  
June 29—Peach Orchard, engagement at.  
June 29—Savage Station, battle of.  
June 29—Williamsburg Road, skirmish on the.  
June 29—Willis Church, skirmish near.  
June 30—Brackett's, action at.  
June 30—Charles City Cross-Roads, battle of.  
June 30—Frayser's Farm, battle of.  
June 30—Glendale, battle of.  
June 30—Malvern Cliff, engagement at.  
June 30—Nelson's Farm, battle of.  
June 30—New Market Road, battle of.  
June 30—White Oak Swamp Bridge, engagement at.  
June 30—Willis Church, battle of.  
July 1—Crew's Farm, battle of.  
July 1—Fort Furnace, Powell's Big Fort Valley, skirmish near.  
July 1—Malvern Hill, battle of.  
July 1—Poindexter's Farm, battle of.  
July 2—Malvern Hill, skirmish at.  
July 3-4—Harrison's Landing, skirmishes about and near.  
July 3-4—Herring Creek, skirmishes near.  
July 4—Shirley, capture of arms at, by Confederates.  
July 5-7—James River, operations against Union shipping on.  
July 13—Rapidan Station, skirmish at.



- July 15—Middletown, skirmish near.  
July 15—Orange Court House, skirmish at.  
July 17—Gordonsville, skirmish near.  
July 23—Carmel Church, skirmishes near.  
July 31-Aug. 1—Harrison's Landing, attack on camps and fighting between Shirley and.  
Aug. 1—Barnett's Ford, skirmish at.  
Aug. 2—Orange Court House, skirmish at.  
Aug. 3—Sycamore Church, skirmish at.  
Aug. 4—White Oak Swamp Bridge, reconnoissance to and skirmish at.  
Aug. 5-6—Malvern Hill, skirmishes near.  
Aug. 5-6—Massaponax Church, affairs at.  
Aug. 5-6—Thornburg, affairs at.  
Aug. 6—Malvern Hill, skirmish at.  
Aug. 7—Wolftown, skirmish at.  
Aug. 8—Madison Court House, action near.  
Aug. 8—Slaughter's House, skirmish near.  
Aug. 9—Cedar Mountain, battle of.  
Aug. 9—Slaughter's Mountain, battle of.  
Aug. 10—Cedar Run, skirmish at.  
Aug. 18—Clark's Mountain, skirmish at.  
Aug. 18—Rapidan Station, skirmish at.  
Aug. 18-25—Rappahannock, operations on the.  
Aug. 20—Brandy Station, skirmish near.  
Aug. 20-21—Kelly's Ford, skirmishes at and near.  
Aug. 20—Rappahannock Station, skirmish at.  
Aug. 20—Stevensburg, skirmish at.  
Aug. 21, 22—Freeman's Ford, action.  
Aug. 21, 23—Beverly Ford, action.  
Aug. 22—Catlett's Station, skirmish at.  
Aug. 22—Hazel River, action at.  
Aug. 23—Fant's Ford, skirmish at.  
Aug. 23—Rappahannock Station, engagement at.  
Aug. 23—Smithfield, affair at.  
Aug. 23—Winchester, capture of railroad train near.  
Aug. 23-24—Sulphur Springs, actions.  
Aug. 24-25—Waterloo Bridge, actions at.  
Aug. 25-26—Sulphur Springs, skirmishes at and near..  
Aug. 26—Bristoe Station, skirmish at.  
Aug. 26, 27—Bull Run Bridge, action.  
Aug. 26—Gainesville, skirmish at.  
Aug. 26, 28—Hay Market, skirmishes at.  
Aug. 26—Manassas Junction, skirmish at.  
Aug. 26—Manassas Station, capture of.  
Aug. 27—Buckland Bridge, skirmish at.  
Aug. 27—Kettle Run, engagement at.  
Aug. 27—Waterford, skirmish at.  
Aug. 28—Centreville, skirmish at.  
Aug. 28—Gainesville, engagement near.  
Aug. 28-30—Lewis' Ford, skirmishes at.  
Aug. 28—Thoroughfare Gap, engagement at.  
Aug. 29—Groveton, battle of.



- Aug. 30—Groveton Heights, battle of.  
Aug. 30—Second Manassas, battle of.  
Aug. 31—Franklin, skirmish.  
Aug. 31—Germantown, skirmish at.  
Sept. 1—Chantilly, battle of.  
Sept. 1—Ox Hill, battle of.  
Sept. 2—Fairfax Court House, skirmish near.  
Sept. 2—Falls Church, skirmish near.  
Sept. 2—Flint Hill, affair at.  
Sept. 2, 14, 17—Leesburg, skirmishes at and near.  
Sept. 3-4—Falls Church, skirmishes at.  
Sept. 9—Williamsburg, skirmish at.  
Sept. 19—Boteler's Ford, skirmish at.  
Sept. 20, 22—Ashby's Gap, skirmishes at.  
Sept. 26—Catlett's Station, skirmish near.  
Oct. 3, 29—Blackwater, skirmishes at and on the.  
Oct. 3, 31—Franklin, skirmish.  
Oct. 3—Zuni, affair near.  
Oct. 10—Kinsell's Ferry, skirmish at.  
Oct. 15—Carrsville, skirmish near.  
Oct. 19—Catlett's Station, skirmish near.  
Oct. 19—Warrenton Junction, skirmish near.  
Oct. 21—Lovettsville, skirmishes at.  
Oct. 21—Snickersville, skirmish near.  
Oct. 24—Bristoe Station, skirmish near.  
Oct. 24—Manassas Junction, skirmish at.  
Oct. 25—Zuni, skirmish at.  
Oct. 31—Aldie, skirmish at.  
Oct. 31—Mountville, skirmish at.  
Nov. 1—Berry's Ford Gap, skirmish at.  
Nov. 1, 9—Philomont, skirmishes at.  
Nov. 2-3—Union, skirmishes at.  
Nov. 3—Castleman's Ferry, skirmish near.  
Nov. 3—Snicker's Gap, skirmish at.  
Nov. 4, 10—Markham's Station, skirmishes at.  
Nov. 4—Salem, skirmish at.  
Nov. 5—Barbee's Cross-Roads, action at.  
Nov. 5-6—Manassas Gap, skirmish  
Nov. 7-8—Rappahannock Station, skirmishes at.  
Nov. 8—Hazel River, skirmish at.  
Nov. 8—Little Washington, skirmish at.  
Nov. 9—Fredericksburg, skirmish at.  
Nov. 9—Newby's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
Nov. 10—Amisville, action near.  
Nov. 10—Corbin's Cross-Roads, action at.  
Nov. 11, 14—Jefferson, skirmishes at.  
Nov. 12—Providence Church, skirmish.  
Nov. 13-14—Sulphur Springs, skirmishes at.  
Nov. 14—Blackwater Bridge, skirmish at.  
Nov. 14—Waterloo, skirmish at.  
Nov. 14—Zuni, skirmish.  
Nov. 15—Sulphur Springs, action at.  
Nov. 15—Warrenton Springs, action at.



- Nov. 16—Chester Gap, skirmish at.
- Nov. 16—Gloucester Point, skirmish at.
- Nov. 16—United States Ford, affair at.
- Nov. 17—Carrsville, affair near.
- Nov. 17—Falmouth, skirmish at.
- Nov. 18—Franklin, skirmish.
- Nov. 19—Philomont, skirmish at.
- Nov. 22—Winchester, skirmish near.
- Nov. 24—Newtown, skirmish at.
- Nov. 28—Hartwood Church, affair near.
- Nov. 29—Berryville, skirmish at.
- Dec. 1—Beaver Dam Church, skirmish at.
- Dec. 2—Berryville, skirmish at.
- Dec. 2—Blackwater, skirmish on the.
- Dec. 2—Franklin, skirmish.
- Dec. 2—Leeds' Ferry, Rappahannock River, skirmish at.
- Dec. 4—Rappahannock River, engagement on the.
- Dec. 8-12—Zuni, skirmishes.
- Dec. 11-15—Fredericksburg, battle of.
- Dec. 12—Dumfries, skirmish at.
- Dec. 12, 13—Leesburg, skirmishes.
- Dec. 14—Waterford, skirmish at.
- Dec. 19—Occoquan, skirmish on the.
- Dec. 20, 27, 28—Occoquan, skirmishes at and near.
- Dec. 21—Strasburg, skirmish at.
- Dec. 22—Joyner's Ferry, skirmish at.
- Dec. 22—Windsor, skirmish near.
- Dec. 25—Warrenton, skirmish near.
- Dec. 27—Dumfries, action at.
- Dec. 27-28—Fairfax Court House, skirmishes.
- Dec. 27-29—Chantilly, skirmishes near.
- Dec. 28—Providence Church, skirmish.
- Dec. 28—Suffolk, skirmish near.
- Dec. 29—Frying Pan, skirmishes near.

## 1863

- Jan. 2—Jonesville, skirmish at.
- Jan. 5—Cub Run, skirmish at.
- Jan. 9—Brentsville, skirmish at.
- Jan. 9—Fairfax Court House, skirmish.
- Jan. 9—Grove Church, skirmish near.
- Jan. 9—Providence Church, skirmish.
- Jan. 17—Newtown, skirmish near.
- Jan. 19—Burnt Ordinary, skirmish at.
- Jan. 26—Grove Church, near Morrisville, skirmish at.
- Jan. 26-27—Fairfax Court House and Middleburg, skirmishes near and at.
- Jan. 30—Deserted House, engagement at.
- Jan. 30—Kelly's Store, engagement at.
- Jan. 30—Suffolk, engagement near.
- Jan. 30—Turner's Mills, skirmish at.
- Feb. 5-7—Olive Branch Church, skirmishes at and near.
- Feb. 6, 13—Dranesville, skirmishes at.





- Feb. 6—Millwood, skirmish at or near.
- Feb. 6—Wiggenton's Mills, Aquia Creek, skirmish at.
- Feb. 9—Somerville, skirmish near.
- Feb. 10—Chantilly, skirmish at.
- Feb. 14—Union Mills, affair near.
- Feb. 14-16—Hillsboro Road, Loudoun County, and Leesburg, affair on, and scout to.
- Feb. 21—Ware's Point, attack on U. S. gunboats Freeborn and Dragon at.
- Feb. 24—Strasburg, skirmish near.
- Feb. 25, 26—Chantilly, skirmishes at.
- Feb. 25—Hartwood Church, skirmish at.
- Feb. 26—Germantown, affair near.
- March 2—Aldie, skirmish near.
- March 4—Independent Hill, Prince William County, skirmish at.
- March 9—Fairfax Court House, affair at.
- March 9—Windsor, skirmish near.
- March 15, 29—Dumfries, affairs near.
- March 17—Bealeton Station, skirmish at.
- March 17—Franklin, skirmish.
- March 17—Herndon Station, affair at.
- March 17—Kelly's Ford (Kellyville), engagement at.
- March 19—Winchester, skirmish near.
- March 22—Occoquan, affairs near.
- March 23—Chantilly, skirmish near.
- March 25—Norfolk, affair at.
- March 29—Kelly's Ford, skirmish at.
- March 29—Williamsburg, skirmish at.
- March 30—Zoar Church, skirmish at.
- April 1—Broad Run, Loudoun County, skirmish near the mouth of.
- April 4—Leesville, skirmish at.
- April 8—Millwood Road, near Winchester, skirmish on the.
- April 11—South Quay Road, skirmish on.
- April 11—Williamsburg, skirmish at.
- April 11-May 4—Suffolk, siege of.
- April 12, 15, 24—Edenton Road, skirmishes on the.
- April 12—Providence Church Road, skirmish on the.
- April 13—Elk Run, skirmish at.
- April 13—Snicker's Ferry, skirmish at.
- April 13—Somerton Road, skirmish on the.
- April 14—West Branch, engagement at mouth of.
- April 14-15—Norfleet House, engagements near the.
- April 16—Pamunkey River, affair on.
- April 16—West Point, affair near.
- April 19—Huger, Battery, capture of.
- April 22—Fisher's Hill, skirmish at.
- April 23—Chuckatuck, affair at.
- April 26—Oak Grove, skirmish at.
- April 29—Brandy Station, skirmish near.
- April 29—Crook's Run and Germanna Ford, skirmishes at.
- April 29—Kellysville, skirmish near.
- April 29—Stevensburg, skirmish near.



- April 30—Chancellorsville, skirmishes at and near.  
 April 30—Raccoon Ford, skirmish at.  
 April 30—Spottsylvania Court House, skirmish near.  
 May 1-3—Chancellorsville, battle of.  
 May 1—Rapidan Station, skirmish at.  
 May 1—South Quay Bridge, skirmish at.  
 May 2—Ely's Ford, skirmish at.  
 May 2—Louisa Court House, skirmish near.  
 May 3—Ashland, skirmish at.  
 May 3—Chuckatuck, skirmish at.  
 May 3—Fredericksburg (or Marye's Heights), battle of.  
 May 3—Hanover Station, skirmish at.  
 May 3—Hill's Point, skirmish near.  
 May 3—Reed's Ferry, skirmish near.  
 May 3—Salem Church (or Salem Heights), battle of.  
 May 3—South Anna Bridge, near Ashland, skirmish at.  
 May 3—Warrenton Junction, skirmish at.  
 May 4—Ashland Church, skirmish at.  
 May 4—Banks' Ford, battle near.  
 May 4—Flemming's (Shannon's) Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
 May 4—Hanover Ferry, skirmish at.  
 May 4—Hungary Station, skirmish at.  
 May 4—Tunstall's Station, skirmish at.  
 May 5—Aylett's, skirmish at.  
 May 5—Thompson's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
 May 6, 11, 23, 31—Warrenton, skirmishes at.  
 May 8—Grove Church, skirmish near.  
 May 13—Upperville, skirmish at.  
 May 14—Marsteller's Place, near Warrenton Junction, skirmish at.  
 May 15-16—Carrsville, skirmish near.  
 May 16—Piedmont Station, skirmish at.  
 May 17—Dumfries, skirmish near.  
 May 17—Providence Church, skirmish.  
 May 23—Barber's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
 May 30—Greenwich, skirmish near.  
 June 2—Strasburg, skirmish at.  
 June 2—Upperville, skirmish at.  
 June 3—Fayetteville, skirmish near.  
 June 4—Frying Pan, skirmish at.  
 June 4—Lawyers' Road, near Fairfax Court House, skirmish on the.  
 June 5, 13—Franklin's Crossing (or Deep Run), on the Rappahannock, skirmishes at.  
 June 6—Berryville, skirmish near.  
 June 9—Brandy Station (or Fleetwood) and Beverly Ford, engagements at.  
 June 9—Stevensburg, skirmish at.  
 June 11, 20—Diascund Bridge, skirmishes at.  
 June 11—Suffolk, skirmish near.  
 June 12—Newtown, Cedarville, and Middletown, skirmishes at.  
 June 13—Opequon Creek, near Winchester, skirmish at.  
 June 13—White Post, skirmish at.  
 June 13-14—Berryville, skirmishes at.



- June 13, 15—Winchester, engagement at.
- June 14—Nine-Mile Ordinary, skirmish at.
- June 17—Aldie, action at.
- June 17—Thoroughfare Gap, skirmish at.
- June 17-18—Middleburg, skirmishes at and near.
- June 18, 22—Aldie, skirmishes near.
- June 19—Middleburg, action at.
- June 21—Gainesville, skirmish near.
- June 21-25—Thoroughfare Gap and Hay Market, skirmishes at and about.
- June 21—Upperville, engagement at.
- June 22—Dover, skirmish near.
- June 23-28—South Anna Bridge, expedition from Yorktown to the, and skirmish.
- June 27—Fairfax Court House, skirmish near.
- June 28-29—Little River Turnpike, affair on the.
- July 1—Baltimore Cross-Roads, skirmish at.
- July 2—Baltimore, or Crump's, Cross-Roads, and Baltimore Store, skirmishes at.
- July 4—South Anna Bridge, skirmish at the.
- July 7—Gladesville, skirmish at.
- July 12—Ashby's Gap, skirmish at.
- July 17—Snicker's Gap, skirmish at.
- July 20—Ashby's Gap, skirmish at.
- July 20—Berry's Ferry, skirmish near.
- July 21-22—Manassas Gap, skirmishes at.
- July 21-22, 23—Chester Gap, skirmishes at and near.
- July 23—Gaines' Cross-Roads, skirmish near.
- July 23—Snicker's Gap, skirmish near.
- July 23—Wapping Heights, Manassas Gap, action at.
- July 24—Battle Mountain, near Newby's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.
- July 25—Barbee's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.
- July 31-Aug. 1—Kelly's Ford, skirmishes at.
- Aug. 1—Brandy Station, action at.
- Aug. 2—Newtown, skirmish at.
- Aug. 4—Amissville, skirmish near.
- Aug. 4-9—Brandy Station, skirmishes at.
- Aug. 5, 27—Little Washington, skirmishes at.
- Aug. 5—Muddy Run, near Culpeper Court House, skirmish at.
- Aug. 5—Rixeyville Ford, skirmish near.
- Aug. 6—Blake's Farm.
- Aug. 7—Burke's Station, affair at.
- Aug. 8—Waterford, skirmish at.
- Aug. 9—Welford's Ford, skirmish near.
- Aug. 15—Beverly Ford, skirmish at.
- Aug. 15, 25, 28—Hartwood Church, skirmishes at.
- Aug. 16—Falls Church, skirmish at.
- Aug. 18—Bristoe Station, skirmish at.
- Aug. 22—Stafford Court House, skirmish at.
- Aug. 24—Coyle's Tavern, near Fairfax Court House, skirmish at.
- Aug. 24—King George Court House, skirmish near.
- Aug. 25—Lamb's Ferry, Chickahominy River, skirmish near.
- Aug. 27—Weaverville, skirmish at.



- Sept. 1—Barbee's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
Sept. 1—Corbin's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
Sept. 1—Lamb's Creek Church, near Port Conway, skirmish at.  
Sept. 1—Leesburg, skirmish at.  
Sept. 2—Oak Shade, skirmish near.  
Sept. 2—Rixey's Ford, affair near.  
Sept. 6—Carter's Run, skirmish at.  
Sept. 8-13—Brandy Station, skirmishes at.  
Sept. 12—Bristoe Station, skirmish near.  
Sept. 12—White Plains, skirmish at.  
Sept. 13—Culpeper Court House, skirmish at.  
Sept. 13—Muddy Run, near Culpeper Court House, skirmish at.  
Sept. 13—Pony Mountain, skirmish at.  
Sept. 13—Stevensburg, skirmish at.  
Sept. 14—Leesburg, skirmish near.  
Sept. 14—Somerville Ford, skirmish at.  
Sept. 15—Kempsville, affair near.  
Sept. 15, 17, 19, 22—Raccoon Ford, skirmishes at.  
Sept. 15—Rapidan Station, skirmish at.  
Sept. 15, 23—Robertson's Ford, skirmishes at.  
Sept. 16—Smithfield, skirmish at.  
Sept. 18—Crooked Run, skirmish at.  
Sept. 19—Strasburg, affair at.  
Sept. 21—Fisher's Hill, skirmish at.  
Sept. 21—Madison Court House, skirmish at.  
Sept. 21—Orange Court House, skirmish at.  
Sept. 21-22—White's Ford, Rapidan River, skirmishes at.  
Sept. 22—Centreville and Warrenton, skirmish between.  
Sept. 23—Liberty Mills, skirmish near.  
Sept. 24—Bristoe Station, skirmish at.  
Sept. 25—Upperville, skirmish near.  
Sept. 26—Richard's Ford, skirmish at.  
Sept. 30—Neersville, skirmish at.  
Sept. 30—Woodville, skirmish at.  
Oct. 1—Auburn, skirmish near.  
Oct. 1, 11—Culpeper Court House, skirmishes near.  
Oct. 1, 3—Lewinsville, skirmishes at.  
Oct. 6—Catlett's Station, affair near.  
Oct. 7—Hazel River, skirmish at.  
Oct. 7, 15—Mitchell's Ford, Bull Run, skirmishes at.  
Oct. 7—Utz's Ford, affair at.  
Oct. 8—Robertson's River, skirmishes along.  
Oct. 8, 9—James City, skirmishes near.  
Oct. 10—Bethsaida Church, skirmish at.  
Oct. 10—Germanna Ford, skirmish at.  
Oct. 10—James City, skirmish at.  
Oct. 10—Raccoon Ford, skirmish at.  
Oct. 10—Russell's Ford, on Robertson's River, skirmish at.  
Oct. 10, 11—Morton's Ford, skirmishes at.  
Oct. 11—Brandy Station, skirmish at.  
Oct. 11—Culpeper Court House, skirmish at.  
Oct. 11—Griffinsburg, skirmish at.  
Oct. 11—Kelly's Ford, skirmish at.





- Oct. 11—Stevensburg, skirmish at.
- Oct. 11-12—Warrenton, or Sulphur Springs, action at.
- Oct. 12—Brandy Station, or Fleetwood, skirmish at.
- Oct. 12—Gaines' Cross-Roads, skirmish at.
- Oct. 12—Jeffersonton, skirmish at.
- Oct. 13—Auburn, action at.
- Oct. 13—Fox's Ford, skirmish at.
- Oct. 13—Warrenton, skirmish near.
- Oct. 14—Brentsville, skirmishes near.
- Oct. 14—Bristoe Station, engagement at.
- Oct. 14, 19—Catlett's Station, skirmishes at.
- Oct. 14—Centreville, skirmish near.
- Oct. 14, 19—Gainesville, skirmishes at.
- Oct. 14—Grove Church, skirmish at.
- Oct. 14—Saint Stephen's Church, skirmish at.
- Oct. 15—Blackburn's Ford, Bull Run, skirmish at.
- Oct. 15—Manassas, skirmish at.
- Oct. 15—McLean's Ford, Bull Run, skirmish at.
- Oct. 15—Oak Hill, skirmish at.
- Oct. 17—Berryville, skirmish at.
- Oct. 17—Chantilly, affair at Stuart's, near.
- Oct. 17—Frying Pan Church, near Pohick Church, skirmish at.
- Oct. 17-18—Groveton, skirmishes at.
- Oct. 17—Manassas Junction, skirmish at.
- Oct. 18, 22—Annandale, affairs near.
- Oct. 18—Berryville, skirmish near.
- Oct. 19—Buckland Mills, action at.
- Oct. 19—Hay Market, skirmish at.
- Oct. 19—New Baltimore, skirmish at.
- Oct. 22, 24—Bealeton, skirmishes at and near.
- Oct. 22—Rappahannock Bridge, skirmish at.
- Oct. 23—Fayetteville, skirmish at.
- Oct. 23—Rappahannock Station, skirmish near.
- Oct. 24—Liberty, skirmish at.
- Oct. 25-26—Bealeton, skirmishes at and near.
- Oct. 27—Bealeton and Rappahannock Station, skirmishes near.
- Oct. 30—Catlett's Station, skirmish near.
- Oct. 31—Weaverville, affair near.
- Nov. 1—Catlett's Station, skirmish at.
- Nov. 6—Falmouth, skirmish near.
- Nov. 5—Hartwood Church, skirmish at.
- Nov. 6—Falmouth, skirmish near.
- Nov. 7—Kelly's Ford, action at.
- Nov. 7—Rappahannock Station, engagement at.
- Nov. 8—Brandy Station, skirmish at.
- Nov. 8—Jeffersonton, skirmish near.
- Nov. 8—Muddy Run, near Culpeper Court House, skirmish at.
- Nov. 8—Rixeyville, skirmish at.
- Nov. 8—Stevensburg, skirmish at.
- Nov. 8—Warrenton, or Sulphur Springs, skirmish at.
- Nov. 9—Covington, skirmish near.
- Nov. 13—Winchester, skirmish near.
- Nov. 14—Tyson's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.



- Nov. 14-15—Virginia, eastern shore of, affairs on.
- Nov. 16—Edenburg, skirmish at.
- Nov. 16—Germantown, affair at.
- Nov. 16—Mount Jackson, skirmish at.
- Nov. 16—Woodstock, skirmish at.
- Nov. 18—Germannan Ford, skirmish near.
- Nov. 19—Grove Church, skirmish near.
- Nov. 21—Liberty, affair at.
- Nov. 24—Little Boston, skirmish near.
- Nov. 24—Woodville, skirmish near.
- Nov. 25—Sangster's Station, affair near.
- Nov. 26, 29—Brentsville, skirmishes at.
- Nov. 26—Morton's Ford, skirmish at.
- Nov. 26-27, 30—Raccoon Ford, skirmishes at and near.
- Nov. 27—Catlett's Station, skirmish at.
- Nov. 29—New Hope Church, skirmish at.
- Nov. 27—Payne's Farm, engagement at.
- Nov. 27—Robertson's Tavern, or Locust Grove, skirmishes at.
- Nov. 28, 30—Mine Run, skirmishes along.
- Nov. 29—Jonesville, skirmish near.
- Nov. 29—New Hope Church, skirmish at.
- Nov. 29—Parker's Store, action at.
- Nov. 30—Licking Run Bridge, skirmish at.
- Dec. 1—Ely's Ford, skirmish at Jennings' Farm, near.
- Dec. 1—Jonesville, skirmish near.
- Dec. 3—Ellis' Ford, skirmish at.
- Dec. 5—Raccoon Ford, skirmish at.
- Dec. 9—Lewinsville, affairs at and near.
- Dec. 13—Germantown, affair at.
- Dec. 13—Powell's River, skirmish at, near Stickleyville.
- Dec. 13—Strasburg, skirmishes near.
- Dec. 14—Catlett's Station, affair near.
- Dec. 15-17—Sangster's Station, skirmishes at.
- Dec. 16—Upperville, skirmish at.
- Dec. 18—Culpeper Court House, affair near.
- Dec. 19—Barber's Creek, skirmish on.
- Dec. 19—Covington, skirmish near.
- Dec. 21—Hunter's Mill, affair near.
- Dec. 23—Culpeper Court House, skirmish near.
- Dec. 24—Germantown, affair near.

## 1864

- Jan. 1—Rectortown, skirmish at.
- Jan. 3—Jonesville, action at.
- Jan. 6, 18—Flint Hill, affairs at.
- Jan. 7—Warrenton, skirmish at.
- Jan. 10—Loudoun Heights, skirmish at.
- Jan. 12—Accotink, affair near.
- Jan. 12—Ellis' Ford, affair near.
- Jan. 13, 17—Ely's Ford, affairs near.
- Jan. 17—Ellis' and Ely's Fords, affairs near.
- Jan. 22—Ellis' Ford, affair at.



- Jan. 22—Germantown, skirmish at.
- Jan. 27—Thoroughfare Mountain, affair near.
- Jan. 28-29—Jonesville, skirmishes near.
- Jan. 29—Gloucester Court House, affair near.
- Feb. 1—Bristoe Station, skirmish at.
- Feb. 2—Strasburg, skirmish near.
- Feb. 5—Aldie, skirmish near.
- Feb. 5—Winchester, affair at.
- Feb. 6—Bottom's Bridge, skirmish at.
- Feb. 6-7—Rapidan River, demonstration on the, including engagement at Morton's Ford, and skirmishes at Barnett's and Culpeper Fords.
- Feb. 14—Brentsville, affair near.
- Feb. 17-18—Piedmont, skirmish near.
- Feb. 20—Upperville and Front Royal, skirmishes at.
- Feb. 21-22—Circleville and Dranesville, skirmishes near.
- Feb. 22—Gibson's and Wyerman's Mills, skirmishes at, on Indian Creek, and at Powell's Bridge, Tenn.
- Feb. 28—Ely's Ford, affair at.
- Feb. 29—Beaver Dam Station, skirmish at.
- Feb. 29—Charlottesville, skirmish near.
- Feb. 29—Stanardsville, skirmish at.
- Feb. 29—Taylorsville, skirmish near.
- Feb. 29-March 1—Ballahock, on Bear Quarter Road, and Deep Creek, skirmishes at.
- Feb. 29-March 1—Deep Creek, skirmish at.
- March 1—Ashland, skirmish at.
- March 1—Atlee's, skirmish near.
- March 1—Brook Turnpike, near Richmond, skirmishes on.
- March 1—Burton's Ford, skirmish at.
- March 1—Stanardsville, skirmish near.
- March 2—Old Church, skirmish near.
- March 2—Walkerton, skirmish near.
- March 4-5—Portsmouth, demonstration on.
- March 6—Snickersville, skirmish at.
- March 9—Greenwich, skirmish near.
- March 9—Suffolk, skirmish near.
- March 16—Annandale, affair near.
- March 16—Bristoe Station, skirmish at.
- March 22—Cricket Hill, skirmish at.
- April 8—Winchester, skirmish at.
- April 11—Greenwich, affair near.
- April 13—Nokesville, affair near.
- April 13-15—Cherry Grove Landing, skirmish near.
- April 15—Bristoe Station and Milford, affairs near.
- April 16—Catlett's Station, affair near.
- April 17—Ellis' Ford, affair near.
- April 19—Leesburg, affair at.
- April 23—Hunter's Mills, affair near.
- April 24—Middletown, skirmish near.
- April 26—Winchester, affair at.
- April 27-29—Twelve-Mile Ordinary, skirmish at.
- May 4—Chancellorsville, skirmish near.



- May 5—Birch Island Bridges, skirmish at.
- May 5-7—Wilderness, battle of.
- May 6—Blackwater River, skirmish at.
- May 6-7—Port Walthall Junction and Chester Station, engagements at.
- May 6—Princeton, skirmish at.
- May 7—Stony Creek Station, skirmish at.
- May 8—Alsop's Farm.
- May 8—Corbin's Bridge.
- May 8—Jarratt's Station, skirmish at.
- May 8—Jeffersonville, skirmish at.
- May 8—Laurel Hill.
- May 8—Todd's Tavern.
- May 8—White's Bridge, skirmish at.
- May 9—Brandon (or Brander's) Bridge, skirmish at.
- May 9—Cloyd's Mountain, or Cloyd's Farm, engagement at.
- May 9—Davenport.
- May 9—Fort Clifton, engagement at.
- May 9—Swift Creek (or Arrowfield Church), engagement at.
- May 9, 20—Ware Bottom Church, skirmishes at.
- May 10—Chester Station, action at.
- May 10—Cove Mountain, or Grassy Lick, near Wytheville, engagement at.
- May 10—New River Bridge, skirmish at.
- May 10—Ny River.
- May 10—Po River.
- May 10—Wytheville, engagement near.
- May 11—Ashland.
- May 11—Blacksburg, skirmish at.
- May 11—Glen Allen Station.
- May 11—Ground Squirrel Bridge, or Church.
- May 11—Yellow Tavern.
- May 12—Angle, or the Salient.
- May 12—Brook Church, or Richmond Fortifications.
- May 12—Meadow Bridges.
- May 12—Mechanicsville.
- May 12—Strasburg, affair at.
- May 12—Strawberry Hill.
- May 12-16—Proctor's Creek and Drewry's Bluff (or Fort Darling) engagement at.
- May 14—Chula Depot, skirmish near.
- May 14—Flat Creek Bridge, skirmish at.
- May 14—Rude's Hill and New Market, skirmishes at.
- May 15—New Market, engagement at.
- May 15—Piney Branch Church.
- May 16—Port Walthall Junction, skirmish at.
- May 17—Waterford, skirmish near.
- May 18—City Point, skirmish at.
- May 18—Foster's Plantation, skirmish at.
- May 19—Harris' Farm.
- May 21—Fort Powhatan, skirmish at.
- May 21—Guiney's Station.
- May 21—Stanard's Mill.





- May 23—Quarles Mills.
- May 24—Ox Ford.
- May 24—Wilson's Wharf, action at.
- May 25—Jericho Bridge, or Ford, or Mills.
- May 27—Dabney's Ferry.
- May 27—Hanover Junction.
- May 27—Hanover town.
- May 27—Little River.
- May 27—Mount Carmel Church.
- May 27—Pole Cat Creek.
- May 27—Salem Church.
- May 27—Sexton's Station.
- May 28—Aenon Church.
- May 28—Crump's Creek.
- May 28—Hawe's Shop, combat at.
- May 28—Jones' Farm.
- May 28-31—Totopotomoy River.
- May 29-30—Newtown, skirmishes at.
- May 30—Armstrong's Farm.
- May 30—Matadequin Creek.
- May 30—Old Church, combat at.
- May 30—Shady Grove.
- May 31—Bethesda Church.
- May 31—Mechump's Creek.
- May 31—Shallow Creek.
- May 31—Turner's Farm.
- June 1—Ashland.
- June 2—Covington, affair at.
- June 3—Hawe's Shop, action at.
- June 3—Via's House, skirmish near.
- June 4—Harrisonburg, affair at.
- June 4—Port Republic, affair at.
- June 5—Piedmont, engagement at.
- June 7-24—Trevilian Raid.
- June 9—Loudoun County, affair in.
- June 9—Petersburg, engagement at.
- June 10—Brownsburg, skirmish at.
- June 10—Old Church, skirmish at.
- June 10—Middlebrook, skirmish at.
- June 10—Waynesboro, skirmish at.
- June 11—Lexington, skirmish at.
- June 12—Amherst Court House, skirmish near.
- June 12—Long Bridge, action at.
- June 12—Newark, or Mallory's Cross-Roads.
- June 13—Buchanan, skirmish near.
- June 13—Riddle's Shop, skirmish at.
- June 13—White Oak Swamp, skirmish at.
- June 14—Harrison's Landing, skirmish near.
- June 14—New Glasgow, affair at.
- June 15—Malvern Hill, skirmish at.
- June 15-18—Petersburg Lines, assaults on.
- June 15—Smith's Store, skirmish near.
- June 16—Bermuda Hundred Front, action on.



- June 16—New London, skirmish at.  
June 16—Otter Creek, skirmish on, near Liberty.  
June 17—Bermuda Hundred Front, skirmish on.  
June 17—Diamond Hill, skirmish at, near Lynchburg.  
June 17-18—Lynchburg, engagement at.  
June 18, 20—King and Queen Court House, skirmishes at.  
June 19—Liberty, skirmish at.  
June 19-July 31—Petersburg and Richmond, siege of.  
June 20—Buford's Gap, skirmish at.  
June 20—White House, skirmish at.  
June 21—Catawba Mountains, skirmish at.  
June 21, 28—Howlett's Bluff, actions at.  
June 21—Salem, skirmish at and near.  
June 21—White House, or Saint Peter's Church, and Black Creek, or Tunstall's Station, skirmishes at.  
June 22—Jerusalem Plank Road, engagement near.  
June 22—Reams' Station, skirmish at.  
June 23—New Castle, skirmish at.  
June 23—Jones' Bridge, skirmish at.  
June 23—Nottoway Court House, skirmish near.  
June 23-24—Falls Church and Centreville, skirmishes near.  
June 24—Hare's Hill, action at.  
June 24—Saint Mary's Church, engagement at.  
June 25—Oak Grove, engagement at.  
June 25-29—Bottom's Bridge, operations about.  
June 25—Staunton River Bridge, or Roanoke Station, skirmish at.  
June 26—Mechanicsville, battle of.  
June 27—Gaines' Mill, battle of.  
June 28—White House, operations about and destruction of stores at.  
June 28-29—Sappony Church, or Stony Creek, engagement at.  
June 29—Reams' Station, engagement at.  
June 30—Frayser's Farm, battle of.  
June 30—Malvern Cliff, engagement at.  
June 30-July 1—Four-Mile Creek, actions on, at Deep Bottom.  
July 1—Malvern Hill, battle of.  
July 3—Buckton, skirmish at.  
July 6—Mount Zion Church, near Aldie, action at.  
July 12—Turkey Creek, skirmish at.  
July 12—Warwick Swamp, skirmish at.  
July 14, 16—Malvern Hill, actions at.  
July 15—Accotink, affair at.  
July 15-16—Hillsboro, skirmishes near.  
July 16, 28—Four-Mile Creek, actions at.  
July 16—Wood Grove, skirmish at.  
July 17—Herring Creek, skirmish at.  
July 17-18—Snicker's Ferry, or Parker's Ford, engagement at.  
July 19—Ashby's Gap, skirmish at.  
July 19—Berry's Ford, engagement at.  
July 20—Stephenson's Depot, engagement at.  
July 22—Berryville, skirmish near.  
July 22—Newtown, skirmish at.  
July 23—Kernstown, skirmish near.



- July 24—Kernstown, engagement at, or battle of Winchester.
- July 27-29—James River, demonstration on the north bank of, and engagement at Deep Bottom (or Darbytown, Strawberry Plains, and New Market Road).
- July 27, 30—Lee's Mill, skirmishes.
- July 30—Mine, explosion of.
- Aug. 1—Deep Bottom, skirmish at.
- Aug. 3—Wilcox's Landing, action near.
- Aug. 4—Harrison's Landing, action near.
- Aug. 4—Jonesville, skirmish near.
- Aug. 5—Cabin Point, skirmish at.
- Aug. 5—Mine (Confederate), explosion of, in front of Eighteenth Army Corps.
- Aug. 8, Nov. 26—Fairfax Station, skirmishes at.
- Aug. 9—City Point, explosion at.
- Aug. 9—Sycamore Church, affair near.
- Aug. 10—Stone Chapel, skirmish near.
- Aug. 11—Newtown, action near.
- Aug. 11—Toll-Gate, near White Post, action at.
- Aug. 11—Winchester, skirmish near.
- Aug. 12, 15—Cedar Creek, skirmishes at.
- Aug. 13—Berryville, affair at.
- Aug. 13—Four-Mile Creek and Dutch Gap, actions at.
- Aug. 13, 14, 15—Strasburg, skirmishes at and near.
- Aug. 13-20—Bailey's Creek, combat at.
- Aug. 13-20—Charles City Road, combat at.
- Aug. 13-20—Deep Run (or Creek), combat at.
- Aug. 13-20—Deep Bottom, demonstration at.
- Aug. 13-20—Fussell's Mill, combat at.
- Aug. 13-20—Gravel Hill, combat at.
- Aug. 13-20—White's Tavern, combat at.
- Aug. 16—Cedarville (Guard Hill, or Front Royal), engagement at.
- Aug. 17—Winchester, action at.
- Aug. 18-21—Blick's Station, combat at.
- Aug. 18-21—Globe Tavern, combat at.
- Aug. 18-20—Opequon Creek, skirmishes at.
- Aug. 18-21—Weldon Railroad, battle of.
- Aug. 18-21—Yellow House, combat at.
- Aug. 19, 20, 21—Berryville, skirmishes at and near.
- Aug. 21—Loudoun County, skirmish in.
- Aug. 22—Vaughan Road, skirmish on.
- Aug. 23, 24—Reams' Station, actions near.
- Aug. 24—Annandale, skirmish at.
- Aug. 24—Vaughan Road, near Reams' Station, action on.
- Aug. 25—Reams' Station, battle of.
- Aug. 29—Opequon Creek, skirmish on Berryville and Winchester Pike, near.
- Aug. 31—Davis House, skirmish near.
- Sept. 3—Berryville, engagement near.
- Sept. 3—Sycamore Church, affair near.
- Sept. 4, 14—Berryville, skirmishes at and near.
- Sept. 5—Stephenson's Depot, skirmish near.
- Sept. 7—Brucetown, skirmishes near Winchester, and near.



- Sept. 9—Currituck Bridge, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 9—Fawn, steamer, capture of, and skirmish at Currituck Bridge.  
 Sept. 10—Chimneys, assault on Confederate works at.  
 Sept. 13—Abraham's Creek, near Winchester, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 13—Berryville, affair near.  
 Sept. 13, 15—Opequon Creek, skirmishes at.  
 Sept. 15—Dinwiddie Court House, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 15—Seivers' Ford, Opequon Creek, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 16-17—Coggins' Point, affair at (16th) and pursuit of the Confederates.  
 Sept. 16-17—Snicker's Gap, skirmishes at.  
 Sept. 17—Limestone Ridge, affair at.  
 Sept. 19—Culpeper, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 19—Winchester (or the Opequon), battle of.  
 Sept. 20—Cedarville, skirmish near.  
 Sept. 20—Middletown, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 20, 21—Strasburg, skirmishes at.  
 Sept. 21—Fisher's Hill, skirmishes at.  
 Sept. 21, 23—Front Royal, skirmishes at.  
 Sept. 22—Fisher's Hill, battle of.  
 Sept. 22—Milford, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 23—Woodstock, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 23—Edenburg, skirmish near.  
 Sept. 23, 24—Mount Jackson, skirmishes at.  
 Sept. 24—Forest Hill (or Timberville), skirmish at.  
 Sept. 24—Luray, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 24—New Market, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 24—Winchester, skirmish near.  
 Sept. 26—Brown's Gap, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 26, 27—Weyer's Cave, skirmishes at.  
 Sept. 26, 28—Port Republic, skirmishes at.  
 Sept. 28—Rockfish Gap, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 29—Waynesboro, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 29-30—Chaffin's Farm, battle of.  
 Sept. 29-Oct. 2—Poplar Spring Church, battle of.  
 Oct. 2—Bridgewater, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 2—Mount Crawford, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 3—Mount Jackson, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 3—North River, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 6—Fisher's Hill, skirmish near.  
 Oct. 6—Brock's Gap, skirmish near.  
 Oct. 7—Back Road, near Strasburg, skirmish on.  
 Oct. 7—Columbia Furnace, skirmish near.  
 Oct. 7—Darbytown and New Market Roads, engagement on.  
 Oct. 8—Luray Valley, skirmish in.  
 Oct. 9—Piedmont, skirmish near.  
 Oct. 9—Tom's Brook, engagement at.  
 Oct. 10—Rectortown, skirmish near.  
 Oct. 11—White Plains, skirmish near.  
 Oct. 13—Cedar Creek, action at.  
 Oct. 13—Darbytown Road, engagement on.  
 Oct. 14—Strasburg (or Hupp's Hill), skirmish at.





- Oct. 16—Blackwater, skirmish at.
- Oct. 17—Cedar Run Church, affair at.
- Oct. 19—Cedar Creek, battle of.
- Oct. 23—Dry Run, skirmish at.
- Oct. 25-26—Milford, skirmishes at.
- Oct. 26—Scott County, affair in.
- Oct. 27—Boydton Plank Road, or Hatcher's Run, engagement at.
- Oct. 27—Fort Morton and Fort Sedgwick, skirmish in front of.
- Oct. 27-28—Darbytown Road, engagement at.
- Oct. 27-28—Hatcher's Run, engagement at.
- Oct. 28—Newtown, skirmish near.
- Oct. 29—Jolinson's Farm, skirmish at.
- Oct. 29—Upperville, skirmish at.
- Nov. 5—Forts Haskell and Morton, skirmishes in front of.
- Nov. 7—Edenburg, skirmish near.
- Nov. 10, 11—Kernstown, skirmishes near.
- Nov. 11—Manassas Junction, skirmish at.
- Nov. 12—Cedar Creek, action at.
- Nov. 12—Newtown (or Middletown), action at.
- Nov. 12—Nineveh, action at.
- Nov. 16—Lee's Mill, skirmish near.
- Nov. 22—Front Royal, skirmish at.
- Nov. 22—Mount Jackson, action at Rude's Hill, near.
- Nov. 24—Parkins' Mill, skirmish at.
- Nov. 24—Prince George Court House, skirmish near.
- Nov. 28—Goresville, skirmish at.
- Nov. 30—Snicker's Gap, skirmish at.
- Dec. 1—Stony Creek Station, expedition to, and skirmish.
- Dec. 4—Davenport Church, skirmish near.
- Dec. 7-12—Hicksford, expedition to, and skirmishes.
- Dec. 8—Belfield, action at.
- Dec. 8-9—Jarratt's Station, skirmish.
- Dec. 8, 9, 10—Hatcher's Run, skirmishes at.
- Dec. 10—Fort Holly, skirmish in front of.
- Dec. 15—Abingdon, skirmish near.
- Dec. 15—Glade Springs, skirmish near.
- Dec. 16—Marion, action at, and capture of Wytheville.
- Dec. 17—Lead Mines, capture and destruction of.
- Dec. 17—Mount Airy, skirmish near.
- Dec. 17-18—Marion, engagement near.
- Dec. 20-21—Saltville, capture and destruction of salt works at.
- Dec. 21—Lacey's Springs, action at.
- Dec. 21—Madison Court House, skirmish at.
- Dec. 23—Gordonsville, skirmish near.
- Dec. 24—Taylortown, skirmish at.

1865

- Jan. 9—Disputanta Station, skirmish near.
- Jan. 18—Lovettsville, affair near.
- Jan. 23-24—Fort Brady, James River, action at.
- Jan. 25—Powhatan, skirmish near.
- Feb. 5-7—Hatcher's Run, battle of.



- Feb. 13-17—Edenburg and Little Fort Valley, expedition to  
Camp Russell (near Winchester) to, and skirmishes.
- March 1—Mount Crawford, skirmish at.
- March 2—Swoope's Depot, affair at.
- March 2—Waynesboro, engagement at.
- March 3-8—Bealeton Station, operations about.
- March 4—Ball's Bridge, skirmish at.
- March 5—Harrisonburg, skirmish at.
- March 7—Flint Hill, skirmish near.
- March 7—Mount Jackson, skirmish near.
- March 7—Rude's Hill, skirmish at.
- March 8—Duguidsville, skirmish at.
- March 10—South Quay, skirmish at.
- March 11—Goochland Court House, skirmish at.
- March 12—Peach Grove, skirmish near.
- March 12—Warsaw, skirmish near.
- March 13—Beaver Dam Station, skirmish near.
- March 14—South Anna Bridge, skirmish at.
- March 14—Woodstock, skirmish at.
- March 15—Ashby's Gap, skirmish near.
- March 15—Ashland, skirmish near.
- March 15—Hanover Court House, skirmish at.
- March 18—Dranesville, skirmish near.
- March 21—Fisher's Hill, skirmish near.
- March 21—Hamilton, skirmish near.
- March 23—Goose Creek, skirmish at.
- March 25—Fort Fisher, action at.
- March 25—Fort Stedman, assault on.
- March 25—Watkins House, action at.
- March 29—Lewis Farm, engagement at, near Gravelly Run.
- March 29—Vaughan Road, skirmish on, near Hatcher's Run.
- March 29—Quaker and Boydton Roads, skirmish at junction of.
- March 30—Five Forks, skirmish near.
- March 30—Hatcher's Run and Gravelly Run, skirmishes on the  
line of.
- March 31—Boydton Road, action at.
- March 31—Crow's House, action at.
- March 31—Dinwiddie Court House, engagement at.
- March 31—Hatcher's Run, or Boydton Road, action at.
- March 31—White Oak Road, or White Oak Ridge, engagement at.
- April 1—Five Forks, battle of.
- April 1—White Oak Road, skirmish at.
- April 2—Gravelly Ford, on Hatcher's Run, skirmish at.
- April 2—Petersburg, assault upon and capture of fortified lines  
in front of.
- April 2—Scott's Cross-Roads, action at.
- April 2—Sutherland's Station, South Side Railroad, engage-  
ment at.
- April 3—Hillsville, skirmish near.
- April 3—Namozine Church, action at.
- April 4—Beaver Pond Creek, skirmish at.
- April 4—Tabernacle Church, or Beaver Pond Creek, skirmish at.
- April 4-5—Amelia Court House, skirmish at.



- April 5—Amelia Springs, engagement at.
- April 5—Paine's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.
- April 6—Amelia Springs, skirmish at Flat Creek, near.
- April 6—High Bridge, action near.
- April 6—Rice's Station, engagement at.
- April 6—Sailor's Creek, engagement at.
- April 6—Wytheville, action at.
- April 7—Farmville, engagement at.
- April 7—High Bridge, engagement at.
- April 7—Prince Edward Court House, skirmish at.
- April 8—Appomattox Station, engagement at.
- April 9—Appomattox Court House, engagement at.
- April 9—Appomattox Court House (Clover Hill), surrender of army of Northern Virginia at.
- April 10—Arundel's Farm, skirmish at.
- April 10—Burke's Station and Arundel's Farm, skirmishes near.

## WEST VIRGINIA.

1861

- April 18—Harper's Ferry, armory at, destruction of.
- June 3—Philippi, action at.
- June 19—New Creek, skirmish at.
- June 26—Frankfort, skirmish at.
- July 2—Falling Waters, engagement at.
- July 4—Harper's Ferry, skirmish at.
- July 6-7—Middle Fork Bridge, skirmishes at.
- July 7—Glenville, skirmish at.
- July 7-12—Belington and Laurel Hill, skirmishes at.
- July 10—Rich Mountain, skirmish.
- July 11—Rich Mountain, engagement at.
- July 13—Carrick's Ford, action at.
- July 13—Red House, skirmish at.
- July 16—Barboursville, skirmish at.
- July 17—Scary Creek, action at.
- Aug. 20—Hawk's Nest, skirmish at.
- Aug. 20—Laurel Fork, skirmish at.
- Aug. 25—Grafton, skirmishes near.
- Aug. 25—Piggot's Mill, skirmish near.
- Aug. 26—Cross-Lanes, action at.
- Aug. 26-27—Wayne Court House, skirmish at.
- Sept. 1—Blue Creek, skirmish at.
- Sept. 1—Boone Court House, skirmish at.
- Sept. 1—Burlington, skirmish at.
- Sept. 2—Beller's Mill, skirmish at.
- Sept. 2—Hawk's Nest, skirmish at.
- Sept. 2—Worthington, skirmish at.
- Sept. 6—Rowell's Run, skirmish at.
- Sept. 9—Shepherdstown, skirmish at.
- Sept. 10—Carnifex Ferry, Gauley River, engagement at.
- Sept. 11—Elk Water, action at.
- Sept. 12—Petersburg, skirmish at.
- Sept. 12—Peytona, skirmish near.



- Sept. 16—Princeton, action at.  
 Sept. 23—Cassville, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 25—Kanawha Gap, action at.  
 Oct. 3—Greenbrier River, engagement at.  
 Oct. 11—Harper's Ferry, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 13—Cotton Hill, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 16—Bolivar Heights, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 19-21—New River, skirmishes on.  
 Oct. 23—Gauley, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 26—Romney, action at.  
 Oct. 26—South Branch Bridge, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 26—Springfield, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 31—Greenbrier, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 1-3—Gauley Bridge, skirmishes near.  
 Nov. 10-11—Blake's Farm, skirmishes at.  
 Nov. 10—Guyandotte, affair at.  
 Nov. 12—Laurel Creek, skirmish on.  
 Nov. 13—Romney, skirmish near.  
 Nov. 14—Fayetteville, skirmish near.  
 Nov. 14—McCoy's Mill, skirmish near.  
 Nov. 30—Little Cacapon River, skirmish near mouth of.  
 Dec. 8—Romney, skirmish near.  
 Dec. 12—Greenbrier River, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 13—Camp Alleghany, engagement at.  
 Dec. 15—Roane County, affair in.  
 Dec. 25—Cherry Run, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 29-30—Braxton County, skirmishes in.  
 Dec. 29-30—Clay County, skirmishes in.  
 Dec. 29-30—Webster County, skirmishes in.

## 1862

- Jan. 3-4—Bath, skirmishes at.  
 Jan. 4—Alpine Depot, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 4—Great Cacapon Bridge, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 4—Sir John's Run, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 4—Slane's Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 7—Hanging Rock Pass, skirmish at.  
 Jan. 8—Cheat River, skirmish on Dry Fork of.  
 Feb. 8—Blue Stone, skirmish at the mouth of the.  
 Feb. 12—Moorefield, skirmish at.  
 Feb. 14—Bloomery Gap, affair at.  
 March 3—Martinsburg, skirmish at.  
 March 19—Elk Mountain, skirmish at.  
 March 20—Philippi, skirmish at.  
 April 18—Chapmanville, skirmish at.  
 April 23—Grass Lick, skirmish at.  
 April 26—Gordonsville and Keezletown Cross-Roads, skirmish at.  
 April 27—Garrett's Mill, skirmish at.  
 May 1—Camp Creek, skirmish on.  
 May 1—Clark's Hollow, skirmish at.  
 May 5, 10, 12, 26—Franklin, skirmishes near.  
 May 5, 11—Princeton, skirmishes at.  
 May 6—Arnoldsburg, skirmish at.





- May 6—Camp McDonald, skirmish at.  
May 7, 29—Wardensville, skirmishes at and near.  
May 10-12—Franklin, skirmishes near.  
May 12, 30—Lewisburg, skirmishes at.  
May 15—Ravenswood, skirmish at.  
May 15—Wolf Creek, action at.  
May 16-17—Princeton, actions at.  
May 23—Lewisburg, action at.  
May 28—Charlestown, skirmish at.  
June 4-7—Big Bend, skirmishes at.  
June 8—Muddy Creek, skirmish at.  
June 10—West Fork, skirmish at mouth of.  
June 25—Mungo Flata, skirmish at.  
June 29—Moorefield, affair at.  
July 25—Summerville, affair at.  
July 27—Flat Top Mountain, skirmish at.  
Aug. 2-8—Wyoming Court House, operations about.  
Aug. 6—Beech Creek, skirmish at.  
Aug. 6—Pack's Ferry, New River, skirmish at.  
Aug. 13-14—Blue Stone, skirmishes at.  
Aug. 18—Huttonsville, skirmish at.  
Aug. 23—Harper's Ferry, capture of railroad train near.  
Aug. 23—Moorefield, skirmish at.  
Aug. 30—Buckhannon, skirmish at.  
Aug. 31—Weston, capture of.  
Sept. 1—Glenville, skirmish at.  
Sept. 3, 11—Martinsburg, skirmishes.  
Sept. 3—Ravenswood, skirmish at.  
Sept. 3—Weston, skirmish at.  
Sept. 4—Bunker Hill, skirmish at.  
Sept. 7—Darkesville, skirmish at.  
Sept. 10—Fayetteville, action at.  
Sept. 11—Armstrong's Creek, skirmish at.  
Sept. 11—Cannelton, skirmish near.  
Sept. 11—Cotton Hill, skirmish at.  
Sept. 11—Gauley Ferry, skirmish at.  
Sept. 11—Miller's Ferry, skirmish at.  
Sept. 12—Hurricane Bridge, skirmish at.  
Sept. 12-15—Harper's Ferry, siege and capture of.  
Sept. 13-14—Bolivar Heights, action on.  
Sept. 13—Charleston, action at.  
Sept. 19—Shepherdstown, Ford, skirmish at.  
Sept. 20—Point Pleasant, skirmish at.  
Sept. 20—Shepherdstown, action near.  
Sept. 26-27—Buffalo, skirmish at.  
Sept. 28—Standing Stone, skirmish at.  
Sept. 30—Glenville, skirmish near.  
Oct. 2—Blue's Gap, affair at.  
Oct. 4—Little Cacapon Bridge, capture of Union forces at.  
Oct. 4—Paw Paw Tunnel, capture of Union forces at.  
Oct. 6—Big Birch, skirmish at.  
Oct. 16-17—Kearneysville, skirmishes near.  
Oct. 16-17—Shepherdstown, skirmishes near.



- Oct. 20—Hedgesville, skirmish at.
- Oct. 29—Petersburg, skirmish near.
- Oct. 31—Kanawha River, skirmish near the falls of the.
- Nov. 6—Martinsburg, skirmish near.
- Nov. 9—Saint George, capture of.
- Nov. 9—South Fork of the Potomac, skirmish on the.
- Nov. 10—Charlestown, skirmish at.
- Nov. 15—Guyandotte, skirmish on the.
- Nov. 22—Halltown, skirmish near.
- Nov. 26—Cockrall's Mill, skirmish at.
- Nov. 26—Lewis' Mill, skirmish at.
- Dec. 1—Romney, skirmish at.
- Dec. 2—Charlestown, skirmish at.
- Dec. 3—Moorefield, skirmish at.
- Dec. 11—Darkesville, skirmish at.
- Dec. 12—Harper's Ferry, skirmish between Leesburg, Va., and.
- Dec. 16, 22—Wardensville, skirmishes at.
- Dec. 20—Halltown, skirmish near.

1863

- Jan. 3-5—Moorefield, skirmishes near.
- Jan. 22—Pocahontas County, skirmish in.
- Feb. 12—Smithfield and Charlestown, skirmish near.
- Feb. 16—Romney, affair near.
- March 7—Green Spring Run, skirmish at.
- March 28—Hurricane Bridge, skirmish at.
- March 30—Point Pleasant, skirmishes at.
- April 5—Mud River, skirmish at.
- April 6-7—Goings' Ford, skirmish at.
- April 6-7—Purgitsville, skirmish at.
- April 18—Johnstown, Harrison County, affair near.
- April 20—Bridgeport, skirmish at.
- April 22—Point Pleasant, skirmish at.
- April 24—Beverly, skirmish at.
- April 24—Gilmer County, skirmish in.
- April 25—Greenland Gap, skirmish at.
- April 26—Burlington, skirmish at.
- April 26—Portland, skirmish at.
- April 26—Rowlesburg, skirmish at.
- April 27—Independence, affair at.
- April 27—Morgantown, affair at.
- April 29—Fairmont, skirmish at.
- April 30—Simpson's Creek, skirmish near.
- May 2—Lewisburg, skirmish near.
- May 5—Janelew, skirmish at.
- May 6—West Union, skirmish at.
- May 7—Cairo Station, affair at.
- May 7—Harrisville (Ritchie Court House), affair at.
- May 12—Summerville, skirmish at.
- May 16—Charlestown, skirmish at.
- May 16—Elizabeth Court House, skirmish at.
- May 16—Ravenswood, skirmish at.
- May 18-20—Fayetteville, skirmishes at and about.
- May 23—West Creek, skirmish at.



- June 3—Fayetteville, skirmish near.  
June 13—Bunker Hill, skirmish at.  
June 14—Martinsburg, skirmish at.  
June 26—Loup Creek, skirmish on.  
July 4, 28—Fayetteville, skirmishes at.  
July 7, 14—Harper's Ferry, skirmishes at and near.  
July 15—Halltown, skirmish at.  
July 15—Shepherdstown, skirmish at.  
July 16—Shanghai, skirmish at.  
July 16—Shepherdstown, action at.  
July 17—North Mountain Station, skirmish near.  
July 18-19—Hedgesville and Martinsburg, skirmishes at and near.  
July 31—Morris' Mills, skirmish at.  
Aug. 4—Burlington, skirmish at.  
Aug. 5—Cold Spring Gap, skirmish at.  
Aug. 6—Cacapon Mountain, skirmish at.  
Aug. 6—Moorefield, skirmish at.  
Aug. 21, 27—Glenville, skirmishes near.  
Aug. 22—Huntersville, skirmish at.  
Aug. 24—Warm Springs, skirmish near.  
Aug. 26—Moorefield, skirmish near.  
Aug. 26-27—Rocky Gap, near White Sulphur Springs, engagement at.  
Aug. 26-28—Sutton, Elk River and Glenville, skirmishes near.  
Aug. 27—Ball's Mill, skirmish at.  
Aug. 27—Elk River, skirmish on.  
Sept. 4—Moorefield, skirmish at.  
Sept. 4—Petersburg Gap, skirmish at.  
Sept. 6—Petersburg, skirmish at.  
Sept. 7—Bath, skirmish at.  
Sept. 8—Beech Fork, Calhoun County, skirmish at.  
Sept. 8—Sutton, skirmish at.  
Sept. 11, 21—Moorefield, affairs at.  
Sept. 12—Roane County, skirmish in.  
Sept. 14—Cheat Mountain Pass, skirmish at.  
Sept. 15—Smithfield, affair at.  
Sept. 20—Shaver Mountain, affair on.  
Sept. 24—Greenbrier Bridge, skirmish at.  
Sept. 25—Cheat River, skirmish at.  
Sept. 25—Seneca Trace Crossing, Cheat River, skirmish at.  
Oct. 1—Harper's Ferry, skirmish near.  
Oct. 7—Charlestown and Summit Point, skirmishes at.  
Oct. 11, 14—Salt Lick Bridge, skirmishes at.  
Oct. 13—Bulltown, skirmish at.  
Oct. 13—Burlington, skirmish at.  
Oct. 15—Hedgesville, affair at.  
Oct. 18—Charlestown, attack on, and skirmishes on road to Berryville, Va.  
Oct. 26—Ravenswood, skirmish at.  
Oct. 27—Elizabeth, skirmish on Sandy River, near.  
Nov. 4—Cackletown, skirmish near.  
Nov. 5—Mill Point, skirmish at.  
Nov. 6—Droop Mountain, engagement at.  
Nov. 6—Little Sewell Mountain, skirmish at.



- Nov. 7—Lewisburg, capture of.
- Nov. 7—Muddy Creek, skirmish near.
- Nov. 8—Second Creek, on the road to Union, skirmish at
- Nov. 10—Elk Mountain, near Hillsboro, skirmish on.
- Nov. 16—Burlington, skirmish near.
- Dec. 4, 11, 14—Meadow Bluff, skirmishes at and near.
- Dec. 6—Cheat River, skirmish at.
- Dec. 8-25—Kanawha Valley, demonstration from the.
- Dec. 11—Big Sewell and Meadow Bluff, skirmishes at.
- Dec. 11—Marling Bottom Bridge, skirmish at.
- Dec. 12—Gatewood's, skirmish at.
- Dec. 12—Lewisburg and Greenbrier River, skirmishes at.
- Dec. 13—Hurricane Bridge, affair at.
- Dec. 14—Blue Sulphur Road, near Meadow Bluff, skirmish on
- Dec. 28—Moorefield, skirmish at.

1864

- Jan. 1—Bunker Hill, affair at.
- Jan. 10, 15—Petersburg, skirmishes at and near.
- Feb. 2—Patterson's Creek, skirmish at.
- Feb. 4—Moorefield, skirmish at.
- Feb. 15—Laurel Creek, Wayne County, skirmish at.
- March 3—Petersburg, skirmish near.
- March 10—Charlestown, skirmishes near, and at Kabletown.
- March 28—Bloomery Gap, affair at.
- April 19—Marling's Bottom, affair at.
- May 8—Halltown, affair at.
- May 10—Lost River Gap, skirmish at.
- May 24—Charlestown, skirmish near.
- June 4—Panther Gap, skirmish at.
- June 6—Moorefield, skirmish near.
- June 19—Petersburg, affair near.
- June 23—Cove Gap, skirmish at.
- June 23—Sweet Sulphur Springs, skirmish at.
- June 26—Wire Bridge and Springfield, skirmishes at.
- June 29—Charlestown and Duffield's Station, skirmishes at.
- July 3, 19,—Darkesville, skirmishes at.
- July 3—Leetown, skirmish at.
- July 3, 25—Martinsburg, skirmishes at.
- July 3—North Mountain, skirmish at.
- July 3—North River Mills, skirmish at.
- July 4—Patterson's Creek Bridge, skirmish at.
- July 4—South Branch Bridge, skirmish at.
- July 6—Big Cacapon Bridge, skirmish at.
- July 6—Sir John's Run, skirmish at.
- July 10, 18, 19—Kabletown, skirmishes at and near.
- July 19, 25—Bunker Hill, skirmishes at.
- July 19—Charlestown, skirmish at.
- July 24, 26—Falling Waters, skirmishes at.
- July 27—Back Creek Bridge, skirmish at.
- July 30—Shepherdstown, skirmish near.
- Aug. 2—Green Spring Run, skirmish at.
- Aug. 4—New Creek, action at.
- Aug. 5—Huttonsville, skirmish at.
- Aug. 7—Moorefield, engagement near.
- Aug. 7—Oldfields, engagement at, near Moorefield.





- Aug. 15, 21, 26—Charlestown, skirmishes near.  
 Aug. 19—Franklin, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 20—Bulltown, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 21—Middleway, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 21—Summit Point, skirmish near.  
 Aug. 21—Welch's (or Flowing) Spring, near Charlestown, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 22, 29—Charlestown, skirmishes at.  
 Aug. 23—Kearneysville, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 24—Huttonsville, affair at.  
 Aug. 24—Sutton, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 24, 25—Halltown, skirmishes at.  
 Aug. 25—Kearneysville, action near.  
 Aug. 25—Shepherdstown, action near.  
 Aug. 26—Halltown, action at.  
 Aug. 27—Duffield's Station, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 27—Nutter's Hill, skirmish at.  
 Aug. 28—Leetown and Smithfield, skirmishes at.  
 Aug. 29—Opequon Creek, engagement at Smithfield crossing of.  
 Aug. 30—Smithfield, skirmish near.  
 Aug. 31—Martinsburg, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 1—Opequon Creek, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 2—Bunker Hill, actions at.  
 Sept. 2, 10—Darkesville, skirmishes at.  
 Sept. 13—Bunker Hill, skirmish at.  
 Sept. 14—Centerville, skirmish near.  
 Sept. 18—Martinsburg, action near.  
 Sept. 27-28—Buckhannon, skirmishes at.  
 Sept. 30—Coalsmouth, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 11—Petersburg, skirmish near.  
 Oct. 14—Duffield's Station, affair at.  
 Oct. 26—Winfield, skirmish at.  
 Oct. 29—Beverly, action at.  
 Nov. 1—Green Spring Run, affair at.  
 Nov. 18, 20, 30—Kabletown, skirmishes at.  
 Nov. 27-28—Moorefield, skirmishes at.  
 Nov. 28—New Creek, affair at.  
 Nov. 28—Piedmont, skirmish at.  
 Nov. 29—Charlestown, skirmish at.  
 Dec. 22—Liberty Mills, skirmish at.

1865

- Jan. 11—Beverly, capture of U. S. forces at.  
 Feb. 3—Harper's Ferry, affair near.  
 March 13—Charlestown, skirmish near.  
 March 22—Patterson's Creek Station, skirmish near.  
 March 30—Patterson's Creek, affair near.  
 April 6—Charlestown, affair near.

## MISCELLANEOUS.

1861

- Dec. 27—Creeks and Seminoles, skirmish with.

1863

- June 23—Pawnee Agency, Neb., attack on.  
 July 4—Fort Craig, N. Mex., skirmish with Indians near.



- July 7—Grand Pass, Idaho, skirmish with Indians at.
- July 10, 24—Cook's Canon, N. Mex., skirmishes with Indians at.
- July 18—Rio Hondo, N. Mex., skirmish with Indians on the
- July 19—Rio de las Animas, N. Mex., skirmish with Indians at the.
- July 29—Conchas Springs, N. Mex., skirmish with Indians at.
- Aug. 18—Pueblo Colorado, N. Mex., skirmish with Indians at.
- Dec. 1—Ponca Indians, affair with.

## 1864

- Aug. 11—Sand Creek, Col. Ter., skirmish near.
- Aug. 16—Smoky Hill Crossing, Kan., skirmish near, with Indians at.
- Nov. 13—Ash Creek, Kan., skirmish with Indians at, near Fort Larned.
- Nov. 20—Fort Zarah, Kan., skirmishes with Indians near.
- Nov. 25—Adobe Fort, N. Mex., engagement with Indians at.
- Nov. 29—Sand Creek, Col. Ter., engagement with Indians on.
- Dec. 4—Fort Zarah, Kan., skirmish with Indians near.

## 1865

- Jan. 7—Valley Station and Julesburg, Col. Ter., skirmishes with Indians at.
- Jan. 14—Godfrey's Ranch, Col. Ter., skirmish with Indians at.
- Jan. 15—Morrison's or American Ranch, Col. Ter., skirmish with Indians at.
- Jan. 15 and 28—Valley Station, Col. Ter., skirmishes with Indians near.
- Jan. 15—Wisconsin Ranch, Col. Ter., skirmish with Indians at.
- Jan. 20—Fort Larned, Kan., skirmish near.
- Jan. 25—Gittrell's Ranch, Col. Ter., skirmish with Indians at.
- Jan. 26—Moore's Ranch, Col. Ter., skirmish with Indians at.
- Jan. 27—Lillian Springs Ranch, Col. Ter., skirmish with Indians at.
- Feb. 2—Julesburg, Col. Ter., attack on the Overland Stage Station at.
- March 7—Fort Larned, Kan., skirmish with Indians eighty miles west of.
- May 13—Julesburg, Col. Ter., skirmish with Indians at D. Smith's Ranch near.
- May 18—Couteau, Minn., skirmish with Indians on.
- May 18—Fort Kearny, Neb. Ter., skirmish with Indians near.
- May 26, 28—Sweetwater Station, Dak. Ter., skirmishes with Indians at.
- May 27—Saint Mary's Station, Dak. Ter., skirmish with Indians at.
- June 1—Sweetwater Station, Dak. Ter., skirmish with Indians at.
- June 3—Dry Creek, Dak. Ter., skirmish with Indians at.
- June 3—Platte Bridge, Dak. Ter., skirmish with Indians at.
- June 4-10—Fort Collins, Col. Ter., operations against Indians near.
- June 8, 12—Fort Dodge, Kan., skirmishes at.
- June 8-14—Overland Stage Road, attack by Indians on, in Kansas and Colorado, with skirmishes, etc.
- June 14—Horse Creek, Dak. Ter., action with Indians at.
- June 20—Fort Dodge, Kan., skirmish with Indians near.
- June 30—Rock Creek, Dak. Ter., skirmish with Indians at.
- July 26—Platte Bridge, Dak. Ter., skirmish with Indians at.



## STATISTICS.

## POPULATION OF THE UNITED STATES, 1860.

## NORTHERN STATES.

STATES.	WHITE.	COLORED.
California .....	323,177	4,086
Connecticut .....	451,504	8,627
Delaware .....	90,589	21,627
Illinois .....	1,704,291	7,628
Indiana .....	1,338,710	11,428
Iowa .....	673,779	1,069
Kansas .....	100,390	627
Maine .....	626,947	1,327
Massachusetts .....	1,221,432	9,602
Michigan .....	736,142	6,799
Minnesota .....	169,395	259
New Hampshire .....	325,579	491
New Jersey .....	646,699	25,336
New York .....	3,831,590	49,004
Ohio .....	2,302,808	36,673
Oregon .....	52,160	128
Pennsylvania .....	2,849,259	56,949
Rhode Island .....	170,649	3,952
Vermont .....	314,369	709
Wisconsin .....	773,693	1,171
Territories .....	142,374	344
	18,882,536	237,830

Aggregate, 19,120,375.

## SOUTHERN STATES.

STATES.	WHITE.	COLORED.
Alabama .....	526,271	437,770
Arkansas .....	210,666	111,259
Florida .....	77,746	62,677
Georgia .....	725,133	465,608
Louisiana .....	357,456	350,373
Mississippi .....	353,899	437,404
North Carolina .....	629,924	361,522
South Carolina .....	291,300	412,320
Tennessee .....	826,722	283,019
Texas .....	420,891	182,921
Virginia* .....	1,047,299	548,907
	5,457,307	3,644,370

Aggregate, 9,101,677.

\*The population of the counties set off as West Virginia was about 400,000 white and 18,000 colored.



## BORDER SOUTHERN STATES, ETC.

STATES.	WHITE.	COLORED.
Kentucky.....	919,484	236,167
Maryland.....	515,918	171,131
Missouri.....	1,063,489	118,503
District of Columbia .....	60,763	14,316
New Mexico Territory.....	82,924	85
	2,642,578	540,202

Aggregate, 3,182,780.

The aggregate population of the "Southern States" in 1890 was 16,476,600 of the "Border Southern States," 5,934,197; aggregate 22,410,866. A comparison with the aggregate for the United States (62,779,139) shows the remarkable fact that the relative population of the North and South is almost the same as in 1860 in spite of both the crushing blows of war and the immense development of the West. The population of the fifteen States was not quite 40 per cent. of the whole in 1860; it is now 35 per cent.

## ARMY ENROLLMENT.

A tabulation of the official returns shows the following total enrollments, *present and absent*, in the active armies of the Confederate States (From "Battles and Leaders of the Civil War"):

	JAN. 1, 1862.	JAN. 1, 1863.	JAN. 1, 1864.	JAN. 1, 1865.
Army of Northern Virginia..	84,225	144,605	92,050	155,772
Dept. of Richmond.....	.....	7,820	8,494	16,601
Dept. of Norfolk.....	16,825	.....	.....	.....
Dept. of the Peninsula.....	20,138	.....	.....	.....
Dept. of Fredericksburg....	10,645	.....	.....	.....
Dept. of North Carolina....	13,650	40,821	9,876	5,187
Dept. of Miss. and E. La....	4,391	73,114	46,906	32,143
Dept. of Pensacola.....	18,214	.....	.....	.....
Dept. of New Orleans.....	10,318	.....	.....	.....
Dept. of the Gulf.....	.....	10,489	17,241	12,820
Western Department.....	24,784	.....	.....	.....
Army of Tennessee.....	.....	82,799	88,457	86,905
Dept. of Kentucky.....	39,565	.....	.....	.....
Dept. of East Tennessee....	.....	18,768	58,821	.....
Dept. of the Northwest.....	4,296	.....	.....	.....
Dept. of Western Virginia..	.....	10,116	18,642	7,138
Trans-Mississippi Dept.....	*30,000	*50,000	73,289	*70,000
Aggregate .....	318,011	465,584	472,781	430,075

\*Estimated.





## COMPARATIVE TABLE OF ORGANIZATIONS FOR THE ARMY.

STATES.	CAVALRY.		INFANTRY.		ARTILLERY.		
	Regiments.	Battalions.	Regiments.	Battalions.	Regiments.	Batteries.	Battalions (heavy).
Alabama.....	5	....	55	11	....	16	....
Arkansas.....	6	2	35	12	....	15	....
Florida.....	2	1	10	2	....	6	....
Georgia.....	11	2	68	17	....	30	2
Louisiana.....	2	1	34	10	2	26	....
Mississippi.....	7	4	49	6	....	20	....
North Carolina.....	1	5	69	4	....	11	2
South Carolina.....	7	1	33	2	1	29	1
Tennessee.....	21	11	61	2	1	33	1
Texas.....	28	4	22	5	....	16	....
Virginia.....	22	11	65	10	1	53	....
Border States.....	9	5	21	4	....	11	....
C. S. Regulars.....	6	....	7	....	....	1	....
Total .....	127	47	529	85	5	261	6

The above table is copied from La Bree's "Confederate Soldier in the Civil War." It does not include Partisan Rangers, "regiments which served a short time only, disbanded or consolidated regiments, nor militia, reserves, home guards, local defense troops and separate companies," all of which at times rendered effective service. The table is inaccurate, as will appear by comparison with the various State histories in this work, but is quoted here as a basis for estimate.

## CONFEDERATE SOLDIERS PAROLED, 1865.

The report of the United States secretary of war, November 22, 1865, gives the number of Confederate soldiers paroled at the close of the war: Army of Northern Virginia, 27,805; army of Tennessee and other forces under Gen. J. E. Johnston, 31,243; army under Gen. Richard Taylor, 42,293; army of the Trans-Mississippi, Gen. E. Kirby Smith, 17,686; Gen. M. Jeff Thompson's army of Missouri, 7,978; paroled at Cumberland, Md., and stations in Virginia, 13,359; paroled by General McCook in Alabama and Florida, 6,423; miscellaneous paroles, 22,341. Total, 174,223.



## CASUALTIES IN CONFEDERATE ARMIES.

TROOPS FROM	KILLED.	DIED OF WOUNDS.	DIED OF DISEASE.	TOTAL.
Alabama.....	552	190	724	1,466
Arkansas.....	2,165	915	3,782	6,862
Florida.....	793	506	1,047	2,346
Georgia.....	5,553	1,719	3,702	10,974
Louisiana.....	2,618	868	3,059	6,545
Mississippi.....	5,807	2,651	6,807	15,265
North Carolina.....	14,522	5,151	20,602	40,275
South Carolina.....	9,187	3,735	4,760	17,682
Tennessee.....	2,115	874	3,425	6,414
Texas.....	1,348	1,241	1,260	3,849
Virginia.....	5,328	2,519	6,947	14,794
Regular C. S. Army.....	1,007	468	1,040	2,515
Border States.....	1,959	733	2,142	4,834
Total.....	52,954	21,570	59,297	133,821

The above table is based on Gen. J. B. Fry's tabulation of Confederate losses from the muster rolls on file in the bureau of Confederate archives, and is incomplete. Nearly all the Alabama rolls are missing, and it is obvious that some of the other States are imperfectly reported.

## STATISTICS OF UNION ARMY.

The total enlistments in the United States army, 1861-65, no distinction being made between original enlistments and re-enlistments, were of white troops, 2,494,592, of which Alabama furnished 2,576, Arkansas 8,289, Florida 1,290, Kentucky 51,743, Louisiana 5,224, Maryland 33,995, Mississippi 545, Missouri 100,616, New Mexico 6,561, North Carolina 3,156, Tennessee 31,092, Texas 1,005, West Virginia 31,872; an aggregate of 278,923 white soldiers credited to the Southern and Border Southern States.

In addition, Kentucky contributed 23,703 negro troops to the United States army, Maryland 8,718, Missouri 8,344, West Virginia 196; total, 40,961; the Northern States 38,677 negro troops (also credited), and the South 99,337. Total enrollment of negro troops, 178,975.

The statistics collected by the adjutant-general's office at Washington show the following casualties in the Union army:

Killed in action.....	67,058
Died of wounds received in action.....	43,012
Died of disease.....	224,559
Deaths from other causes, or cause unknown.....	25,556

Total..... 360,556

Of these deaths, 30,192 were in military prisons at the South.

In 82 national cemeteries 325,230 soldiers are buried (report of 1888), of whom about 9,500 were Confederates and 8,500 civilians.



# GREATEST PERCENTAGES OF LOSS IN CONFEDERATE REGIMENTS AT PARTICULAR ENGAGEMENTS.

From a Compilation (from Official Reports) of "Regimental Losses in the Civil War," by Col. William F. Fox, Albany, N. Y.

BATTLE.	REGIMENT.	DIVISION.	Present.	Killed.*	Wounded.	Missing.	Total Loss.	Per Cent.
Antietam .....	First Texas .....	Hood's .....	326	45	141	..	146	82.3
Manassas .....	Twenty-first Georgia .....	Ewell's .....	242	38	116	..	124	70.0
Gettysburg .....	Twenty-sixth N. Carolina .....	Heth's .....	820	86	502	..	588	71.7
Shiloh .....	Sixth Mississippi .....	Hardee's .....	425	61	239	..	300	70.5
Stone's River .....	Eighth Tennessee .....	Cheatham's .....	414	41	265	..	306	68.2
Chickamauga .....	Tenth Tennessee .....	Johnson's .....	328	41	170	..	221	68.0
Glendale .....	Palmetto Sharpshooters .....	Longstreet's .....	375	39	215	..	254	67.7
Manassas .....	Seventeenth S. Carolina .....	Evans' .....	281	25	164	1	190	66.9
Manassas .....	Twenty-third S. Carolina .....	Evans' .....	225	27	122	..	119	66.2
Mechanicsville .....	Forty-fourth Georgia .....	D. H. Hill's .....	514	71	264	..	345	65.1
Chickamauga .....	First Alabama Battalion .....	Preston's .....	260	24	144	..	168	64.6
Gettysburg .....	Second N. Carolina Batt. .....	Rodes' .....	240	129	124	..	153	63.7
Antietam .....	Sixteenth Mississippi .....	Anderson's .....	228	27	117	..	144	63.1
Antietam .....	Twenty-seventh N. Carolina .....	Walker's .....	325	31	168	..	199	61.2
Chickamauga .....	Fifth Georgia .....	Cheatham's .....	317	27	165	2	194	61.1
Chickamauga .....	Second Tennessee .....	Cleburne's .....	264	13	145	1	159	60.2
Chickamauga .....	Fifteenth and 37th Tenn. .....	Stewart's .....	202	15	102	4	121	59.9
Seven Pines .....	Sixth Alabama .....	D. H. Hill's .....	632	91	277	5	373	59.0
Chickamauga .....	Sixteenth Alabama .....	Cleburne's .....	414	25	218	..	243	58.6
Antietam .....	Fifteenth Virginia .....	McLaws' .....	128	11	64	..	75	58.5
Chickamauga .....	Sixth and Ninth Tenn. .....	Cheatham's .....	335	26	168	..	191	57.9
Antietam .....	Eighteenth Georgia .....	Hood's .....	176	13	72	16	101	57.3
Gaines' Mill .....	First S. Carolina Rifles .....	A. P. Hill's .....	537	81	225	..	306	56.9
Antietam .....	Tenth Georgia .....	McLaws' .....	148	15	69	..	84	56.7
Seven Days .....	Eighteenth N. Carolina .....	A. P. Hill's .....	396	45	179	..	224	56.5
Malvern Hill .....	Third Alabama .....	D. H. Hill's .....	354	37	163	..	200	56.4
Chickamauga .....	Eighteenth Alabama .....	Stewart's .....	527	41	256	..	267	56.3
Antietam .....	Seventeenth Virginia .....	Pickett's .....	55	7	24	..	31	56.3
Seven Days .....	Seventh North Carolina .....	A. P. Hill's .....	450	35	218	..	233	54.2
Stone's River .....	Twelfth Tennessee .....	Cheatham's .....	292	18	137	9	164	56.1
Chickamauga .....	Twenty-second Alabama .....	Hindman's .....	371	44	161	..	265	55.2
Gettysburg .....	Ninth Georgia .....	Hood's .....	340	27	162	..	189	55.0
Stone's River .....	Sixteenth Tennessee .....	Cheatham's .....	377	36	155	16	207	54.9
Seven Pines .....	Fourth North Carolina .....	D. H. Hill's .....	678	77	286	6	369	54.4
Shiloh .....	Twenty-seventh Tenn. .....	Hardee's .....	350	27	115	48	140	54.2
Chickamauga .....	Twenty-third Tennessee .....	Buckner's .....	181	8	77	13	98	54.1
Manassas .....	Twelfth South Carolina .....	A. P. Hill's .....	270	23	121	2	146	54.0
Manassas .....	Fourth Virginia .....	Jackson's .....	180	18	79	..	97	53.8
Antietam .....	Fourth Texas .....	Hood's .....	200	10	97	..	107	53.5
Chaplin Hills .....	Twenty-seventh Tenn. .....	Cleburne's .....	210	16	81	12	112	53.3
Manassas .....	First South Carolina .....	A. P. Hill's .....	283	25	126	..	154	53.3
Fair Oaks .....	Forty-ninth Virginia .....	D. H. Hill's .....	421	32	170	22	224	52.8
Chickamauga .....	Twenty-ninth Mississippi .....	Liddell's .....	368	38	156	..	191	52.7
Fair Oaks .....	Twelfth Alabama .....	D. H. Hill's .....	408	59	156	..	215	52.6
Antietam .....	Seventh South Carolina .....	McLaws' .....	268	23	117	..	140	52.2
Chickamauga .....	Fifty-eighth Alabama .....	Stewart's .....	288	25	124	..	149	51.7
Raymond .....	Seventh Texas .....	John Gregg's .....	306	22	136	..	158	51.6
Fair Oaks .....	Sixth South Carolina .....	D. H. Hill's .....	521	88	181	..	269	51.6
Gettysburg .....	Fifteenth Georgia .....	Hood's .....	335	19	152	..	171	51.0
Glendale .....	Eleventh Alabama .....	Longstreet's .....	357	49	121	11	181	50.7

\* Including the mortally wounded.

† In addition to the 588 killed and wounded, this regiment lost 120 missing, many of whom were killed.

‡ General Ewell, in his official report, states that the Second North Carolina battalion lost 200 killed and wounded out of 210 present.

§ Including Ox Hill (Chantilly).



**GREATEST PERCENTAGES OF LOSS IN CONFEDERATE REGIMENTS AT PARTICULAR ENGAGEMENTS—Continued.**

BATTLE.	REGIMENT.	DIVISION.	Present.	Killed.*	Wounded.	Missing.	Total.	Percentage.
Manassas.....	Seventeenth Georgia.....	Hood's.....	200	10	91	11	112	56%
Chickamauga.....	Thirty-seventh Georgia...	Stewart's....	391	19	168	7	144	37%
Gettysburg....	Third North Carolina.....	Johnson's....	312	29	127	7	163	52%
Chickamauga.....	Sixty-third Tennessee.....	Preston's....	402	16	181	1	198	49%
Chickamauga.....	Forty-first Alabama.....	Breckinridg's	325	27	129	11	167	51%
Chancellorsv....	Fourth Virginia.....	Trimble's....	355	14	155	3	172	48%
Chickamauga.....	Thirty-second Tennessee	Stewart's....	341	9	156	1	166	49%
Chickamauga.....	Twentieth Tennessee.....	Stewart's....	183	8	80	1	89	49%
Gettysburg....	First Maryland.....	Johnson's....	400	52	110	1	163	41%
Stone's River....	Eighth Mississippi.....	Breckinridg's	282	20	113	1	134	48%
Malvern Hill....	Forty-fourth Georgia.....	D. H. Hill's..	142	9	10	16	35	25%
Antietam.....	Thirty-second Virginia....	McLaws'.....	158	15	57	1	73	46%
Chickamauga.....	First Arkansas.....	Cleburne's....	430	13	180	1	194	45%
Antietam.....	Eighteenth Mississippi....	McLaws'.....	186	10	73	1	84	45%
Chickamauga.....	Ninth Kentucky.....	Breckinridg's	230	11	89	2	102	44%
Gaines' Mill....	Fourteenth S. Carolina....	A. P. Hill's...	500	18	197	1	215	43%
Chancellorsv....	Thirty-third N. Carolina...	A. P. Hill's...	480	32	167	1	200	42%
Malvern Hill....	Fifth Alabama.....	D. H. Hill's..	225	26	66	1	93	41%
Fair Oaks.....	Hampton Legion.....	Hood's.....	350	21	120	1	141	40%
Malvern Hill....	Twenty-sixth Alabama....	D. H. Hill's..	218	10	76	1	87	40%

\* Including the mortally wounded.

† There were 51 missing, also, who are not included, most of whom were killed or wounded.

‡ From inscription on monument at Gettysburg; but Surgeon-General Galt (C. S. A.) reported their loss, officially, at the time as 65 killed and 119 wounded.

**BRIGADE LOSSES IN PARTICULAR ENGAGEMENTS.**

BATTLE.	BRIGADE.	DIVISION.	Present.	Killed.	Wounded.	Missing.	Total.	Percentage.
Gettysburg....	Garnett's (Va.).....	Pickett's.....	1,437	48	321	5	84	23%
Gettysburg....	Perry's (Fla.).....	Anderson's...	700	33	217	2	252	36%
Antietam.....	Wofford's (Texas).....	Hood's.....	854	69	417	6	492	58%
Seven Dayst..	Anderson's (S. C.)....	Longstreet's..	1,259	126	628	19	773	61%
Seven Dayst..	Pryor's.....	Longstreet's..	1,400	170	681	11	862	61%
Franklin.....	Cockrell's (Mo.).....	French's.....	616	98	220	9	327	53%
Seven Dayst..	Wilcox's (Ala.).....	Longstreet's..	1,850	229	806	1	1,036	56%
Chickamauga.....	Benning's (Ga.).....	Hood's.....	900	88	412	10	510	57%
Chickamauga.....	Bate's.....	Stewart's....	1,187	66	541	1	688	58%
Chancellorsv'l	Ramseur's (N. C.)....	D. H. Hill's..	1,509	151	526	108	735	49%
Seven Dayst..	Featherston's (Miss.)..	Longstreet's..	1,350	115	512	9	636	47%
Gettysburg....	Lane's (N. C.).....	Pender's.....	1,355	41	318	271	690	51%
Stone's River....	Donelson's (Tenn.)...	Cheatham's...	1,329	108	575	15	706	53%
Chickamauga.....	Gregg's.....	B. R. Johnson's	1,352	109	471	18	608	45%
Chickamauga.....	Clayton's (Ala.).....	Stewart's....	1,446	86	535	13	694	48%
Antietam.....	Semmes'.....	McLaws'.....	709	52	255	6	314	44%
Gettysburg....	Daniel's (N. C.).....	Rodes'.....	2,100	165	635	116	916	43%
Malvern Hill....	Rodes' (Ala.).....	D. H. Hill's..	1,027	81	344	1	426	41%

\* The official report for Garnett's brigade says: "It is feared from the information received that the majority of those reported missing are either killed or wounded."

† This loss occurred in the two actions at Gaines' Mill and Glendale.

‡ General Donelson stated the number in his official report "about 1,400 men."





# CONFEDERATE REGIMENTS THAT SUSTAINED THE GREATEST LOSS IN PARTICULAR BATTLES.

REGIMENT.	Killed.	Wounded.*	Missing.	Total.
FIRST BULL RUN, VA.—July 21, 1861.				
Eighth Georgia.....	41	159	....	200
Fourth Alabama.....	40	157	....	197
Seventh Georgia.....	19	134	....	153
Thirty-third Virginia.....	45	101	....	146
Twenty-seventh Virginia.....	19	122	....	141
Fourth Virginia.....	31	100	....	131
Hampton Legion.....	19	100	2	121
WILSON'S CREEK, MO.—August 10, 1861.				
Third Arkansas.....	25	84	1	110
Third Missouri State Guards.....	22	49	3	74
SHILOH, TENN.—April 6 and 7, 1862.				
Fourth Tennessee.....	36	183	....	219
Fourth Kentucky.....	30	183	....	213
Fourth Louisiana.....	24	163	22	209
One Hundred and Fifty-fourth Tenn....	25	163	11	199
Twenty-seventh Tennessee.....	27	105	48	180
Thirty-third Tennessee.....	20	103	17	140
Ninth Arkansas.....	17	115	....	132
Crescent Regiment (Louisiana).....	23	84	20	127
Eighteenth Alabama.....	20	80	20	120
Thirteenth Arkansas.....	25	72	3	100
WILLIAMSBURG, VA.—May 5, 1862.				
Twenty-fourth Virginia.....	30	93	66	189
Eleventh Virginia.....	26	105	3	134
Nineteenth Mississippi.....	15	85	....	100
Seventh Virginia.....	13	64	....	77
Ninth Alabama.....	10	45	6	61
SEVEN PINES, VA.—May 31–June 1, 1862.				
Sixth Alabama.....	91	277	5	373
Fourth North Carolina.....	77	286	6	369
Sixth South Carolina.....	88	164	17	269
Forty-ninth Virginia.....	32	170	22	224
Twelfth Alabama.....	59	149	....	208
Fifth Alabama.....	29	181	....	210
Second Florida.....	37	152	9	198
Twelfth Mississippi.....	41	152	....	193
Twenty-third North Carolina.....	18	145	6	169
Twenty-seventh Georgia.....	16	129	0	154

\* Includes the mortally wounded.



## CONFEDERATE REGIMENTS THAT SUSTAINED THE GREATEST LOSS IN PARTICULAR BATTLES—Continued.

REGIMENT.	Killed.	Wounded.*	Missing.	Total.
SEVEN PINES, VA.—Continued.				
Thirty-eighth Virginia .....	16	117	14	147
Hampton Legion .....	21	120	....	141
Twenty-eighth Georgia .....	24	95	....	119
Twenty-fourth Virginia .....	12	86	9	107
CROSS KEYS, VA.—June 8, 1862.				
Fifteenth Alabama .....	9	37	5	51
Sixteenth Mississippi .....	6	28	....	34
PORT REPUBLIC, VA.—June 9, 1862.				
Seventh Louisiana .....	8	115	....	123
Fifth Virginia .....	4	89	20	113
Thirty-first Virginia .....	15	79	4	98
Fifty-second Virginia .....	12	65	....	77
Sixth Louisiana .....	11	55	....	66
Forty-fourth Virginia .....	14	35	....	49
GAINES' MILL, VA.—June 27, 1862.				
First South Carolina Rifles .....	81	234	4	319
Twentieth North Carolina .....	70	202	....	272
Fourth Texas .....	44	208	1	253
Fourteenth South Carolina .....	18	190	....	208
Thirty-eighth Georgia .....	54	118	....	172
Thirty-first Georgia .....	29	141	....	170
Eighth Alabama .....	31	132	....	163
Eleventh Mississippi .....	18	142	3	163
Eleventh Alabama .....	27	130	....	157
Sixth Georgia .....	22	131	3	156
First South Carolina .....	20	125	....	145
Eighteenth Georgia .....	14	128	3	145
Ninth Alabama .....	34	96	4	134
Fourth Alabama .....	22	108	2	132
Tenth Alabama .....	24	105	....	129
Eighteenth Virginia .....	14	99	5	118
Thirteenth Virginia .....	27	84	....	111
FRAYSER'S FARM, VA.—June 30, 1862.				
Palmetto Sharpshooters .....	39	215	....	254
Eleventh Alabama .....	49	121	11	181
Ninth Alabama .....	31	95	4	130
Seventeenth Virginia .....	17	23	73	113
Seventh Virginia .....	14	66	31	111
Fourteenth Alabama† .....	71	253	11	335
Nineteenth Mississippi † .....	58	264	3	325

\* Includes the mortally wounded.

† Includes loss at Gaines' Mill.



CONFEDERATE REGIMENTS THAT SUSTAINED THE GREATEST LOSS IN  
PARTICULAR BATTLES—Continued.

REGIMENT.	Killed.	Wounded.*	Missing.	Total.
FRAYSER'S FARM, VA.—Continued.				
Fourteenth Louisiana†.....	51	192	....	243
Twelfth Mississippi†.....	34	186	5	225
MALVERN HILL, VA.—July 1, 1862.				
Third Alabama.....	37	163	....	200
Second Louisiana.....	30	152	....	182
Third Georgia.....	25	110	22	157
Twenty-first Mississippi.....	32	119	....	151
Fifteenth Alabama†.....	35	115	....	150
Thirteenth Mississippi.....	28	107	....	135
Eighteenth Mississippi.....	16	116	....	132
Fifteenth North Carolina.....	21	110	....	131
Twenty-fifth North Carolina.....	22	106	5	133
Thirty-fifth North Carolina.....	18	91	18	127
Forty-ninth North Carolina.....	14	75	16	105
Fifty-seventh Virginia.....	13	83	17	113
SEVEN DAYS, VA.—June 25–July 1, 1862.				
Seventh North Carolina.....	35	218	....	253
Eighteenth North Carolina.....	45	179	....	224
Twelfth North Carolina.....	51	160	1	212
Sixtieth Virginia.....	31	173	....	204
Fortieth Virginia.....	30	150	....	180
Second South Carolina Rifles.....	33	108	8	149
Twenty-eighth North Carolina.....	19	130	....	149
Thirty-seventh North Carolina.....	27	111	....	138
Second Florida.....	23	114	....	137
CEDAR MOUNTAIN, VA.—August 9, 1862.				
Twenty-first Virginia.....	37	85	....	122
Forty-second Virginia.....	36	71	....	107
Thirty-seventh Virginia.....	12	76	....	88
Forty-seventh Virginia.....	12	76	....	88
Forty-eighth Alabama.....	12	61	....	73
MANASSAS, VA.—August 23– September 1, 1862.				
Fifth Texas.....	15	224	1	240
Eleventh Georgia.....	20	178	....	198
Seventeenth South Carolina.....	25	163	1	189
Twenty-first Georgia.....	38	146	....	184
Thirteenth South Carolina.....	31	142	....	173
Twelfth South Carolina.....	25	131	....	156

\* Includes the mortally wounded.

† Includes loss at Gaines' Mill.



CONFEDERATE REGIMENTS THAT SUSTAINED THE GREATEST LOSS IN  
PARTICULAR BATTLES—Continued.

REGIMENT.	Killed.	Wounded.*	Missing.	Total
MANASSAS, VA.—Continued.				
Holcombe Legion.....	24	131	....	155
First South Carolina.....	25	126	....	151
Eighteenth Georgia.....	19	133	....	152
Twenty-third South Carolina.....	27	122	....	149
First South Carolina Rifles.....	24	122	....	146
Twentieth Georgia.....	19	113	....	132
Ninth Georgia.....	12	116	....	128
Twenty-sixth Georgia.....	37	87	....	124
Sixtieth Georgia.....	22	101	....	123
Sixth Georgia.....	13	102	....	115
Fifteenth Alabama.....	21	91	....	112
Second Louisiana.....	25	86	....	111
SHARPSBURG, MD.—September 17, 1862.				
Third North Carolina.....	46	207	....	†253
Thirteenth Georgia.....	48	169	2	219
Forty-eighth North Carolina.....	31	186	....	217
Twenty-seventh North Carolina.....	31	168	....	199
Thirteenth North Carolina.....	41	149	....	†190
First Texas.....	45	141	....	186
Third Arkansas.....	27	155	....	182
Thirtieth Virginia.....	39	121	....	160
First North Carolina.....	18	142	....	†160
Fifteenth North Carolina.....	16	143	....	†159
Twenty-fourth Georgia.....	13	145	....	†158
Second Mississippi.....	27	127	....	154
Fourth Georgia.....	22	119	....	†141
Seventh South Carolina.....	23	117	....	140
Sixteenth Mississippi.....	27	100	....	127
Fiftieth Georgia.....	29	97	....	126
Sixth North Carolina.....	10	115	....	125
Fifteenth South Carolina.....	26	84	....	110
Sixty-first Georgia.....	16	91	7	114
Fourth Texas.....	10	97	....	107
Twenty-seventh Georgia.....	15	89	....	†104
Eighth Louisiana.....	10	93	....	103
Second South Carolina.....	17	77	....	94
Seventeenth Mississippi.....	9	77	2	88
Tenth Georgia.....	16	67	....	83
Eighteenth Mississippi.....	11	69	....	80
Nineteenth Georgia.....	13	76	....	†89

\* Includes the mortally wounded.

† Includes loss at South Mountain on the 14th.

‡ Includes loss at Crampton's Gap on the 14th.





CONFEDERATE REGIMENTS THAT SUSTAINED THE GREATEST LOSS IN PARTICULAR BATTLES—Continued.

REGIMENT.	Killed.	Wounded.*	Missing.	Total.
SHARPSBURG, MD.—Continued.				
Ninth Louisiana.....	25	57	....	82
Forty-ninth North Carolina.....	16	61	....	77
CORINTH, Miss.†—October 3-5, 1862.				
Sixth Texas.....	55	63	30	148
Thirty-fifth Mississippi.....	32	110	347	489
Sixth Missouri.....	31	130	53	214
Second Missouri.....	19	122	21	162
Forty-third Mississippi.....	13	56	156	225
Twenty-first Arkansas.....	27	41	58	126
Jones' Arkansas Battalion.....	36	43	11	90
Thirty-seventh Mississippi.....	19	62	....	81
PERRYVILLE, KY.—October 8, 1862.				
Sixteenth Tennessee.....	41	151	7	199
First Tennessee.....	49	129	1	179
Ninth Tennessee.....	32	114	8	154
Forty-first Georgia.....	23	125	3	151
Twenty-seventh Tennessee.....	16	81	11	108
Thirty-first Tennessee.....	17	78	5	100
Sixth Tennessee.....	16	64	11	91
Fifth Tennessee.....	14	64	12	90
FREDERICKSBURG, VA.—December 13, 1862.				
Fifty-seventh North Carolina.....	32	192	....	224
Forty-eighth North Carolina.....	17	161	....	178
First South Carolina Rifles.....	21	149	....	170
Fourteenth Georgia.....	22	110	....	132
Third South Carolina.....	15	104	....	119
Fifteenth North Carolina.....	10	93	....	103
Sixty-first Georgia.....	17	83	....	100
Thirty-eighth Georgia.....	10	91	....	101
Thirty-seventh North Carolina.....	17	76	....	93
Eighteenth North Carolina.....	13	77	....	90
Thirty-fifth Georgia.....	10	79	....	89
Twenty-fifth North Carolina.....	13	75	....	88
Seventh North Carolina.....	5	81	....	86
Thirty-first Georgia.....	15	63	....	78
Phillips' Legion.....	13	56	....	69
Twenty-eighth North Carolina.....	16	49	....	65
Nineteenth Georgia.....	15	39	....	54
Sixteenth North Carolina.....	6	48	....	54

\* Includes the mortally wounded.

† Includes loss at Hatchie Bridge, October 5th.



CONFEDERATE REGIMENTS THAT SUSTAINED THE GREATEST LOSS IN  
PARTICULAR BATTLES—Continued.

REGIM	Killed.	Wounded.*	Missing.	Total.
MURFREESBORO, TENN.—				
December 31, 1862—January 1, 1863.				
Eighth Tennessee.....	41	265	....	306
Twenty-ninth Mississippi.....	34	202	....	236
Thirtieth Mississippi.....	63	146	....	209
Thirteenth Louisiana.....	46	168	102	316
Twentieth Louisiana.....				
Sixteenth Louisiana.....				
Twenty-fifth Louisiana.....	41	176	21	238
Sixth Arkansas.....				
Seventh Arkansas.....				
Fourth Florida.....	34	129	31	194
Seventeenth Tennessee.....	17	164	26	207
Sixteenth Alabama.....	24	142	....	166
Forty-first Mississippi.....	25	123	8	156
Eighth Arkansas.....	29	124	....	153
Twelfth Tennessee.....	18	137	9	164
Forty-fourth Tennessee.....	14	136	2	152
Fifth Arkansas.....	12	135	1	148
Eighteenth Tennessee.....	17	120	8	145
Eighth Mississippi.....	20	113	....	133
Nineteenth Tennessee.....	16	111	....	127
Ninth Texas.....	18	102	2	122
Twenty-fourth Alabama.....	20	95	3	118
Forty-first Alabama.....	16	94	38	148
Twenty-ninth Tennessee.....	27	82	....	109
Thirty-second Alabama.....	21	86	21	128
Second Arkansas.....	15	94	9	118
Second Arkansas Rifles.....	10	99	11	120
Tenth South Carolina.....	16	91	2	109
Tenth Texas Cavalry, dismounted.....	10	93	15	118
CHANCELLORSVILLE, VA.—May 1-3, 1863.				
Thirty-seventh North Carolina.....	34	193	....	227
Second North Carolina.....	47	167	....	214
Thirteenth North Carolina.....	31	178	7	216
Third North Carolina.....	38	141	17	196
Twenty-second North Carolina.....	30	139	15	184
Seventeenth North Carolina.....	37	127	....	164
Fourth North Carolina.....	45	110	58	213
Fifth Alabama.....	24	130	121	275
Fiftieth Georgia.....	17	153	....	170
Fourth Georgia.....	29	121	11	161
Fourth Virginia.....	14	149	3	166
Fifty-first Georgia.....	30	119	26	175

\* Includes the mortally wounded.



CONFEDERATE REGIMENTS THAT SUSTAINED THE GREATEST LOSS IN  
PARTICULAR BATTLES—Continued.

REGIMENT.	Killed.	Wounded.*	Missing.	Total.
CHANCELLORSVILLE, VA.—Continued.				
Cobb's Legion.....	22	135	....	157
Thirty-third North Carolina.....	32	101	66	199
Twenty-third North Carolina.....	32	113	35	180
Sixth Alabama.....	24	125	14	163
Thirteenth Alabama.....	13	127	8	148
Third Alabama.....	17	121	16	154
Sixteenth Georgia.....	18	115	....	133
Forty-second Virginia.....	15	120	....	135
First North Carolina.....	34	83	27	144
Eighteenth North Carolina.....	30	96	....	126
Thirty-fourth North Carolina.....	18	110	20	148
Fourteenth North Carolina.....	15	116	....	131
Tenth Virginia.....	23	101	25	149
Tenth Georgia.....	23	105	....	128
Thirtieth North Carolina.....	25	98	1	124
Fifty-third Georgia.....	15	105	....	120
VICKSBURG, MISS.—May 18–July 4, 1863.				
Third Louisiana.....	49	119	7	175
Sixth Missouri.....	33	133	....	166
Twenty-seventh Louisiana.....	58	96	....	154
Second Texas.....	39	65	....	104
Thirty-sixth Mississippi.....	28	72	1	101
Thirty-fifth Mississippi.....	20	82	....	102
Second Missouri.....	17	89	....	106
Third Missouri.....	18	83	....	101
Thirty-eighth Mississippi.....	35	37	....	72
Twenty-sixth Louisiana.....	28	44	....	72
GETTYSBURG, PA.—July 1-3, 1863.				
Twenty-sixth North Carolina.....	86	502	†120	708
Forty-second Mississippi.....	60	205	....	265
Second Mississippi.....	49	183	....	232
Eleventh North Carolina.....	50	159	....	209
Forty-fifth North Carolina.....	46	173	....	219
Seventeenth Mississippi.....	40	160	....	200
Fourteenth South Carolina.....	26	220	6	252
Eleventh Mississippi.....	32	170	....	202
Fifty-fifth North Carolina.....	39	159	....	198
Eleventh Georgia.....	32	162	....	194
Thirty-eighth Virginia.....	23	147	....	170
Sixth North Carolina.....	20	131	21	172
Thirteenth Mississippi.....	28	137	....	165
Eighth Alabama.....	22	139	....	161

\* Includes the mortally wounded.

† These missing ones were lost in Pickett's charge.



CONFEDERATE REGIMENTS THAT SUSTAINED THE GREATEST LOSS IN  
PARTICULAR BATTLES—Continued.

REGIMENT.	Killed.	Wounded.*	Missing.	Total.
GETTYSBURG, PA.—Continued.				
Forty-seventh North Carolina.....	21	140	....	161
Third North Carolina.....	29	127	....	156
Second North Carolina Battalion.....	29	124	....	153
Second South Carolina.....	27	125	2	154
Fifty-second North Carolina.....	33	114	....	147
Fifth North Carolina.....	31	112	....	143
Thirty-second North Carolina.....	26	116	....	142
Forty-third North Carolina.....	21	126	....	147
Ninth Georgia.....	28	115	....	143
First Maryland Battalion.....	25	119	....	144
Third Arkansas.....	26	116	....	142
Fifty-seventh Virginia.....	35	105	4	144
Twenty-third North Carolina.....	41	93	....	134
CHARLESTON HARBOR, S. C.— July 10–September 6, 1863.				
Twenty-first South Carolina†.....	14	112	56	182
Twenty-fifth South Carolina.....	16	124	3	143
First South Carolina Artillery.....	18	50	52	120
— Charleston Battalion†.....	13	70	2	85
Fifty-first North Carolina†.....	17	60	....	77
First South Carolina (Third Artillery)†..	10	32	22	64
Thirty-first North Carolina.....	13	32	....	45
CHICKAMAUGA, GA.— September 19–20, 1863.				
Eighteenth Alabama.....	41	256	....	297
Twenty-second Alabama.....	44	161	....	205
Sixteenth Alabama.....	25	218	....	243
Nineteenth Alabama.....	34	158	12	204
Thirty-eighth Alabama.....	37	151	5	193
Fifth Georgia.....	27	165	2	194
Sixty-third Tennessee.....	16	184	....	200
First Arkansas.....	13	180	1	194
Thirty-seventh Georgia.....	19	168	7	194
Thirty-third Alabama.....	19	166	....	185
Sixth Florida.....	35	130	....	165
Second Tennessee.....	13	145	1	159
Forty-first Alabama.....	27	120	11	158
Nineteenth Louisiana.....	28	114	11	153
Eighteenth Tennessee.....	20	114	1	135
Twenty-fourth Mississippi.....	10	103	19	132

\* Includes the mortally wounded.

† Morris Island, July 10th.

‡ Fort Wagner, July 15th.





# GENERAL INDEX.

It has not been attempted, in this index, to cite every instance in which a multitude of names are given. Generally, the references are to special mention of military commands or individuals, and the more extended discussions of the various subjects. Under the title of "Troops" of each State, reference is made to the accounts of battles, etc., in which the services of the soldiers of that State are described.

The bold face figure indicates the volume, and to this is added the name of the State when the volume includes two States; as 7 Ala., 162, referring to page 162 of the Alabama history in Volume 7.

Abell, Willie M., 12, 177.  
Abolition party, origin of, 1, 263-4.  
Accomack and Northampton Counties, Va., operations, 1861, 3, 193.  
Adairsville, Ga., action, May 17, 1864, 6, 306; 8, 129.  
Adams, Daniel W., 9 Ky., 158; 10 La., 291.

Adams, John, 7 Miss., 217; 8, 160, 285-7.

— John Quincy, 1, 156.

— Wirt, 7 Miss., 167, 195, 235.

Aderhold, T. A., 6, 175.

Aiken, S. C., battle, Feb., 1865, 5, 363.

Alabama, C. S. cruiser, 12, 100-102.

Alabama, condition of northern, 1864, 7 Ala., 41; early history, 7 Ala., 3-15; Forrest's campaign, Sept., 1864, 8, 243; military operations in, 7 Ala., 40-7; secession of, 7 Ala., 34-9.

Alabama troops: Enlistment in 1861, 7 Ala., 39; list of battles in which engaged with army of Northern Virginia, 7 Ala., 339-45; list of battles in which engaged with Western armies, 7 Ala., 316-82; resolution C. S. Congress, 7 Ala., 51.

Artillery batteries: 1st battalion, 310; 2d battalion, 311; 20th battalion, 322; Burnett's, 7 Ala., 300; Burtwell's, 309; Clanton's, 325; Eufaula, 324; Fowler's, 327; Gage's, 320; Gid Nelson's (Selden's, Lovelace's), 323; Hardaway's, 317; Jeff Davis, 315; Ketchum's (Garity's), 313; Kolb's, 332; Lumsden's, 329; Montgomery True Blues, 328; Robertson's (Dent's), 326; Sample's, 332; Sengstack's, 326; State battalion, 312; Tarrant's, 324; Waddell's, 321; Ward's, 326; Waters', 319.

Cavalry regiments: 1st, 7 Ala., 249; 2d, 7 Ala., 251; 3d, 7 Ala., 257; 4th (Kusself's), 7 Ala., 251; Roddy's 4th, 7 Ala., 264; 5th, 7 Ala., 267; 6th, 7 Ala., 268; 7th, 7 Ala., 270; 8th, 7 Ala., 272; Livingston's 8th, 7 Ala., 274; 9th, 7 Ala., 275; 10th, 7 Ala., 277; 11th, 7 Ala., 278; 12th, 7 Ala., 279; 51st, 7 Ala., 280; 53d, 7 Ala., 283; 56th, 7 Ala., 285; 1st Confederate, 7 Ala., 287; 3d Confederate, 7 Ala., 289; 8th Confederate, 7 Ala., 292; 10th Confederate, 7 Ala., 296; 15th Confederate, 7 Ala., 298.

Cavalry battalions: 4th, 7 Ala., 301; 24th, 7 Ala., 302; 25th, 7 Ala., 302; Barbriere's, 7 Ala., 303; Beall's, 7 Ala., 304; Gunter's, 7 Ala., 301; Hardie's, 7 Ala., 304; Lewis', 7 Ala., 305; Moreland's, 7 Ala., 306; Stuart's, 7 Ala., 307.

Cavalry companies, 307.

Infantry regiments: 1st, 7 Ala., 52; 2d, 7 Ala., 56; 3d, 7 Ala., 56; 4th, 7 Ala., 61; 5th, 7 Ala., 66; 6th, 7 Ala., 72; 7th, 7 Ala., 77; 8th, 7 Ala., 79, 8, 17; 9th, 7 Ala., 83; 10th, 7 Ala., 87; 11th, 7 Ala., 90; 12th, 7 Ala., 93; 13th, 7 Ala., 97; 14th, 7 Ala., 99; 15th, 7 Ala., 102; 16th, 7 Ala., 106; 17th, 7 Ala., 111, 12, 178; 18th, 7 Ala., 113; 19th, 7 Ala., 117; 20th, 7 Ala., 120; 21st, 7 Ala., 122; 22d, 7 Ala., 125; 23d, 7 Ala., 129; 24th, 7 Ala., 131; 25th, 7 Ala., 134; 26th, 7 Ala., 137; 27th, 7 Ala., 143; 28th, 7 Ala., 146; 29th, 7 Ala., 150; 30th, 7 Ala., 152; 31st, 7 Ala., 154; 32d, 7 Ala., 157; 33d, 7 Ala., 160; 34th, 7 Ala., 164; 35th, 7 Ala., 167; 36th, 7 Ala., 169; 37th, 7 Ala., 172; 38th, 7 Ala., 175; 39th, 7 Ala., 178; 40th, 7 Ala., 180; 41st, 7 Ala., 183; 42d, 7 Ala., 187; 43d, 7 Ala., 189; 44th, 7 Ala., 192; 45th, 7 Ala., 196; 46th, 7 Ala., 198; 47th, 7 Ala., 201; 48th, 7 Ala., 204; 49th, 7 Ala., 207; 50th, 7 Ala., 210; 54th, 7 Ala., 213; 55th, 7 Ala., 216; 57th, 7 Ala., 219; 58th, 7 Ala., 220; 59th, 7 Ala., 225; 60th, 7 Ala., 227; 61st, 7 Ala., 229; Reserve regiments (63d, 63d, 65th), 7 Ala., 231; Hiliard's Legion, 7 Ala., 231; 1st Mobile regiment, 7 Ala., 239.

Infantry battalions: 5th, 7 Ala., 239; 17th Sharpshooters, 7 Ala., 242; 23d Sharpshooters, 7 Ala., 243; 1st Confederate, 7 Ala., 244; Miscellaneous battalions, 7 Ala., 246.

Alaska, acquisition of, 1, 339-41.

Albemarle, C. S. ironclad, 4, 225; 12, 81-4.

Albemarle Sound, naval battle, May, 1863, 12, 83-4.

Alcorn, James L., 7 Miss., 32, 236.

Alexander, E. P., 3, 412; 5, 272; 6, 289.

Alexandria, La., burning of, 10 La., 154.

Alexandria, Va., operations, 1861, 3, 92.

Allatoona, Ga., battle, Oct., 1864, 6, 356-8; 11 Tex., 158.



- Alleghany Mountain, W. Va., battle, Dec., 1861, 2 W. Va., 45; 3, 173; 6, 73-4.
- Allen, Edwin, 8, 72.
- Henry W., 1, 723; 10 La., 68, 160, 292.
- William W., 7 Ala., 285.
- American colonies, political rights, 1, 7-10.
- Anderson, James Patton, 11 Fla., 15, 32, 82, 195.
- Anderson, George B., 4, 113, 127, 289.
- George T., 6, 159, 180, 229, 376, 391.
- John H., 8, 166.
- Joseph R., 3, 575.
- Richard H., 1, 691-3; 5, 63; 11 Fla., 27.
- Robert, 5, 6-18; 9 Ky., 30, 41.
- Robert H., 6, 392.
- Samuel R., 8, 181, 182, 287-8.
- Andersonville prison, 1, 486.
- Andrews, H. L., 4, 194.
- James J., raid of, 6, 95-6.
- R. Snowden, 2 Md., 47, 101-4.
- Annapolis, Md., Federal occupation, 2 Md., 25.
- Antietam (see Sharpsburg).
- Antietam Creek, Ark., actions, April, 1861, 10 Ark., 240.
- Apache Canon, N. M., skirmish, March, 1862, 11 Tex., 151.
- Appomattox, C. H. Va., April, 1865, 3, 546-55; action, April 9, 3, 550, 551, 555; negotiations for surrender at, 3, 518-51; constitutional victory at, 1, 560-4; campaign, 12, 261-3.
- Aquia Creek, Va., actions, 1861, 3, 93.
- Aransas Pass, Tex., operations, 11 Tex., 119, 120.
- Archer, James J., 2 Md., 171; 8, 184, 187, 193, 199, 201.
- Arkadelphia, Ark., Confederate headquarters, 10 Ark., 223.
- Arkansas, abandonment of, 10 Ark., 201; border forays, 1863, 10 Ark., 162, 167-9; C. S. forces in, April, 1864, 10 Ark., 245-7; defenseless condition in 1862, 10 Ark., 99; Hindman's administration, 10 Ark., 102-21; outrages in, 9 Mo., 172; military board, 10 Ark., 17; secession of, 10 Ark., 3-15; skirmishes, winter 1863-4, 10 Ark., 333-5; women of, 10 Ark., 90.
- Arkansas, C. S. ram, 7 Miss., 74-8, 80-1; 8, 256-8; 10 La., 65, 70-1; 12, 63-6.
- Arkansas Post, capture of, Jan., 1862, 10 Ark., 151-60.
- Arkansas troops: Assignments in Arkansas, Sept., 1862, 10 Ark., 127-8; April, 1863, 174; Nov., 1863, 226; at Arkansas Post, 10 Ark., 150-60; at Atlanta, 10 Ark., 369; in Atlanta campaign, 10 Ark., 365; at Belmont, 10 Ark., 61; at Bentonville, 10 Ark., 376; at Cane Hill, 10 Ark., 128-42; at Carthage, 10 Ark., 21; at Chickamauga, 10 Ark., 354-8; at Corinth, 10 Ark., 356, 346-51; at Dug Gap, 10 Ark., 366; at Dug Springs, 10 Ark., 22; at Ezra Church, 10 Ark., 370; at Franklin, 10 Ark., 373-6; at Hatchie Bridge, 10 Ark., 343; at Helena, 10 Ark., 184-92; in Indian Territory, 1863, 10 Ark., 198; at Island No. 10, 8, 39; 10 Ark., 590; at Iuka, 10 Ark., 346; at Jenkins' Ferry, 10 Ark., 266-9; at Jonesboro, 10 Ark., 371; at Kenesaw Mountain, 10 Ark., 368; in Kentucky, 1861, 10 Ark., 58, 227; at Liberty Gap, 10 Ark., 353; at the Little Missouri and Prairie D'Anc, 10 Ark., 240-2; at Little Rock, 10 Ark., 207-22; at Lone Jack, 10 Ark., 181, 182; McCulloch's division, Jan. 1, 1862, 10 Ark., 70; at Marks' Mills, 10 Ark., 254-9; at Missionary Ridge, 10 Ark., 360; transferred to Mississippi, 10 Ark., 89; in Price's Missouri expedition, 10 Ark., 273-5; 9 Mo., 179-99; at Murfreesboro, 10 Ark., 341-5; at Nashville, 10 Ark., 375; organization, 10 Ark., 17, 96, 121; at New Madrid, 8, 1-10 Ark., 335; at Peachtree Creek, 10 Ark., 368; at Pea Ridge, 10 Ark., 71-8; at Perryville, 10 Ark., 339; at Pettett's Mill, 10 Ark., 367; at Pine Bluff, 10 Ark., 229; at Pitman's Ferry, 1861, 10 Ark., 55; at Pleasant Hill, 10 Ark., 244-5; at Poison Spring, 10 Ark., 271; at Port Hudson, 10 Ark., 352; at Prairie Grove, Dec. 7, 1862, 10 Ark., 111-22; at Richmond, Ky., 10 Ark., 347; at Ringgold Gap, 10 Ark., 362; at Shiloh, 10 Ark., 329-35; in Steele's division, 1863, 10 Ark., 197-8; in Trans-Mississippi department, Dec., 1862, 10 Ark., 153; Dec., 1861, 10 Ark., 277-9; at Vicksburg, 10 Ark., 352; at Wilson's Creek, 10 Ark., 39-53.
- Artillery: Hart's battery, 10 Ark., 159; Helena battery, 10 Ark., 331; Red's battery, 10 Ark., 48; Woodruff's battery, 10 Ark., 48, 53.
- Brigades: Beall's, 10 Ark., 351; Cabel's, 9 Mo., 181, 190, 193; 10 Ark., 166, 169-72, 251, 257-9, 273, 279, 347; Churchill's, 10 Ark., 241, 269; Cleburne's, 10 Ark., 329, 338; Deshler's, 10 Ark., 159; Dobbins', 10 Ark., 212, 216-9, 273; Dockery's, 10 Ark., 225, 258, 267-9; Fagan's, 10 Ark., 182, 184, 186-7, 188-90; Govan's, 10 Ark., 355, 356, 361, 367, 369; Green's, 10 Ark., 357; Hardee's, 10 Ark., 326; Hindman's, 10 Ark., 329; Liddell's, 10 Ark., 329, 341, 353; McCray's, 10 Ark., 273, 337; McNair's, 10 Ark., 337, 342, 355, 357; McRae's, 10 Ark., 381-8; Polk's, 10 Ark., 341, 356; Reynolds's, 10 Ark., 365-6, 374, 371, 376; Shaver's, 10 Ark., 364, 372; Slemmons', 9 Mo., 192; 10 Ark., 347; Tappan's, 10 Ark., 211, 268; Walker's, 10 Ark., 190; Woods', 10 Ark., 349.
- Infantry: 1st, 10 Ark., 324, 368, 371; C. S., 10 Ark., 291; 2d C. S., 10 Ark., 292; 2d, 10 Ark., 46-51, 284; 2d battalion, 10 Ark., 322; 3d, 10 Ark., 296, 358; 4th, 10 Ark., 46, 287; 4th battalion, 10 Ark., 288; 5th, 10 Ark., 47, 51, 290; 5th, State troops, 10 Ark., 286; 6th, 10 Ark., 287, 7th, 10 Ark., 301; 8th, 10 Ark., 289, 9th, 10 Ark., 301; 10th, 10 Ark., 290, 11th, 10 Ark., 308; 12th, 10 Ark., 290, 13th, 10 Ark., 63; 14th, 10 Ark., 291, 15th, 10 Ark., 312, 8, 117; 16th, 10 Ark., 314; 17th, 10 Ark., 316, 346; 17th, State troops, 10 Ark., 317; 18th, 10 Ark., 319, 19th, 10 Ark., 319; 20th, 10 Ark., 321, 21st, 10 Ark., 321; 24th, 8, 117, 10 Ark., 361; 25th, 10 Ark., 322; McRae's battalion, 10 Ark., 286; Walker's, State troops, 10 Ark., 286.



- Cavalry: 1st, 10 Ark., 47, 57; 2d C. S., 10 Ark., 294, 346; 3d, 10 Ark., 286; Harrell's battalion, 10 Ark., 235; Borland's battalion, 10 Ark., 323.
- Mounted riflemen: 1st (Churchill's), 43, 49; 2d, 10 Ark., 45, 53, 55.
- Armies, Northern and Southern, comparative strength, 12, 123-49.
- Armistead, Lewis A., 3, 418, 576.
- Arms in the South, 1860, 1, 54-8.
- Armstrong, Frank C., 7 Miss., 56, 84, 94; 8, 224-5, 288-92; 9 Ky., 116.
- Army of Central Kentucky, organization, 1861, 9 Ky., 46-7.
- Army of Kentucky (Smith's), 9 Ky., 121-2; 8, 45.
- Army of the Mississippi, first organization of, 7 Miss., 41; organization, April, 1862, 7 Miss., 41, 42-3; organization for the Kentucky campaign, 9 Ky., 119-21; organization close of 1863, 7 Miss., 163-9.
- Army of New River (Va.), 2 W. Va., 58.
- Army of Northern Virginia, at Appomattox, 3, 551, 554; character of, 3, 556-7; 2d corps, 3, 513; morale of, 12, 119-20; in the winter of 1864-5, 3, 527.
- Army of the Northwest (Va.), 2 W. Va., 40, 52, 57-8; 3, 152-3, 157.
- Army of the Potomac, C. S., 1861, organization, 3, 96.
- Army of the Shenandoah, organization, July, 1861, 3, 77.
- Army of the Trans-Mississippi department, organization, Dec., 1862, 10 Ark., 153.
- Army of Tennessee, 8, 125; 6, 296, 300-1; at Chickamauga, 5, 278; organization at Murfreesboro, 9 Ky., 153; last days of, 10 La., 202; surrender of, 4, 285, 8, 178.
- Army of the West, organization, April, 1862, 10 Ark., 96; Sept., 1862, 7 Miss., 58.
- Army of Western Virginia, organization, 1862, 2 W. Va., 64-5; organization, 1863, 2 W. Va., 77-8; organization, April, 1864, 2 W. Va., 92-3.
- Army of Western Virginia and East Tennessee, organization, Feb., 1865, 2 W. Va., 103-4.
- Army of West Tennessee, organization, Sept., 1862, 7 Miss., 87-8.
- Arnett, W. W., 2 W. Va., 82-3, 88.
- Ashby, Henry M., 8, 176.
- Richard, 2 W. Va., 24.
- Turner, 2 Md., 27, 77-9, 82; 2 W. Va., 53; 3, 69, 185, 217, 243, 254, 577.
- Ashton, R. W., 10 La., 223.
- Atchafalaya expedition, La., 1863, 10 La., 89.
- Atchison, David R., 9 Mo., 66.
- Athens, Ala., actions, Sept., 1864, 7 Ala., 43; 8, 244.
- Atkinson, E. N., 6, 196.
- Atlanta, battle, July 22, 1864, 6, 327-33; 8, 135; 10 Ark., 369; 11 Tex., 184; burning of, 6, 359-60.
- Atlanta campaign, 1864, 5, 328-40; 6, 296-352; 9 Ky., 193-5; 10 La., 189; 11 Tex., 182; deportation of citizens, 6, 353-4; evacuation of, 6, 359; siege of, 6, 342-52; strength and losses of contending armies, 6, 301, 312, 351-2.
- Atlanta, C. S. ironclad, 6, 103, 208-9; 12, 72.
- Augusta, Ga., seizure of arsenal, 6, 10, 14.
- Augusta, Ky., action, Sept., 1862, 9 Ky., 145.
- Autry, James L., 7 Miss., 69, 112.
- Avent, B. W., 8, 265-7.
- Averasboro, N. C., battle, March 16, 1865, 5, 368.
- Averett, S. W., 12, 161, 56.
- Avery, A. C., 4, 281.
- C. M., 4, 235.
- Isaac E., 4, 182, 185, 193-4.
- W. W., 4, 281.
- Backbone Mountain, Ark., Sept., 1862, 10 Ark., 203.
- Bacon, Thomas J., 6, 161-2.
- Bagby, Arthur P., 11 Tex., 224.
- Bagley, Worth, 12, 366.
- Bailey, E. A., 2 W. Va., 79.
- Baker, Alpheus, 7 Ala., 386.
- Lawrence S., 4, 168, 197, 291.
- Marion A., 10 La., 49.
- Baker's Creek (see Champion's Hill).
- Bald Hill, Ga., battle, July 21, 1864, 6, 326.
- Baldwin, John B., 2 W. Va., 44; 3, 545; 12, 122.
- Baldwin, R. F., 2 W. Va., 55.
- William E., 7 Miss., 36-8, 238.
- Ball, Edward, 6, 265.
- Ball's Bluff (see Leesburg).
- Ballentine, John G., 8, 44.
- Baltimore, Md., affair, April 19, 1861, 2 Md., 17-22; arrest of citizens, 2 Md., 61; burning of bridges, 2 Md., 23; Federal occupation, 2 Md., 29; Maryland troops at, 2 Md., 22; passage of troops through, 1861, 2 Md., 17-25.
- Baltimore & Ohio R. R., Early's raid, 2 W. Va., 90-1; Fitzhugh Lee's raid, 2 W. Va., 90; Jones and Imboden's raid, 2 W. Va., 74; White's raid, 2 W. Va., 99-100.
- Baltimore and Point Lookout, Johnson's raid, 2 Md., 136-8.
- Banks, Nathaniel P., 2 Md., 60-2; 10 La., 86, 130, 156.
- Barbee, A. R., 2 W. Va., 83.
- Barbour, A. M., 3, 66.
- Barclay, W. B., 6, 185, 189.
- Barksdale, William, 7 Miss., 28-9, 117, 178-80, 239.
- Barnes, Dixon, 5, 159.
- Barney, J. N., 12, 51.
- Barrett, Overton W., 9 Mo., 24.
- Barringer, Rufus, 4, 168, 294.
- Barron, Samuel, 12, 17.
- Barrow, James, 6, 284.
- Bartol, James L., 2 Md., 96.
- Barton, Seth M., 3, 579.
- Barton Station, Ala., action, 1862, 7 Ala., 40.
- Bartow, Francis S., 6, 8, 29, 68-9, 394.
- Bateholder's Creek, N. C., skirmish, Feb. 1, 1864, 4, 220.
- Bate, William B., 8, 38, 107, 152, 292-6; 9 Ky., 192.
- Batesville, Ark., action, May, 1862, 10 Ark., 93.
- Bath, W. Va., expedition, Jan., 1862, 3, 201; action, Sept. 6, 1863, 2 W. Va., 84.
- Baton Rouge, La., battle, Aug. 5, 1862, 7 Miss., 80-1; 10 La., 65-72.
- Battery Gregg, S. C., attack, Sept. 6, 1863, 5, 249.
- Battery Simkins, S. C., assault, July 3, 1864, 5, 306.



- Battery Wagner, S. C., assaults, July, 1863, 5, 231, 235-43; siege, 4, 200; 5, 243-6.
- Battle, Cullen A., 7 Ala., 388.
- Frank, 8, 72.
- Battles, list of, with forces engaged and losses, 7 Ala., 339-82.
- Battles, chronological lists, by States, 12, 389-498.
- Baxter, Elisha, 10 Ark., 165.
- Baylor, John R., 1, 736.
- R. W., 2 W. Va., 72.
- William S. H., 12, 170.
- Bayou Bourbeau, La., battle, Nov., 1863, 11 Tex., 132, 199; 10 La., 105.
- Bayou Meto, Ark., battle, Aug., 1863, 9 Mo., 137.
- Bayou Rapides, La., action, April, 1864, 11 Tex., 207.
- Bayou Two Prairies, Ark., action, Aug. 25, 1863, 10 Ark., 210.
- Beale, Richard L. T., 3, 581.
- Beall, William N. R., 10 Ark., 391.
- Bean's Station, Tenn., action, Dec., 1863, 8, 124.
- Beard, Richard, 8, 137.
- Beaufort, C. S. gunboat, 12, 40-3, 45.
- Beaumont, T. W., 8, 83, 100.
- Beanregard, Pierre G. T., 1, 650-2; 3, 95; 4, 263; 5, 13, 21, 94; 6, 359; 7, 57; 10 La., 39, 173.
- Beauregard, Rene T., 10 La., 193-9.
- Beaver Dam Station, Va., action, May, 1864, 2 Md., 120.
- Beaver Dam Swamp, Va., action, June, 1862, 3, 28-6; 5, 58.
- Beckley, Albert, 2 W. Va., 34-5, 36.
- Henry M., 2 W. Va., 85, 96.
- Bee, Barnard E., 5, 24-6, 375.
- Hamilton P., 11 Tex., 68, 225.
- Belington, W. Va., action, July 8, 1861, 2 W. Va., 20.
- Bell, Tyree H., 8, 251, 296-7.
- Belmont, Me., battle, Nov. 7, 1861, 8, 11; 9 Ky., 41; 9 Mo., 71; 10 Ark., 60-3; resolutions of Congress, 8, 13.
- Beltzhoover, Daniel, 10 La., 124.
- Benavides, Santos, 11 Tex., 123-5.
- Benjamin, Judah P., 1, 599-600.
- Bennett, R. Tyler, 4, 241.
- Benning, Henry L., 6, 192, 376, 395.
- Benton, Samuel, 7 Miss., 54, 211.
- Thomas H., 9 Mo., 8.
- Bentonville, Ark., action near, March, 1862, 10 Ark., 70-1; 9 Mo., 79.
- Bentonville, N. C., battle, March 19-21, 1865, 4, 281; 5, 369-70; 6, 331; 8, 173; 11 Tex., 191.
- Berryville, Va., action, Sept., 1864, 3, 491.
- Berwick, La., capture, June, 1863, 10 La., 101.
- Berwick Bay, La., expedition, 1865, 10 La., 8; expedition, 1863, 10 La., 88.
- Beverly, W. Va., action, April, 1863, 2 W. Va., 74; expedition, June, 1863, 2 W. Va., 79; expedition, Oct., 1864, 2 W. Va., 102; Rosser's expedition, 2 W. Va., 103; 3, 537.
- Bibb, French S., 12, 177.
- Bieble, J. B., 8, 220, 225.
- Big Bethel, Va., action, June 10, 1861, 3, 135-10; 4, 17.
- Big Black Bridge, Miss., battle, May, 1863, 7 Miss., 113; 9 Mo., 120; 8, 86.
- Big Blue River, Mo., action, Oct. 23, 1864, 9 Mo., 190.
- Big Cacapon, W. Va., action, Jan. 5, 1863, 3, 202.
- Big Cypress Bridge, Ark., action, Aug., 1864, 9 Mo., 177.
- Big Hill, Ky., action, Aug., 1862, 9 Ky., 125.
- Big Point, Va., naval action, June, 1861, 3, 134.
- Big Sandy River, W. Va., 2 W. Va., 91.
- Big Sandy River, W. Va., Witcher's raid, Nov., 1864, 2 W. Va., 101.
- Billopp, W. W., 6, 373.
- Biloxi, Miss., action, April, 1862, 7 Miss., 68.
- Bisland, La., battle, April, 1863, 10 La., 91-5.
- Black, William T., 6, 110.
- Blackburn's Ford (see Bull Run).
- Blair, Francis P., Jr., 9 Mo., 8, 18, 23, 26, 39.
- Blair, Francis P., Sr., 1, 543.
- Blair's Landing, La., battle, April, 1864, 10 La., 146; 11 Tex., 134.
- Blakely, Ala., siege of, 7 Ala., 46.
- Blanchard, Albert G., 10 La., 291.
- Bland, Albert, 5, 289.
- Bloomery Gap, W. Va., action, Feb. 11, 1862, 2 W. Va., 55, 206.
- Bloody Angle, Spottsylvania C. H., battle, May 12, 1864, 3, 451.
- Blue Mills, Mo., action, Sept., 1861, 9 Mo., 66.
- Blue, Victor, 12, 366.
- Blue's Gap, Va., action, 1861, 2 W. Va., 49.
- Blythe, A. K., 7 Miss., 46; 8, 36.
- Boggess, A. F., 8, 176.
- Boggs, William R., 6, 398.
- Bond, Frank A., 2 Md., 112.
- Bonham, Milledge L., 1, 729; 5, 377.
- Boone C. H., W. Va., expedition, Sept., 1861, 2 W. Va., 37.
- Booneville, Miss., actions, 1862, 7 Miss., 58, 65.
- Booneville, Mo., action, June 17, 1861, 9 Mo., 43; 10 Ark., 20.
- Boonsboro, battle of, 3, 342.
- Booth, George W., 2 Md., 111-2, 124.
- Border States, convention, 1861, 9 Ky., 21, 39; events in, 1861, 12, 210.
- Bowen, John S., 9 Mo., 93, 116, 119, 127, 206.
- Bowen, Robert E., 5, 311.
- W. L. L., 11 Fla., 167, 173.
- Bowles, Pinckney D., 7 Ala., 393.
- Bowling Green, Tenn., Morgan's raid, May, 1862, 9 Ky., 95.
- Royd, C. W., 5, 221.
- Boydton Plank Road, Va., action, Oct. 27, 1861, 3, 525.
- Boykin, F. M., 2 W. Va., 7.
- Brabble, E. C., 4, 182.
- Bradford, Richard, 11 Fla., 33.
- Bragg, Braxton, 1, 652-5; 6, 241, 245, 247, 262; 9 Ky., 77-8, 81, 88, 89, 115, 117-8, 123, 127-8, 130, 132-5, 137-9, 156; 10 La., 22, 173.
- Bragg, Thomas, 1, 601.
- Branch, Lawrence O'B., 3, 276; 4, 20, 38, 94, 130, 208.
- Brandon, William L., 7 Miss., 242.
- Brandy Station, Va., battle, June 9, 1862, 3, 206; 4, 108, 5, 259.
- Brantly, William F., 7 Miss., 112, 216, 218, 227, 243.





- Brashear City, La., expedition, May, 1862, 10 La., 62, 100; action, 11 Tex., 197.
- Bratton, H. L. W., 8, 65.
- John, 5, 53, 378.
- Braxton C. H., W. Va., action, Dec., 1861, 2 W. Va., 47.
- Brazos Island, Tex., expedition to, 1861, 11 Tex., 28-41.
- Breckinridge, John C., 1, 609-10; 2 W. Va., 92; 3, 534, 546; 9 Ky., 20, 32, 51-2, 68, 71, 74-82, 148, 170-1, 175, 177-81, 183-90, 158, 159-66, 227.
- Breckinridge, W. C. P., 9 Ky., 197.
- Brent, Joseph L., 2 Md., 182; 10 La., 107.
- Brentwood, Tenn., action, March, 1863, 8, 225.
- Brevard, Theodore, 11 Fla., 90, 162, 198.
- Brice's Cross Roads, Miss., battle, June, 1864, 7 Miss., 196-9; 8, 231-8.
- Bridgeport, W. Va., action, April 29, 1863, 2 W. Va., 76.
- Bridgewater, Va., action, Oct. 2, 1864, 3, 562.
- Bristoe Station, Va., battle, Oct. 14, 1863, 3, 426; 4, 211.
- Brockenbrough, John B., 2 Md., 47.
- Brook's Gap, Va., action, Oct. 6, 1864, 3, 502.
- Brooke, John M., 1, 629-30; 12, 12, 31, 34, 163.
- Brown, Thomas L., 2 W. Va., 111.
- Brown, Charles H., 10 La., 283.
- George W., 2 Md., 16, 17, 21.
- Isaac N., 7 Miss., 71-80, 163; 8, 255; 12, 63-6.
- Brown, John, at Harper's Ferry, 1, 302; 3, 24-9; execution, 3, 30.
- Brown, John C., 8, 24, 149, 155, 156, 158, 297-9; 9 Ky., 144.
- Brown, Joseph E., 1, 720; 6, 3, 11, 14, 52-5, 97, 355.
- Brown, Ridgely, 2 Md., 48, 111-2, 122.
- William, 2 Md., 47.
- William F., 6, 177, 181.
- Browne, William H., 2 W. Va., 65-6, 96.
- William M., 1, 628-9; 6, 399.
- Brown's Ferry, Ala., action, April, 1863, 7 Ala., 40.
- Brown's Landing, Fla., action, May 22, 1864, 11 Fla., 94.
- Brownsville, Tex., action, May 13, 1865, 11 Tex., 125-9.
- Brownville, Ark., action, Aug. 25, 1863; 10 Ark., 210.
- Brunswick, Ga., Federal raid, 6, 206-7.
- Bryan, Goode, 6, 265, 400; 7 Ala., 11.
- Bryson, J. H., 8, 268.
- Buchanan, Franklin, 1, 711-3; 2 Md., 155; 8, 258; 12, 37, 45, 46, 89-90.
- Buchanan, James, administration of, 1, 325.
- Buchel, A., 11 Tex., 206.
- Buckhannon, W. Va., 2 W. Va., 63, 101.
- Buckner, John A., 9 Ky., 76, 160, 165.
- Buckner, Simon B., 1, 695-7, 9 Ky., 25-6, 38, 57-61, 123, 130, 142, 151, 171, 174, 175-6, 181, 183; 11 Tex., 137.
- Buell, D. C., 9 Ky., 46, 56, 85, 98, 148-9.
- Buford, Abram, 9 Ky., 151, 171, 228.
- John W., 8, 31.
- Bulger, Michael J., 7 Ala., 394.
- Bullard, James G., 7 Miss., 169.
- Bulloch, James D., 1, 631-3; 12, 109.
- Bullock, Robert, 11 Fla., 183, 185, 197.
- Bull Run, Va., battle, July 18, 1861, 3, 99; 5, 23-3. (See Manassas.)
- Bulltown, W. Va., action, Oct. 13, 1863; 2 W. Va., 84.
- Bunker Station, Va., action, March 9, 1862, 2 Md., 65.
- Burbridge, John Q., 9 Mo., 97, 98.
- Burgess' Farm, Va., battle, Oct. 27, 1864, 3, 525.
- Burgwyn, Harry K., 4, 153, 172, 194.
- Burks, J. C., 11 Tex., 167.
- Burlington, W. Va., action, Nov. 10, 1863, 2 W. Va., 87.
- Burnside, Ambrose E., 3, 370.
- Burnside expedition, 1862, 4, 32.
- Burnside's "mud campaign," Jan., 1863, 3, 374.
- Burrow, N. B., 10 Ark., 17.
- Burt, E. R., 7 Miss., 26.
- Butler, Benjamin F., 2 Md., 18, 29; 3, 131; 10 La., 54-61, 74-6, 88.
- Butler, J. A., 8, 48.
- Matthew C., 5, 200, 390.
- Butte-la-Rose, La., action, April, 1863, 10 La., 90.
- Buzzard Roost, Ga., action, Feb., 1864, 297-8.
- Byrne, Edward P., 9 Ky., 49.
- Cabell, H. Coalter, 3, 129.
- Cabell, W. L., 9 Mo., 193; 10 Ark., 166, 199-204, 257, 274, 247-8, 392.
- Cabinet, C. S., 1, 306.
- Caldwell, J. F. J., 5, 125, 266.
- R. P., 8, 42.
- Calhoun, John C., 1, 179.
- California, Mo., action, Oct. 9, 1864, 9 Mo., 182.
- Camden, Ark., campaign, 9 Mo., 160-8; 10 Ark., 237-69.
- Cameron, William N., 8, 63.
- Camp Bartow (see Greenbrier River).
- Camp Bisland, La., battle, April 12, 1863, 11 Tex., 131, 191.
- Camp Jackson, Mo., capture of, May 10, 1861, 9 Mo., 32.
- Camp Vance, N. C., action, July, 1864, 4, 280.
- Camp Wildcat, Ky., action, Oct. 21, 1861, 9 Ky., 44.
- Campbell, Alexander W., 8, 251, 299-300.
- John A., 1, 376, 551-9, 610-4.
- R. P., 4, 91.
- W. P. A., 3, 260.
- Cape Hill, Ark., action, Nov. 28, 1862, 9 Mo., 104; 10 Ark., 138-42; action, Dec. 5, 1862, 9 Mo., 101-5.
- Canood, A. J., 8, 85.
- Cantey, James, 7 Ala., 297.
- Canton, Miss., expedition to, Oct., 1863, 7 Miss., 169.
- Cape Girardeau, Mo., action, April, 1863, 9 Mo., 132.
- Capers, Ellison, 1, ix; 5, 7-9, 83-5, 206-6, 286, 337, 341, 344, 383; 6, 359; 8, 158; "South Carolina," 5.
- Capers, F. W., 6, 55.
- Carlin, J., 5, 233.
- Carlton, Henry H., 6, 219, 232.
- Carmichael, Robert B., 2 Md., 95-6.
- Carnes, W. W., 8, 260.
- Carnifax Ferry, W. Va., battle, Sept. 10, 1861, 2 W. Va., 37.
- Carolina campaign, 1865, 12, 259.



- Carpenter, J. Q., 5, 54.  
 Carpet-bagger, the, 12, 311.  
 Carpet-bag government, corruption of, 12, 303-14.  
 Carrick's Ford, W. Va., action, July 13, 1861, 2 W. Va., 21; 3, 55.  
 Carroll Co., Ark., operations in, Oct., 1863, 10 Ark., 224.  
 Carroll, Charles A., 10 Ark., 121.  
 — DeRosey, 10 Ark., 286.  
 — William H., 8, 300-1.  
 Carruthers, Robert L., 1, 732.  
 Carter, George W., 9 Mo., 132, 134.  
 — John C., 8, 157, 159, 301-2.  
 — Jonathan H., 12, 56.  
 — Samuel, 8, 254.  
 Carthage, Mo., battle, July 5, 1861, 9 Mo., 49; 10 Ark., 21; action near, Sept. 14, 1862, 9 Mo., 100.  
 Cary, J. B., 3, 131.  
 Cassville, Ga., action, May 19, 1864, 6, 307; 8, 129.  
 Castle Pinckney, S. C., Confederate occupation, 5, 9-10.  
 Catlett's Station, Va., raid, Aug. 22, 1862, 3, 319.  
 Cattle raid, Hampton's, Sept. 14, 1864, 5, 348.  
 Cavalry, C. S., 9 Ky., 91; 10 Ark., 126-8.  
 Cedar Creek, Va., operations, Aug., 1864, 3, 490-1; action, Oct. 13, 1861, 3, 503; battle, Oct. 19, 1861, 3, 505-10.  
 Cedar Keys, Fla., action near, Feb. 13, 1864, 11 Fla., 130, 136; naval action, 11 Fla., 25.  
 Cedar Run, Va., battle, Aug., 1862, 3, 304-14; 4, 93; 6, 177; 5, 120; 8, 188.  
 Cedarville, Va., action, Nov., 1861, 3, 512.  
 Centralia, Mo., action at, 9 Mo., 183.  
 Centralization, Federal, 1, 34.  
 Chaffin's Bluff, Va., action, July 28, 1864, 3, 519.  
 Chalaron, J. A., 10 La., 182, 193.  
 Chalk Bluff, Ark., 10 Ark., 93, 163.  
 Chalmers, James R., 7 Miss., 44-5, 47-8, 65, 113-4, 125, 156, 165, 191, 202, 203, 219-20, 221, 241; 9 Ky., 129; 11 Fla., 27.  
 Chambersburg, Pa., burning of, 1864, 2 Md., 129; 3, 487; 12, 147.  
 Chambliss, John R., 3, 582.  
 Champion Rock, 9 Mo., 34.  
 Champion's Hill, Miss., battle, May 16, 1863, 6, 221; 7 Miss., 142-7; 9 Mo., 118.  
 Chancellorsville, Va., battle, May 1-3, 1863, 3, 359-90; 4, 156; 5, 215-22; 6, 211-9; 8, 197; 10 La., 248; 12, 237; campaign, 3, 375.  
 Chantilly (see Ox Hill).  
 Chapman, A. A., 2 W. Va., 35, 36.  
 — G. R., 2 W. Va., 59.  
 Charleston, S. C., bombardment of, 5, 245, 297-8, 302; defenses of, 5, 94-9, evacuation of, 5, 364; navy at, 12, 8, siege of, 5, 291-300; 12, 252-4; stone blockade, 5, 38.  
 Charleston, W. Va., action, Sept., 1862, 2 W. Va., 66-7.  
 Charleston Harbor, events, 1861, 12, 193; naval battle, Jan., 1863, 5, 192-3; 12, 68; torpedo service, 5, 294-4, 297, 300.  
 Charlestown, W. Va., attack, Oct., 1863, 2 W. Va., 81-5; action, March, 1864, 2 W. Va., 91; Aug., 1864, 3, 192.  
 Charlot, Mo., action, Oct. 25, 1864, 9 Mo., 194.  
 Chase, Salmon P., 7 Ala., 32.  
 — W. H., 11 Fla., 22.  
 Chataud, Frederick, 12, 13.  
 Chattanooga, C. S. gunboat, 11 Fla., 55.  
 Chattanooga, Tenn., battles, Nov., 1863, 8, 113-24; operations, June, 1862, 9 Ky., 88; campaign, Sept., 1863, 8, 91-112; 9 Ky., 174-81.  
 Cheat Mountain, W. Va., campaign, 1861, 2 W. Va., 32-3, 39-42; 3, 152-66, 6, 70-1; 8, 179.  
 Cheat River Bridge, W. Va., Imboden's raids, 1862, 2 W. Va., 70.  
 Cheatham, Benjamin F., 8, 9, 14, 37, 76, 113, 138, 145, 153, 161, 302-4; 9 Ky., 141.  
 Cheek, William H., 4, 227; 219, 272.  
 Chestnut, James, 5, 356, 386, 625-6.  
 Cheves, Edward, 6, 172.  
 — Langdon, 5, 232.  
 Chicamcomico, N. C., action, Oct. 1, 1861, 4, 28; 6, 77.  
 Chickahominy raid, 1862, 3, 282.  
 Chickamauga, Ga., battle, Sept. 19-20, 1863, 5, 277-90; 6, 241-63; 8, 92; 9 Ky., 175-81; 10 Ark., 353-8; 10 La., 184-8; 11 Tex., 174; 12, 244.  
 Chickamauga, C. S. cruiser, 12, 104.  
 Chickamauga National Park, 12, 342.  
 Chickasaw Bayou, Miss., battle, Dec., 1862, 6, 109; 7 Miss., 101-7; 8, 78; 11 Tex., 164.  
 Chicora, C. S. ironclad, 5, 192; 12, 67.  
 Chilton, Robert H., 3, 584.  
 Christie, D. H., 4, 194.  
 Church, the army, 8, 276.  
 Churchill, Thomas J., 10 Ark., 3, 43-5, 156, 159, 394.  
 Chustenahlah, Ind. T., battle, Dec. 26, 1861, 11 Tex., 240.  
 Citizenship, Confederate, 1, 454.  
 Citronelle, Ala., surrender, May 4, 1865, 7 Miss., 223.  
 Clack, Calvin J., 8, 80, 141.  
 Claiborne, Thomas, 8, 44.  
 Clanton, James H., 7 Ala., 398.  
 Clarence, C. S. cruiser, 12, 105.  
 Clarendon, Ark., action, June, 1862, 10 Ark., 111; action with gunboats, 1864, 9 Mo., 173; 10 Ark., 270-1.  
 Clark, Charles, 1, 724; 7, 81, 216.  
 — Henry T., 1, 726; 4, 29.  
 — John B., 9 Mo., 13, 206.  
 — S. Churchill, 9 Mo., 82; 10 Ark., 5.  
 Clarkson, John N., 2 W. Va., 23, 46.  
 Clay, Henry, 1, 272.  
 Claybrooke, Fred, 8, 90.  
 Claysville, Ala., action, March 8, 1864, 7 Ala., 42.  
 Clayton, Henry D., 7 Ala., 400.  
 — Philip, 1, 605.  
 Cleburne, C. S., 2 W. Va., 96.  
 — Patrick R., 6, 272; 8, 60, 146-52, 153; 9 Ky., 144, 158; 10 Ark., 8, 36, 334, 374, 392, 12, 181.  
 Clemens, Jeremiah, 7 Ala., 14.  
 Cleveland, Grover, 12, 338.  
 Clingman, Thomas L., 4, 146, 252, 269, 300.  
 Cloyd's Mountain, Va., battle, May 2, 1864, 2 W. Va., 35-9.  
 Cobb, Howell, 1, 359; 6, 5, 104, 159, 185-6, 376, 382, 341, 356, 383.



- Cobb, Thomas R. R., 5, 178; 6, 197-8, 403.  
 Cocke, Philip St. G., 3, 585.  
 Cockrell, Francis M., 9 Mo., 92, 125, 127-8, 155, 197-8, 208.  
 Coercion, effect upon the South, 1, 347-57; 12, 208; policy of, 12, 206.  
 Cofer, M. H., 9 Ky., 49, 173.  
 Coffee, John R., 7 Ala., 14.  
 Coffeeville, Miss., action, Dec. 5, 1862, 7 Miss., 98.  
 Coggin's Point, Va., action, July 31, 1862, 3, 306.  
 Coker, James L., 5, 311.  
 Cold Camp, Mo., skirmish, 1861, 9 Mo., 46; 10 Ark., 20.  
 Cold Harbor, Va., battles, June, 1864, 3, 465; 4, 251; 8, 206; 9 Ky., 189; battle, 1861 (see Gaines' Mill).  
 Cole, J. G., 8, 121.  
 Coleman, David, 4, 205.  
 — Lewis M., 12, 166, 172.  
 Cole's Island, S. C., Confederate evacuation, 5, 41.  
 Collierville, Tenn., actions at, 1863, 7 Miss., 165, 167.  
 Colquitt, Alfred H., 6, 184-5, 283, 292, 375, 465; 11 Fla., 63.  
 Colquitt, Peyton H., 3, 130; 5, 287; 6, 259.  
 Colston, Raleigh E., 3, 586.  
 Columbia, S. C., burning of, Feb. 17, 1865, 5, 365.  
 Columbia, Tenn., action near, Oct., 1864, 8, 246.  
 Columbus, Ga., action, April 16, 1865, 6, 383.  
 Columbus, Ky., occupation of, Sept., 1861, 8, 10.  
 Confederate monument at Chicago, 12, 342.  
 Confederate soldiers, belligerent rights of, 2 W. Va., 107.  
 Confederate States, formation of provisional government, 1, 358-71; 12, 197; belligerent rights, 1, 142; international relations, 1, 472; permanent organization, 1, 430; political history of, 1, 249-570; war policy, 1, 432, 445.  
 Congress, C. S., proceedings of, 1, 302, 398, 399, 404, 433, 431-3, 445, 501, 533.  
 Connally, J. K., 4, 174.  
 Connecticut, cession of territory by, 1, 119.  
 Conner, James, 5, 26, 48, 386.  
 Conner, Z. T., 6, 162.  
 Conscript law, 1, 418; 6, 97-8, 107-8.  
 Conscript troops, 10 Ark., 114.  
 Constitution, C. S., 1, 368-70; text of, 12, 371.  
 Constitution, U. S., conflict over, 1859-61, 1, 307; made by the States, 1, 16-22; relations of States under, 1, 22-29; rights of States under, 1, 12-16, 29-38; 13th amendment, 1, 557; 12, 290; 14th amendment, 12, 302.  
 Cook, Edmund C., 8, 98, 135.  
 — Philip, 6, 233, 376, 406.  
 Cooke, James W., 12, 13, 26, 81-4, 223.  
 — John R., 4, 126, 138-40, 302.  
 Cool Springs, Va., action, July 18, 1864, 3, 485.  
 Cooper, Douglas H., 7 Miss., 247; 10 Ark., 131.  
 Cooper, Samuel, 1, 616-7.  
 Coosawhatchie, S. C., battle, Oct. 22, 1862, 101-6.  
 Corinth, Miss., action, May 21, 1862, 7 Miss., 54; action, May 28, 1862, 7 Miss., 56; operations about, 1862, 7 Miss., 83; siege of, 9 Mo., 86; evacuation of, 7 Miss., 56, 59-61; battle, Oct. 3-4, 1862, 7 Miss., 89-95; 9 Mo., 90-2; 10 Ark., 346-51; 11 Tex., 162.  
 Corley, Samuel, 10 Ark., 219.  
 Cornay, Florian O., 10 La., 41, 153.  
 Corpus Christi, Tex., action near, 11 Tex., 102-4, 119.  
 Corse, Montgomery D., 3, 588.  
 Cosby, George B., 9 Ky., 171, 185, 191, 220.  
 Cost of the war, 12, 273.  
 Cotton, export of, 1, 366.  
 Cotton Hill, W. Va., action, Sept. 11, 1862, 2 W. Va., 66.  
 Cotton, J. A., C. S. gunboat, 10 La., 80-5.  
 Couter, Charles S., 2 Md., 101.  
 Covington, Va., action, Dec., 1863, 2 W. Va., 88.  
 Cowskin Prairie, Mo., rendezvous at, 1861, 9 Mo., 51.  
 Cox, Jacob D., 2 W. Va., 27.  
 — William R., 4, 303.  
 Crampton's Gap, battle of, 3, 343.  
 Crane Creek, Mo., skirmish, Feb., 1862, 9 Mo., 76.  
 Crater, the, battle, July 30, 1864, 3, 520.  
 Cravens, Jordan E., 10 Ark., 317.  
 Crawford, J. Terrell, 6, 87.  
 — Martin J., 6, 100.  
 Creek war, 1, 183.  
 Crews, Charles C., 6, 267, 408.  
 — J. M., 8, 40.  
 Crisis of 1860, 1, 316.  
 Crisp, Charles F., 12, 193.  
 Crittenden compromise, 1, 344.  
 Crittenden, Geo. B., 8, 18; 9 Ky., 53, 232.  
 — John J., 9 Ky., 17.  
 Croghan, St. George, 2 W. Va., 16.  
 Crook, George, 2 W. Va., 103, 123-7; 3, 538.  
 Cross Keys, Va., battle, June 8, 1862, 3, 256.  
 Cross Lanes, W. Va., action, Aug. 26, 1861, 2 W. Va., 36.  
 Crossan, Thomas M., 4, 26.  
 Cruisers, C. S. navy, legal status of, 12, 59.  
 Cuba, liberation of, 1, 245.  
 Cumberland, Md., McNeill's raid, 3, 538.  
 Cumberland Gap, Tenn., operations, June, 1862, 9 Ky., 87-8.  
 Cumming, Alfred, 6, 13, 174, 299, 409.  
 — John B., 6, 192.  
 — T. W., 6, 265.  
 Cummings, D. H., 8, 16.  
 Cummings Point, S. C., 5, 18.  
 Cunningham, John, 5, 9.  
 Curry, J. L. M., 1, iv; "Justification of the South in Secession," 1, 3-58.  
 Curtiss, William B., 6, 233.  
 Cuthbert, G. B., 5, 221.  
 Cynthia, Ky., Morgan's raid to, July, 1862, 9 Ky., 99-107.  
 Dahlgren raid, March, 1864, 4, 226.  
 Dallas, Ga., battle, May 28, 1864, 6, 311.  
 Dalton, Ga., operations, Feb., 1864, 6, 297-8; May, 1864, 6, 303; Aug., 1864, 6, 344; Oct., 1864, 8, 141.  
 Dam No. 5, Md., expedition, Dec., 1861, 2 W. Va., 52.



- Dana, Charles A., 3, 419, 454, 466.  
 Daniel, Junius, 4, 153, 181, 243, 306.  
 Danley, C. C., 10 Ark., 3, 17.  
 Dantzier, O. M., 5, 349, 352.  
 D'Aquin, Edgar, 10 La., 216.  
 Dardanelle, Ark., action, May 10, 1864, 9 Mo., 172.  
 Darden, J. H., 8, 141.  
 Dargan, A. T., 5, 322.  
 Darien, Ga., burning of, 6, 208, 234; 12, 146.  
 Darkesville, Va., action, Sept. 10, 1864, 3, 495-6.  
 David, C. S., torpedo boat, 12, 75.  
 Davidson, Henry B., 8, 304-5.  
 — Hunter, 12, 12, 78.  
 Davis, Champ P., 4, 68.  
 — George, 1, 601-2.  
 — Jefferson, 1, 259, 275, 305, 307, 351, 357, 369, 363-5, 445, 538, 565; biography, 573-59; 2 Md., 28-30; 3, 546; 5, 222, 258; 6, 279, 335, 384; 7 Miss., 12-11, 97-101; 9 Ky., 28-30, 211-2, 216-21; 10 La., 282; 10 Ark., 126; 11 Fla., 17; 12, 148, 259, 263, 281.  
 Davis, Joseph R., 1, 624-5; 7 Miss., 181-4, 249.  
 Davis, J. Sturgis, 2 Md., 48.  
 — Lucius, 2 W. Va., 39.  
 — Nicholas, 7 Ala., 11.  
 — Reuben, 7 Miss., 33, 250.  
 — Robert W., 2 Md., 22.  
 — Samuel, 12, 187-9.  
 — W. G. M., 11 Fla., 190.  
 Dawson, John W., 8, 65, 128.  
 De Lagnel, Julius A., 2 W. Va., 20; 3, 691.  
 De Rosset, William L., 4, 121.  
 Dearing, James, 3, 590; 4, 198, 263.  
 Deas, Zachary C., 7 Ala., 401.  
 Debray, Xavier B., 11 Tex., 226.  
 Decatur, Ga., action, July 22, 1864, 6, 333.  
 Declaration of Independence, cited, 1, 8-11, 83, 99.  
 Deep Bottom, Va., battle, Aug. 14, 1864, 3, 522.  
 Deer Creek, Miss. operations on, March, 1863, 7 Miss., 124.  
 Dement, William F., 2 Md., 68, 101-5.  
 Democratic party, division of, 1, 306; convention, 1864, 1, 527.  
 Denmark, Tenn., action, Aug., 1862, 7 Miss., 84; 8, 219.  
 Derry, Joseph T., 1, ix; "Georgia," 6.  
 Deshaussure, W. G., 5, 9, 271.  
 Deshler, James, 7 Ala., 402.  
 Devall's Bluff, Ark., operations near, June, 1862, 10 Ark., 113-3.  
 Dewey, George, 10 La., 111.  
 Dewitt, M. B., article by, 8, 269-82.  
 Diana, U. S. gunboat, 10 La., 89.  
 Dibrell, George G., 8, 175, 219, 305-7.  
 Dickinson, J. J., 1, ix; 11 Fla., 50, 86, 103, 107, 111, 119, 123-9; "Florida," 11.  
 Dilworth, William S., 11 Fla., 167, 170.  
 Dimitry, John, 1, xiii; "Louisiana," 10.  
 — Theodore J., 10 La., 282.  
 Dinwiddie C. H., Va., battle, March 30, 1865, 3, 531.  
 Dispatch, the lost, 4, 107.  
 Disunion agitation, 1841, 1, 221.  
 Ditty, C. Irving, 2 Md., 49.  
 Dixon, George E., 5, 500.  
 — Joseph H., 8, 22.  
 — W. D., 6, 262.  
 Doak, H. M., 8, 263-4.  
 Dobbin, Archibald S., 10 Ark., 274.  
 Dockery, Thomas P., 10 Ark., 274, 319, 398.  
 Doles, George, 6, 168, 217, 236, 412.  
 Donaldsonville, La., action, June 1864, 10 La., 103; 11 Tex., 197; July, 1864, 10 La., 104; 11 Tex., 198.  
 Donelson, Daniel S., 8, 307-8.  
 Dorsey, Edwin R., 2 Md., 72, 75.  
 — Gustavus W., 2 Md., 131-2.  
 Douglas, H. K., 12, 365.  
 — Marcellus, 6, 87, 188, 295, 298.  
 Dowling, R. W., 11 Tex., 111.  
 Drake, Joseph, 7 Miss., 36, 38.  
 — J. L., 7 Miss., 211.  
 Dranesville, Va., action, Dec. 20, 1861, 3, 195.  
 Drayton, Thomas F., 5, 32, 287.  
 Dreux, Charles D., 3, 106; 10 La., 111.  
 Drewry's Bluff, Va., action, May 1864, 3, 274; 12, 51; battle, May 16, 1864, 4, 245; 8, 207.  
 Droop Mountain, W. Va., battle, Nov. 1863, 2 W. Va., 85-7.  
 Drywood, Mo., action, 1861, 9 Mo., 64.  
 DuBose, D. M., 6, 229, 376, 411; skirmish, Feb., 1862, 9 Mo., 76.  
 Dug Springs, Mo., action, Aug., 1861, 10 Ark., 22.  
 Duke, Basil W., 9 Mo., 24; 9 Ky., 26-6, 145, 154, 173, 190, 191, 234.  
 Dulaney, R. H., 2 W. Va., 75.  
 Dumfries, Va., actions, Dec., 1862, 8, 180, 184.  
 Duncan, Blanton, 9 Ky., 34.  
 — D. G., 3, 128.  
 — Johnson K., 10 La., 296.  
 Dunnington, John W., 8, 258, 260; 12, 56.  
 Dunovant, John, 5, 351, 389.  
 — R. G. M., 5, 15, 32.  
 Durrett, R. T., 9 Ky., 32.  
 Eagle, James P., 10 Ark., 285.  
 Early, Jubal A., 1, 686-8; 2 W. Va., 7, 2 Md., 121; 3, 311, 352, 413, 477, 488-9, 496, 499, 509, 535, 540.  
 Eastport, Miss., action near, 8, 247.  
 Echols, John, 2 W. Va., 7, 66, 69, 85-6, 88, 103-4; 3, 591; 9 Ky., 185, 190-1.  
 Ector, Matthew D., biog., 11 Tex., 257.  
 Edenburg, Va., action, Nov. 17, 1863, 2 W. Va., 87; Jan. 22, 1865, 3, 538.  
 Edgar, George M., 2 W. Va., 69, 79, 83.  
 Education in the South, 12, 339.  
 Edwards, O. E., 5, 229.  
 Egypt, Miss., action, Dec. 28, 1864, 7 Miss., 209.  
 Electoral vote, U. S., 1800, 1, 135; 1804, 1, 159; 1808, 1, 170; 1816, 1, 193; 1820, 1, 217; 1844, 1, 225.  
 Elizabeth City, N. C., naval battle, Feb., 1862, 4, 57; 12, 25.  
 Elkhorn Tavern (see Pea Ridge).  
 Elliott, Stephen, 5, 76, 93, 292, 325, 349.  
 Ellis, John W., 1, 726.  
 Ellis, U. S. gunboat, destruction of, 4, 142.  
 Eltham's Landing, Va., action, May 7, 1862, 3, 273; 4, 57; 5, 47-8; 8, 181.  
 Ebzey, Arnold, 2 Md., 47, 54-6, 68, 114, 177; 3, 111; 6, 10-1.  
 Emancipation, 1, 450, 461, 557; agitation for in the South, 1, 260.  
 Emanuel, W. P., 5, 93.





- Emma, blockade runner, 6, 102.  
 Engelhard, Joseph A., 4, 178.  
 England, attitude toward C. S., 1, 472.  
 Erwin, Henry C., 7, 72.  
 European intervention, 10 Ark., 193.  
 Evans, Clement A., 1, v; 3, 537; 6, 171-2, 196, 218, 291, 293, 376, 378, 415; 10 La., 281; 12, 146, 166; "The Civil History of the Confederate States," 1, 249-570; "Outline of Confederate Military History," 12, 197-205.  
 Evans, Nathan G., 5, 22, 107, 392.  
   — Peter G., 4, 195.  
 Ewell, Benjamin S., 3, 129.  
   — Richard S., 1, 670-8; 2 Md., 66-7; 3, 235, 242, 256, 395, 397, 404-6, 412-3, 434, 441.  
 Exchange of prisoners, 1, 479, 484.  
 Ezra Church, Ga., battle, July 28, 1864, 6, 336; 8, 128.  
 Fagan, James F., 10 Ark., 188, 253-5, 261, 274, 324, 399.  
 Fairfax, Va., action, June 1, 1861, 3, 93.  
 Fairmount, W. Va., action, April 29, 1863, 2 W. Va., 76.  
 Falkner, W. C., 7 Miss., 23.  
 Falling Waters, W. Va., action, July 2, 1861, 2 W. Va., 24; 3, 79-89; July 13, 1863; 3, 422; 8, 202-3.  
 Falls Church, Va., action, Nov. 16, 1861, 3, 195.  
 Farmington, Miss., battle, May, 1862, 7 Miss., 53; 9 Mo., 87.  
 Farmville, Va., action, April 7, 1865, 3, 547.  
 Farragut, David G., 8, 254; 10 La., 39, 112; 12, 87.  
 Farrand, Ebenezer, 12, 51.  
 Fasting and Prayer, day of, 8, 271.  
 Fayetteville, Ark., 10 Ark., 70; operations about, Oct., 1862, 10 Ark., 123; battle, April, 1863, 10 Ark., 169-72.  
 Fayetteville, W. Va., battle, Sept., 1862, 2 W. Va., 65; demonstration, May, 1863, 2 W. Va., 79.  
 Featherston, Winfield S., 7 Miss., 28, 214, 218, 219, 227, 251.  
 Federal troops, devastation by, 12, 144.  
 Feild, Hume R., 8, 52, 165.  
 Fenwick's Island, S. C., Confederate expedition, 1862, 5, 92.  
 Ferguson, Milton J., 2 W. Va., 91.  
   — Samuel W., 5, 294.  
 Field, Charles W., 9 Ky., 236.  
 Fielder, A. T., 8, 12.  
 Fife, W. E., 2 W. Va., 96.  
 Fifteen, committee of, 12, 297.  
 Finegan, Joseph, 11 Fla., 58, 69, 290.  
 Finlay, steamship, 6, 60-1, 103.  
 Finlay, Luke W., 8, 159.  
 Finley, Jesse J., 11 Fla., 176, 181, 183, 302.  
 Finney, William W., 2 W. Va., 69.  
 First act of war, 1, 281.  
 Fiser, John C., 7 Miss., 175.  
 Fisher, Charles F., 4, 22.  
 Fisher's Hill, Va., battle, Sept. 22, 1864, 3, 493.  
 Fishing Creek, Ky., battle, Jan. 19, 1862, 7 Miss., 34; 8, 15; 9 Ky., 53-5.  
 Fisk, Stuart W., 10 La., 180.  
 Fitzgerald, Edward, 8, 18.  
 Fitzhugh, Henry, 2 W. Va., 59.  
 Five Forks, Va., battle, April 1, 1865, 3, 531.  
 Flag of C. S., 1, 362; battle flag, 10 La., 210, 287.  
 Flanagan, Harris, 1, 718; 10 Ark., 285.  
 Fleming, James M., 8, 44.  
 Fletcher, Thomas, 1, 717.  
 Florida, acquisition of, 1, 136, 160-204; campaign, Feb., 1864, 11 Fla., 56; proposed Federal colonization, 1, 413; reports and general orders pertaining to the military history of, 11 Fla., 188; representation in C. S. Congress, 11 Fla., 18; secession of, 11 Fla., 3; secession convention, 11 Fla., 6.  
 Florida, C. S. cruiser, 1, 440; 8, 261-4; 12, 102.  
 Florida troops: Organization in March, 1864, 11 Fla., 75.  
   At Apopkattox, 11 Fla., 160; in the Atlanta campaign, 11 Fla., 185; at Bentonville, 11 Fla., 189; at Bristoe Station, 11 Fla., 156; at Chancellorsville, 11 Fla., 149; at Chickamauga, 11 Fla., 167, 169, 178; at Cold Harbor, 11 Fla., 158; at Franklin, 11 Fla., 189; at Fredericksburg, 11 Fla., 142; at Gettysburg, 11 Fla., 150-6; at Manassas, Second, 11 Fla., 148; at Missionary Ridge, 11 Fla., 174, 184; in Mississippi, 11 Fla., 169; at Murfreesboro, 11 Fla., 168; at Olustee, 11 Fla., 58-9; at Petersburg, 11 Fla., 189; at Perryville, 11 Fla., 166; at Seven Days' battles, 11 Fla., 147; at Seven Pines, 11 Fla., 146; at Sharpsburg, 11 Fla., 148; at Shiloh, 11 Fla., 164-5; at the Wilderness, 11 Fla., 156; at Williamsburg, 11 Fla., 144; at Yorktown, 11 Fla., 143.  
   Artillery: Dunham's, 11 Fla., 48; Gamble's, 11 Fla., 84; Leon light, 11 Fla., 68; Marion light, 11 Fla., 50-2, 180; Milton light, 11 Fla., 72; Robertson's, 8, 64; 11 Fla., 169.  
   Cavalry: 1st reg., 11 Fla., 46, 175, 180; 2d reg., 11 Fla., 47, 49, 52, 63, 79, 87, 96, 105, 123, 130, 138; 5th battalion, 11 Fla., 61, 79-80, 97, 105, 123, 130, 137; Bonaud's battalion, 11 Fla., 67; Marion Dragoons, 11 Fla., 49.  
   Infantry: Brigades—Finegan's, 11 Fla., 158-61; Finley's, 11 Fla., 183; Perry's, 11 Fla., 149-57.  
   Regiments: 1st, 11 Fla., 26, 161; 2d, 11 Fla., 43, 142-7; 3d, 11 Fla., 43, 165; 4th, 11 Fla., 45, 167; 5th, 11 Fla., 181; 6th, 11 Fla., 175, 181; 7th, 11 Fla., 177, 182; 8th, 11 Fla., 148; 9th, 11 Fla., 157-60; 10th, 11 Fla., 157-61; 11th, 11 Fla., 157-63.  
   Battalions: 1st, 11 Fla., 62, 72; 2d, 11 Fla., 72; 6th, 11 Fla., 66.  
 Flournoy, Thompson B., 10 Ark., 291.  
 Floyd, John B., 1, 51-6; 2 W. Va., 36, 33, 37-9, 42-3; 3, 60, 593.  
 Foard, A. J., 8, 266.  
 Fogg, Henry R. M., 8, 18.  
 Folly Island, S. C., action, April 10, 1863, 6, 201.  
 Folsom, Robert W., 6, 169.  
 Forbes, W. A., 8, 190.  
 Fordoché, La., action, Sept. 29, 1863, 10 La., 104; 11 Tex., 132, 199.  
 Forney, John H., 7 Ala., 46.  
   — William H., 7 Ala., 14, 107.  
 Forrest, French, 12, 9, 31, 37, 42



- Forrest, Nathan B., 1, 699-702; 6, 210-1; 7 Miss., 98, 167, 188, 197, 201, 225, 226; 8, 26, 40, 170, 217, 231, 253, 272; 9 Ky., 97, 108, 172; 12, 140.
- Fort Anderson, N. C., attack, Feb., 1863, 4, 153.
- Fort Beauregard, S. C., action, Nov. 7, 1861, 5, 31-4.
- Fort Blakely, Ala., siege of, 9 Mo., 198.
- Fort Brown, Tex., Federal occupation, 11 Tex., 119.
- Fort Deer River, Tenn., action, Dec., 1862, 8, 219.
- Fort De Russy, La., capture, March 17, 1864, 10 La., 129.
- Fort Donelson, Tenn., battle, Feb. 15, 1862, 7 Miss., 36-40; 8, 19-23; 9 Ky., 57; 11 Tex., 158; action, Feb. 3, 1863, 8, 223; Johnston's correspondence regarding, 9 Ky., 216-24.
- Fort Esperanza, Tex., capture, Nov. 29, 1863, 11 Tex., 120.
- Fort Fisher, N. C., reduction of, 4, 273-7; 12, 90.
- Fort Gilmer, Va., action, Sept. 29, 1864, 3, 524.
- Fort Harrison, Va., action, Sept., 1864, 3, 524; 5, 349.
- Fort Hatteras, N. C., action, Aug. 28-9, 1861, 4, 28; 12, 17.
- Fort Henry, Tenn., reduction, Feb., 1862, 8, 18; 9 Ky., 56.
- Fort Johnson, S. C., 5, 19.
- Fort McAllister, Ga., bombardment, Jan., 1863, 6, 201; bombardment, Feb., 1863, 6, 202; bombardment, March, 1863, 6, 203-4; capture, Dec., 1864, 6, 368.
- Fort McRee, Fla., bombardment, Nov. 22, 1861, 11 Fla., 34.
- Fort Macon, N. C., capture of, April 25, 1862, 4, 43.
- Fort Moultrie, S. C., Federal evacuation, 5, 6; Confederate occupation, 5, 9-10; action, Nov. 16, 1863, 5, 235; naval attack, Sept. 7, 1863, 7, 71-2.
- Fort Pemberton, Miss., operations against, March-April, 1863, 7 Miss., 123-4.
- Fort Pickens, Fla., 11 Fla., 22.
- Fort Pillow, Tenn., capture, April 12, 1864, 7 Miss., 193; 8, 233, 234.
- Fort Pulaski, Ga., occupation of, 6, 5-9; naval battle near, Jan., 1862, 6, 82; operations against, 6, 83-4; reduction of, April, 1862, 6, 88-91.
- Fort Stedman, Va., battle, March 25, 1865, 3, 529-30.
- Fort Sumter, S. C., assault, Sept. 9, 1863, 6, 23; bombardment of, July, 1863-July, 1864, 5, 292-309; explosion of magazine, Dec. 11, 1863, 5, 296; faith as to, 1, 377, 384; flag of, 5, 295, 296, 298, 300; naval attack, April 7, 1863, 5, 195-6; Sept. 7, 1863, 12, 71-2; occupation and reinforcement of, 1, 339-42, 348, 386; reduction of, April, 1861, 5, 6-18; 1, 389.
- Fort Tyler, Ala., action, April 16, 1864, 7 Ala., 47; 8, 335-7. (See West Point, Ga.)
- Fort Jackson and St. Philip, La., naval action, April, 1862, 10 La., 36-46; 12, 57.
- Fort McRee and Barrancas, Fla., bombardment of, Nov., 1861, 6, 80.
- Fort Walker and Beauregard, S. C., capture, Nov. 7, 1861, 5, 31-4; 12, 13.
- Foster, Ira R., 6, 55.
- Fourche Bayou, Ark., action, Sept. 13, 1863, 10 Ark., 217-9.
- France, armistice proposed by, 1 172.
- Franklin, La., action, April, 1863, 10 La., 97.
- Franklin, Miss., action, Jan. 2, 1863, 7 Miss., 210.
- Franklin, Tenn., battle, Nov. 30, 1864, 5, 343; 6, 372; 7 Miss., 217; 8, 154; 10, 371; 11 Tex., 189.
- Franklin, Va., action, Oct. 2, 1862, 4, 112.
- Fraser, John C., 6, 219, 232.
- Frayser's Farm, Va., battle, June 30, 1862, 3, 296; 4, 83; 5, 70-2.
- Frazier, John W., 8, 308-9.
- Fredericksburg, Va., battle, Dec. 11, 1862, 3, 267-72; 4, 133; 5, 168-79; 6, 195-200; 8, 195; 10 La., 245; battle, May 24, 1863, 3, 391.
- Freedmen's Bureau, 12, 289, 292-3, 296-4.
- Freeman, S. L., 8, 226.
- Thomas R., 10 Ark., 275.
- Freeman's Ford, Va., action, Aug. 22, 1862, 3, 313; 4, 95.
- Free Soil party, 1, 282.
- Fremont, John C., 9 Mo., 70.
- French, Samuel G., 7 Miss., 252.
- Front Royal, Va., battle, May 23, 1862, 3, 236; May 20, 1862, 3, 249.
- Frost, Daniel M., 9 Mo., 10, 25, 31, 72, 179.
- Fry, Burkett K., 7 Ala., 409.
- Joseph, 8, 259; 10 Ark., 109; 12, 56.
- Fugitive slave law, 1, 275, 277; 3, 20; nullification of, 1, 279-90; 7 Ala., 19-20, 24-5.
- Fulkerson, A., 8, 109, 213.
- Fuller, E. W., 10 La., 89.
- T. C., 4, 147.
- Fulton, John S., 8, 211, 212.
- S., 4, 96.
- Funsten, O. R., 2 W. Va., 48.
- Gadberry, J. M., 5, 133-4.
- Gadsden purchase, 1, 232.
- Gaillard, Franklin, 5, 317.
- P. C., 5, 84, 236.
- Gaines, C. S., gunboat, 12, 86-7.
- Gaines' Mill, Va., battle, June 27, 1862, 2 Md., 84-7; 3, 288-92; 4, 79; 11 Tex., 210.
- Gainesville, Fla., expedition to, Aug., 1864, 11 Fla., 105; battle, 107.
- Gainesville, Va. (see Groveton).
- Gaither, George R., 2 Md., 47.
- Gallatin, Tenn., Morgan's raids, 1862, 9 Ky., 94, 110.
- Gallie, John B., 6, 302.
- Galveston, Tex., attack, Aug. 3-5, 1861, 11 Tex., 71; evacuation of, Oct. 4, 1861, 11 Tex., 73-5; operations, Nov. 8, 1861, 11 Tex., 71; recapture, Jan. 1, 1863, 11 Tex., 80-96.
- Gamble, Robert H., 11 Fla., 68.
- Gano, Richard M., 9 Ky., 95-6, 146; 10 Ark., 231; 11 Tex., 238.
- Gantt, Edward W., 10 Ark., 310.
- Gardner, Franklin, 10 La., 109, 113, 119, 297.
- Gardner, William M., 6, 69, 417.
- Garland, Samuel, 4, 111, 595.
- Garlington, B. C., 5, 67.
- Garnett, Richard B., 3, 597.
- Robert S., 2 W. Va., 16-21; 3, 45, 55, 598.



Garrett, William R., 1, x; "The South as a Factor in Territorial Expansion," 1, 61-246.

Garrison, William Lloyd, 1, 233.

Garrott, Isham W., 7 Ala., 411.

Gartrell, Lucius J., 6, 63, 418.

Gary, Martin W., 5, 321, 335.

Gates, Elijah, 9 Mo., 92, 121, 197-8.

Gatlin, Richard C., 4, 11, 308.

George, James Z., 7 Miss., 167.

— N. J., 8, 195.

Georgetown, S. C., expedition from, Aug. 14, 1862, 5, 92-3.

Georgia, cession of territory by, 1, 120;

coast expeditions, 6, 105-7; coast

naval operations, 6, 59-62; commercial

reprisals, 1861, 6, 15-6; condition in

1865, 6, 374; convention of 1861, 6, 9, 16,

18, 19; damage of Sherman's march,

6, 370; distress in, 6, 211; election 1860,

6, 4; invasion of, 1864, 12, 274; military

organization in 1861, 6, 53, 55; military

preparations, 6, 3; resolutions, 1894,

1, 512; secession movement, 6, 3; situ-

ation in, 1863, 6, 277; Sherman's

march through, Nov., 1864, 6, 339-66;

war legislation, 6, 108; Wilson's raid,

1865, 6, 382-4.

Georgia, C. S. ironclad, 6, 103.

— C. S. cruiser, 12, 104.

Georgia, North, Hood's campaign, 6,

354-9.

Georgia, North, Wheeler's raid, Aug.,

1864, 6, 314.

Georgia troops: Early army of, 6, 18-9;

organization of, 6, 18; losses of, 6,

282.

At Appomattox, 6, 378; in Atlanta

campaign, 6, 300-1, 305, 307-8, 310, 311,

313, 315, 317, 319, 327, 332; at Battery

Wagner, 6, 236-7; at Brandy Station,

6, 294; at Camp Bartow, 6, 72; in Caro-

lina campaign, 6, 380-2; at Cedar

Mountain, 6, 177; at Chancellorsville,

6, 212-9; at Charleston, 6, 236-8; at

Chickamauga, 6, 241-63; at Chickasaw

Bayou, 6, 109; on the coast, 1864, 6,

287-8; in Florida, 1863, 6, 239; at Fred-

ericksburg, 3, 298; 6, 195-200; at Frank-

lin and Nashville, 6, 372; at Fort

Fisher, 6, 375; at Fort McAllister, 6,

368; in Georgia, 1863, 6, 104-5, 205,

229; at Gettysburg, 6, 273-37; at Har-

per's Ferry, 6, 180; at Howe's Shop, 6,

292; in Kanawha Valley, 6, 74; at Ken-

esaw Mountain, 6, 310; in Kentucky,

98, 100, 101; at Laurel Hill, 6, 65-7;

at Manassas, first, 6, 67-9; at Manassas,

second, 6, 179-83; in Maryland, 1864, 6,

203; at Missionary Ridge, 6, 297-71; in

Mississippi, 1863, 6, 229, 239; at Mur-

freesboro, 6, 99, 110-1; at Olustee, 6,

233-5; in the Peninsular campaign, 6,

179-69; at Pensacola, 6, 24-3, 77-81; at

Petersburg, 6, 292-3, 55-7; at Pul-

aski, 6, 373; on the Rappahannock, 6,

178; at Roanoke Island, 6, 76-7; at Sail-

or's Creek, 6, 377; at Santa Rosa Is-

land, 6, 78-80; in the Seven Days, 6,

165-76; at Sewell's Point, 6, 37; at

Sharpsburg, 6, 187-94; in the Shenan-

doah Valley, 6, 190-4, 274-4; at Shiloh,

6, 94; in South Carolina, 1862, 6, 228-9;

at South Mountain, 6, 184-6; at Spott-

sylvania C. H., 3, 452; 6, 290; in Ten-

nessee, east, 6, 93, 100, 264-7; at Thor-

oughfare Gap, 6, 180-1; at Trevillian

Station, 6, 292; at Vicksburg, 6, 222-

3; in Virginia, 6, 64-76, 376-80; at

the Wilderness, 6, 289-90; at Winches-

ter, 6, 223-4, 291; at Wrightsville, Pa.,

6, 224; at Yorktown, 6, 76.

Artillery battalions: 9th, 6, 142;

11th, 6, 143; 12th, 6, 143-4; 14th, 6, 144;

18th, 6, 144; 23d, 6, 144; 28th, 6, 145.

Batteries: Bartow, 6, 118; Camp-

bell, 6, 146; Chatham, 6, 118; Chero-

kee, 6, 145; Chestatee, 6, 146; Clinch,

6, 147; Columbus, 6, 145; Daniels', 6,

146; Echols', 6, 148; Girardey's, 6,

148; Howell's, 6, 146, 148; Jackson, 6,

146; Macon, 6, 147; Martin's, 6, 146;

Massenburg, 6, 148; Maxwell's, 6,

147; Mercer, 6, 147; Milledge's, 6, 148;

Oglethorpe, 6, 147; Palmer's, 6, 148;

Pritchard's, 6, 146; Pulaski, 6, 147;

Scogin's, 6, 147; 8, 97; Terrell, 6, 145;

Thompson, 6, 146; Troup, 6, 147;

White's, 6, 145.

Cavalry regiments: 1st, 6, 148; 8,

47; 1st (partisan rangers), 6, 151; 2d,

6, 149; 3d, 6, 149; 4th, 6, 150; 4th

(Clinch's), 6, 151; 5th, 6, 151; 6th, 6,

151; 7th, 6, 152, 377; 8th, 6, 153; 9th, 6,

153; 10th, 6, 151; 11th, 6, 154.

Battalions: 1st, 6, 154-5; 2d, 6, 155;

3d, 6, 155; 9th, 6, 155; 10th, 6, 155; 15th,

6, 156; 16th, 6, 156; 19th, 6, 156; 20th, 6,

156; 21st, 6, 156; 23d, 6, 157; 24th, 6, 157;

29th, 6, 157; 30th, 6, 157; Culbertson's,

6, 158; J. T. Stephen's, 6, 158; Macon

Guards, 6, 158; Provost, 6, 158; Rag-

lin's company, 6, 158.

Infantry regiments: 1st C. S., 6,

115; 1st (Mercer's), 6, 23-4; 1st (Ram-

sey's), 6, 19-22; 1st regulars, 6, 16-7;

2d, 6, 25-6; 3d, 6, 26-7, 96-7; 4th, 6, 27-8;

167-8; 5th, 6, 28-9; 6th, 6, 30; 7th, 6, 31;

8th, 6, 31-2; 9th, 6, 32; 10th, 6, 33; 11th,

6, 32-4; 12th, 6, 34, 163-4, 177; 13th, 6, 35;

14th, 6, 37-8; 15th, 6, 28; 16th, 6, 38-9;

17th, 6, 29; 18th, 6, 40; 19th, 6, 40; 20th,

6, 41; 21st, 6, 42, 164, 179; 22d, 6, 42, 167;

23d, 6, 43; 24th, 6, 44; 25th, 6, 44-5; 26th,

6, 49; 27th, 6, 50, 161-2; 28th, 6, 51, 161-2;

29th, 6, 51; 30th, 6, 52; 31st, 6, 162;

32d, 6, 112; 33d, 6, 52, 113; 34th, 6, 113;

35th, 6, 114; 36th, 6, 114; 37th, 6, 115; 8,

117; 8th, 6, 116; 39th, 6, 116-7; 40th, 6,

117; 41st, 6, 118; 42d, 6, 118-9; 43d, 6,

119; 44th, 6, 120; 45th, 6, 120-1; 46th, 6,

121; 47th, 6, 122; 5, 85; 48th, 6, 122; 49th,

6, 123; 50th, 6, 123; 51st, 6, 124; 52d, 6,

124-5; 53d, 6, 125; 54th, 6, 125-6; 55th,

6, 126; 56th, 6, 127; 57th, 6, 127; 58th, 6,

128; 60th, 6, 129; 61st, 6, 129; 62d, 6, 130;

63d, 6, 131; 64th, 6, 132; 65th, 6, 132;

66th, 6, 133.

Battalions: 1st independent, 6, 19,

22, 35, 48; 1st sharpshooters, 6, 133; 2d,

6, 134; 2d (Hardeman's), 6, 24-5, 18, 134;

3d, 6, 48-9; 3d sharpshooters, 6, 134;

4th, 6, 135; 4th sharpshooters, 6, 135; 8,

135; 5th, 6, 135; 7th, 6, 135; 8th, 6, 135-6;

9th, 6, 136; 10th, 6, 136; 11th, 6, 137;

12th, 6, 137; 13th, 6, 138; 17th, 6, 138;

18th, 6, 139.

Legions: Cobb's, 6, 35, 45-6, 170, 199;



- Phillips', 6, 25, 47-8; Smith's, 6, 139; Thomas', 6, 140; Wright's, 6, 140.  
State troops, 6, 84-5, 87, 98, 280-1, 312-3, 321, 323, 333, 361, 363, 366-71, 375; at Honey Hill, 5, 354-7; list of regiments and battalions, 6, 140-2.  
Germans in Federal army, 10 Ark., 67, 95; 4, 159.  
Gettysburg, Pa., battle, July 1-3, 1863, 3, 403-19; 4, 171; 5, 263-76; 6, 225-35; 8, 199; 10 La., 258-69; 11 Tex., 215; 12, 241.  
Gholson, Samuel J., 7 Miss., 169, 189-91, 195, 209.  
Gibson, Randall L., 10 La., 158-9, 170, 182, 298.  
Gift, George W., 8, 255.  
Gilchrist, Major, 5, 226, 235.  
Giles, John R., 5, 53.  
Gillett's Farm, N. C., skirmish, April 13, 1862, 4, 41.  
Gilmor, Jeremy F., 4, 309.  
Gilmor, Harry, 2 Md., 48, 76, 126-7; 2 W. Va., 87, 90, 92.  
Giltner, Henry L., 9 Ky., 185, 191.  
Girardey, Victor J. B., 6, 420.  
Gist, States R., 5, 110, 293, 343, 397.  
Gladden, Adley H., 10 La., 170, 301.  
Glade Spring, Va., action, Dec. 15, 1864, 3, 533.  
Glasgow, Ky., Morgan's raid, Dec., 1862, 9 Ky., 167-8.  
Glasgow, Mo., taking of, Oct. 15, 1864, 9 Mo., 184.  
Glassell, William T., 5, 294; 12, 75.  
Glorieta Canon, N. Mex., battle, March 28, 1862, 11 Tex., 151.  
Glover, Thomas J., 5, 133-4.  
Godwin, Archibald C., 4, 215, 311.  
Goldsboro, N. C., action, Dec. 17, 1862, 4, 145; 5, 108.  
Goldsborough, William W., 2 Md., 58, 106-9.  
Goodner, John F., 8, 186.  
Gordon, B. Frank, 9 Mo., 177.  
— George W., 8, 60, 141, 157, 159, 309-10.  
— James B., 4, 197, 208-11, 250, 312.  
— John B., 1, 702-5; 3, 489-3, 451-2, 493, 506, 513, 530; 6, 218, 225, 290, 376-8; 12, 134, 138, 146.  
Gordon, Major, 4, 71.  
— Thomas M., 8, 24.  
— W. W., 12, 366.  
Gordonsville, Va., action, Dec. 24, 1864, 3, 514.  
Gorgas, Josiah, 1, 632-4.  
Govan, Daniel C., 10 Ark., 490.  
Governor Moore, C. S. ram, 12, 61.  
Grace, William, 8, 111.  
Gracie, Archibald, 7 Ala., 412.  
— Frank P., 8, 249.  
Graham, Hamilton C., 4, 8.  
Granbury, Hiram B., 11 Tex., 230.  
Granby, Mo., action, Sept. 23, 1862, 9 Mo., 191.  
Grand Gulf, Miss., operations at, 7 Miss., 80, 125.  
Grant, Ulysses S., 1, 523; 2, 431, 412-4, 418, 450, 455-6, 460-2, 465, 469-70, 471-3, 496, 548-52; 4, 229; 6, 299; 7 Miss., 122, 186; 10 La., 270; 10 Ark., 60; 12, 282, 291, 329.  
Gratnot, John R., 10 Ark., 281.  
Gravelly Run, Va., battle, March 30, 1863, 3, 531.  
Graves, Rice E., 8, 21; 9 Ky., 50, 190, 192, 3, 165, 167.  
Gray, Henry, 10 La., 302.  
Graybill, Tully, 6, 185.  
Grayson, John B., 9 Ky., 237; 11 F.  
Great Britain, second war with 1  
204.  
Greeley, Horace, 1, 518; on secession, 1  
Ala., 26-30.  
Green, Martin E., 9 Mo., 83, 92, 125, 229.  
— Thomas, 10 La., 147; 11 Tex., 14, 231.  
Green Cove Springs, Fla., action, Oct. 24, 1864, 11 Fla., 119.  
Green Spring, W. Va., action, Nov. 1, 1864, 2 W. Va., 102.  
Greenback raid, Mosby's, 2 W. Va., 140.  
Greenbrier River, W. Va., battle, Oct. 3, 1861, 2 W. Va., 43-4; 3, 169; 6, 71-2.  
Greene, Colton, 9 Mo., 21, 80.  
Greenland Gap, W. Va., action, Apr., 1863, 2 Md., 75, 112.  
Greenwood, Miss., action, 11 Tex., 195.  
Greer, Elkanah, 11 Tex., 221.  
Gregg, John, 7 Ala., 49; 8, 81, 91, 11 Tex., 234.  
Gregg, Maxcy, 3, 369; 5, 170-2, 339.  
Grenada, Miss., expedition to, Aug., 1863, 7 Miss., 161.  
Grenfell, St. Leger, 9 Ky., 105.  
Griffin, J. B., 5, 48.  
— T. M., 7 Miss., 27.  
— William H., 2 Md., 88.  
Griffith, John, 7 Miss., 208.  
— Richard, 7 Miss., 117, 256.  
Grimes, Bryan, 4, 65, 247, 314.  
Groveton, Va., action, Aug. 28, 1862, 1, 327; 4, 99.  
Guerrilla warfare in Missouri, 9 Mo., 186.  
Gum Swamp, N. C., action, May 22, 1862, 4, 155.  
Guntersville, Ala., burning of, 7 Ala., 42.  
Guyandotte, W. Va., action, Nov. 1861, 1861, 2 W. Va., 46.  
Guyton, C. S., 6, 222.  
Gwynn, Walter, 3, 126.  
Gwynne, A. D., 8, 159.  
Hagan, James, 7 Ala., 415.  
Hagood, Johnson, 5, 85-90, 100.  
Hall, Alexander, 8, 175.  
Halleck, Henry W., 7 Miss., 58; 9 Ky., 84.  
Hallum, William D., 8, 94.  
Hamilton, Alexander, 1, 38.  
— Joseph, 6, 265.  
Hampton, Frank, 5, 260.  
— Henry, 8, 120, 159.  
— Wade, 1, 697-9; 5, 26, 55, 122, 142, 156, 170-86, 327, 348, 359, 367.  
Hampton Roads, conference, 1, 341-2.  
— naval battle, March 8-9, 1862, 12, 6-34.  
Hampton, Va., burning of, 3, 149.  
Hancock, Md., action, Jan., 1862, 2 W. Va., 53-4; 3, 202.  
Hancock, Winfield S., 3, 523.  
Haner, George, 12, 129.  
Hanging Rock, W. Va., actions, 2 W. Va., 48, 51.  
Hannon, Moses W., 7 Ala., 416.  
Hanover C. H., Va., action, May 5, 1862, 3, 276; 4, 57.  
Hanson, Roger W., 8, 22; 9 Ky., 18, 19, 153-4, 165, 166-7, 239.





- Hardecastle, A. B., 7 Miss., 48.  
 Hardee, William J., 1, 670-3; 5, 309, 359; 6, 277, 347-50, 356, 369; 7 Miss., 55; 9 Ky., 140-1, 170; 10 Ark., 55, 57, 331.  
 Hardeman, W. P., biog., 11 Tex., 236.  
 Hardy, S. C., 10 Ark., 364.  
 Hargrove, T. L., 4, 198.  
 Harleston, F. H., 5, 236.  
 Harman, A. W., 2 W. Va., 75-6.  
 — E. H., 2 W. Va., 96.  
 Harmon, M. G., 2 W. Va., 9.  
 Harper, Kenton, 3, 64.  
 — W. L., 7 Miss., 49.  
 Harper's Ferry, Va., action, Oct. 16, 1861, 3, 185; action, May 28, 1862, 3, 248; action, July 4, 1864, 3, 480; Brown's insurrection, 3, 25; capture, Sept., 1862, 3, 338-40, 345, 5, 147-50; importance of, 2 Md., 50-2; occupation of, 1861, 3, 40; seizure of, 1861, 2 Md., 51; 3, 63.  
 Harrell, John M., 1, xii; 10, 166; "Arkansas," 10.  
 Harriet Lane, U. S. S., capture of, 11 Tex., 85, 94.  
 Harris, David B., 3, 600.  
 — Isham G., 1, 731; 3, 128; 8, 40, 149.  
 — Nathaniel H., 7 Miss., 221, 253.  
 — Skidmore, 6, 192, 221.  
 — William T., 6, 229.  
 Harrisburg, Miss., battle, July 14, 1864, 7 Miss., 200-2; 8, 238.  
 Harrison, Dabney C., 12, 172.  
 — George P., 6, 55, 104, 284, 421; 11 Fla., 61.  
 Harrison, Isaac F., 7 Miss., 135, 153.  
 — James E., 11 Tex., 237.  
 — J. J., 5, 105.  
 — Thomas, 11 Tex., 229.  
 Harrisonburg, Va., action, May 6, 1862, 2 Md., 77-80; 3, 254; March 5, 1865, 3, 541.  
 Hartford secession convention, 1, 187-8.  
 Hartstene, H. J., 12, 13.  
 Hartsville, Tenn., battle, Aug. 21, 1862, 9 Ky., 111; Dec. 7, 1862, 9 Ky., 151-5.  
 Hartville, Mo., action, Jan., 1863, 9 Mo., 113.  
 Harvie, J. B., 2 W. Va., 30.  
 — Lewis E., 3, 128.  
 Haskell, Charles T., 5, 229.  
 — John, 5, 61.  
 — William T., 5, 265.  
 Hatch, Lewis M., 5, 99.  
 Hatcher's Run, Va., battle, Oct. 27, 1864, 3, 525; Feb. 5, 1865, 3, 527.  
 Hatchie Bridge, Miss., battle, Oct. 5, 1862, 7 Miss., 92-4.  
 Hatteras Inlet, N. C., naval expedition, Aug., 1861, 4, 26; 12, 17.  
 Hatteras, U. S. S., sinking of, 11 Tex., 95, 96.  
 Hatton, Robert, 8, 310-2.  
 Hawaii, annexation of, 1, 245.  
 Hawes, James M., 9 Ky., 24, 48.  
 — Richard, 9 Ky., 126, 215, 721-2.  
 Hawe's Shop, Va., action, May 28, 1864, 3, 463.  
 Hawkins, A. T., 7 Miss., 173.  
 — T. T., 9 Ky., 69.  
 Hawk's Nest, W. Va., actions, Aug., 1861, 2 W. Va., 35; Sept. 2, 1861, 2 W. Va., 36.  
 Hawthorn, Alexander T., 10 Ark., 299, 402.  
 Hays, Harry T., 10 La., 207, 266-8, 204.  
 Hays, Upton, 9 Mo., 99, 100.  
 — Will., 12, 111.  
 Hébert, Louis, 10 La., 161-2, 174, 305.  
 — Paul O., 10 La., 307; 11 Tex., 49.  
 Heck, J. M., 2 W. Va., 14, 17, 20.  
 Helena, Ark., battle, July 4, 1863, 9 Mo., 134; 10 Ark., 175-92; operations about, 1862, 10 Ark., 154.  
 Helun, Ben Hardin, 9 Ky., 75, 169, 177-8, 242.  
 Helm, John L., 9 Ky., 199.  
 Helper, Hinton R., 1, 300.  
 Henderson, Robert J., 6, 381.  
 Herbert, Hilary A., 12, 192.  
 — James R., 2 Md., 88, 106-7, 109.  
 Hernando, Miss., action near, June 18, 1863, 7 Miss., 164.  
 Herndon, F. J., 6, 294.  
 Hero, Andrew, Jr., 10 La., 279.  
 Heth, Henry, 2 W. Va., 56, 59; 3, 601.  
 Hewett, James W., 9 Ky., 31, 178.  
 Hewitt, Fayette, 9 Ky., 210.  
 Heyward, William C., 5, 32.  
 Hicks, Thomas H., 2 Md., 13, 16, 92.  
 Higginbotham, John C., 2 W. Va., 112.  
 Higgins, Edward, 10 La., 68, 43, 121, 308.  
 Hill, Ambrose P., 1, 679-81; 3, 71, 73, 255, 386, 395, 403, 435, 460, 523, 531; 12, 125.  
 Hill, Benjamin J., 8, 39, 312-3.  
 — Benjamin H., 1, 453; 6, 5.  
 — Daniel H., 1, 681-3; 3, 133, 126, 142, 309; 4, 17, 30, 152.  
 Hill, D. H., Jr., 1, ix; "North Carolina," 4.  
 Hillyer, George, 6, 230.  
 Hindman, Thomas C., 6, 298; 9 Mo., 96, 102, 107-10; 10 Ark., 162-8, 165, 10, 123, 125, 132-5, 146, 50, 292, 403.  
 Hoadley, F. W., 8, 87.  
 Hobson, Richmond P., 12, 306.  
 Hodge, George B., 7 Miss., 208; 9 Ky., 32, 68, 244.  
 Hodges, J. J., 10 La., 275.  
 Hoffman, John S., 2 W. Va., 114.  
 Hogg, Joseph L., 11 Tex., 267.  
 Hoke, Robert F., 4, 136, 169, 247-8, 276, 283, 317.  
 Hollins, George N., 2 Md., 156; 12, 13, 15, 56.  
 Holloway, Edmunds B., 9 Mo., 43.  
 Holly Springs, Miss., actions, Dec., 1862, 7 Miss., 98; Sept., 1863, 7 Miss., 165.  
 Holman, D. W., 8, 224.  
 Holmes, Theophilus H., 1, 673-4; 7 Miss., 100; 9 Mo., 102; 10 Ark., 119-20, 177-80.  
 Holmes, William R., 6, 191.  
 Holtzelaw, James T., 7 Ala., 117.  
 Honey Hill, S. C., battle, Nov. 30, 1861, 5, 354-7; 6, 267.  
 Honey Springs, Ind. T., battle, July, 1863, 10 Ark., 200.  
 Hood, Arthur, 6, 99.  
 — John B., 1, 657-60; 3, 123, 352; 6, 322, 347; 8, 42, 144, 145-51; 9 Ky., 191; 10 La., 201, 11 Tex., 143; 12, 186.  
 Hooker, Charles E., 1, xi; 7 Miss., 149, "Mississippi," 7.  
 Hooker, Joseph, 3, 376, 400; 8, 121; 12, 119.  
 Hoover's Gap, Tenn., battle, June, 1863, 6, 211.  
 Hopkins, Charles F., 11 Fla., 161.  
 Horse Landing, Fla., action, May, 1864, 11 Fla., 24.



- Horton, O. R., 5, 27.  
 Hotchkiss, Jed., 1, viii, 3, 51, 156, 227, 233, 250, 253, 387, 500, 504, 512; "Virginia," 3.  
 Housatonic, U. S. sloop, destruction, Feb. 17, 1864, 5, 300.  
 Houston, Samuel, 11 Tex., 7, 10, 11, 13, 15, 17, 18, 28-34.  
 Howard, John K., 8, 186.  
 — McHenry, 2 Md., 85.  
 Huger, Arthur M., 5, 32.  
 — Benjamin, 2 Md., 23; 3, 132, 147; 5, 403.  
 Huger, Thomas, 12, 60.  
 Hughes' Ferry, Ark., action, June, 1862, 10 Ark., 114.  
 Hughes, George W., 2 Md., 19.  
 — John T., 9 Mo., 97-8.  
 — Simon P., 10 Ark., 322.  
 Hughs, John M., 8, 211.  
 Humansville, Mo., action, Oct., 1863, 9 Mo., 143.  
 Humboldt, Tenn., action, Dec., 1862, 8, 230.  
 Humes, W. Y. C., 8, 175, 313-4.  
 Humphreys, Benjamin G., 7 Miss., 175, 222, 226, 231, 259.  
 Humphries, N. W., 12, 131.  
 Hunt, A. A., 6, 98-9.  
 — I. F., 5, 318-9.  
 — J. P., 11 Fla., 167.  
 — Thomas H., 9 Ky., 49, 76, 154, 166, 170.  
 Hunter, David, 6, 91-2.  
 — Robert M. T., 1, 551-9, 598-9; 3, 141.  
 — W. W., 6, 283, 307.  
 Huntersville, W. Va., action, Jan. 8, 1862, 2 W. Va., 47.  
 Hunton, Eppa, 3, 187, 556, 603.  
 Huntsville, Ala., Federal occupation, 7 Ala., 40.  
 Hurricane Bridge, W. Va., action, March, 1863, 2 W. Va., 78.  
 Hurt, C. C., 8, 158.  
 Hutchins, A. J., 6, 160.  
 Imboden, George W., 2 W. Va., 71, 72, 74-7.  
 Imboden, John D., 2 W. Va., 62, 82, 97-8; 3, 61, 457, 608.  
 Independence, Mo., action, Aug., 1862, 9 Mo., 98; 10 Ark., 130; Oct., 1864, 9 Mo., 189.  
 Indian Territory, operations in, 10 Ark., 117-8, 121, 129, 198, 203.  
 Indian troops, 10 Ark., 86-8, 95, 98; at Honey Springs, 10 Ark., 201; at Newtonia, 10 Ark., 132; at Pea Ridge, 10 Ark., 86; organization, Dec. 31, 1864, 10 Ark., 278.  
 Indiana and Ohio, Morgan's raid in, July, 1863, 9 Ky., 172-3.  
 Indianola, U. S. ironclad, capture of, Feb. 24, 1863, 10 La., 108; 11 Tex., 195.  
 Industrial development of the South, 12, 327-33.  
 Ingraham, Duncan N., 12, 8, 67.  
 Irwin, Eugene, 9 Mo., 124.  
 Isaac Smith, U. S. gunboat, capture of, Jan. 30, 1863, 5, 191-2.  
 Island No. 10, Miss. river, operations, March, 1862, 8, 30; 10 Ark., 235; naval forces at, 12, 56.  
 Iuka, Miss., battle, Sept. 19, 1862, 7 Miss., 85; 9 Mo., 89; 11 Tex., 161.  
 Iverson, Alfred, 4, 179, 341, 424.  
 Ivy Creek, Ky., action, Nov., 1861, 9 Ky., 45.  
 Jackman, Sidney D., 9 Mo., 172.  
 Jackson, Alfred E., 8, 315-6.  
 — Alphonse, 12, 12.  
 — Andrew, 1, 183, 195; 7 Ala., 11; 8 Mo., 179.  
 — Charles, 12, 179.  
 — Claiborne F., 1, 735; 9 Mo., 7, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 302, 303, 304, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 393, 394, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 422, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 474, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 483, 484, 485, 486, 487, 488, 489, 490, 491, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 530, 531, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 556, 557, 558, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 565, 566, 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 589, 590, 591, 592, 593, 594, 595, 596, 597, 598, 599, 600, 601, 602, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615, 616, 617, 618, 619, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 630, 631, 632, 633, 634, 635, 636, 637, 638, 639, 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 645, 646, 647, 648, 649, 650, 651, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 657, 658, 659, 660, 661, 662, 663, 664, 665, 666, 667, 668, 669, 670, 671, 672, 673, 674, 675, 676, 677, 678, 679, 680, 681, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 687, 688, 689, 690, 691, 692, 693, 694, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 700, 701, 702, 703, 704, 705, 706, 707, 708, 709, 710, 711, 712, 713, 714, 715, 716, 717, 718, 719, 720, 721, 722, 723, 724, 725, 726, 727, 728, 729, 730, 731, 732, 733, 734, 735, 736, 737, 738, 739, 740, 741, 742, 743, 744, 745, 746, 747, 748, 749, 750, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 839, 840, 841, 842, 843, 844, 845, 846, 847, 848, 849, 850, 851, 852, 853, 854, 855, 856, 857, 858, 859, 860, 861, 862, 863, 864, 865, 866, 867, 868, 869, 870, 871, 872, 873, 874, 875, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880, 881, 882, 883, 884, 885, 886, 887, 888, 889, 890, 891, 892, 893, 894, 895, 896, 897, 898, 899, 900, 901, 902, 903, 904, 905, 906, 907, 908, 909, 910, 911, 912, 913, 914, 915, 916, 917, 918, 919, 920, 921, 922, 923, 924, 925, 926, 927, 928, 929, 930, 931, 932, 933, 934, 935, 936, 937, 938, 939, 940, 941, 942, 943, 944, 945, 946, 947, 948, 949, 950, 951, 952, 953, 954, 955, 956, 957, 958, 959, 960, 961, 962, 963, 964, 965, 966, 967, 968, 969, 970, 971, 972, 973, 974, 975, 976, 977, 978, 979, 980, 981, 982, 983, 984, 985, 986, 987, 988, 989, 990, 991, 992, 993, 994, 995, 996, 997, 998, 999, 1000.  
 — Henry K., 3, 167; 6, 11, 14, 19, 62, 7, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 302, 303, 304, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 393, 394, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 422, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 474, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 483, 484, 485, 486, 487, 488, 489, 490, 491, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 530, 531, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 556, 557, 558, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 565, 566, 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 589, 590, 591, 592, 593, 594, 595, 596, 597, 598, 599, 600, 601, 602, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615, 616, 617, 618, 619, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 630, 631, 632, 633, 634, 635, 636, 637, 638, 639, 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 645, 646, 647, 648, 649, 650, 651, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 657, 658, 659, 660, 661, 662, 663, 664, 665, 666, 667, 668, 669, 670, 671, 672, 673, 674, 675, 676, 677, 678, 679, 680, 681, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 687, 688, 689, 690, 691, 692, 693, 694, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 700, 701, 702, 703, 704, 705, 706, 707, 708, 709, 710, 711, 712, 713, 714, 715, 716, 717, 718, 719, 720, 721, 722, 723, 724, 725, 726, 727, 728, 729, 730, 731, 732, 733, 734, 735, 736, 737, 738, 739, 740, 741, 742, 743, 744, 745, 746, 747, 748, 749, 750, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 839, 840, 841, 842, 843, 844, 845, 846, 847, 848, 849, 850, 851, 852, 853, 854, 855, 856, 857, 858, 859, 860, 861, 862, 863, 864, 865, 866, 867, 868, 869, 870, 871, 872, 873, 874, 875, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880, 881, 882, 883, 884, 885, 886, 887, 888, 889, 890, 891, 892, 893, 894, 895, 896, 897, 898, 899, 900, 901, 902, 903, 904, 905, 906, 907, 908, 909, 910, 911, 912, 913, 914, 915, 916, 917, 918, 919, 920, 921, 922, 923, 924, 925, 926, 927, 928, 929, 930, 931, 932, 933, 934, 935, 936, 937, 938, 939, 940, 941, 942, 943, 944, 945, 946, 947, 948, 949, 950, 951, 952, 953, 954, 955, 956, 957, 958, 959, 960, 961, 962, 963, 964, 965, 966, 967, 968, 969, 970, 971, 972, 973, 974, 975, 976, 977, 978, 979, 980, 981, 982, 983, 984, 985, 986, 987, 988, 989, 990, 991, 992, 993, 994, 995, 996, 997, 998, 999, 1000.  
 — Benjamin, 2 Md., 23; 3, 132, 147; 5, 403.  
 Huger, Thomas, 12, 60.  
 Hughes' Ferry, Ark., action, June, 1862, 10 Ark., 114.  
 Hughes, George W., 2 Md., 19.  
 — John T., 9 Mo., 97-8.  
 — Simon P., 10 Ark., 322.  
 Hughs, John M., 8, 211.  
 Humansville, Mo., action, Oct., 1863, 9 Mo., 143.  
 Humboldt, Tenn., action, Dec., 1862, 8, 230.  
 Humes, W. Y. C., 8, 175, 313-4.  
 Humphreys, Benjamin G., 7 Miss., 175, 222, 226, 231, 259.  
 Humphries, N. W., 12, 131.  
 Hunt, A. A., 6, 98-9.  
 — I. F., 5, 318-9.  
 — J. P., 11 Fla., 167.  
 — Thomas H., 9 Ky., 49, 76, 154, 166, 170.  
 Hunter, David, 6, 91-2.  
 — Robert M. T., 1, 551-9, 598-9; 3, 141.  
 — W. W., 6, 283, 307.  
 Huntersville, W. Va., action, Jan. 8, 1862, 2 W. Va., 47.  
 Hunton, Eppa, 3, 187, 556, 603.  
 Huntsville, Ala., Federal occupation, 7 Ala., 40.  
 Hurricane Bridge, W. Va., action, March, 1863, 2 W. Va., 78.  
 Hurt, C. C., 8, 158.  
 Hutchins, A. J., 6, 160.  
 Imboden, George W., 2 W. Va., 71, 72, 74-7.  
 Imboden, John D., 2 W. Va., 62, 82, 97-8; 3, 61, 457, 608.  
 Independence, Mo., action, Aug., 1862, 9 Mo., 98; 10 Ark., 130; Oct., 1864, 9 Mo., 189.  
 Indian Territory, operations in, 10 Ark., 117-8, 121, 129, 198, 203.  
 Indian troops, 10 Ark., 86-8, 95, 98; at Honey Springs, 10 Ark., 201; at Newtonia, 10 Ark., 132; at Pea Ridge, 10 Ark., 86; organization, Dec. 31, 1864, 10 Ark., 278.  
 Indiana and Ohio, Morgan's raid in, July, 1863, 9 Ky., 172-3.  
 Indianola, U. S. ironclad, capture of, Feb. 24, 1863, 10 La., 108; 11 Tex., 195.



- Johnson, Thomas C., 6, 160, 170.  
 Johnsonville, Tenn., action, Nov. 3, 1864, 7 Miss., 207; 8, 250-1.  
 Johnston, Albert Sidney, 1, 642-9; 7 Miss., 32; 8, 35; 9 Ky., 36-7, 40, 46, 55, 63, 65-6, 70; 10 La., 173; 10 Ark., 331; 11 Tex., 142; correspondence with President Davis, 1862, 9 Ky., 216-24; epitaph, 9 Ky., 224.  
 Johnston, George D., 7 Ala., 419.  
 — Joseph E., 1, 614-9; 2 Md., 58; 3, 70, 81; 4, 282; 5, 56, 309-10, 322, 330, 366-7; 6, 97, 99, 130-42, 279, 296, 299; 7, 155; 8, 125, 134, 172; 9 Ky., 169-70; 10 La., 113; surrender of, 4, 285.  
 Johnston, J. Stoddard, 1, xii; 3, 535; 9 Ky., 166; "Kentucky," 9.  
 Johnson, Robert A., 9 Ky., 24, 73.  
 — Robert D., 4, 257, 320.  
 — William Preston, 7 Miss., 59; 9 Ky., 31.  
 Jonesboro, Ga., battle, Aug. 31-Sept. 1, 1864, 5, 333-40; 6, 345-51; 8, 140.  
 Jones, Catesby Apr. 12, 12, 32, 39, 45, 48.  
 — David R., 5, 406.  
 — Egbert L., 7 Ala., 13.  
 — James, 5, 39.  
 — James K., 10 Ark., 334.  
 — John A., 6, 228.  
 — John M., 3, 612.  
 — John R., 3, 614.  
 — J. Pembroke, 12, 78, 85.  
 — J. William, "The Morale of the Confederate Armies," 1, vi; 12, 119-93.  
 Jones, Samuel, 2 W. Va., 77, 82; 3, 615; 5, 301.  
 Jones, William E., 2 W. Va., 72, 74-7, 99; 3, 182, 616.  
 Jordan, Thomas, 3, 618.  
 Joyner, William H., 8, 175.  
 Kanawha Valley, W. Va., operations, 1861, 2 W. Va., 25-31; 3, 57; Floyd's expedition, 1861, 2 W. Va., 35-9; Loring's campaign, 1862, 2 W. Va., 64-9.  
 Kane, George P., 2 Md., 21-2, 95.  
 Kansas, anti-slavery struggle in, 9 Mo., 5.  
 Kansas-Nebraska agitation, 1, 286.  
 Kean, Robert G. H., 1, 629.  
 Keeble, H. R., 8, 208, 209, 214.  
 Keitt, Lawrence M., 5, 217, 320.  
 Keller, Andrew J., 8, 159, 196.  
 Kelley, Benjamin F., 2 W. Va., 15, 48, 49, 79, 103.  
 Kelley, D. C., 8, 211, 247.  
 Kelly, John H., 7 Ala., 49, 421; 10 Ark., 304.  
 Kelly's Ford, Va., battle, Aug. 21, 1863, 3, 316-7.  
 Kellysville, Va., battle, March 17, 1863, 3, 375.  
 Kelso, F. M., 8, 212.  
 Kelsoe, George W., 8, 53.  
 Kemper, James L., 3, 620.  
 Kenan, Daniel L., 11 Fla., 186.  
 — T. S., 4, 194.  
 Kenesaw Mountain, Ga., actions, June, 1864, 6, 315-20; 8, 131.  
 Kenly, John R., 2 Md., 60-1, 72-3, 99.  
 Kennedy, John D., 5, 408.  
 Kennon, Beverly, 12, 61.  
 Kentucky, admission to Confederacy, 9 Ky., 52; arrest of Southern leaders, 9 Ky., 32; campaign of 1862, 9 Ky., 77-81; 8, 45; 9 Ky., 77-82, 89-90, 114; early history, 9 Ky., 3; Federal enlistments, 9 Ky., 25; Federal occupation, 9 Ky., 31; formation of State, 1, 124; military government in, 9 Ky., 168, 149-50; Morgan's raid, 1864, 9 Ky., 199; neutrality of, 9 Ky., 20, 22-5, 27-30; 10 Ark., 58; provisional government, 9 Ky., 212-5; representatives and senators in C. S. Congress, 9 Ky., 214; secession convention, 9 Ky., 52.  
 Kentucky troops: Alienization of, 9 Ky., 198; early enlistments, 1861, 9 Ky., 25, 33; generals, 9 Ky., 207; list of regiments, battalions, etc., 9 Ky., 206; physique and morale, 9 Ky., 208-11; State guard, 9 Ky., 35.  
 At Atlanta, 9 Ky., 191; at Baton Rouge, 9 Ky., 75-7; at Chickamauga, 9 Ky., 174-81; at Dallas, 9 Ky., 193; with Forrest, 8, 231, 9 Ky., 109; at Fort Donelson, 9 Ky., 58; at Harts-ville, 9 Ky., 154; in A. S. Johnston's army, 9 Ky., 64; at Jonesboro, 9 Ky., 194; at Kennesaw Mountain, 9 Ky., 193; in Mississippi, 1863, 9 Ky., 171; at Murfreesboro, 9 Ky., 153; at New Hope Church, 9 Ky., 193; with President Davis, 9 Ky., 191; at Resaca, 9 Ky., 193; at Rocky Face Gap, 9 Ky., 193; at Shiloh, 9 Ky., 66-7; at Utoy Creek, 9 Ky., 194; at Vicksburg, 1862, 9 Ky., 75.  
 Artillery: Arnett's, 9 Ky., 152; Byrne's, 9 Ky., 43, 73, 160, 206; Cobb's, 9 Ky., 50, 73, 161, 178-9; Corbett's, 9 Ky., 203; Cumberland, 9 Ky., 203; Graves', 9 Ky., 50, 58, 61, 203; Lyon's, 9 Ky., 49-50, 203.  
 Cavalry: Giltner's, 9 Ky., 185; Orphan, 9 Ky., 193-8; Morgan's, 9 Ky., 142, 185, 209; Williams', 9 Ky., 197; Cosby's, 9 Ky., 185.  
 Regiments: 1st, 9 Ky., 152, 197, 204; 2d, 9 Ky., 96, 99-105, 152, 197; 3d, 9 Ky., 204; 4th, 9 Ky., 152, 204; 5th, 9 Ky., 152, 204; 6th, 9 Ky., 152, 204; 7th, 9 Ky., 152, 204; 8th, 9 Ky., 152, 204; 9th, 9 Ky., 152, 197, 204; 10th, 9 Ky., 152, 204; 11th, 9 Ky., 152, 205; 12th, 9 Ky., 205; 13th, 9 Ky., 152, 204; Woodward's, 9 Ky., 206.  
 Battalions, etc.: 1st, 9 Ky., 205; 1st special, 9 Ky., 205; 2d, 9 Ky., 152, 205; 2d special, 9 Ky., 205; 3d special, 9 Ky., 206; May's, 9 Ky., 205; 1st mounted rifles, 9 Ky., 205; 2d mounted rifles, 9 Ky., 152, 205; 3d mounted rifles, 9 Ky., 152, 205; Boland's, 9 Ky., 206; Buckner Guards, 9 Ky., 206; Fields', 9 Ky., 206; Jenkins', 9 Ky., 206; Jesse's, 9 Ky., 206; King's, 9 Ky., 206; Morehead's, 9 Ky., 206; Murphy's, 9 Ky., 206; Patton's, 9 Ky., 206; Quirk's, 9 Ky., 206; Victor's, 9 Ky., 206; Woodward's, 9 Ky., 206.  
 Infantry: Brigades—Hawes', 9 Ky., 74; Helm's, 9 Ky., 75; The "Orphan," 9 Ky., 31, 66, 68-70, 71, 73, 153, 161, 170, 177, 183, 193-8; Preston's, 9 Ky., 71.  
 Regiments: 1st, 9 Ky., 202; 2d, 9 Ky., 48, 58, 59, 61, 155, 177, 202; 3d, 9 Ky., 48, 67, 73, 153, 198, 202; 4th, 9 Ky., 18, 67, 71-2, 73, 160, 202; 5th, 9 Ky., 45, 72, 152, 175, 190, 183, 203; 6th, 9 Ky., 49, 67, 73, 177, 203; 7th, 9 Ky., 73, 153, 198, 206; 8th,



- 9 Ky., 50, 58-62, 153, 198, 203; 9th, 9 Ky., 49, 77, 169-1, 177, 203; 11th, 9 Ky., 205.  
 Battalions: Crews', 9 Ky., 68; Duncan's, 9 Ky., 33-4; Pope's, 9 Ky., 33-4; Shawhan's, 9 Ky., 45.  
 Kerntown, Va., battles, March 23, 1862, 3, 218-22; July, 1864, 3, 186; 9 Ky., 189.  
 Kershaw, Joseph B., 3, 506; 5, 44, 67, 74, 221, 315, 409.  
 Key, David M., 8, 85.  
 Keys, Wade, 1, 602-3.  
 Kilpatrick and Dahlgren's raid, March, 1864, 3, 430; 4, 226.  
 Kilpatrick, F. W., 5, 311.  
 King, Floyd, 2 W. Va., 93.  
 — Porter, 12, 124.  
 — Thomas B., 6, 55.  
 Kingsport, Tenn., action, Dec. 13, 1864, 3, 533.  
 Kinston, N. C., action, Dec. 14, 1862, 4, 144; 5, 107-10; March 8, 1865, 4, 284.  
 Kirkland, Richard, 12, 142.  
 — W. W., 4, 321.  
 Kirk's raids, N. C., 1864-5, 4, 280.  
 Knoxville, Tenn., assault, Nov. 29, 1863, 7 Miss., 174, 265; 8, 123.  
 Kolb's Farm, Ga., battle, June 22, 1864, 6, 317.  
 Ku Klux Klan, 12, 310.  
 La Fourche, La., expedition, 1862, 10 La., 76.  
 Labadieville, La., action, Oct. 27, 1862, 10 La., 78.  
 Lacey's Spring, action, Dec. 21, 1864, 3, 514.  
 Lady, J. B., 2 W. Va., 83.  
 Lake Chicot, Ark., actions near, May, 1864, 9 Mo., 170; 10 Ark., 271-2.  
 Lake City, Fla., action, Feb., 1864, 11 Fla., 57.  
 Lamar, C. A. L., 6, 383.  
 — John B., 6, 186.  
 — L. Q. C., 7 Miss., 115.  
 — Lucius M., 6, 173.  
 — T. G., 5, 86.  
 — Thompson B., 11 Fla., 159.  
 Lamb, John C., 4, 142, 247.  
 — Jonathan J., 8, 130.  
 — William, 4, 273.  
 Lamine River, Mo., action (Shelby's raid), 9 Mo., 144.  
 Lane, A. J., 6, 169.  
 — James H., 4, 135, 162, 323.  
 — Walter P., 11 Tex., 210.  
 Lang, David, 11 Fla., 150.  
 Langhorne, Maurice, 9 Mo., 171.  
 Laredo, Tex., action, 11 Tex., 123.  
 Latrobe, Henry B., 2 Md., 47.  
 Laurel Hill, W. Va., operations, July, 1861, 2 W. Va., 20; 6, 65-9; retreat from, 3, 54.  
 Law, Evander M., 7 Ala., 422.  
 Lawrence, Kan., capture of, 9 Mo., 188.  
 Lawton, Alexander R., 1, 618-9; 6, 7-8, 15, 56-7, 85, 165, 171, 180, 431.  
 Lawton, Edward P., 6, 196.  
 — W. J., 6, 99.  
 Leadbetter, Danville, 7 Ala., 424.  
 Leadsville, W. Va., skirmish, July 12, 1861, 2 W. Va., 22.  
 Lebanon, Ky., action, July 12, 1862, 9 Ky., 101.  
 Ledbetter, D. A., 5, 133.  
 Lee, C. C., 4, 84.  
 Lee, Edmund G., 3, 621.  
 — Fitzhugh, 2 W. Va., 88-9; 3, 151, 162, 365, 375, 416, 528, 555, 622.  
 Lee, G. W., 6, 18.  
 — Philip, 9 Ky., 31.  
 — Robert E., 1, 633-11; 2 W. Va., 40; 2 Md., 116, 120; 3, 27, 32, 60, 120, 143, 155, 165, 212, 225, 280, 281, 284, 307, 319, 325, 326, 351, 357, 390, 393, 395, 401, 408-9, 419, 421, 427, 431-2, 439-40, 451-2, 464, 464, 528, 531-2, 546, 518-51; 5, 36, 110, 221, 270; 7, 358, 366; 6, 57-63, 824, 277, 101, 270; 12, 135-8, 115, 260, 282; later order, 3, 552; final report, 553.  
 Lee, Stephen D., 1, vii, 688-91; 3, 20, 356; 5, 48, 132; 6, 335; 7 Miss., 174, 7, 165, 195, 209; 9 Ky., 191, 12, 191.  
 "The South Since the War," 12, 192.  
 Lee, W. H. F., 2 W. Va., 40, 42; 3, 155, 27, 625.  
 Lee's Mills, Va., battle, April 16, 1864, 4, 46.  
 Leesburg, Va., battle, Oct. 21, 1861, 3, 188; 8 Miss., 21-9.  
 Leetown, W. Va., action, July 3, 1864, 2 Md., 124; 3, 480.  
 Leet's Tanyard, Ga., action, March 1, 1864, 6, 298.  
 Leigh, Richard W., 7 Miss., 90-1.  
 Letcher, John, 1, 734; 2 W. Va., 11; 3, 23, 38, 122.  
 Leventhorpe, Collett, 4, 177.  
 Lewinsville, Va., action, Sept. 11, 1861, 3, 181; expedition, Sept., 1861, 3, 181.  
 Lewis, Joseph H., 9 Ky., 49, 177, 197, 201.  
 — William G., 323.  
 Lewisburg, W. Va., actions, May 1, 1862, 2 W. Va., 60; May 27, 1862, 2 W. Va., 79.  
 Lexington, Mo., capture of, Sept., 1861, 9 Mo., 64; 10 Ark., 64; action near, Oct., 1864, 9 Mo., 185.  
 Lexington, Tenn., action, Dec., 1862, 8, 219.  
 Liberty, Miss., action, Nov., 1864, 7 Miss., 208.  
 Liddell, P. F., 7 Miss., 119.  
 — St. John R., 10 La., 310.  
 Lillard, John M., 8, 98.  
 Lilley, R. D., 3, 627.  
 Limestone Bridge, Tenn., action, 1864, 4, 208.  
 Lincoln, Abraham, 1, 299, 312, 390-1, 397, 3, 400; 5, 166, 213; 9 Ky., 39, 55; 10 Miss., 19, 12; 12, 266, 258, 263, 281, 282; action of, effect upon the South, 1, 1; inauguration of, 1, 372; renunciation of, 1, 525.  
 Little, F. H., 6, 192.  
 — Henry, 2 Md., 169; 9 Mo., 20; 10 Ark., 77.  
 Little, Montgomery, 8, 225.  
 Little Blue River, Mo., skirmish, 1861, 9 Mo., 43; action, Oct. 21, 1864, 9 Mo., 185.  
 Little Edisto Island, S. C., action, March 29, 1862, 5, 40.  
 Little Missouri River, Ark., actions on, April, 1863, 10 Ark., 241.  
 Little Osage River (see Mine Creek).  
 Little River, Tenn., battle, 8, 124.  
 Little Rock & Devall's R. R., 1864, 9 Mo., 176-7.  
 Shelby's raid, Aug., 1863, 9 Mo., 176-7.





- Little Rock, Ark., action near, Sept. 6, 1862, 10 Ark., 216-9; Federal campaign against, 9 Mo., 136-9; 10 Ark., 207-22; seizure of arsenal, 10 Ark., 4-10; Steele's expedition from, April, 1864, 10 Ark., 237-69.
- Liverpool Landing, Miss., operations, May, 1863, 7 Miss., 163.
- Lockett, Samuel H., 7 Miss., 145, 150.
- Lockridge's Mill, Tenn., action, May, 1862, 8, 43.
- Logan, Thomas M., 5, 411.
- Logan's Cross-Roads (see Fishing Creek).
- Logwood, Thomas H., 8, 231.
- Lomax, Lunsford L., 2 W. Va., 75-6; 3, 512, 628.
- Lomax, Tennent, 7 Ala., 14, 39.
- London, Ky., action, Aug. 17, 1862, 9 Ky., 124.
- Lone Jack, Mo., action, Aug. 16, 1862, 9 Mo., 98; 10 Ark., 131.
- Long, A. J., 8, 141.
- Armistead L., 3, 630; 2 W. Va., 32; 3, 153, 396, 630.
- Longstreet, James, 1, 660-3; 3, 151, 297, 328, 395, 407-11, 416, 425, 430-41; 4, 151; 5, 317; 6, 251, 263, 290.
- Lookout Mountain, Tenn., battle, Nov. 24, 1863; 7 Miss., 176; 8, 114.
- Loomis, J. Q., 8, 61.
- Looney, Robert F., 8, 38.
- Loring, A., 2 W. Va., 6.
- William W., 2 W. Va., 31-2, 67; 3, 61, 152, 200; 7 Miss., 123, 145; 11 Fla., 203.
- Losses in particular engagements, 12, 499-512.
- Lost order, the, 3, 341; 4, 107.
- Louisiana, admission of State to U. S., 1, 173; Butler's expeditions, 1862, 10 La., 62; military equipment, 1860, 10 La., 13; occupation of U. S. posts, 10 La., 20; political campaign, 1860, 10 La., 4; secession of, 10 La., 23; legislature, 1860, 10 La., 11; territory, acquisition of, 1, 128-59.
- Louisiana, C. S. ironclad, 10 La., 45; 12, 55, 58, 60-1.
- Louisiana troops: Home defense troops, 10 La., 22; chaplains, 10 La., 285; total enrollment, 10 La., 284.
- At Appomattox, 10 La., 289; in Atlanta campaign, 10 La., 190-5; at Belmont, 10 La., 162; at Bull Run, 10 La., 2-5; in the Carolina campaign, 10 La., 202; at Cedar Run, 10 La., 239; at Chancellorsville, 10 La., 219; at Chickamauga, 10 La., 181-8; at Chickasaw Bayou, 7 Miss., 103; 10 La., 121; at Corinth, 10 La., 172, 175; at Drewry's Bluff, 10 La., 274; in Early's campaigns, 10 La., 275; at Elkhorn Tavern, 10 La., 162; at Fort Gregg, 10 La., 278; at Fort Steadman, 10 La., 278; at Franklin, 10 La., 197; at Fredericksburg, 10 La., 245; at Gettysburg, 10 La., 258; at Hatcher's Run, 10 La., 277; at Island No. 10, 10 La., 63; at Iuka, 10 La., 174; at Jonesboro, 10 La., 194; at Lewinsville, 10 La., 210; at Manassas (First), 10 La., 204; at Manassas (Second), 10 La., 222; at Mansfield, 10 La., 196-10; at Mine Run and Bristoe, 10 La., 208; at Mobile, 1865, 10 La., 157-9; at Murfrees-
- boro, 10 La., 179; at New Hope Church, 10 La., 191; at New Madrid, 8, 28; at Nashville, 10 La., 193-200; in the Peninsula campaign, 10 La., 211; at Pensacola, 10 La., 29; at Perryville, 10 La., 176-8; at Petersburg, 10 La., 276; at Pleasant Hill, 10 La., 145; at Port Hudson, 10 La., 120; at Rappahannock Bridge, 10 La., 265; at Resaca, 10 La., 191; at Richmond, Ky., 10 La., 176; at Richmond, Va., 1861, 10 La., 33; at the Seven Days' battles, 10 La., 224-4; at Sharpsburg, 10 La., 257; in the Shenandoah Valley, 10 La., 211-9; at Shepherdstown, 10 La., 241; at Shiloh, 10 La., 161; at Vicksburg, 10 La., 64, 121-5; on the Virginia Peninsula, 10 La., 31; at the Wilderness, 10 La., 272; at Wilson's Creek, 10 La., 161; at Winchester, 10 La., 255.
- Artillery: 1st reg., 10 La., 125; 8th battalion, 10 La., 124-5; Bridges' battery, 10 La., 202; Donaldsonville cannoners, 10 La., 211-2, 220, 227-8, 242, 246, 253, 263, 264, 276; Faries' battery, 10 La., 91, 91, 129; Edgar's, 10 La., 127; Fenner's, 10 La., 110, 190, 192, 196; Guard, 10 La., 227-8, 230, 236, 242, 244, 246, 252, 253, 255, 263, 265, 267, 283; Howitzer battery, 10 La., 187; Le Gardeur's, 10 La., 202; Madison, 10 La., 188, 227-8, 242, 246-7, 253, 262-3, 276; Orleans, 10 La., 15, 21; Pointe Coupée, 10 La., 110, 162, 190, 195, 196, 200; Ralston's, 10 La., 77; St. Mary's cannoners, 10 La., 43-4, 91, 136, 152; Semmes' battery, 10 La., 67, 77, 91; Vaughn's, 10 La., 190; Washington artillery, 3, 181, 183; 10 La., 20, 161, 166, 168-70, 182, 184-5, 187, 195-6, 198, 205-10, 211, 227, 235, 240, 246, 249-50, 253, 261-4, 274, 276, 278, 280; Watson battery, 10 La., 162.
- Cavalry: 1st reg., 10 La., 176, 187; 2d reg., 10 La., 78, 91, 102, 136, 137, 141; Chasseurs d'Orleans, 10 La., 21; Dreux's battalion, 10 La., 29, 31, 188; Harrison's, 10 La., 101.
- Infantry: Brigades—1st, A. N. V., 10 La., 210, 214-21, 225-6, 230, 232, 237-40, 245, 249, 253, 255-6, 258-60, 264, 265, 268, 272-3, 275; 2d, A. N. V., 10 La., 225-6, 230, 232-5, 237-40, 245, 251, 253, 255-6, 268, 272-3, 275; Adams', 10 La., 177, 179, 184-7; Gibson's, 10 La., 157-9, 196, 199, 199, 193-5, 196, 197, 199; Mouton's, 10 La., 127, 173; Polignac's, 10 La., 120; Scott's, 10 La., 190, 192, 197; Taylor's, 10 La., 210, 211-21; York's, 10 La., 275-82.
- Regiments: 1st, 10 La., 16, 21, 211, 233; 1st (regulars), 10 La., 21, 161, 211, 236; 3d, 10 La., 122-3, 161, 174-5; 4th, 10 La., 67, 161, 190, 193; 5th, 10 La., 211, 232; 7th, 10 La., 207, 218; 8th, 10 La., 209; 10th, 10 La., 31, 211, 222, 256; 11th, 10 La., 162, 164; 12th, 10 La., 110, 162, 164, 190, 196, 202; 14th, 10 La., 211; 16th, 10 La., 164, 180-1, 191, 192; 17th, 10 La., 121-5, 164; 18th, 10 La., 77, 91, 133, 137, 139, 141, 163, 164, 166; 19th, 10 La., 164; 20th, 10 La., 195; 21st, 10 La., 122, 164; 23d, 10 La., 121-5; 24th, 10 La., 191-2; 25th, 10 La., 122; 26th, 10 La., 191, 193-5, 133; 29th, 10 La., 67, 190, 193; 31st, 10



- La., 121-5; 33d, 10 La., 78; Chalmette, 10 La., 38; Crescent, 10 La., 77, 91, 133, 139-41, 164, 166-8, 174; Terrebonne, 10 La., 78.
- Battalions, etc.: 1st, 10 La., 211; 4th, 5, 87-8; 13th, 10 La., 164, 181, 192; 14th, 10 La., 191, 193; Beard's, 10 La., 133; Boyd's, 10 La., 67; Chasseurs-à-pied, 10 La., 20, 21, 212, 213; Continental Guards, 10 La., 21; Coppens's, 10 La., 230; Crescent Rifles, 10 La., 20; Fournet's, 10 La., 91, 133; Guard, 10 La., 29, 31-2; Guards Response, 10 La., 164; Jaeger's, 10 La., 21; Lafayette Guards, 10 La., 21; Louisiana Grays, 10 La., 21; Louisiana Guards, 10 La., 16, 20, 29; Orleans Cadets, 10 La., 16, 20; Orleans Guards, 10 La., 16; Sarsfield Guards, 10 La., 21; Wheat's battalion, 10 La., 207.
- Lovejoy's Station, Ga., action, Sept. 2, 6, 351.
- Lovell, Mansfield, 2 Md., 162; 10 La., 35, 47.
- Lowe, John H., 6, 188, 376.
- Lowrey, Mark P., 7 Miss., 177, 214-6, 261; 8, 278; 12, 183.
- Lowry, Robert, 7 Miss., 41, 225, 227, 262.
- William M., 2 W. Va., 59.
- Loy, Crawford H., 12, 132.
- Luyall, Benjamin P., 12, 77.
- Lubbock, Francis R., 1, 733; 11 Tex., 58.
- Lynch, William F., 12, 13, 18, 23, 25.
- Lynchburg, Va., operations about, June, 1864, 2 W. Va., 48-9; 3, 471-2, 477-8; in 1865, 3, 542-3.
- Lynching, crime of, 12, 353-60.
- Lyon, Hylan B., 9 Ky., 49-50, 247.
- Nathaniel, 10 Ark., 19, 37; 9 Mo., 27, 39, 40, 50, 60.
- Lyon, Richard, 10 Ark., 298.
- Lythgoe, A. J., 5, 114.
- McAfee, Lee M., 4, 267.
- McCann, Richard, 8, 75.
- McCausland, John, 2 W. Va., 7, 26, 58, 65-7, 96, 135-8; 2 Md., 129; 3, 59, 482, 487.
- McChesney, Robert, 2 W. Va., 17.
- McClellan, George B., 2 W. Va., 14, 18, 29; 2 Md., 66; 3, 56, 166, 211, 292; nominated for president, 1, 530.
- McComb, William, 8, 193, 205, 215, 320.
- McConnell, J. T., 6, 222, 269-70.
- McCorkle, D. P., 12, 12.
- McCown, John P., 8, 9, 13, 60, 321-2.
- McCray, Thomas H., 10 Ark., 271.
- McCulloch, Ben., 9 Mo., 53, 75, 77, 81; 10 Ark., 21, 23, 65, 68, 75, 85; 11 Tex., 51, 241.
- McCulloch, Henry E., 11 Tex., 43, 244.
- McDaniel, Charles A., 6, 40, 101.
- McDonald, Angus W., 2 W. Va., 32, 48; 3, 61.
- McDonald, E. H., 2 W. Va., 48, 75, 106.
- McBowell, Irvin, 3, 97.
- McBowell, Va., battle, May 8, 1862, 2 W. Va., 57-8; 3, 228-33; 6, 163.
- McElroy, Frank, 10 La., 278.
- Kennon, 7 Miss., 175.
- McGirt's Creek, Fla., operations near, 1864, 11 Fla., 79.
- McGowan, Samuel, 5, 71, 124, 217-20, 412.
- McGrath, Andrew G., 1, 739.
- McGregor, John A., 6, 192.
- McGuire, Hunter, 3, 346.
- McIntosh, Charles F., 12, 60.
- James, 9 Mo., 81; 10 Ark., 43, 124, 85, 285, 404.
- McIntosh, W. M., 6, 172.
- McKamy, W. H., 8, 85.
- McKinley, William, 12, 363.
- McKinney, R. M., 4, 17.
- McLain, Robert, 7 Miss., 91.
- McLane, Robert M., 2 Md., 19, 26.
- McLaws, Lafayette, 3, 146; 6, 160, 27, 431; 7, 180.
- McLemore, W. S., 8, 238.
- McMaster, F. W., 5, 144-5.
- McMurry, J. A., 8, 402.
- McNair, Evander, 10 Ark., 82, 328, 400.
- McNeel, William L., 2 W. Va., 112.
- McNeill, Henry C., 8, 42.
- Jesse C., 2 W. Va., 123-7.
- John H., 2 W. Va., 87, 102, 116-21.
- McPheeters, G. P., 9 La., 79.
- McPherson, James B., 6, 329; 8, 137.
- McQuirk, John, 7 Miss., 28, 165.
- McRae, Dandridge, 10 Ark., 185, 407.
- D. K., 4, 112.
- McRae, C. S., gunboat, 10 La., 40, 42; 12, 400.
- McReynolds, James T., 8, 72.
- Macbeth, J. R., 5, 229.
- Macdonald, Emmet, 9 Mo., 114.
- MacGavock, Randal W., 8, 83.
- Mackall, William W., 2 Md., 172.
- Macon, Ga., raid against, July, 1864, 334-5, 339-41; Kilpatrick's raid, Aug. 1864, 6, 345; surrender of, 6, 383-4.
- MacRae, William, 4, 330.
- Madison, Ark., expedition to, Mar. 8, 1863, 10 Ark., 163.
- Madison Station, Ala., action, May, 1864, 7 Ala., 43.
- Maffitt, John N., 12, 102.
- Magevney, Michael, Jr., 8, 167.
- Magoffin, Beriah, 9 Ky., 19.
- Magrath, A. G., 5, 258.
- Magruder, John B., 3, 131, 136, 145, 149, 269, 290, 632; 10 Ark., 119, 222, 274, 275, 11 Tex., 79, 80-93; 12, 139.
- Mahone, William, 3, 521, 634.
- Major, James P., 11 Tex., 245.
- Mallory, Charles K., 3, 130.
- Stephen R., 1, 614; 12, 8-9.
- Malvern Hill, Va., battle, July 1, 1862, 3, 298; 4, 84; 5, 72-5; action, Aug. 5, 1862, 3, 306.
- Manassas, C. S., ram, 12, 55, 58, 60.
- Manassas, Va., first battle, July 21, 1861, 1, 416-22; 2 Md., 51-7; 3, 101-12; 4, 137-38-8; 6, 68-9; the campaign, 3, 94-100; federate forces, 3, 96; Federal forces, 3, 95; Johnston's march to, 3, 84-90; at, 3, 113; results of, 1, 418-22; 3, 101-12.
- Manassas, second battle, Aug. 26, 1862, 3, 328; 4, 99; 5, 126; 6, 179-80, 190 La., 232; 11 Tex., 212; the campaign, 3, 315-34; 4, 92; 5, 120-39.
- Manassas Junction, Va., capture, Aug. 27, 1862, 3, 325; 4, 96; 5, 121.
- Maney, George, 8, 322-4.
- Grant, 8, 21.
- Manigault, Arthur M., 5, 111, 115, 414.
- Mann, A. D., 1, 413.
- Manning, Van H., 4, 124-5; 10 Ark., 27.
- Mansfield, La., battle, April 8, 1864, 10 La., 135; 11 Tex., 131, 290.
- Mansura, La., action, May, 1864, 10 La., 151.



- Marais des Cygnes, action, Oct. 25, 1861, 9 Mo., 192.
- Marblehead, U. S. gunboat, attack upon, Dec. 25, 1863, 5, 297.
- Marianna, Fla., action, Sept. 25, 1864, 11 Fla., 114.
- Marietta, Ga., battles about, 6, 313-20.
- Marigny, Mandeville, 10 La., 34.
- Marine corps, C. S., register of officers, 12, 115.
- Marion, Va., battle, Dec., 1864, 3, 534.
- Marks, A. S., 8, 61.
- S. F., 10 La., 163.
- Marks' Mills, Ark., battle, April 25, 1864, 9 Mo., 164-5; 10 Ark., 253-62.
- Marksville, La., action, May 15, 1864, 10 La., 155.
- Marmaduke, John S., 9 Mo., 37, 100, 103-6, 137-9, 167, 169, 170, 179-96, 215; 10 Ark., 210, 220-2.
- Marshall, Humphrey, 2 W. Va., 59; 9 Ky., 145, 248.
- Marshall, J. Foster, 5, 129.
- J. K., 4, 172, 191.
- J. W., 2 W. Va., 112.
- Thomas, 2 W. Va., 75.
- Marshall, Mo., action, Oct., 1863, 9 Mo., 145.
- Marshall's Store, W. Va., action, Aug. 9, 1861, 2 W. Va., 41.
- Martin, James G., 4, 14, 31, 140, 280, 332.
- J. M., 11 Fla., 50-2.
- John D., 7 Miss., 59, 87, 90.
- John M., 11 Fla., 157.
- Mat, 8, 39.
- Will T., 3, 195; 7 Miss., 115-6, 118, 264; action, Sept. 18, 1864; 3, 496.
- Maryland characteristics of the people, 2 Md., 7-10; Confederate enrollment, 2 Md., 155; conference convention, 1861, 2 Md., 13; crisis of 1861, 2 Md., 16-7, 18; early history of, 2 Md., 6-10; legislature, 2 Md., 25, 30, 31-5; military arrests, 1861, 2 Md., 62, 91-6; military government of, 2 Md., 60-2, 89-91, 92-7; movement for secession, 2 Md., 11-4, 26-7; political campaign, 1860, 2 Md., 12; resolutions of 1861, 2 Md., 30, 34; in the Revolution, 1, 78; suspension of habeas corpus, 2 Md., 32-3, 61.
- Maryland campaign, 1862, 3, 335-60; 4, 106; 5, 140-61; proclamation of Colonel Johnson, 2 Md., 90; proclamation of General Lee, 2 Md., 89.
- Maryland campaign, July, 1864, 2 Md., 124-9; 3, 479-84.
- Maryland Heights, occupation of, 1861, 2 Md., 52; action, July 7, 1861, 3, 481.
- "Maryland, My Maryland," 2 Md., 46, 64.
- Maryland troops: Arms procured from North Carolina, 2 Md., 37-41; "blockade running," 2 Md., 41; charge, the last, 2 Md., 131-2.
- Maryland Line, 2 Md., 49, 68, 111; history of, 11-133; roster of, 134-41.
- At the Appomattox campaign, 2 Md., 131; at Chancellorsville, 2 Md., 106; at Charleston, S. C., 2 Md., 48; at Cold Harbor, 1864, 2 Md., 109-10; at Cross Keys, 2 Md., 89; at Front Royal, 2 Md., 69; at Gaines' Mill, 2 Md., 84-7; at Gettysburg, 2 Md., 109; at Hanover Junction, 2 Md., 115-22; at Harper's Ferry, 2 Md., 37, 75, 105; at Harrisonburg, 2 Md., 76-80; at Malvern Hill, 2 Md., 87; at First Manassas, 2 Md., 55-6; at Second Manassas, 2 Md., 105; at Munson's and Mason's Hills, 2 Md., 59; at Point of Rocks, 2 Md., 27-8, 42; at Port Republic, 2 Md., 81; about Petersburg, 2 Md., 110; in Pennsylvania campaign, 2 Md., 113; at Rappahannock river, 2 Md., 101; at Richmond, 1861, 2 Md., 42-3, 46-8; in the Seven Days' battles, 2 Md., 102; at Sharpsburg, 2 Md., 105; at Slaughter's Mountain, 2 Md., 102; at Trevilian Station, 2 Md., 123; in Early's Valley campaign, 2 Md., 130-1; in Jackson's Valley campaign, 2 Md., 68-82; in Virginia, winter 1861-2, 2 Md., 63-5; in West Virginia, 2 Md., 107, 112; at Winchester, 2 Md., 74, 108.
- Artillery: 1st, 2 Md., 47, 83, 101-6, 116, 141-2; 2d, 2 Md., 47, 83, 116, 142; 3d, 2 Md., 47, 162, 101, 105-6, 142-4; 4th, 2 Md., 47, 116, 144; Lucas' battalion, 2 Md., 48; Rhett's reg., 2 Md., 48.
- Cavalry: 1st reg., 2 Md., 48, 49, 110-3, 115, 130, 139-40; 2d reg. roster, 2 Md., 141; Davis' battalion, 2 Md., 48; Galtner's troop, 2 Md., 47; Gilmor's battalion, 2 Md., 48; White's battalion, 2 Md., 48.
- Infantry: 1st reg., 2 Md., 47, 53, 55-6, 67-9, 65, 68-82, 83-7, 88, 124-6; 1st battalion, 2 Md., 28, 37, 41, 45, 52; 2d reg., 2 Md., 49, 115, 106-10, 130, 137-9, 145-51, 152.
- Maryland U. S. troops, 2 Md., 97-100.
- Maryville, Tenn., action, 8, 124.
- Mason, James M., 1, 413; 2 Md., 25.
- Massachusetts, cession of territory by, 1, 119.
- Mathewes, J. Fraser, 5, 251.
- Mathias Point, Va., actions, June, 1861, 3, 94.
- Matthews, Charles W., 6, 261.
- H. M., 3, 153.
- Maulsby, William P., 2 Md., 100.
- Maury, Dabney H., 3, 636, 9 Mo., 156.
- Matthew F., 12, 12.
- William L., 12, 104.
- Maxey, Samuel B., biog., 11 Tex., 246.
- Maxwell, George T., 11 Fla., 180.
- May, Charles, 8, 27.
- Meade, George, 3, 400.
- Meadow Bluff, W. Va., expedition, Dec. 15, 1861, 2 W. Va., 47.
- Means, John H., 5, 133-4.
- R. S., 5, 141.
- Meares, Gaston, 4, 91.
- Mechanicsville, Va., battle, June 26, 1862, 3, 285; 4, 77.
- Medical officers, Trans-Mississippi department, 10 Ark., 377-87.
- Members of Confederate Congress, 12, 381.
- Memminger, Christopher G., 1, 603-4.
- Memphis & Charleston railroad expeditions, Oct., 1863, 7 Miss., 165-7.
- Memphis, Tenn., Forrest's raid, Aug., 1864, 7 Miss., 203; 8, 211.
- Mercer, Hugh W., 6, 194, PH.
- Meridian, Miss., expedition to, Feb., 1864, 7 Miss., 188; 8, 229; 12, 26.
- Merrick, Thomas D., 10 Ark., 396.



Merrimac (see Virginia), ironclad, 12, 31.  
 Merryman, John, case of, 2 Md., 32-3.  
 Mexico, war with, 1, 227-30; Alabama in the war with, 7 Ala., 12; proposed invasion, 1865, 1, 545, 556.  
 Mickler, John H., 6, 93.  
 Middle Fork, W. Va., action, July 6, 1861, 2 W. Va., 19.  
 Middletown, Va., action, May, 1862, 3, 239; Nov., 1864, 3, 511.  
 Military governors of the South, 12, 301.  
 — History, outline of, 12, 197-205.  
 Mill Creek Gap, Ga., action, May, 1864, 8, 136.  
 Miller, John H., 7 Miss., 34.  
 — William, 11 Fla., 102, 165, 206.  
 Millican, W. T., 6, 191.  
 Miliken's Bend, La., battle, June 7, 1863, 7 Miss., 153; 11 Tex., 105, 195.  
 Mills, Roger Q., 10 Ark., 157-8.  
 Milroy, R. H., 2 W. Va., 71, 73.  
 Milton, John, 1, 718-9.  
 Mine Creek, Kan., action, Oct., 1864, 9 Mo., 192.  
 Mine Run, Va., campaign, Nov., 1863, 3, 427.  
 Miner, Robert D., 12, 12.  
 Minnegarode, Charles, 3, 556.  
 Minnesota, U. S. S., torpedo attack, April 9, 1864, 12, 78.  
 Missionary Ridge, Tenn., battle, Nov. 25, 1863, 6, 268-71; 8, 115; 9 Ky., 183; 10 Ark., 300; 11 Tex., 179; 12, 245.  
 Mississippi, military organization, 1861, 7 Miss., 10-8; military manufactures, 7 Miss., 62; operations in northern, 1863, 7 Miss., 163; organization of troops in 1864, 7 Miss., 195, 204; patriotism of, 7 Miss., 63-1; secession of, 7 Miss., 3-9; women of, 7 Miss., 62.  
 Mississippi campaigns: Central railroad, 1862, 7 Miss., 95-8; Grierson's raid, 1863, 7 Miss., 133; Hovey's expedition, 1862, 7 Miss., 96, 98; Johnston's campaign, 1863, 7 Miss., 161; Sturgis expedition, June, 1864, 7 Miss., 196; 8, 225; Smith's (A. J.) expedition, July, 1864, 7 Miss., 209; 8, 238 (see Corinth, Meridian and Vicksburg).  
 Mississippi, C. S. ironclad, 10 La., 37, 42; 12, 55, 62.  
 Mississippi and east Louisiana, organization of troops, April, 1862, 7 Miss., 127.  
 Mississippi river fleet, 1862, 12, 55.  
 — river passes, action, Oct. 12, 1861, 12, 15.  
 Mississippi troops: Cavalry organization, 1865, 7 Miss., 221; number of commands, 7 Miss., 228.  
 At Allatoona, 7 Miss., 216; at Appomattox, 7 Miss., 229; in Atlanta campaign, 7 Miss., 211-3; at Atlanta, 7 Miss., 215; at Belmont, 7 Miss., 23; in the Carolina campaign, 7 Miss., 227; at Chancellorsville, 7 Miss., 178; at Chickamauga, 7 Miss., 163; at Chickasaw Bayou, 7 Miss., 103; at siege of Corinth, 7 Miss., 32; at Cross Keys, 7 Miss., 116; with Forrest, 1864, 7 Miss., 193; at Forts Henry and Donelson, 7 Miss., 36-40; at Franklin, 7 Miss., 217;

8; at Fredericksburg, 3, 394; 7 Miss., 120; at Second Fredericksburg, 7 Miss., 178; at Gettysburg, 7 Miss., 184, 4, 173; at Kennesaw Mountain, 7 Miss., 214; in Kentucky, 1861, 7 Miss., 32; 1862, 7 Miss., 31, 108; at Knoxville, 7 Miss., 174; at Leesburg, 7 Miss., 210; at Lookout Mountain, 7 Miss., 176; at Manassas, 1861, 7 Miss., 23; at Manassas, 1862, 7 Miss., 118-9; at Missionary Ridge, 7 Miss., 177; at Mobile, 1864, 7 Miss., 225; at Munfordville, 7 Miss., 109; at Nashville, 7 Miss., 219; at New Madrid, 8, 10, 28; at Peachtree Creek, 7 Miss., 211; at Pensacola, 7 Miss., 21-2; at Pickett's Mill, 7 Miss., 213; in Polk's army, 1863, 7 Miss., 25; at Resaca, 7 Miss., 213; at Ringgold Gap, 7 Miss., 177; at Seven Days' battles, 7 Miss., 116; at Seven Pines, 7 Miss., 115; at Shiloh, 7 Miss., 11-51; at Sharpsburg, 7 Miss., 119; at Spotsylvania, 3, 452; 7 Miss., 231; at Spring Hill, 7 Miss., 219; at Thompson's Station and Brentwood, 7 Miss., 179; at Vicksburg, 1862, 7 Miss., 78; in Virginia, 1864, 7 Miss., 220; at Williamsburg, 7 Miss., 115; at Yorktown, 7 Miss., 114-5.  
 Artillery: 1st reg. light, 7 Miss., 116, 118-9; Darden's, 7 Miss., 49; Pettus' flying, 7 Miss., 206; Stanford's, 7 Miss., 49; Swett's, 7 Miss., 49, 227; Smith's, 8, 12, 42, 97.  
 Cavalry: Armstrong's brigade, 7 Miss., 230; Mabry's brigade, 7 Miss., 202; Starke's brigade, 7 Miss., 124, 1st reg., 7 Miss., 43; 1st battalion, 7 Miss., 31, 46; 15th reg., 7 Miss., 20; Carruthers' battalion, 7 Miss., 24; Jeff Davis' legion, 7 Miss., 115, 118.  
 Infantry: Brigades — Adams', 7 Miss., 192, 211; Anderson's, 7 Miss., 172-3; Barksdale's, 7 Miss., 117, 118, 175; Brantly's, 7 Miss., 216, 218-9, 227; Chalmers', 7 Miss., 108-9, 114-1; Dyer's, 7 Miss., 181-3, 221, 226; Featherston's, 7 Miss., 116, 118, 214, 218-9, 227; Harris', 7 Miss., 221, 226; Humphreys', 7 Miss., 172-5, 222, 226-7; Lowrey's (M. P.), 7 Miss., 172-3, 177, 213, 215, 216; Lowrey's (Robt.), 7 Miss., 227; Posey's, 7 Miss., 179; Scott's, 7 Miss., 211; Sears', 7 Miss., 211, 217, 218-9, 225; Sharps', 7 Miss., 216, 218-9, 227; Tishomingo, 7 Miss., 117; Tucker's, 7 Miss., 211, 214, 215; Wadsworth's, 7 Miss., 110, 111-2, 172-3, 175-6.  
 Regiments: 1st, 7 Miss., 23, 24, 7 Miss., 24, 119; 2d Confederate, 7 Miss., 50; 3d, 7 Miss., 38, 136, 214; 14th, 7 Miss., 26, 39, 136; 5th, 7 Miss., 45, 126, 174; 6th, 7 Miss., 44, 135-6, 214; 7th, 7 Miss., 45, 8th, 7 Miss., 174; 9th, 7 Miss., 20, 47, 93; 10th, 7 Miss., 20, 45, 174; 11th, 7 Miss., 115, 119; 12th, 7 Miss., 115, 118; 13th, 7 Miss., 28, 114; 14th, 7 Miss., 29, 174; 15th, 7 Miss., 35, 81, 8, 226; 16th, 7 Miss., 116, 117, 118, 120, 174; 17th, 7 Miss., 25-8, 174; 18th, 7 Miss., 25, 174; 19th, 7 Miss., 35, 115; 20th, 7 Miss., 20, 21st, 7 Miss., 181; 22d, 7 Miss., 212; 23d, 7 Miss., 111-2, 265; 24th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 25th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 26th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 27th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 28th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 29th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 30th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 31st, 7 Miss., 111-2; 32nd, 7 Miss., 111-2; 33rd, 7 Miss., 111-2; 34th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 35th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 36th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 37th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 38th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 39th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 40th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 41st, 7 Miss., 111-2; 42nd, 7 Miss., 111-2; 43rd, 7 Miss., 111-2; 44th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 45th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 46th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 47th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 48th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 49th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 50th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 51st, 7 Miss., 111-2; 52nd, 7 Miss., 111-2; 53rd, 7 Miss., 111-2; 54th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 55th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 56th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 57th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 58th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 59th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 60th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 61st, 7 Miss., 111-2; 62nd, 7 Miss., 111-2; 63rd, 7 Miss., 111-2; 64th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 65th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 66th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 67th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 68th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 69th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 70th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 71st, 7 Miss., 111-2; 72nd, 7 Miss., 111-2; 73rd, 7 Miss., 111-2; 74th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 75th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 76th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 77th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 78th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 79th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 80th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 81st, 7 Miss., 111-2; 82nd, 7 Miss., 111-2; 83rd, 7 Miss., 111-2; 84th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 85th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 86th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 87th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 88th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 89th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 90th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 91st, 7 Miss., 111-2; 92nd, 7 Miss., 111-2; 93rd, 7 Miss., 111-2; 94th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 95th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 96th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 97th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 98th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 99th, 7 Miss., 111-2; 100th, 7 Miss., 111-2.





- 33d, 7 Miss., 93; 35th, 7 Miss., 93; 36th, 7 Miss., 53, 87; 37th, 7 Miss., 53, 87; 38th, 7 Miss., 87; 39th, 7 Miss., 82; 40th, 7 Miss., 86, 87; 45th, 7 Miss., 110; 46th, 7 Miss., 103; Blythe's, 7 Miss., 34, 46; Lindsay's, 8, 34.
- Battalions: 1st, 7 Miss., 214; 2d, 7 Miss., 115; 15th sharpshooters, 7 Miss., 171; Harcastle's, 7 Miss., 44, 48; Hawkins' sharpshooters, 7 Miss., 111; Miller's, 8, 34, 38.
- Mississippi State troops, 7 Miss., 195.
- Missouri, act of secession, 9 Mo., 69; call for State militia, 9 Mo., 42; convention of 1861, 9 Mo., 15, 17, 20; Federal army in, 10 Ark., 67; Oregon immigration, 1, 235; political history of State, 9 Mo., 3; Price-Harney agreement, 9 Mo., 38.
- Missouri compromise, 1, 210-4, 249, 267, 279-90; 9 Mo., 4.
- Missouri expeditions: Marmaduke's, Dec., 1862, 10 Ark., 161; Marmaduke's, Jan., 1863, 9 Mo., 111; Marmaduke's, 1863, 9 Mo., 131; 10 Ark., 165; Polk's and Hardee's, 1861, 8, 9; 10 Ark., 57; Price's, 1861, 9 Mo., 176, 179-96; 10 Ark., 274-5; Shelby's, 1863, 9 Mo., 141; 10 Ark., 224-5.
- Missouri troops. Final operations and surrender, 9 Mo., 198-201; Home Guards, 9 Mo., 23, 33, 39, 47; Minute Men, 9 Mo., 24, 29; reorganization after Vicksburg, 9 Mo., 127.
- At Allatoona, 9 Mo., 154; in Atlanta campaign, 9 Mo., 152-3; at Big Black Bridge, 9 Mo., 121; in Camden campaign, 9 Mo., 160; at Cane Hill, 9 Mo., 105; at Champion's Hill, 9 Mo., 118; at Corinth, 9 Mo., 83, 90; at Demopolis, 9 Mo., 127; at Franklin, 9 Mo., 151; at Grand Gulf, 9 Mo., 116; at Hartsville, 9 Mo., 113-4; at Hatchie Bridge, 9 Mo., 93; at Helena, 9 Mo., 121; at Iuka, 9 Mo., 89; at Jenkins' Ferry, 9 Mo., 196-7; at Kenesaw Mountain, 9 Mo., 152; at Lake Chicot, 9 Mo., 169; in Little Rock campaign, 9 Mo., 127; on Little Rock railroad, 1864, 9 Mo., 176; at Marks' Mills, 9 Mo., 165; at Mobile, 9 Mo., 197; at Nashville, 9 Mo., 153; at Newtonia, 9 Mo., 101; at Pea Ridge, 9 Mo., 78-83; 10 Ark., 77; at Pine Bluff, 9 Mo., 119; at Poison Spring, 9 Mo., 163; at Pleasant Hill, 9 Mo., 159; at Port Gibson, 9 Mo., 117; at Prairie Grove, 9 Mo., 188; in Price's raid, 9 Mo., 179; at Shiloh, 9 Mo., 86; at Vicksburg, 9 Mo., 123; on White River, Ark., 1864, 9 Mo., 173.
- Artillery: Batteries—1st, 9 Mo., 72; Bledsoe's, 9 Mo., 90, 156; Clark's, 9 Mo., 73; Collins's, 9 Mo., 180; Guibor's, 9 Mo., 74; Harris's, 9 Mo., 180; Landis's, 9 Mo., 74; Lesueur's, 9 Mo., 159; Macdonald's, 9 Mo., 76; Ruffner's, 9 Mo., 159.
- Cavalry: Brigades—Clark's, 9 Mo., 179-96; Freeman's, 9 Mo., 179-96; Greene's, 9 Mo., 120, 149-51; Jackman's, 9 Mo., 181, 185; Marmaduke's, 9 Mo., 99-100, 163, 166, 169, 170, 179, 181, 184; Parsons', 9 Mo., 135; Porter's, 9 Mo., 111; Shanks', 9 Mo., 180-96; Shelby's, 9 Mo., 99, 100, 111, 130, 132, 135, 136, 139, 140-9, 158, 160, 164, 169, 172, 173, 176, 185.
- Regiments, etc.: 1st, 9 Mo., 73, 74, 124; 2d, 9 Mo., 74; 3d, 9 Mo., 179; 4th, 9 Mo., 179; 5th, 9 Mo., 180; 6th, 9 Mo., 124-5; 7th, 9 Mo., 180; 8th, 9 Mo., 180; 10th, 9 Mo., 180; 11th, 9 Mo., 180; 12th, 9 Mo., 180; Coffee's, 9 Mo., 180; Davies', 9 Mo., 180; Elliott's, 9 Mo., 180; Ford's, 9 Mo., 180; Fristoe's, 9 Mo., 180; Hunter's, 9 Mo., 180; Jackman's, 9 Mo., 180; Perkins', 9 Mo., 180; Schnable's, 9 Mo., 180; Searey's, 9 Mo., 180; Shelby's, 9 Mo., 49, 97; Slayback's, 9 Mo., 180; Williams', 9 Mo., 180; Wood's, 9 Mo., 180.
- Infantry: Brigades—Cockrell's, 9 Mo., 117, 127-9, 152, 197; Green's, 9 Mo., 85, 92-3, 117, 121, 123; Little's, 9 Mo., 73, 76, 85, 89, 92-3; Slack's, 9 Mo., 43, 73; Weightman's, 9 Mo., 49.
- Regiments, etc.: 1st (rifles), 9 Mo., 37; 1st, 9 Mo., 73, 83, 120; 2d, 9 Mo., 73, 88, 125; 3d, 9 Mo., 73; 5th, 9 Mo., 129; 8th, 9 Mo., 158; 9th, 9 Mo., 159; 10th, 9 Mo., 159; 11th, 9 Mo., 159; 16th, 9 Mo., 159; Pindall's, 9 Mo., 159.
- Missouri State Guard, organization of, 9 Mo., 37; at Booneville, 45; at Carthage, 47; at Cold Camp, 47; at Cow-skin Prairie, 51; at Lexington, 61; in Mississippi, 87; at Pea Ridge, 78, 80, 83; at Wilson's Creek, 56; transfer to Confederate service, 72.
- Mitchel, John C., 5, 300, 508.
- Mitchell, John K., 10 La., 37; 12, 56-9, 92-4.
- Mitchell, W. D., 6, 373.
- Mobile, Ala., operations about, 7 Ala., 43-6.
- Mobile Bay, naval battle, Aug., 1864, 8, 258; 12, 80-91.
- Monett's Ferry, La., action, April, 1864, 10 La., 153; 11, 207.
- Monitor, U. S. ironclad, 12, 47, 52.
- Monocacy, Md., battle, July 1, 1864, 3, 481.
- Monroe, A., 2 W. Va., 48-9, 54.
- J. C., 10 Ark., 142-4, 171, 281.
- John T., 10 La., 49.
- Monterey, Pa., action, July 18, 1863, 2 Md., 113.
- Monterey, Va., Averell's raid, Aug., 1863, 2 W. Va., 82-3.
- Montgomery, Ala., convention, Feb. 4, 1861, 1, 358; delegates to, 1, 360.
- Moody, George V., 10 La., 188.
- Young, M., 7 Ala., 426.
- Moore, Andrew B., 1, 715-6.
- James, 7 Miss., 109.
- John C., 1, xii; 11 Tex., 248; "Missouri," 9.
- Moore, John H., 8, 201.
- John V., 5, 133-4.
- Patrick T., 3, 638.
- Sydenham, 7 Ala., 14.
- Thomas O., 1, 722-3.
- W. H., 7 Miss., 91.
- W. P., 8, 24.
- W. S., 8, 197.
- Moorefield, W. Va., action, Feb., 1862, 2 W. Va., 55; Jan., 1863, 2 W. Va., 73; April, 1863, 2 W. Va., 79; Sept., 1863, 2 W. Va., 81; Jan., 1864, 2 W. Va., 91; Aug. 6, 1864, 2 Md., 130; 2 W. Va., 100; 3, 487; Nov., 1864, 2 W. Va., 102.



- Morale of the Confederate armies, 12, 119-93.  
 Moreauville, La., action, May, 1864, 10 La., 151.  
 Morehead, Charles S., 9 Ky., 32.  
 Morgan, C. S. gunboat, 12, 86, 88.  
 Morgan, John H., 2 W. Va., 100; 9 Ky., 39, 91-6, 99-108, 110, 112, 147, 154, 167-8, 172-3, 185, 190, 250; 12, 141.  
 Morgan, John T., 7 Ala., 427.  
 Morgantown and Woodbury, Ky., skirmishes, Oct., 1861, 9 Ky., 44.  
 Morning Light, U. S. S., capture of, 11 Tex., 97.  
 Morris, Charles M., 12, 102.  
 Morris Island, S. C., in April, 1863, 5, 194-5; battle, July 10, 1863, 5, 226-34; prisoners under fire, 5, 302-4.  
 Morrison, J. J., 6, 99.  
 Morrisville, Va., action near, Nov. 23, 1862, 5, 179-80.  
 Morton, John W., 8, 26, 251.  
 Morton's Ford, Va., action, Feb. 6, 1864, 3, 430.  
 Moscow, Ark., action, April 12, 1864, 10 Ark., 243.  
 Moscow, Miss., action, Dec. 4, 1863, 7 Miss., 167.  
 Mott, C. H., 7 Miss., 115.  
 Mound City, Ark., burning, Jan. 15, 1863, 10 Ark., 163.  
 Mount Airy, Va., action, Dec. 17-8, 1864, 3, 531.  
 Mount Crawford, Va., action, Oct. 2, 1864, 3, 502.  
 Mount Elon, S. C., action, Feb., 1865, 5, 367.  
 Mount Jackson, Va., action, June, 1862, 3, 253; Nov., 1863, 2 W. Va., 87.  
 Mount Pleasant, S. C., 5, 19.  
 Mouton, Alexander, 10 La., 23.  
 — Alfred, 10 La., 91, 94, 138-40, 311.  
 Mulligan, James A., 9 Mo., 61.  
 Mumford, William B., execution of, 10 La., 52-69.  
 Munford, Thomas T., 2 Md., 131-3; 3, 556, 639.  
 Munfordville, Ky., capture of, Sept., 1862, 8, 49; 9 Ky., 129.  
 Murdaugh, William H., 12, 17.  
 Murfreesboro, Tenn., Forrest's raid, July 13, 1862, 9 Ky., 109; action, July 13, 1862, 6, 99; 8, 217; battle, Dec. 31st to Jan. 2, 1863, 3, 5, 112-9; 6, 110-1; 7 Miss., 110-4; 8, 60; 9 Ky., 135-67; 10 Ark., 241-5; 10 La., 181-2; 11 Tex., 165; siege of, 1864, 6, 373; 8, 161.  
 Murray, Pendleton, 1, 734; 11 Tex., 121.  
 Murray, John E., 10 Ark., 290, 370.  
 — William H., 2 Md., 109.  
 Myers, Abraham C., 1, 617-8.  
 — E. H., 2 W. Va., 48.  
 Nanec, James D., 5, 175-7, 317.  
 Napier, T. Alonzo, 8, 223.  
 Nashville, C. S. cruiser, 6, 102, 203; 12, 101.  
 Nashville, Tenn., Federal occupation, 8, 32; Morgan's raid, March, 1862, 9 Ky., 94; siege of, 8, 161; battle, Dec. 15-16, 1864, 8, 163; 11 Tex., 190; retreat from, Dec., 1864, 8, 167-79.  
 Natchez, Miss., capture of, May, 1862, 7 Miss., 69; operations, July, 1862, 7 Miss., 163.  
 Natchitoches, La., action, April 22, 1864, 10 La., 152.  
 Natural Bridge, Fla., action, March 16, 1865, 11 Fla., 135-8.  
 Naval academy, C. S., 12, 96-8.  
 — brigade, 12, 93-5.  
 Navy, C. S., 12, 203; history of, 12, 4-17; ironclad fleet, 12, 107-8; personnel of, 12, 5, 97-8, 108-9; register of officers, 12, 110-4.  
 Navy, U. S., treatment of Southern officers, 12, 3.  
 Navy department, C. S., 12, 3.  
 Neely, J. J., 8, 230, 232.  
 Negro problem, 12, 346.  
 — troops, 1, 465; 3, 529.  
 Nelson, Allison, biog., 11 Tex., 219.  
 — N. L., 10 La., 197.  
 — William, 3, 544.  
 — William (U. S. A.), 9 Ky., 21, 26, 71, 149; 3, 544.  
 Neosho, Mo., 9 Mo., 69; action, 1863, 9 Mo., 142.  
 New Bern, N. C., battle, March 13, 1862, 4, 38-41; operations, Feb., 1863, 4, 112, Jan., 1864, 4, 220.  
 New Carthage, La., operations about, April, 1863, 7 Miss., 126.  
 New Creek, W. Va., Vaughn's raid, 3, 76; Sept., 1861, 2 W. Va., 48; Nov., 1861, 2 W. Va., 103; 3, 513.  
 New England, opposition to expansion, 1, 151; movement for secession, 1, 185-90.  
 New Hope Church, Ga., battle, May 27, 1861, 6, 309-11; 8, 129.  
 New Ironsides, U. S. ironclad, attacks upon, 6, 293-4; 12, 75.  
 New Madrid, Mo., occupation of, 8, 9; evacuation, 8, 27-9; 10 Ark., 335.  
 New Market, Va., battle, May 15, 1864, 2 W. Va., 98; 3, 457; 9 Ky., 186-7; Oct., 1861, 3, 525.  
 New Mexico, campaign, 1861-2, 11 Tex., 54, 55.  
 New Orleans, defenses of, 1862, 10 La., 35; surrender of, 10 La., 46-55.  
 Newman, Wilson S., 12, 125.  
 Newnan, Ga., battle near, July 20, 1864, 6, 340-1.  
 Newport Barracks, N. C., action, Feb. 2, 1864, 4, 221.  
 Newport News, Va., skirmish, June, 1861, 3, 131; action, July, 1861, 3, 147; naval actions, 1861, 12, 35.  
 Newsom, J. J., 8, 48.  
 Newton, J. M., 6, 171, 190.  
 — R. C., 10 Ark., 211, 216.  
 Newtonia, Mo., battle, Sept. 30, 1862, 9 Mo., 101-2; 10 Ark., 132; Oct., 1864, 9 Mo., 194.  
 Newtown, Va., action, May 24, 1862, 3, 239-40; July, 1864, 3, 490.  
 Niagara Falls, proposed peace conference, 1, 518.  
 Nicholas, Wilson C., 2 Md., 21, 128.  
 Nicholls, Francis T., 2 Md., 66; 10 La., 251, 313.  
 Nine-mile Road, Va., action, June 18, 1862, 5, 57.  
 Nolan, M., 10 La., 260.  
 Noonday Creek, Ga., battle, June 30, 1864, 6, 316.



Norfolk, Va., seizure of navy yard. April, 1861, 3, 123-7; 12, 28; blockade, 3, 127; evacuation, May 9, 1862, 3, 274. North and South, comparative resources, 12, 300.

North Anna River, Va., campaign, 1864, 3, 458-62.

North Carolina, arms furnished to Maryland troops, 2 Md., 38-40; cession of territory by, 1, 119; coast operations, 1862, 4, 24; devotion to the Confederacy, 4, 5; first organization of troops, 4, 13; naval forces on the coast, 1861, 12, 18; preparation for war, 4, 9; secession of, 4, 7.

North Carolina campaign, 1865, 4, 280-5.

North Carolina troops: Disposition of, in 1863, 4, 150; State troops, 4, 14; total enrollment of troops, 4, 11; volunteer regiments, 4, 13.

At Atlee's Station, 4, 226; at Battery Wagner, 4, 260; at Bentonville, 4, 284; at Big Bethel, 4, 18; at Blacks and Whites, 4, 261; at Brandy Station, 4, 197, 210; at Bristoe Station, 4, 211; at Buckland Races, 4, 214; at Catlett's Station, 4, 210; at Cedar Creek, 4, 259; at Cedar Mountain, 4, 93; at Chancellorsville, 4, 157; at Chickamauga, 4, 204-5; at Cold Harbor, 4, 251-4; at the Crater, 4, 260-8; at Culpeper Court House, 4, 209; at Drewry's Bluff, 4, 243; at Eltham's Landing, 4, 37; at Fort Fisher, 4, 273; at Fredericksburg, 3, 68; 4, 134; at Gaines' Mill, 4, 91; in Georgia campaign, 4, 273; at Gettysburg, 3, 403-14, 420; 4, 172; at Goldsboro, 1862, 4, 145; at Hanover Court House, 4, 57; at Jack's Shop, 4, 208; at James City, 4, 209; at Jericho Ford, 4, 250; at Kelly's Ford, 4, 216; at King's Schoolhouse, 4, 74; at Kingston, 1862, 4, 143; at Manassas (First), 22; at Manassas (Second), 60; at Manassas Junction, 5, 124; at Middleburg, Upperville and Fairfax, 4, 170; at Murfreesboro, 4, 148; at New Bern, 1863, 4, 152, 219-20; at Ox Hill, 4, 104; at Parker's Store, 4, 217; at Payne's Farm, 4, 216; about Petersburg, 4, 263, 271; at Rappahannock Station, 4, 215; 5, 123; at Reams' Station, 4, 270-2; in Seven Days' battles, 4, 76; at Seven Pines, 4, 63, 87; at Sharpsburg, 4, 119; in Shenandoah Valley (Jackson), 73; (Early), 255; at Shepherdstown, 4, 120; at South Mountain, 4, 109; at Spottsylvania, 3, 452; 4, 230-43; at Staunton river, 4, 261; in Tennessee (east), 4, 208; in Virginia cavalry campaigns, 1861, 4, 250; in Virginia campaign, 1865, 4, 277-9; at Weldon railroad, 4, 200; in Western army, 4, 117; at the Wilderness, 4, 230-43; at Williamsburg, 4, 50; at Wilmington defenses, 4, 282; 5, 109-10; at Winchester, 4, 169, 257; at Yorktown, 4, 46.

Artillery: 10th reg., 4, 15, 27, 43; 36th reg., 4, 274; Brem's Battery, 4, 15, 30; Bunting's, 4, 113; Flanner's, 4, 368; Graham's, 4, 216; Latham's, 4, 28, 59, 95, 129; McComas', 4, 12; Mallett's, 4, 143; Manly's, 4, 51, 70, 129, 195, 196; Pool's battalion, 4, 144, 146; Ramseur's

battery, 4, 15; Reilly's, 4, 15, 82, 103, 129; Starr's, 4, 143, 146.

Cavalry: Brigades — Dearing's, 4, 263, 271; Gordon's (Barringer's), 4, 239, 252, 260-1, 271-2, 279; Roberts', 4, 278-9.

Regiments: 1st, 4, 82, 116, 141, 168, 170, 192, 195, 209-11, 227, 232, 249-50; 2d, 4, 38, 108, 195, 209-10, 216, 217, 227, 259; 3d, 4, 147, 198, 213; 4th, 4, 168, 170, 195, 209-10, 217; 5th, 4, 168, 170, 195, 209, 250; 6th, 4, 205; 60th, 4, 255.

Infantry: Brigades — Clingman's, 4, 200, 219, 249, 251-3, 261, 269, 271; Cooke's, 4, 198, 211-4, 233, 235, 236, 251, 253, 255, 270, 279; Daniel's (Grimes'), 4, 180, 181, 231, 237, 241, 251, 254, 260; Hoke's, 4, 182, 184, 191, 215, 245, 251-2, 255; Iverson's, 4, 179; Johnston's, 4, 237, 240, 251, 255; Kirkland's (MacRae's), 4, 212-1, 233-1, 255, 251-3, 265, 270, 271, 279; Lane's (Conner's), 4, 178, 186, 191, 233-4, 240, 250, 251, 265, 269, 270, 271; Martin's, 4, 230, 231, 251, 264-6; Palmer's, 4, 280; Pettigrew's, 4, 172, 176, 186, 191, 196; Ramseur's (Cox's), 4, 181, 236, 241, 251, 256-60; Ransom's, 4, 219, 222, 244-5, 263, 267-9; Scales', 4, 178, 186, 233-4, 251, 265, 270.

Regiments: 1st (volunteers), 3, 140; 4, 18; 1st, 4, 78, 165, 169, 183, 216, 232, 233; 2d, 4, 113, 164; 3d, 4, 121, 165, 169, 183, 216, 232, 239; 4th, 4, 65, 113, 161; 5th, 4, 50, 54, 65, 66, 111, 163; 6th, 4, 22, 68, 89, 163, 120, 182, 185; 7th, 4, 15, 38, 61, 101, 129, 162; 8th, 4, 35, 252-3; 9th, 4, 15; 11th, 4, 144-5, 172, 177, 190-2; 12th, 4, 60, 111, 163, 181, 261; 13th, 4, 51, 111; 14th, 4, 51, 164; 15th, 4, 47, 110, 138; 16th, 4, 67, 78, 80-136; 17th, 4, 27, 35, 152, 268; 18th, 4, 60, 94, 98, 101, 160, 162; 20th, 4, 81, 111, 228; 21st, 4, 73, 81, 93, 95-7, 99, 121, 195, 208; 22d, 4, 63, 73, 80, 131, 136; 23d, 4, 53, 65, 111, 122, 163; 24th, 4, 54, 122, 138; 25th, 4, 122, 138, 245, 269; 26th, 4, 38, 153, 152, 177, 189, 192; 27th, 4, 38, 116, 122, 196, 198, 213-4, 270; 28th, 4, 59, 94, 101, 125, 164, 162; 29th, 4, 148, 204-6; 30th, 4, 164, 216; 31st, 4, 35, 114-5, 201; 32d, 4, 34, 82, 94, 101, 129, 160, 162; 33th, 4, 77; 35th, 4, 38, 122; 37th, 4, 38, 60, 94, 101, 129, 135, 162; 38th, 4, 77, 199; 39th, 4, 118, 204-6; 42d, 4, 153, 172; 43d, 4, 180; 44th, 4, 91, 198; 45th, 4, 162; 46th, 4, 122, 124, 138; 47th, 4, 144, 178; 48th, 4, 117, 122, 134, 187; 49th, 4, 122, 245, 268; 51st, 4, 116, 201; 52d, 4, 142, 116, 172, 178; 53d, 4, 180; 54th, 4, 157, 155; 55th, 4, 173, 181, 231; 56th, 4, 204; 57th, 4, 137; 58th, 4, 205-7; 60th, 4, 118, 204-6; 61st, 4, 143, 204, 208; 62d, 4, 208; 64th, 4, 208; 69th, 4, 147, 208.

Battalions: 1st, 4, 130; Clark's militia, 4, 38; Wharton's, 4, 73.

North Georgia campaign, Oct., 1864, 8, 143.

Northern States, nullification by, 1, 42-5, 279; 9 Ky., 10; first call for troops, 1, 293; political battle, 1861, 1, 509.

Northrup, Lucius B., 1, 620-1.

Northwest territory, 1, 72.

Norwood, Josiah T., 10 La., 223.

Nounnan, J. H., 2 W. Va., 52, 101.

Oak Hills, Mo. (see Wilson's Creek).

Oakland, Miss., action, Dec., 1862, 11 Tex., 163.

Oates, W. C., 12, 335.



- Oath required of voters, 12, 288.  
 Ocoquan, Va., reconnoissance, 1862, 3, 373; action, Dec. 17, 1862, 5, 181.  
 Ocean Pond, Fla. (see Olustee).  
 Oconee River, Ga., action, Nov., 1864, 6, 363-4.  
 O'Hara, Theodore, 9 Ky., 162, 165, 170.  
 Ohio, Jenkins' raid, Sept., 1862, 2 W. Va., 63.  
 Okolona, Miss., action, Feb. 22, 1864, 7 Miss., 191; 8, 229; expedition to, Dec., 1864, 7 Miss., 209-10.  
 Olmstead, Charles H., 6, 88-90, 373.  
 Olustee, C. S. cruiser, 12, 105.  
 Olustee, Fla., battle, Feb., 1864, 6, 283; 11 Fla., 56.  
 O'Neill, Edward A., 7 Ala., 433.  
 Opequon River, Va., operations on, Aug., 1864, 3, 493.  
 Orangeburg, S. C., battle, Feb. 11, 1865, 5, 363.  
 Oregon, occupation of, 1, 233-8.  
 Osage River, Mo., action, Oct. 6, 1864, 9 Mo., 182.  
 Osborne, Henry P., 6, 222.  
 Otey, G. G., 2 W. Va., 59.  
 Ould, Robert, 1, 495, 630-1.  
 Owen, W. M., 10 La., 280.  
 Owens, William A., 11 Fla., 48.  
 Oxford, Miss., expedition to, Aug., 1864, 7 Miss., 203.  
 Ox Hill, Va., battle, Sept. 1, 1862, 3, 333; 5, 137-9.  
 Pacific States, proposed league with, 1, 457.  
 Pack's Ferry, W. Va., action, Aug., 1862, 2 W. Va., 61.  
 Paducah, Ky., Forrest's raid, March, 1864, 7 Miss., 193-4; action, March 25, 1864, 8, 233; 9 Ky., 198; reconnoissance to, 8, 41.  
 Page, Richard L., 3, 611; 12, 90.  
 — Thomas J., 105.  
 Palatka, Fla., operations about, 11 Fla., 53; action near, April, 1864, 11 Fla., 86; action, July 16, 1864, 11 Fla., 99-102.  
 Palmer, Francis G., 6, 133-4.  
 — Joseph B., 8, 72, 99, 178, 324-5.  
 Palmetto State, C. S. ironclad, 5, 192; 12, 67.  
 Palo Alto, Miss., action, April, 1863, 7 Miss., 133.  
 Paris, treaty of, 1, 76.  
 Paris Landing, Tenn., action, Nov. 1, 1864, 8, 219-20.  
 Parker, William H., 1, vi; 12, 26, 44, 68, 73; "The Confederate States Navy," 12, 3-115.  
 Parker's Cross-Roads, Tenn., battle, Dec. 31, 1862, 8, 221.  
 Parsons, Mosby M., 9 Mo., 57, 97, 217.  
 Pass Christian, Miss., action, April, 1862, 7 Miss., 68.  
 Patrick Henry, C. S. gunboat, 12, 45, 48, 96.  
 Patrick, Marsh, 8, 176.  
 Patriotism of the South, 12, 340.  
 Patterson, William K., 10 Ark., 303.  
 Patton, George S., 2 W. Va., 26, 27, 28, 58-9, 65, 67, 82-3, 86, 111.  
 Patton, Robert, 8, 184.  
 "Pawnee panic," 3, 125.  
 Payne, William H. F., 2 Md., 131; 3, 645.  
 Payne's Farm, Va., battle, Nov. 28, 1863, 3, 428.  
 Paxton, Elisha F., 3, 644.  
 Pea Ridge, Ark., battle, March, 1862, 9 Mo., 79-83; 10 Ark., 71-86; 11 Tex., 27.  
 Peace conference at Hampton Roads, 1, 513-59; conference, Feb., 1864, 1, 547-3, 36; movement in 1864, 1, 511; negotiations for, 1865, 12, 258; party in the North, 1, 503, 537; proposal of, 1862, 1, 458; proposals of, in 1864, 1, 531, 541.  
 Peachtree Creek, Ga., battle, July 20, 1864, 6, 323-6; 8, 135.  
 Pearce, N. B., 9 Mo., 51; 10 Ark., 17, 21, 41.  
 Pearisburg, Va., action, May 10, 1862, 2 W. Va., 59.  
 Peck, William R., 10 La., 275, 281.  
 Peebles, Thomas H., 8, 39.  
 Pegram, John, 2 W. Va., 19, 22; 3, 54, 527, 648.  
 Pegram, Robert B., 12, 103.  
 — William J., 12, 173.  
 Pelham, John, 3, 375; 7 Ala., 48.  
 Pelican flag, 10 La., 26.  
 Pelot, Thomas P., 6, 286; 12, 79.  
 Pemberton, John C., 1, 674-6; 5, 40, 78-81; 7 Miss., 95, 137, 139-40, 154.  
 Pender, William D., 3, 392; 4, 68, 77, 161, 178, 193, 334.  
 Pendleton, Edward, 10 La., 238-9.  
 — William N., 3, 81, 129, 619; 12, 121, 182.  
 Peninsula of Virginia, operations, 1864, 3, 131; campaign, 1862, 3, 269-80.  
 Pennsylvania campaign, 1863, 3, 395-402; 6, 257-76.  
 Pensacola, Fla., operations about, 1864, 11 Fla., 13, 21; action, Sept. 14, 1864, 11 Fla., 26; evacuation of, 11 Fla., 39.  
 Perrin, Abner M., 5, 415.  
 — James M., 5, 220.  
 Perry, Edward A., 11 Fla., 149, 207.  
 — William F., 7 Ala., 435.  
 Perryville, Ky., battle, Oct. 8, 1862, 8, 149; 9 Ky., 140-50; 10 Ark., 339; preliminary movements, 9 Ky., 136-9; retreat following, 9 Ky., 145-9.  
 Peterkin, Joshua, 12, 171.  
 Peters, William E., 2 W. Va., 59; 2 Md., 130.  
 Petersburg, Va., attack, June 8, 1864, 3, 471; battle, June 16-8, 1864, 3, 475, 4, 263; 8, 211-1; battle, June 21, 1864, 5, 323; battle of the crater, 8, 215; siege of, 3, 516-32; 12, 257, 260; battle, April 2, 1865, 3, 531; evacuation of, 3, 532.  
 Petersburg, W. Va., action, Nov., 1864, 2 W. Va., 71.  
 Pettigrew, James J., 4, 69, 153, 177, 196, 337; 5, 7.  
 Pettus, Edmund W., 7 Ala., 436.  
 — John J., 1, 724.  
 Peyton, Bailie, 8, 18.  
 Philippi, W. Va., action, June 3, 1861, 2 W. Va., 16; 3, 44.  
 Philippine Islands, acquisition of, 1, 245.  
 Pickens, Francis W., 1, 728.  
 Pickett, George E., 4, 219, 279, 416, 475, 650.  
 Pickett's Mill, Ga., battle, May 27, 1864, 6, 310; 10 Ark., 366; 11 Tex., 182-3.  
 Picolata, Fla., action near, Feb. 8, 1865, 11 Fla., 121.  
 Piedmont, Va., battle, June 5, 1864, 3, 477.





- Pierpont, Francis H., 2 W. Va., 12.  
 Pike, Albert, 9 Mo., 77; 10 Ark., 86, 97, 121-6, 408.  
 Pikesville, Md., seizure of U. S. arsenal, 2 Md., 23.  
 Pillow, Gideon J., 9 Ky., 57; 8, 7-9, 13, 325-7.  
 Pilot Knob, Mo., action, Sept. 27, 1864, 9 Mo., 181.  
 Pinckney Island, S. C., action, Aug. 21, 1862, 5, 93.  
 Pine Bluff, Ark., battle, Oct. 25, 1863, 9 Mo., 149-51; 10 Ark., 238-9.  
 Pitman's Ferry, Ark., 10 Ark., 56.  
 Pitzer, A. L., 3, 321.  
 Plane, W. F., 6, 190.  
 Planter, C. S. steamer, abduction of, 5, 78.  
 Pleasant Hill, La., battle, April 9, 1864, 10 La., 144-8; Ark., 241-5; 10 Ark., 244-5; 11 Tex., 131, 203, 205.  
 Plymouth, N. C., capture of, Dec. 10, 1862, 4, 142; April, 1864, 4, 222; naval action, April 19, 1863, 12, 82-3.  
 Poca, W. Va., action, Oct. 23, 1862, 2 W. Va., 69.  
 Pocahontas, Ark., action, April 21, 1862, 10 Ark., 92.  
 Pocotaligo, S. C., action, May, 1862, 5, 76-7; Oct., 1862, 5, 101-6.  
 Pohick Church, Va., expedition, Oct. 3, 1861, 3, 185.  
 Poindexter, Abram W., 12, 176.  
 Point Mountain Pike, W. Va., action, Aug. 11, 1861, 2 W. Va., 41.  
 Point Pleasant, W. Va., Jenkins' raid, June, 1861, 2 W. Va., 25; expedition, Sept., 1862, 2 W. Va., 68; Jenkins' raid, March, 1863, 2 W. Va., 78.  
 Poison Spring, Ark., battle, April 18, 1864, 9 Mo., 163; 10 Ark., 249; 11 Tex., 209.  
 Polignac, C. J. de, 8, 48; 10 La., 129, 141, 314.  
 Polk, Leonidas, 1, 663-5; 6, 314; 7 Miss., 187; 8, 130; 9 Ky., 45, 136-7; 10 La., 193.  
 Polk, Lucius E., 8, 105; 10 Ark., 368, 410.  
 Pollard's Farm, Va., action, May 27, 1864, 2 Md., 120-1.  
 Pope, John, 3, 305; 9 Ky., 89.  
 — John D., 9 Ky., 23-4.  
 Poplar Spring Church, Va., action, Sept. 30, 1861, 3, 325.  
 Porcher, Philip, 5, 251.  
 Port Gibson, Miss., battle, May 1, 1863, 7 Miss., 135-6; 9 Mo., 117.  
 Port Hudson, La., naval attack, March, 1863, 10 La., 109-12; siege, 1863, 8, 88; 10 La., 117-20; action, April, 1864, 10 La., 135.  
 Port Lavaca, engagement, Oct., 1862, 11 Tex., 76.  
 Port Republic, Va., battle, June 9, 1862, 3, 261; action, Sept., 1864, 3, 500.  
 Port Royal, S. C., action, Nov. 7, 1861, 5, 31-5; 6, 58; 12, 18.  
 Port Royal Ferry, S. C., action, Jan. 1, 1862, 5, 30.  
 Porter, George C., 8, 102.  
 — George M., 8, 220.  
 — James D., 1, xi; 8, 148; "Tennessee," 8.  
 Porter, John C., 9 Mo., 113-4.  
 Porter, John L., 12, 31, 34.  
 — Thomas K., 8, 21, 22, 25, 26.  
 — Thomas K., 8, 260-4.  
 — William H., 8, 238.  
 Porterfield, George A., 2 W. Va., 7, 14-7; 3, 42, 41-5.  
 Portland, Me., naval action, June 27, 1863, 12, 105.  
 Posey Carnot, 7 Miss., 120, 265.  
 Potomac River, operations on, 1861, 3, 94, 178, 193.  
 Powell, Samuel, 8, 17.  
 Power, J. L., 7 Miss., 229.  
 Prairie D'Ane, Ark., battle, April 8, 1864, 10 Ark., 242.  
 Prairie Grove, Ark., battle, Dec. 7, 1862, 9 Mo., 107-10; 10 Ark., 144-52.  
 Presidential election 1860, popular vote, 7 Ala., 21-2.  
 Preston, John S., 5, 416.  
 — William, 9 Ky., 32, 170, 171-5, 175-6, 179-81, 183, 253; 10 Ark., 331.  
 Price, Joseph, 12, 79-80.  
 — Sterling, 9 Mo., 20, 36, 40, 46, 63-72, 75, 84, 91, 179-96, 196, 218; 10 Ark., 18, 23, 65, 68, 90, 119, 175, 183, 236, 272.  
 Princeton, Ark., skirmish, Dec., 1863, 10 Ark., 230.  
 Princeton, W. Va., action, May, 1862, 2 W. Va., 59.  
 Prison camps, Northern, 1, 489.  
 Prisoners, treatment of, 12, 147; by U. S., 1, 409.  
 Pryor, Roger A., 3, 654.  
 Puerto Rico, annexation of, 1, 245.  
 Pulaski, Tenn., action, Sept., 1864, 8, 245; Dec., 1864, 6, 373.  
 Quantrell, William C., 9 Mo., 187.  
 Quarles, W. A., 8, 120, 160, 227-9.  
 Queen City, U. S. gunboat, capture, June 23, 1864, 10 Ark., 270.  
 Queen of the West, U. S. ironclad, 7 Miss., 123; 8, 86.  
 Rains, Gabriel J., 4, 339.  
 — James E., 8, 60, 329-30.  
 — James S., 9 Mo., 101.  
 Raleigh, C. S. gunboat, 12, 40-3, 45, 55.  
 Ramsay, David, 5, 92, 240.  
 — H. A., 12, 13, 33.  
 Ramseur, Stephen D., 3, 481, 485; 4, 164, 181, 241, 256-60, 341.  
 Randal, Horace, 11 Tex., 125, 251.  
 Randall, James K., 2 Md., 46.  
 Randolph, George, 1, 607; 3, 136.  
 Rankin, William A., 7 Miss., 47.  
 Ransom, Matthew W., 4, 125, 243.  
 — Robert, 4, 138, 195, 255, 245.  
 Rappahannock River, Va., operations, 1862, 3, 317; retreat from, 1862, 2 Md., 65; naval action, Aug. 20, 1863, 12, 74.  
 Rappahannock Bridge, Va., battle, Nov. 7, 1863, 3, 427; 10 La., 365.  
 Rappahannock Station, Va., action, Aug. 23, 1862, 5, 123.  
 Rawls' Mill, S. C., action, Nov. 2, 1862, 4, 142.  
 Raymond, Miss., battle, May 12, 1863, 7 Miss., 138; 8, 80; 11 Tex., 169.  
 Read, Charles W., 12, 13, 16, 93-5, 106.  
 Reagan, John H., 1, 614-6.  
 Reams' Station, Va., battle, June 22, 1864, 3, 518; Aug. 21, 1864, 3, 524; 4, 276.  
 Reconstruction, 1, 482, 509; history of, 12, 278-323.



- Rector, Henry M., 1, 716-7; 10 Ark., 3, 5.  
 Red River campaign, 1864, La., 10 Ark., 235-7; 10 La., 126-55; 12, 246.  
 Reed, Wylie M., 7 Miss., 194.  
 Religion in the army, 8, 272-80; 12, 149-90.  
 Religious sentiment of the South, 8, 269-80.  
 Republican party, birth of, 1, 289, 292.  
 Resaca, Ga., battle, May 15, 1864, 6, 305; 8, 127.  
 Results of the war, 12, 264.  
 Revival, the great, 12, 163.  
 Reynolds, Alexander W., 3, 655.  
 — Daniel H., 10 Ark., 365, 411.  
 — J. M., 8, 225.  
 — Thomas C., 9 Mo., 14, 140.  
 Rice, Horace, 8, 158.  
 — Thomas, 10 La., 233, 273.  
 Rich Mountain, W. Va., action, July 11, 1861, 2 W. Va., 20; 3, 46-50; 6, 65.  
 Richmond, Ky., battle, Aug. 30, 1862, 8, 46; 9 Ky., 125; 10 Ark., 337; 11 Tex., 164.  
 Richmond, Va., first campaign against, 12, 215; campaign, 1864, 3, 463-75; 12, 218-52; defense of, 12, 227, 231, 235; Kilpatrick and Dahlgren's raid, 2 Md., 116-9; removal of capital to, 1, 400; Sheridan's raid, May, 1864, 2 Md., 119-20.  
 Riddick, R. H., 4, 104.  
 Ringgold Gap, Ga., battle, Nov. 27, 1863, 6, 271-6; 8, 120; 10 Ark., 362; 11 Tex., 181.  
 Rio Grande River, expedition to, Oct., 1863, 11 Tex., 119; Ford's expedition, 11 Tex., 122.  
 Ripley, Roswell S., 5, 15, 29, 58, 79, 418.  
 Rivers' Bridge, S. C., action, Feb. 3, 1865, 5, 372.  
 Rives, B. A., 9 Mo., 82.  
 Roane, John S., 10 Ark., 97, 99, 104, 412.  
 Roanoke Island, N. C., battle, Feb. 7-8, 1862, 4, 34; 12, 21-4; naval expedition, 12, 19.  
 Roberts, O. M., 1, xiii; 11 Tex., 14, 17; "Texas," 11.  
 Roberts, William P., 4, 348.  
 Robertson, Beverly H., 3, 656.  
 — Felix H., 9 Ky., 161, 164; 11 Tex., 252.  
 — Jerome B., biog., 11 Tex., 253.  
 — Michael S., 2 Md., 83.  
 Roby, F. M., 12, 56.  
 Rockville, Md., action, July, 1864, 2 Md., 128; 3, 184.  
 Rocky Face, Ga., actions, May, 1864, 6, 303-4; 8, 126.  
 Roddey, Philip D., 7 Ala., 439.  
 Rodes, R. E., 3, 386, 497; 7 Ala., 441.  
 Rodgers, James G., 6, 175.  
 Rogers, W. P., 11 Tex., 162.  
 Rogersville, Tenn., action, Dec. 12, 1864, 3, 533; 6, 267.  
 Romney, W. Va., actions, 1861, 2 W. Va., 24, 21, 49; expedition, June, 1861, 3, 73; operations, July, 1861, 2 W. Va., 25; Imboden's raid, 1862, 2 W. Va., 70.  
 Romney and Bath, W. Va., Jackson's campaign, Jan., 1862, 2 W. Va., 53-5; 3, 197.  
 Rosecrans, William S., 6, 243; 9 Ky., 149.  
 Ross, George W., 6, 242.  
 — Lawrence S., 7 Miss., 193; 11 Tex., 254.  
 Ross, William J., 2 Md., 26.  
 Rosser, Thomas L., 2 W. Va., 90-1, 163, 3, 181, 183, 502, 537, 541, 556, 658; 12, 366, 544-5.  
 Rousseau, Lawrence, 12, 9.  
 Rousseau's raid in Alabama, July, 1864, 6, 321-2; 7 Ala., 43.  
 Rowan, A. S., 12, 366.  
 Rude's Hill, Va., action, Nov. 16, 1863, 2 W. Va., 87; Sept., 1864, 3, 499; Nov., 1864, 3, 512; March, 1865, 3, 511.  
 Kudler, A. F., 6, 271.  
 Ruff, S. Z., 6, 265.  
 Ruggles, Daniel, 3, 660.  
 Russell, R. M., 8, 12.  
 — R. M., 8, 37, 230.  
 — Whiteford D., 6, 292.  
 Rust, Albert, 3, 159, 163, 165; 10 Ark., 111, 296, 414.  
 Ryan, William H., 5, 240.  
 Sabine Pass, Tex., evacuation, Sept. 23, 1862, 11 Tex., 72; operations near, Jan. 21, 1863, 11 Tex., 97; action, April 18, 1863, 11 Tex., 102; battle, Sept. 8, 1863, 11 Tex., 106-10.  
 Sacramento, Ky., action, Dec. 23, 1861, 9 Ky., 97.  
 Saffell, R. M., 8, 176.  
 Sailor's Creek, Va., battle, April 6, 1865, 3, 547, 552.  
 St. Augustine, Fla., operations near, 1864, 11 Fla., 120.  
 St. Charles, Ark., naval battle, June, 1862, 8, 253-9; 10 Ark., 110.  
 St. John, Isaac M., 1, 622.  
 St. John's Bluff, Fla., action, 1862, 11 Fla., 43.  
 St. John's River, Fla., operations on, 11 Fla., 53, 84, 87, 102.  
 St. Joseph Island, Tex., action, Nov., 1863, 11 Tex., 120.  
 St. Louis, Mo., capture of State militia, 10 Ark., 19; arsenal, 9 Mo., 25; street conflicts, 1861, 9 Mo., 34.  
 St. Mary's River, Fla., Higginson's raid, 6, 106.  
 Sakatonchee Creek, Miss., battle, Feb. 21, 1864, 7 Miss., 190; 8, 229.  
 Sale, John B., 1, 627-8.  
 Salem, Miss., action, Oct. 8, 1863, 7 Miss., 165.  
 Salem, Va., actions near, June, 1864, 3, 178.  
 Sanders, C. C., 6, 192.  
 — John C. C., 7 Ala., 413.  
 Sandy Ridge, N. C., skirmishes, 1863, 4, 151, 153.  
 Santa Rosa Island, Fla., action, Oct. 3, 1861, 6, 78-80; 11 Fla., 27.  
 Sappony Church, Va., battle, July 23, 1864, 5, 327.  
 Savage, John H., 8, 52, 67, 180.  
 Savage Station, Va., battle, June 29, 1862, 5, 66-9; 3, 295.  
 Savannah, C. S. ironclad, 6, 370.  
 Savannah, Ga., affairs at, 1861, 6, 55-63; defensive operations, 6, 84-6; Federal investment, 6, 367-70; defenses of, 1863, 6, 205-6; operations, 6, 101-4.  
 Savannah Harbor, action, Dec. 23, 1861, 6, 62.  
 Saye, Richard W., 6, 219.  
 Scales, Alfred M., 4, 178, 319.  
 — Dabney M., 8, 255-7.



- Scammon, E. P., capture of, 2 W. Va., 92.  
 Scary Creek, W. Va., action, July 17, 1864, 2 W. Va., 28-9; 3, 61.  
 Scharf, J. Thomas, 12, 4, 10, 24, 65, 76.  
 Schofield, J. M., 10 Ark., 25, 194.  
 Schwartz, Augustus F., 2 Md., 49.  
 Scott, Dred, case, 1, 297; 7 Ala., 18.  
 — John S., 9 Ky., 124, 176.  
 — Otho, 2 Md., 26.  
 — Thomas M., 10 La., 197, 316.  
 — T. Parkin, 2 Md., 37.  
 — Winfield, 1, 326, 348, 420; 3, 97.  
 Screven, John H., 5, 104.  
 Scurry, W. R., 11 Tex., 135, 256.  
 Seabrook Island, S. C., action, Feb. 8, 1864, 5, 299.  
 Searcy, Anderson, 8, 175.  
 Searcy, Ark., operations about, 1862, 10 Ark., 93; action, 1864, 9 Mo., 175.  
 Sears, Claudius W., 7 Miss., 217, 218-9, 266.  
 Secession, Justification of the South in, 1, 2-58; opinions of Northern press, 7 Ala., 30-2; right of, 7 Ala., 23, 26-33; 9 Ky., 7-12; the separate act of States, 1, 45-53.  
 Secessionville, S. C., battle, June 16, 1862, 5, 85-92.  
 Sectionalism, cause of disunion, 1, 29-39; origin of, 1, 250.  
 Sedalia, Mo., action, Oct. 15, 1864, 9 Mo., 185.  
 Seddon, James Alexander, 1, 609.  
 Selma, Ala., Wilson's raid to, 7 Ala., 46.  
 — C. S. gunboat, 12, 86-8.  
 Seminole war, 1, 195.  
 Semmes, Paul J., 6, 215, 435.  
 — Raphael, 1, 713-5; 2 Md., 156; 7 Ala., 49; 12, 94, 100-2.  
 Sequestration law, 1, 424, 453.  
 Seven Days' battles, Va., June, 1862, 3, 281-303; 4, 71, 76; 5, 55-55; 6, 165-76; 8, 184-7.  
 Seven Pines, Va., battle, May 31-June 1, 1862, 3, 277-80; 4, 62; 5, 49-56; 6, 161-3; 8, 182.  
 Seward, William H., 1, 375, 380.  
 Sewell Mountain, W. Va., operations, Sept. to Oct., 1861, 2 W. Va., 39, 42-3.  
 Sewell's Point, Va., naval actions, May, 1861, 3, 130; 6, 25; 12, 50.  
 Shackelford, J. C., 8, 186.  
 Shaler, James R., 9 Mo., 24, 80.  
 — N. S., 9 Ky., 208.  
 Shanks, David, 9 Mo., 182.  
 Sharp, Jacob H., 7 Miss., 216, 218, 227, 267.  
 Sharpsburg, Md., battle, Sept. 17, 1862, 3, 346-58; 4, 118; 5, 151-60; 6, 187-94; 8, 192; 11 Tex., 214.  
 Shaver, Robert G., 10 Ark., 303, 333.  
 Shaw, H. M., 4, 291.  
 Sheetz, George F., 2 W. Va., 55, 105.  
 Shelby, Joseph O., 9 Mo., 97, 114, 139-40, 149, 160-1, 172, 179-96, 194, 199-201, 221; 10 Ark., 131, 256.  
 Shelley, Charles M., 7 Ala., 414.  
 Shenandoah, C. S. cruiser, 12, 103.  
 Shenandoah Valley campaign, 1861, 2 Md., 52-3; 3, 72; campaign, 1862, 2 Md., 67-84; 3, 214-8; 12, 250; Sigel's raid, 1861, 2 W. Va., 95, 97-8; campaign, 1861, 3, 484-513; campaign, 1865, 3, 537; final operations, 3, 543-5.  
 Shepard, S. G., 8, 200.  
 Shepherdstown, W. Va., battle, Sept. 19, 1862, 5, 161-3; action near, Aug. 25, 1864, 3, 492.  
 Sheridan, Philip H., 3, 509-10.  
 Sherman, W. T., 6, 299, 370; 8, 171; 9 Ky., 41, 46.  
 Shiloh, Tenn., battle, April 6-7, 1862, 6, 94; 7 Miss., 43-51; 8, 33; 9 Ky., 66-73; 10 La., 165; 10 Ark., 330-4; 11 Tex., 158.  
 Ship Island, Miss., operations, July, 1861, 7 Miss., 67.  
 Ship's Gap, Ga., battle, Oct. 16, 1864, 5, 341; 6, 359.  
 Shorter, John G., 1, 716.  
 Shoup, Francis A., 11 Fla., 208.  
 Shy, W. W., 8, 167.  
 Sibley, Henry H., 10 La., 315.  
 Simkins, J. C., 5, 240.  
 Summs, Charles C., 12, 13.  
 — James P., 6, 376, 436.  
 — William E., 9 Ky., 32.  
 Simons, James, 5, 16.  
 Simonton, John M., 7 Miss., 38.  
 Simpson, John M., 10 Ark., 83.  
 Singeltary, G. B., 4, 91.  
 Slack, William Y., 9 Mo., 82.  
 Slash Church (see Hanover C. H.).  
 Slaughter, James E., 3, 662.  
 — J. T., 6, 269-70.  
 — W. M., 6, 215.  
 Slaughter's Mountain (see Cedar Run).  
 Slave trade, 1, 258.  
 Slavery, agitation against, 1, 205-16, 263; Alabama resolutions, 1860, 7 Ala., 17; history of, 1, 253; in the North, 1, 206-9, 254; in the territories, 1, 271-4; origin of, in America, 2 Md., 4.  
 Slemons, William F., 9 Mo., 193; 10 Ark., 274, 294.  
 Slidell, John, 1, 413.  
 Slinghoff, Fielder C., 2 Md., 49.  
 Smith, Baxter, 8, 70.  
 — Caraway, 11 Fla., 63.  
 — E. Kirby, 1, 635-7; 2 Md., 55; 3, 70, 83; 9 Ky., 115-7; 10 Ark., 173, 263, 275, 289; 10 La., 131, 151.  
 Smith, P. T., 8, 62.  
 — G. A., 6, 372.  
 — Gustavus W., 1, 607-8; 3, 278-80; 6, 313, 369; 9 Ky., 254.  
 Smith, Jabez M., 10 Ark., 209.  
 — James A., 7 Miss., 209.  
 — Levi B., 6, 162, 171, 190.  
 — M. L., 7 Miss., 70, 102.  
 — M. T., 4, 194.  
 — Martin L., 10 La., 64; 11 Fla., 210.  
 — Melancthon, 7 Ala., 50; 8, 12, 13, 42.  
 — Preston, 8, 47, 101, 341-2.  
 — Robert A., 6, 47, 109, 170.  
 — Robert C., 2 Md., 112.  
 — Robert F., 6, 190.  
 — Thomas B., 8, 63-4.  
 — Thomas B., 8, 110, 332-3.  
 — William, 1, 735; 4, 24.  
 — William D., 6, 437.  
 Smith's Kentucky campaign, 9 Ky., 116.  
 Snead, Thomas L. L., 2 W. Va., 20.  
 — Thomas L., 10 Ark., 32.  
 Snicker's Gap, Va., action, July 17, 1864, 3, 485.  
 Snowden, Nicholas, 2 Md., 83.  
 — Robert H., 8, 39.  
 Sorrel, G. Moxley, 6, 376, 439.



Soulé, Pierre, 10 La., 17, 49.  
 South Anna, Va., action near, June 1, 1861, 2 Md., 121-2.  
 South Carolina, campaign of 1865, 5, 354-71; cession of territory by, 1, 121; Federal coast raids, 5, 201-2; Federal operations, 1861, 5, 31-5; military districts, 1861, 5, 37; organization of Hardee's army, 1865, 5, 359-60; organization of troops in, 1862, 5, 99-101; secession of, 1, 335-9; 5, 4-6; spirit of 1861, 5, 20.  
 South Carolina troops: First organization, 5, 12-3; ordered to Virginia, 1861, 5, 301; militia organization, 5, 4-5.  
 At Aldie and Middleburg, 5, 261; at Appomattox, 5, 352; in Atlanta campaign, 5, 338-40; at Averasboro, 5, 368; at Beaver Dam, Va., 5, 58; at Bentonville, 5, 370; at bombardment of Fort Sumter, 5, 15-9; at Bristoe and Mine Run, 5, 313; at Burgess' Mill, 5, 351; at Cedar Creek, 5, 351; at Chancellorsville, 5, 217-21; on Charleston and Savannah line, 1861, 5, 36; at Charleston Harbor, April 7, 1863, 5, 197-200; at Chickamauga, 5, 283-90; on the coast, 1861, 5, 29-30; at Cold Harbor, 5, 320; at Corinth, Miss., 5, 111; at the Crater, 5, 321-6; at Drewry's Bluff, 5, 322; at Eltham's Landing, 5, 47-8; at Ezra Church, 5, 332; at Fort Fisher, 5, 352; at Fort Harrison, 5, 319; at Franklin, Tenn., 5, 313; at Frayser's Farm, 5, 70-3; at Fredericksburg, 5, 170-9; at Fussell's Mill, Va., 5, 347; at Gaines' Mill, 5, 59-64; at Gettysburg, 5, 257-8, 261-76; at Harper's Ferry, 5, 147-50; at Honey Hill, 5, 354-7; at Jackson, Miss., 5, 201-8; on James Island, April, 1862, 5, 42; at Jackson, Miss., 5, 209, 211-2; at Jonesboro, 5, 334-40; at Lenoir's Station, Tenn., 5, 312; at Kinston, N. C., 5, 167-10; at Knoxville, Tenn., 5, 312; at Malvern Hill, 5, 74-5; at Manassas, 1861, 5, 21-8; at Manassas, 1862, 5, 126-36; at Marye's Hill, 5, 174-6; in Maryland, 1862, 5, 141; at Missionary Ridge, 5, 310, 313; at Morris Island, 5, 229-30; at Murfreesboro, 5, 112-9; at Nance's Shop, 5, 321; at New Market Heights, 5, 336; at New Market Road, 5, 350; at Ox Hill, 5, 138; at Petersburg, 5, 322, 250; at Old Pocotaligo, 5, 101-5; at Port Royal, 5, 32; at Port Royal Ferry, 5, 39; at Port Walthall Junction, 5, 321; at Reams' Station, 5, 348; at Savage Station, 5, 65; at Secessionville, 5, 85-92; at Seven Pines, 5, 51-6; at Sharpsburg, 5, 154-60; at Shepherdstown, 5, 162; at Ship's Gap, Ga., 5, 311; in South Carolina, Jan., 1863, 5, 188-9; at South Mountain, 5, 143-6; at Spottsylvania C. H., 3, 152; 5, 318; at Swift Creek, 5, 321; in the army of Tennessee, 5, 258; at Trevilian Station, 5, 321; in Virginia, 1865, 5, 316; at Battery Wagner, 5, 231-4, 236, 247; at Weldon railroad, Va., 5, 317; at the Wilderness, 5, 314; at Williamsburg, 5, 41-6; at Wolf's Valley, 5, 311; at Wilmington and Kinston, 5, 371.  
 Artillery: 1st reg., 5, 9; 1st regulars, 5, 229, 242; Bachman's, 5, 125, 178;

Beaufort, 5, 32, 101-2; Boyce's, 5, 129, 156; Charleston battalion, 5, 85-90, 237; Eutaw battalion, 5, 85-90; Garden's, 5, 135; German artillery, 5, 32; Har's, 5, 67, 143, 165, 261-2; Lamar's reg., 5, 89-90; McIntosh's, 5, 58, 130, 159; Pee Dee, 5, 86, 90; Rhett's, 5, 58, 132, 178.  
 Cavalry: 1st, 5, 179-87, 259-60, 313; 2d, 5, 143, 165, 179-87, 259-60, 313; 3d, 5, 169; 6th, 5, 299; 1st battalion, 5, 76; Morgan's battalion, 5, 102; Rutledge mounted riflemen, 5, 76, 103.  
 Infantry: 1st, 5, 59-62, 85-90, 229; 1st (Gregg's), 5, 12, 127-31, 157-9, 170-2, 217, 264-6; 1st rifles, 5, 9, 60-2; 2d, 5, 26, 57, 67, 154, 173-8, 269-71, 289-315; 3d, 5, 57, 67, 118, 154, 173-8; 4th, 5, 25, 40; 5th, 5, 27, 46, 157-8; 6th, 5, 46, 53-4, 157-8; 7th, 5, 67, 118, 154, 173-8, 269-71, 289; 8th, 5, 26, 118, 154, 173-8, 269-71, 289; 10th, 5, 111-9, 281-90, 328-45; 11th, 5, 32, 323; 12th, 5, 31, 61-2, 127-31, 159, 170-2, 264-6; 13th, 5, 125-31, 159, 170-2, 264-6; 14th, 5, 61-2, 71, 127-31, 163, 264-6; 15th, 5, 126, 124, 175-6, 269-71, 289; 16th, 5, 203-8, 328-45; 17th, 5, 114-5, 156-7, 323; 18th, 5, 114-5, 156-7; 19th, 5, 111-9, 284-90, 328-45; 20th, 5, 219; 21st, 5, 229, 323; 22d, 5, 86-90, 144-5, 156-7, 323; 23d, 5, 144-5, 156-7, 323; 24th, 5, 81, 85-90, 203-8, 285-90, 328-45; 25th, 5, 323; 26th, 5, 323; 27th, 5, 323; Orr's rifles, 5, 127-31, 159, 171; Palmetto sharpshooters, 5, 53-4, 71-2, 134, 157-8; 3d battalion, 5, 269-71, 289; 7th battalion, 5, 101, 323.  
 Legions: Hampton, 5, 25, 40, 41, 48, 55, 63, 134, 211; Holcombe, 5, 131, 141-5. South Mills, N. C., action, April 19, 1862, 4, 41; 6, 96-7.  
 South Mountain, Md., battles, Sept. 14, 1862, 3, 342-3; 4, 109; 5, 143-6; 6, 181.  
 Southern States, cessions to the United States, 1, 125; factor in territorial expansion, 1, 59-216; future of, 12, 313; losses by war, 12, 270; national patriotism of, 1, 69; 12, 366; resources and achievements, 12, 323-7.  
 Southwest Creek, N. C., action, Dec. 13, 1862, 4, 143; 5, 107.  
 Spain, relation to the United States, 1, 130.  
 Spanish Fort, Ala., siege of, 7 La., 45-6; 10 La., 158.  
 Spanish war, 1898, the South in the, 1, 215-6; 12, 360.  
 Sparta, Tenn., Morgan's raid to, April, 1862, 9 Ky., 91-5.  
 Spencer, W. Va., action, Sept., 1862, 2 W. Va., 63.  
 Spottswood, C. F. M., 12, 30.  
 Spottsylvania C. H., Va., battles, May, 1864, 3, 415-57; 4, 236-43; 5, 318-20.  
 Springfield, Mo., skirmish, 1861, 9 Mo., 70; action, Jan. 8, 1863, 9 Mo., 111-2.  
 Spring Hill, Tenn., battle, Nov. 29, 1864, 8, 115-154.  
 Squires, M. T., 10 La., 38.  
 Staiford, Leroy A., 10 La., 225, 268, 272, 317.  
 Stanton, Edwin M., 1, 491.  
 — S. S., 8, 16, 101, 128.  
 Star of the West, fired upon, Jan. 9, 1861, 1, 319, 5, 10-1.  
 Starke, Peter B., 7 Miss., 192-3, 270.  
 — William E., 3, 62; 10 La., 2-9.





- Starnes, J. W., 8, 220.  
 State rights, 1, 5.  
 Statehood. Southern idea of, 1, 296.  
 States, cession of lands by, 1, 72-127;  
 equality and sovereignty of, 1, 12-5;  
 relation to the Union, 1, 22-9.  
 Steele, Frederick, 10 Ark., 237.  
 — William, 10 Ark., 196; 11 Tex., 257.  
 Steen, Alexander E., 9 Mo., 51, 110.  
 Stephens, Alexander H., 1, 305, 361,  
 551-9, 589-97; 6, 5, 355.  
 Steuart, George H., 2 Md., 43, 47, 49, 53,  
 56, 68, 77, 108, 114, 167; 3, 239, 243.  
 Stevens, Clement H., 5, 16, 27, 419.  
 — P. F., 5, 10, 40.  
 — Walter H., 3, 664.  
 Stevenson, Carter L., 2 W. Va., 32; 3,  
 153, 665; 7 Miss., 143, 155.  
 Stewart, Alexander P., 1, 693-5; 8, 13, 66,  
 133, 138, 177, 279; 12, 182.  
 Stewart, D. Boston, 2 W. Va., 89.  
 — Robert M., 9 Mo., 11.  
 Stiles, Robert, 12, 156.  
 Stokes, M. S., 4, 78.  
 Stone, John M., 7 Miss., 119, 182.  
 Stonewall, C. S. cruiser, 12, 105.  
 Stonewall Jackson, C. S. ram, 12, 61.  
 Stoneman's raid in S. W. Va., Dec., 1864,  
 3, 533.  
 Stone's River (see Murfreesboro).  
 Stono River, S. C., Federal expedition,  
 May, 1862, 5, 83.  
 Stony Creek, Va., action, Oct., 1864, 3,  
 503.  
 Stout, S. H., 8, 265-7.  
 Stovall, M. A., 6, 111, 441.  
 Strahl, O. F., 8, 36, 159, 324-5.  
 Straton, William, 2 W. Va., 61.  
 Streight's raid, 1863, 6, 209-11; 8, 227; 9  
 Ky., 172; 7 Ala., 10.  
 Stuart, J. E. B., 2 Md., 56; 3, 27, 69, 81,  
 182-3, 184, 195, 282, 293, 319, 399-9, 396, 446,  
 455, 667; 12, 171.  
 Suffolk, N. C., action, March 9, 1864, 4,  
 222.  
 Sugar Creek, Mo., action, Feb., 1862, 9  
 Mo., 76; 10 Ark., 70.  
 Sugar Leaf, N. C., action, 1865, 4, 233.  
 Sugg, Cyrus A., 8, 107, 118.  
 Sullivan's Island, S. C., 5, 19.  
 Sulphur Springs, Va., action, Aug. 23-5,  
 1862, 3, 321.  
 Sulphur Trestle, Ala., action, Sept., 1864,  
 7 Ala., 43; 8, 245.  
 Summersville, W. Va., action, July,  
 1862, 2 W. Va., 60-1.  
 Sumter, C. S. cruiser, 12, 99-100.  
 Surrender, events following, 12, 269.  
 Swan Quarter, N. C., skirmishes near,  
 May 4, 1863, 4, 151.  
 Swann, T. B., 2 W. Va., 26, 29.  
 Sykes, W. L., 7 Miss., 174.  
 Taliaferro, William B., 3, 124, 232, 235,  
 670.  
 Tallahassee, C. S. cruiser, 12, 104.  
 Tallahatchie River, Miss., skirmishes  
 on, 1864, 7 Miss., 203.  
 Tampa Bay, Fla., action, Oct. 10, 1861,  
 11 Fla., 26.  
 Tappan, J. C., 10 Ark., 61, 416.  
 Tatam, William, 6, 219.  
 Tattnall, Josiah, 5, 22; 6, 55, 58-9, 369; 11,  
 9, 18, 50.  
 Taylor, George E., 6, 376.  
 Taylor, Jesse, 8, 19, 260.  
 — John M., 8, 53.  
 — John S., 12, 23.  
 — Richard, 1, 683-6; 7 Miss., 205, 228;  
 10 La., 75, 94, 114, 131, 135-59, 151, 156-7,  
 214; 12, 140.  
 Taylor, Thomas H., 9 Ky., 34.  
 — W. H., 7 Miss., 115-6.  
 — Walter H., 2 W. Va., 40; 3, 155.  
 Teche Bayou, La., action, Nov. 3, 1862,  
 10 La., 81; action, Jan., 1863, 10 La., 83;  
 action, April, 1863, 10 La., 90; expedi-  
 tion, Oct., 1863, 10 La., 104.  
 Tennessee, convention, 8, 4; early history,  
 8, 3; Federal military govern-  
 ment, 8, 112; Federal outrages in, 8,  
 112, 232; loyalty of, 8, 121-3, 253; naval  
 officers, 8, 254-68; provisional army of,  
 8, 8; State military organization, 8,  
 7; Union with Confederate States, 8, 6.  
 Tennessee, C. S. ironclad, 12, 89-91.  
 Tennessee, east, Federal campaign for,  
 9 Ky., 85; operations in, 1862, 9 Ky.,  
 87-8; Longstreet's campaign, 6, 264-7.  
 Tennessee, Forrest's campaigns in,  
 July, 1862, 8, 217, 218; Dec., 1862, 8, 211;  
 Dec., 1863, 8, 228; March to April, 1864,  
 7 Miss., 193; 8, 231; Sept., 1864, 7 Miss.,  
 206; Oct. to Nov., 1864, 7 Miss., 206; 8,  
 243-51; 1864, 8, 243.  
 Tennessee, Hood's campaign, 6, 372-3;  
 8, 145.  
 Tennessee troops. Chaplains, list of,  
 8, 281; losses in Atlanta campaign, 8,  
 134, 136; medical department, 8, 265-8;  
 religious work, 8, 269-82.  
 At Atlanta, 8, 136; at Belmont, 8, 11;  
 at Bentonville, 8, 174-6; at Big Black  
 bridge, 8, 86; at Brice's Cross-Roads,  
 8, 235-8; in Carolina campaign, 8, 173-8;  
 at Cedar Run, 8, 188; at Cemetery  
 Hill, 8, 201; at Chaffin's Farm, Va., 8,  
 215; at Champion's Hill, 8, 83; at  
 Chancellorsville, 8, 197, 198; at Chick-  
 amauga, 8, 92, 93, 94; at Chickasaw  
 Bayou, 8, 79; at Cold Harbor, 8, 206;  
 at Drewry's Bluff, 8, 207-11; at Ezra  
 Chapel, 8, 123-9; at Falling Waters, 8,  
 203-4; with Forrest, 8, 231, 213-8; at  
 Fort Donelson, 8, 20, 23-7; at Franklin,  
 8, 154, 160; at Fredericksburg, 8, 125,  
 196; at Harper's Ferry, 8, 192; at Har-  
 risburg, Miss., 8, 238-41; in Hood's  
 North Georgia campaign, 8, 114, 114;  
 at Island No. 10, 8, 20; at Jonesboro,  
 8, 140-3; at Kenesaw Mt., 8, 14, 12; in  
 Knoxville campaign, 8, 123; at Manas-  
 sas, 1862, 8, 189-91; at Memphis, 8, 212;  
 at Mill Creek Gap, Ga., 8, 126; at Mis-  
 sionary Ridge, 8, 114-20; in Mississippi,  
 1865, 8, 251; at Murfreesboro, 8, 18, 69;  
 at New Madrid, 8, 10, 28; rear guard  
 from Nashville, 8, 169; at Okolona, 3,  
 230; at Parker's Cross-Roads, 8, 222;  
 in Peninsular campaign, 8, 181; at Per-  
 ryville, 8, 59; at Petersburg, battle, 8,  
 212, 213; at Port Hudson, 8, 89; at Pow-  
 der Springs, Ga., 8, 131; at Raymond,  
 Miss., 8, 89; at Resaca, 8, 127; at Rich-  
 mond, Ky., 8, 48; in Seven Days' bat-  
 tles, 8, 185-7; at Seven Pines, 8, 184;  
 at Sharpshooter, 8, 191-3; at Shepherds-  
 town, 8, 134; at Shiloh, 8, 12, 13, 2, 41;  
 at Spring Hill, 8, 145-54; at Thomp-



- son's Station, 8, 224; in Tullahoma campaign, 8, 90; at Tupelo, 1865, 8, 168; at Utoy Creek, 8, 140; at Varnell Station, 8, 127; at Vicksburg, 8, 83, 86, 87; in Virginia, 1865, 8, 215, 216; in West Virginia, 8, 179; at the Wilderness, 8, 204-6; at Yazoo City, 8, 230, 231.
- Artillery: 1st reg., heavy, 8, 87; Carnes', 8, 97; Freeman's, 8, 226; Graves', 8, 25; Maney's, 8, 21, 25; Morton's, 8, 228, 245; Porter's, 8, 25, 263-4; Taylor's, 8, 19; White's, 8, 70; Wright's, 8, 72.
- Cavalry: General account of, 8, 215-53; 1st Confederate, 8, 70; 3d, 8, 47; 4th, 8, 70; 7th, 8, 43; 14th, 8, 231; 16th, 8, 246; Forrest's reg., 8, 241.
- Infantry: 1st, 8, 52, 69, 102, 117, 122, 122, 180, 195; 2d, 8, 12; 3d, 8, 79, 82, 121; 4th, 8, 36, 53, 69; 5th, 8, 36, 54; 6th, 8, 53, 102; 7th, 8, 181; 8th, 8, 68; 9th, 8, 53, 102; 10th, 8, 21, 82, 117; 12th, 8, 12, 42; 13th, 8, 12, 36, 42, 126, 132; 15th, 8, 117; 16th, 8, 52, 67; 17th, 8, 16, 61; 18th, 8, 22, 74; 19th, 8, 16, 38, 67; 20th, 8, 16, 17, 63, 71, 72, 74, 117; 22d, 8, 12; 23d, 8, 39; 24th, 8, 39; 25th, 8, 16; 26th, 8, 73, 74; 27th, 8, 39, 53, 102, 117, 122, 132; 28th, 8, 74; 29th, 8, 17; 30th, 8, 25, 79, 82, 117, 142; 32d, 8, 74; 33d, 8, 36, 42, 136; 35th, 8, 39; 37th, 8, 117; 38th, 8, 63; 39th, 8, 86; 42d, 8, 21; 44th, 8, 40, 85, 212; 47th, 8, 41; 48th, 8, 21; 49th, 8, 139; 50th, 8, 118; 51st, 8, 67; 53d, 8, 21, 139; 55th, 8, 40; 60th, 8, 79; 61st, 8, 86; 62d, 8, 80; 15th, 8, 24, 43, 128, 132, 176; 1st battalion, 8, 117.
- Tennessee, Wheeler's raid, Aug., 1864, 6, 314-5.
- Terre Noire, Ark., action, April, 1862, 10 Ark., 210-1.
- Terrill, James B., 12, 125; 3, 189, 672.
- Territorial expansion of the U. S., 1, 59-216.
- Terry, Francis A., 10 Ark., 258.
- William, 3, 673.
- William R., 3, 674.
- Tew, Charles C., 4, 331; 5, 160.
- Texas, annexation of, 1, 205-38; conditions since the war, 11 Tex., 146-9; Confederate senators and congressmen, 11 Tex., 55, 121; convention of 1861, 11 Tex., 13-37; delegates to Confederate congress, 11 Tex., 22; frontier operations, 11 Tex., 43, 71; manufactures in, 11 Tex., 112-8; martial law in, 11 Tex., 68; organization for State defense, 11 Tex., 59-61; political events, 11 Tex., 5-37; political struggles over annexation, 1, 221-4, 255; secession of, 11 Tex., 15, 27-30; seizure of Federal posts, 11 Tex., 17-26, 39-41, 43, 41-6; war for independence, 1, 218-20; western sub-district, 11 Tex., 68.
- Texas troops: First organization of, 11 Tex., 21; reserve corps, 11 Tex., 121; frontier troops, 11 Tex., 122; final dispersion, 11 Tex., 137-40; character of, 11 Tex., 114-6.
- At Allatoona, 11 Tex., 148; in Atlanta campaign, 11 Tex., 182-8; at Appomattox, 11 Tex., 231; at Bayou Boeuf, 11 Tex., 196; at Bayou Bourbeau, 11 Tex., 122, 199; at Bentonville, 11 Tex., 191; at Chickamauga, 11 Tex., 131, 174; at Chickasaw Bayou, 11 Tex., 163; at Corinth, 11 Tex., 160-2; at Donaldsonville, 11 Tex., 197-9; at Fort Doche, 11 Tex., 132, 158, 180, 190; at Gaines' Mill, 11 Tex., 210, 215; at Honey Springs, 11 Tex., 193; at Iuka, 11 Tex., 161; at Jenkins' Ferry, 11 Tex., 208; in Louisiana, 11 Tex., 132, 164-6; at Manassas, Second, 11 Tex., 212; at Mansfield and Pleasant Hill, 11 Tex., 133, 200-8; at Milliken's Bend, 11 Tex., 195; at Missionary Ridge, 11 Tex., 179; in Mississippi, 1862, 11 Tex., 146, 182, 11 Tex., 169; 1864, 11 Tex., 181-2; at Murfreesboro, 11 Tex., 165; at Mobile, 11 Tex., 192; at Nashville, 11 Tex., 189; in New Mexico, 11 Tex., 51-5, 150; at Pea Ridge, 11 Tex., 51; at Perryville, 11 Tex., 165; at Petersburg, 11 Tex., 220; at Pickett's Mill, 11 Tex., 182-3; at Pine Bluff, 11 Tex., 194; at Pleasant Hill, 11 Tex., 133; at Poison Spring, 11 Tex., 209; at Prairie Grove, 11 Tex., 193; at Richmond, Ky., 11 Tex., 164-5; at Ringgold Gap, 11 Tex., 181; at San Antonio, 1861, 11 Tex., 45; at Sharpsburg, 11 Tex., 214; at Shiloh, 11 Tex., 130, 158; in army of Tennessee, 11 Tex., 131; in Tennessee, east, 11 Tex., 179; at Thompson's Station, 11 Tex., 168; in Trans-Mississippi army, 1862, 11 Tex., 193; at Vicksburg, 11 Tex., 131, 170; at West Point, 11 Tex., 209; at the Wilderness, 11 Tex., 230; at Wilson's Creek, 11 Tex., 50; at Woodsonville, 11 Tex., 157.
- Artillery: 1st reg. (Cook's), 11 Tex., 51-2, 67, 80, 83, 106-11; Abbott's battery, 11 Tex., 67; Crucebaugh's, 11 Tex., 70; Davis Guards, 11 Tex., 99, 106-11; Dashiell's, 11 Tex., 67; Daniel's, 11 Tex., 62, 201; Douglas's, 11 Tex., 177, 180, 192; Edgar's, 11 Tex., 67; Fox's, 11 Tex., 67; Fontaine's, 11 Tex., 67, 85; Good's, 11 Tex., 59; Hughes', 11 Tex., 67; Hawes', 11 Tex., 67; Haldeman's, 11 Tex., 62, 201; Jones', 11 Tex., 67; Krumbhaar's, 11 Tex., 67, 209; Maclin's, 11 Tex., 67, 79; Mosely's, 11 Tex., 67; Neal's, 11 Tex., 67; Nichols', 11 Tex., 67; Riley's, 11 Tex., 151; Shea's (battalion), 11 Tex., 67, 70, 76; Teel's, 11 Tex., 151; White's, 11 Tex., 67, 70; Woods', 11 Tex., 151.
- Cavalry and Mounted Cavalry: Brigades—Bagby's, 11 Tex., 122-3, 201-5; Bee's, 11 Tex., 201-7; Gamble's, 11 Tex., 209; Green's, 11 Tex., 132-3, 196, 197-200; Harrison's, 11 Tex., 188; Major's, 11 Tex., 132-3, 196, 198, 200-4, 207-8; Parsons', 11 Tex., 61, 106, 204; Ross', 11 Tex., 181, 186-7, 190, 192; Sibley's, 11 Tex., 54, 81, 131-2, 150-5, 194-5; Whitfield's, 11 Tex., 168.
- Regiments: 1st (Buchel's), 11 Tex., 54, 201-7; 1st (Hardeman's), 11 Tex., 54; 2d (Pyron's), 11 Tex., 83, 90; 3d (Greer's), 11 Tex., 50, 51-2, 54, 161; 4th, 11 Tex., 51, 81, 150-6; 5th, 11 Tex., 54, 81, 150-6; 6th, 11 Tex., 51-2, 164, 171; 7th, 11 Tex., 151-6; 8th (Ranger's), 11 Tex., 52, 157, 159, 165, 166, 174, 175, 191-2; 9th, 11 Tex., 102, 187; 10th



- (Locke), 11 Tex., 65, 165-7; 11th, 11 Tex., 165-7, 173, 191-2; 13th, 11 Tex., 61; 14th (Camp's), 11 Tex., 65; 15th (Andrews'), 11 Tex., 62, 65, 165-7; 16th, 11 Tex., 62; 18th, 11 Tex., 62; 19th, 11 Tex., 193; 21st, 11 Tex., 193; 23d, 11 Tex., 66; 24th, 11 Tex., 63; 25th, 11 Tex., 62, 63; 26th (Gould's), 11 Tex., 205; 28th, 11 Tex., 62; 30th, 11 Tex., 66; 32d (Wood's), 11 Tex., 205; 35th (Likens'), 11 Tex., 53, 66; 36th, 11 Tex., 66, 70; Alexander's, 11 Tex., 64; Anderson's, 11 Tex., 66; Baylor's, 11 Tex., 47; Buford's, 11 Tex., 64; Benavides, 11 Tex., 70, 123-5; Carter's, 11 Tex., 64; Debray's, 11 Tex., 49, 201-7; De Morse's, 11 Tex., 194; Ford's, 11 Tex., 21, 39-42, 125-9; Hawpe's, 11 Tex., 64; Lane's partisan rangers, 11 Tex., 67; McCord's, 11 Tex., 66; McCulloch's (Ben), 11 Tex., 24; McCulloch's (H. E.), 11 Tex., 21, 42-3, 45; Mann's, 11 Tex., 66; Martin's partisan rangers, 11 Tex., 67; Norris' frontier, 11 Tex., 71; Parsons', 11 Tex., 64; Spaight's, 11 Tex., 64; Stevens', 11 Tex., 61; Stone's partisan rangers, 11 Tex., 67; Terrell's, 11 Tex., 66, 201-7; Wilkes', 11 Tex., 65; Young's, 11 Tex., 47. Battalions—Daly's, 11 Tex., 66; Duff's, 11 Tex., 66; Herbert's, 11 Tex., 54; Morgan's, 11 Tex., 66; Ragnet's, 11 Tex., 151-5; Ragsdale's, 11 Tex., 66; Saufley's, 11 Tex., 66; Taylor's, 11 Tex., 70; Waller's, 11 Tex., 67; Yager's, 11 Tex., 70. Infantry: Texas division, 11 Tex., 61-4, 105, 133-5, 137, 195, 201, 208. Brigades—Deshler's, 11 Tex., 62-3, 174-5, 179-80; Ector's, 11 Tex., 165-7, 174-7, 185, 188, 190-1, 192; Granbury's, 11 Tex., 181, 182-3, 189; Griffith's, 11 Tex., 163; Hood's, 11 Tex., 53, 177-8, 179, 209-21; McCray's, 11 Tex., 161, 165; McCulloch's (H. E.), 11 Tex., 195-6; Randal's, 11 Tex., 202; Roberts', 11 Tex., 132, 199-200; Scurry's, 11 Tex., 202-4; Waul's, 11 Tex., 202-5, 208. Regiments: 1st, 11 Tex., 53, 210; 1st consolidated, 11 Tex., 192; 2d, 11 Tex., 49, 158-9, 160, 162-3, 164, 169, 172; 4th, 11 Tex., 53; 5th, 11 Tex., 53; 6th, 11 Tex., 61, 63; 7th, 11 Tex., 52, 158, 169, 178; 8th, 11 Tex., 66, 192-4; 9th, 11 Tex., 159, 165, 163; 10th, 11 Tex., 62; 11th, 11 Tex., 62; 12th, 11 Tex., 61; 13th, 11 Tex., 55; 14th, 11 Tex., 62; 15th, 11 Tex., 62; 16th, 11 Tex., 62; 17th, 11 Tex., 62; 18th, 11 Tex., 61; 19th, 11 Tex., 62; 20th, 11 Tex., 73, 83; 21st, 11 Tex., 66, 72, 83, 100, 162; 22d, 11 Tex., 62; 23th, 11 Tex., 66; Luckett's, 11 Tex., 54, 69-70; Nichols', 11 Tex., 49. Battalions—2d, 11 Tex., 66; Gould's, 11 Tex., 62; Hobby's, 11 Tex., 70. Legions: Waul's, 11 Tex., 65, 169, 170; Whitfield's, 11 Tex., 65, 161. Thomas, Allen, 10 La., 318. — Bryan M., 6, 443. — Edward L., 6, 169, 178, 195, 376, 444. — George H., 9 Ky., 31. — Henry P., 6, 265. — Richard, 12, 14. Thompson, Albert P., 9 Ky., 48, 76, 198. — C., 10 La., 356. Thompson, Charles H., 8, 166. — John C., 7 Miss., 173. — M. Jeff., 9 Mo., 67, 182. — W. P., 2 W. Va., 82, 85-6. Thompson's Station, Tenn., battle, March, 1863, 8, 221; 11 Tex., 168. Thorburn, R. D., 12, 13. Thornton, John A., 7 Miss., 41. Thoroughfare Gap, Va., action, Aug. 28, 1862, 3, 325. Thrasher, R. B., 10 Ark., 350. Thruston, Stephen D., 4, 121. Thurmond, J. G., 8, 231. — Philip J., 2 W. Va., 88, 101. Tichenor, I. T., 12, 178. Tilghman, Lloyd, 2 Md., 163; 8, 18; 9 Ky., 48, 56, 171. Tillman, James A., 8, 158. Tiptonville, Tenn., Mackall's surrender, 8, 32. Tishomingo Creek (see Brice's Cross-Roads). Todd, A. H., 9 Ky., 75. Todd's Tavern, Va., action, April 30, 1863, 3, 378. Tolley, William P., 8, 186. Tombs, James H., 12, 75. Tompkins, C. Q., 2 W. Va., 7, 26-7, 28; 3, 59. Tompkinsville, Ky., action, July 9, 1862, 9 Ky., 100. Tom's Brook, Va., action, Oct. 8, 1862, 3, 503. Toombs, Robert, 1, 273, 305, 597-8; 6, 190, 446. Totten, James, 10 Ark., 4. Town Creek, N. C., action, 1865, 4, 283. Trabue, Robert P., 9 Ky., 48, 67, 71-3, 165, 169. Tracy, Edward D., 7 Ala., 447; 7 Miss., 135-6; 10 La., 20. Tracy, P., 6, 190. Trans-Mississippi army, surrender of, May 26, 1865, 10 Ark., 282. Tranter's Creek, N. C., action, June 5, 1862, 4, 91. Trapier, James H., 5, 421. Trenholm, George A., 1, 604. — W. L., 5, 76. Trent affair, the, 1, 425-9. Trenton, Tenn., action, Dec., 1862, 8, 220. Trescott, William H., 5, 19. Trevilian Station, Va., battle, June 12, 1862, 3, 471. Trezevant, E. B., 8, 225. Trimble, Isaac R., 2 Md., 23, 114, 159; 3, 376. Tucker, John R., 12, 28, 38, 51, 93-4. — William F., 7 Miss., 272. Tullahoma, Tenn., campaign, 1862, 8, 90; 9 Ky., 172. Tunnel Hill, Ga., action, Jan. 28, 1864, 6, 297. Tupelo, Miss., Federal raid, 1862, 7 Miss., 99; expedition to, June, 1864, 7 Miss., 196; expedition to, July, 1864, 7 Miss., 199-200. Turkey Hill, Va., action, July 2, 1864, 3, 467. Turner, James J., 8, 80, 116, 142. — W. B., 8, 97. Tusculumbia, Ala., action near, 1862, 7 Ala., 40. Twiggs, David E., 6, 448.



- Two-mile Creek, W. Va., action, Oct., 1862, 2 W. Va., 69.
- Tybee Island, Ga., operations on, 6, 59, 83.
- Tyler, John, 1, 354; 3, 36.
- Nat, 2 W. Va., 20.
- Robert C., 6, 382-3, 42, 116, 335-7.
- Tyler Mountain, W. Va., action, July, 1861, 2 W. Va., 30; action, Oct., 1862, 2 W. Va., 69.
- "Uncle Tom's Cabin," 1, 283.
- Underwriter, U. S. gunboat, capture of, 4, 221; 12, 76.
- Union City, Tenn., action, March 23, 1861, 8, 233.
- Union League, 12, 309.
- United States, formation of, 1, 66; sectional lines, 1, 65; territorial expansion, 1, 61; war measures, 1861-5, 1, 393-400, 406-8; wars of, 1, 62-3, 245.
- Utoy Creek, Ga., battle, Aug. 6, 1864, 6, 342; 8, 130.
- Valley Mountain, W. Va., operations about, 1861, 3, 167.
- Valverde, N. Mex., battle, Feb. 21, 1862, 11 Tex., 150.
- Van Dorn, Earl, 7 Miss., 14, 273; 9 Mo., 78; 9 Ky., 81; 10 Ark., 67, 84, 88, 99, 101; 10 La., 72; 11 Tex., 44-6.
- Vance, Robert B., 4, 351.
- Zebulon K., 1, 726-8; 4, 140.
- Varnell's Station, Ga., action, May 9, 1864, 8, 127.
- Vaughan, Alfred J., 8, 62, 64, 65, 101, 128, 133, 337-8.
- Vaughn, John C., 3, 76; 8, 339-40; 9 Ky., 191.
- Velocity, U. S. S., capture of, 11 Tex., 97.
- Venable, C. S., 12, 134.
- Vest, George G., 9 Mo., 17.
- Veterans, C. S. A., organizations of, 10 La., 386-7.
- Vicksburg, Miss., operations, Jan., 1861, 7 Miss., 17-8; bombardment of, May to June, 1862, 7 Miss., 69-79; naval action, July 22, 1862, 12, 65; campaign, Nov. to Dec., 1862, 7 Miss., 95-107; 8, 78; campaign of 1863, 7 Miss., 122; campaigns against, 12, 226, 242; siege of, May to July, 1863, 6, 222-3; 7 Miss., 149-60; 8, 84; 9 Mo., 122-7; 10 La., 121-5; 11 Tex., 150; surrender of, July 4, 1863, 7 Miss., 157.
- Vienna, Va., action, June 17, 1861, 3, 94; Nov. 26, 1861, 3, 195.
- Villepique, John B., 5, 422.
- Vincent's Creek, S. C., action, Aug. 4, 1863, 5, 251.
- Virginia & Tennessee R. R., raid against, May, 1862, 2 W. Va., 58-9; Averell's raid, Nov., 1863, 2 W. Va., 85; Averell's raid, Dec., 1863, 2 W. Va., 85-9; Averell's raid, May, 1864, 2 W. Va., 95-7.
- Virginia, cession of northwest territory, 1, 93, 107, 111, 113; characteristics of, 3, 9-13; declaration of rights, 1, 79; early history, 3, 14-6; first call for troops, 3, 11; in the Revolution, 1, 78; military conditions, spring of 1862, 3, 208-13; naval forces, 1861, 12, 11; partition of, 2 W. Va., 3; Pierpont government, 2 W. Va., 13; plan of invasion, 1861, 3, 43; political campaign, 1860, 3, 33; preparations for invasion, 1861, 2 W. Va., 4-6; proposes peace convention, 1, 352; relative strength of armies in, 1865, 1, 560; secession of, 3, 39; slavery in, 3, 17-21; topography of, 3, 3-7; war preparations, 1861, 3, 143.
- Virginia, C. S. ironclad, 1, 440; 12, 31; officers of, 33; battle, March 8-9, 1862, 37; destruction of, 51-3.
- Virginia, C. S. ironclad (No. 2), 12, 92.
- Virginia troops: List of regiments, battalions, etc., with officers, 3, 558-71; transferred to Confederate service, 3, 134.
- At Alleghany Mt., 2 W. Va., 45; at Cheat Mt., 2 W. Va., 32-3, 40; in east Tennessee, 2 W. Va., 92, 100; at Harper's Ferry, 1861, 3, 71; in Romney campaign, 2 W. Va., 51, 52-3; in Shenandoah valley, 1861, 3, 77-8; at Yorktown, 3, 133; on the Peninsula, 1861, 3, 142; at Norfolk, 1861, 3, 147; in the winter of 1863-4, 3, 429.
- Artillery: Battalions—Carter's, 3, 507, 536; King's, 3, 477, 536; McLaughlin's, 2 W. Va., 86, 98; 3, 457; Nelson's, 3, 536, 544; Pelham's, 3, 367. Batteries—Alburtis', 3, 77, 108, 111; Anderson's, 3, 170, 175; 2 W. Va., 17; Balthus', 3, 300; Beckham's, 3, 111; Botetourt, 2 W. Va., 95; Bryan's, 2 W. Va., 67; Cabell's, 3, 129, 133; Carpenter's, 3, 224, 300; Chapman's, 2 W. Va., 80, 86; Chew's, 3, 215; Davidson's, 3, 300; Dickinson's, 2 W. Va., 95; Grimes', 3, 300; Grove's, 3, 97; Guy's, 2 W. Va., 38; Imboden's, 3, 61, 102, 105, 108; Jackson's, 2 W. Va., 86; Kemper's, 3, 111; Latham's, 3, 111, 115; Lee's, 2 W. Va., 57; McLaughlin's, 3, 220; Lowry's, 2 W. Va., 67; Lurty's, 2 W. Va., 85-6; McClanahan's, 2 W. Va., 74; Marye's, 3, 154; Miller's, 2 W. Va., 57; 3, 153; Pendleton's, 3, 108; Pegram's, 3, 509, 312, 521; Poague's, 3, 300, 318; Otey's, 2 W. Va., 58, 67; Rice's, 3, 46; Richmond howitzers, 3, 136; Rockbridge, 3, 77, 79, 108, 12, 134; Shumaker's, 2 W. Va., 17; 3, 54-5, 153, 170; Stamps', 2 W. Va., 67; Stanard's, 3, 83, 108; Stanley's, 3, 154; Star, 2 W. Va., 57; Waters', 3, 220.
- Cavalry: Divisions—W. H. F. Lee's, 3, 555; Lomax's, 3, 492, 495, 503, 511, 512-4; Munford's, 3, 543, 555; Rosser's, 3, 502-8, 513, 510-3, 555. Brigades—Imboden's, 2 W. Va., 72, 97, 98-9; 3, 374-4, 457, 477, 478, 485-7, 514, 536; W. L. Jackson's, 2 W. Va., 82-3, 99; 3, 477, 14, 496-7, 514, 536, 541; Jenkins', 2 W. Va., 81; 3, 337-8; B. T. Johnson's, 3, 182, 187, 492; W. E. Jones', 2 W. Va., 93, 100; 3, 477; Fitzhugh Lee's, 3, 316, 327, 311, 378; W. H. F. Lee's, 3, 378, 433; Lomax's, 3, 133, 526; McCausland's, 2 W. Va., 95, 99; 3, 477, 182, 491-4, 512, 515, 536; Payne's, 3, 504, 505, 537, 538; Robertson's, 3, 316, 337; Rosser's, 3, 536, 537; Stuart's, 3, 182, 181; Wickham's, 3, 423, 514, 529; Witcher's, 2 W. Va., 101. Regiments—1st, 3, 71, 108, 122, 181-2, 195; 2d, 3, 270, 5th, 3, 317; 6th, 2 W. Va., 73; 3, 229; 7th,





2 W. Va., 75, 106; 8th, 2 W. Va., 58; 11th, 2 W. Va., 75, 82, 106, 110; 12th, 2 W. Va., 75; 14th, 2 W. Va., 86; 16th, 2 W. Va., 86, 91; 18th, 2 W. Va., 74, 104, 109, 110; 19th, 2 W. Va., 79, 109, 112; 20th, 2 W. Va., 109; 23d, 2 W. Va., 105, 106; 30th reg., 3, 114; Ashby's, 2 W. Va., 110; 3, 201, 243, 253-5; McDonald's, 3, 185. Battalions—11th, 5, 153; 31th, 2 W. Va., 74; 41st, 2 W. Va., 84, 105; Harris', 3, 114; Jenifer's, 3, 189-90; Lee's squadron, 3, 154, 155; Montague's, 3, 136, 138; Mosby's, 3, 433; Witcher's, 2 W. Va., 75-6. Companies—Bath, 2 W. Va., 112; Becket's and Brock's, 2 W. Va., 29, 28; Black Horse, 3, 65; Churchville, 3, 46, 51, 170, 528; Chatham Grays, 3, 124, 133, 140; Old Dominion Dragoons, 3, 124; Pittsylvania, 3, 175; Sheetz', 3, 203; Terry's, 3, 115. Infantry: Divisions—Pickett's, 3, 407, 414-9, 459, 531, 553; Wharton's, 3, 477, 481, 484, 485, 486, 491, 497, 509, 504, 507-8, 512, 514, 535, 539-40. Brigades—Armistead's, 3, 279, 417; Boggs', 3, 204-5; Burks', 3, 157, 160-1, 206, 219, 229; Campbell's, 3, 310; Carson's, 3, 203; Cocke's, 3, 96, 101, 103, 114; Early's, 3, 96, 99, 106, 112, 111, 272, 308-12, 318, 320-1, 329, 352; Echols', 3, 538; 2 W. Va., 82-3, 98, 99, 104; Elzey's, 3, 78, 111, 114, 242, 256, 263; Field's, 3, 286, 312, 329; Fulkerson's, 3, 220, 221, 229; A. P. Hill's, 3, 271; Edward Johnson's, 3, 228-22; J. M. Jones', 3, 435; Kemper's, 3, 230; Longstreet's, 3, 96, 99, 106, 111, 115-6; Mahone's, 3, 279, 378, 410-1; Meem's, 3, 203; Pickett's, 3, 271, 279; Steuart's, 3, 203, 450-1; Stonewall, 3, 77, 80, 101, 102, 166-7, 109, 113-4, 201, 206, 220, 221, 240-1, 248, 259-69, 291, 311, 331, 332, 381, 502; Smith's, 3, 405; T. Smith's, 3, 400; Tallaterra's, 3, 157, 163, 172, 206, 259, 260, 262; Walker's, 3, 459; Weisiger's, 3, 521; Wharton's, 3, 481; 2 W. Va., 103, 18, 99. Regiments—2d, 3, 71; 3d, 3, 126, 147; 4th, 3, 71; 5th, 3, 68, 71, 79, 21, 261; 6th, 3, 147; 8th, 3, 108, 157, 160; 9th, 3, 117; 10th, 3, 71, 74, 231, 241; 2 W. Va., 57; 11th, 3, 195; 12th, 3, 117; 13th, 3, 71, 74, 76, 181, 310, 311; 2 W. Va., 105, 125; 14th, 3, 132, 142; 15th, 3, 142; 18th, 2, 110; 20th, 3, 47, 48-9; 2 W. Va., 17; 21st, 3, 240; 2 W. Va., 58; 22d, 2 W. Va., 27, 25, 78, 71, 96; 23d, 3, 54-5, 152, 231, 241; 2 W. Va., 57-8, 86; 25th, 3, 16, 18-9, 51, 153, 230-1; 2 W. Va., 17, 57, 74, 108, 111-4, 115; 26th, 3, 12, 117; 27th, 3, 54-5, 71, 311; 28th, 3, 11; 31st, 3, 45, 54, 133, 159, 171, 220-1; 2 W. Va., 17, 57, 74, 106, 109, 112-4; 32d, 3, 78, 89, 190, 311; 2 W. Va., 110; 33th, 2 W. Va., 27, 25, 58, 65-6; 37th, 3, 122, 202, 231, 259; 2 W. Va., 57-8; 41st, 3, 147; 42d, 3, 151, 221; 2 W. Va., 58; 43th, 3, 47, 50, 152, 230; 2 W. Va., 19, 57; 45th, 2 W. Va., 58, 65-6, 25-6; 48th, 3, 154, 221; 49th, 3, 108, 109; 52d, 3, 152, 170, 175, 230, 310; 2 W. Va., 57; 53th, 3, 230, 310; 2 W. Va., 57; 60th, 2 W. Va., 31, 115; 62d, 2 W. Va., 74, 110, 112. Battalions, etc.—1st, 2 W. Va., 58; 1st regulars, 3, 154, 160; 9th, 3, 169; Hansbrough's, 3, 54, 174; 2 W. Va., 57; Kanawha riflemen, 2 W. Va., 110; McNeill's rangers, 2 W. Va., 75,

116-27; military institute cadets, 2 W. Va., 98; 3, 457; Monroe's, militia, 3, 203; Portsmouth rifles, 3, 134; Reger's battalion, 3, 173-4; Shriver Grays, 2 W. Va., 108.

Legion, Wise's, 4, 35.

Waddell, James I., 12, 103.

Wade, William, 9 Mo., 116.

Wagner, John A., 5, 32.

Waggaman, Eugene, 10 La., 34, 222, 275.

Waggoner, G. W., 8, 208.

Waite's Shop, Va., action, May 9, 1864, 3, 418.

Walker, C. H., 8, 134, 135.

—David, 10 Ark., 286.

—Frank M., 8, 67, 136.

—Henry H., 3, 675; 8, 305.

—James A., 3, 676; 12, 125, 155.

—John G., 9 Mo., 223.

—L. M., 8, 341-2; 10 Ark., 230-1.

—Leroy P., 1, 695-7.

—Reuben L., 3, 680.

—W. H. T., 6, 13, 19, 220, 258-9, 320, 440.

—W. S., 5, 76, 101; 11 Fla., 211.

Wallace, William H., 5, 423.

Wallis, Severn T., 2 Md., 30.

Walthall, Edward C., 7 Miss., 35, 172, 177,

217, 219, 275; 8, 119, 170.

Walton, Edwin S., 6, 243.

—J. B., 10 La., 18, 208.

Ward, Frank, 2 Md., 21.

—George T., 11 Fla., 115.

—William H., 12, 105.

Warley, Alexander F., 12, 15, 84.

Warsaw Sound, Ga., Federal expedition,

Jan. 1862, 6, 82; naval battle, June 17,

1863, 6, 208-9; 12, 72.

Warden, Joseph, 6, 231.

Washington, John A., 2 W. Va., 40, 42;

3, 155, 166.

Washington, Ark., headquarters at, 10

Ark., 232.

Washington, D. C., action bet. re. July

11-2, 1861, 2 Md., 128; 3, 482; proposed

raid, 2 Md., 123.

Washington, N. C., action, Sept. 6, 1862,

4, 141; burning of, 4, 245; siege, March,

1863, 4, 154.

Washington, U. S. steamer, destruction

of, April 9, 1863, 5, 201.

Waterhouse, Richard, biog., 11 Tex.,

258.

Waterwitch, U. S. S., capture, June 3,

1864, 6, 280; 12, 78-9.

Watte, Stand, 10 Ark., 117.

Watkins, E. P., 6, 222.

—Thomas C., 5, 111.

Watts, Thomas H., 1, 600-1.

—W. O., 8, 19.

Wauhatchie, Ga., action, Oct. 28, 1863,

5, 310-2.

Waul, Thomas N., biog., 11 Tex., 259.

Wayne, H. C., 6, 87, 313.

Waynesboro, Ga., actions, November

to December, 1861, 6, 364-6.

Waynesboro, Va., action, Sept. 24, 1864,

3, 501; March 2, 1865, 3, 539-40.

Waynesville, N. C., action, May 8, 1865,

4, 281.

Webb, C. S. ram, 12, 95.

Webb's Station, Tenn., action, Dec.,

1862, 8, 219.

Webster, Daniel, 1, 271; on Northern

nullification, 7 Ala., 24-5.



- Weightman, Richard H., 9 Mo., 61.  
 Weisiger, Daniel A., 3, 682.  
 Weldon railroad Va., battles, Aug. 18-21, 1864, 3, 523.  
 West Point, Ark., skirmish, May 17, 1862, 10 Ark., 93.  
 West Point, Ga., action, April 16, 1863, 6, 383; 8, 336-7.  
 West Point, Va., action, May 7, 1862, 6, 160; 11 Tex., 209.  
 West Virginia, bill of rights, 2 W. Va., 10-1; creation of State, 2 W. Va., 3, 13; Confederate defense of, 2 W. Va., 7; Federal invasion, 1861, 2 W. Va., 14; Federal occupation, 3, 62; Jenkins' raid through, Aug. to Sept., 1862, 2 W. Va., 62-4; secessionists, imprisonment of, July, 1861, 2 W. Va., 25; separation of, 3, 23, 41.  
 West Virginia troops (see Virginia troops).  
 Western States, events in, 1861, 12, 219; campaigns, 1862, 12, 225, 228, 232, 235; campaigns, 1864, 12, 254-7.  
 Weyer's Cave, Va., action, Sept. 26, 1864, 3, 500.  
 Wharton, A. D., 8, 235-8, 269.  
 — G. C., 2 W. Va., 59, 61, 65; 3, 684; 9 Ky., 185.  
 Wharton, John A., 11 Tex., 261.  
 Wheat, Robert, 10 La., 208, 221.  
 Wheeler, Joseph, 1, x, 705-11; 6, 308, 226-8, 344-5, 364-6, 382; 7 Miss., 55, 66; 8, 59; 9 Ky., 147, 159; 12, 364; "Alabama," 7.  
 Wheeling, W. Va., convention, 1861, 2 W. Va., 4, 10.  
 Wheelless, John F., 8, 364.  
 Whitaker, J. L., 6, 55.  
 White, Elijah V., 2 Md., 48.  
 — Hugh, 12, 171.  
 — James J., 12, 123.  
 — John R., 8, 139.  
 — Robert, 1, viii; 2 W. Va., 84, 87, 109, 105; "West Virginia," 2.  
 White government, restoration of, 12, 314.  
 White Hall, N. C., action, Dec. 16, 1862, 4, 144.  
 White Oak, Ark., skirmish, Feb. 2, 1863, 10 Ark., 163.  
 White Oak Swamp, Va., action, Oct. 27, 1-61, 3, 526.  
 White River, Ark., action, April 24, 1862, 10 Ark., 92; campaign, 1862, 10 Ark., 160-15; operations, Jan., 1863, 10 Ark., 162; Shelby's expedition, May, 1864, 10 Ark., 269-71.  
 White Sulphur Springs, W. Va., battle, Aug. 26, 1863, 2 W. Va., 83.  
 Whitmarsh Island, Ga., action, April 16, 1862, 6, 92-285; Feb. 22, 1864, 6, 235.  
 Whitfield, John W., 11 Tex., 263.  
 — T. E., 7 Miss., 47.  
 Whiting, W. H. C., 3, 71; 4, 352; 6, 6-8.  
 Whittle, W. C., 12, 56.  
 Wickham, Williams C., 3, 685.  
 Wickliffe, Charles, 8, 37; 9 Ky., 73.  
 Wier, John, 7 Miss., 216.  
 Wigfall, Louis T., 11 Tex., 264.  
 Wilcox, Cadmus M., 8, 342-4.  
 — John M., 6, 162.  
 Wilderness, Va., battles, May, 1864, 4, 225; 3, 141, 135-143; 5, 315-8; 6, 289-91; 8, 291; 11 Tex., 220.  
 Wilkinson, John C., 7 Miss., 114.  
 — John, 12, 105.  
 — W. H., 8, 176.  
 Williams, A. J., 6, 253-9.  
 — Charles J., 6, 13.  
 — Christopher H., 8, 39.  
 — John M., 10 La., 251-2, 273.  
 — John S., 2 W. Va., 65; 9 Ky., 45, 256.  
 — J. N., 6, 176.  
 — Sol., 4, 168.  
 Williamsburg, Va., battle, May 5, 1862, 3, 271; 4, 49; 5, 43-6.  
 Williamson, W. H., 8, 186.  
 — W. P., 12, 31, 34.  
 Williamsport, Md., action, July, 1863, 2 W. Va., 81-2.  
 Williamston, N. C., attack on gunboats near, July, 1862, 4, 141.  
 Willis, Edward, 6, 452.  
 Will's Valley, Ga., action, Oct. 28, 1863, 5, 310-2.  
 Wilmington, N. C., evacuation of, 4, 283.  
 Wilmot proviso, 1, 267.  
 Wilson, Andrew N., 8, 246.  
 — Claudius C., 6, 453.  
 — Joseph D., 8, 139.  
 — William L., 12, 192.  
 — W. T., 6, 181.  
 Wilson's Creek, Mo., battle, Aug. 10, 1861, 9 Mo., 55-62; 10 Ark., 25-51; 11 Tex., 50-1.  
 Wilson's Farm, La., action, April, 1864, 10 La., 135.  
 Wilson's Landing, La., operations, May, 1864, 11 Tex., 267.  
 Wilson's raid in Alabama and Georgia, 6, 382-4; 7 Ala., 46-7; 8, 252.  
 Wimer, John M., 9 Mo., 114.  
 Winans, Ross, 2 Md., 34.  
 Winchester, Va., battle, May 25, 1862, 8, 241; 6, 164; June 14, 1863, 3, 397; 6, 223-4; July 20, 1864, 3, 485; Aug. 17, 1864, 3, 491; Sept. 19, 1864, 3, 496-7.  
 Winder, Charles S., 2 Md., 28, 75-6, 102-3, 165; 3, 248, 261, 310.  
 Winder, John H., 1, 630.  
 Winfield, W. Va., action, Sept., 1864, 2 W. Va., 101.  
 Winn, D. R. E., 6, 226.  
 Winton, N. C., burning of, 4, 3.  
 Wise, George D., 6, 223.  
 — Henry A., 2 W. Va., 25, 30, 42-3; 3, 59, 556, 689.  
 Wise, O. J., 3, 61.  
 Witcher, Vincent A., 2 W. Va., 61, 82, 100-2; 3, 535.  
 Withers, Jones M., 7 Ala., 13, 419.  
 — William T., 7, 107, 146.  
 Witherspoon, W. W., 7 Miss., 218.  
 Wofford, William T., 6, 183, 187, 216, 454.  
 Women of Louisiana, 10 La., 285-6; of Maryland, 2 Md., 44-6; of Missouri, 9 Mo., 183.  
 Wood, John Taylor, 1, 626-7; 2 Md., 136; 12, 76, 104.  
 Wood, Sterling A. M., 7 Ala., 451; 9 Ky., 144.  
 Woodsonville, Ky., engagement, Dec. 17, 1861, 11 Tex., 157.  
 Wright, Ambrose R., 4, 42; 6, 73, 96-7, 167, 213-1, 230-4, 256.  
 Wright, E. E., 8, 72.  
 — John V., 8, 13.  
 — Luke E., 8, 72.



- Wright, Marcus J., 8, 344-6.  
 Wrightsville, Pa., action, June, 1863, 6, 224.  
 Wyatt, Henry L., 3, 140; 4, 19.  
 Wyoming County, W. Va., operations, July, 1862, 2 W. Va., 61.  
 Wytheville, Va., Federal raid, July, 1863, 2 W. Va., 80-1; action, May 10, 1864, 2 W. Va., 97; operations about, Dec., 1864, 9 Ky., 190.  
 Yancey, William L., 1, 368, 413; 7 Ala., 19; 10 La., 8.  
 Yandell, D. W., 8, 266; 9 Ky., 171.  
 Yazoo City, Miss., action, July 13, 1863, 7 Miss., 163; action, March 5, 1864, 7 Miss., 193; 8, 230; expedition, April, 1864, 7 Miss., 195.  
 Yazoo River, Miss., operations, 1863, 7 Miss., 122; expedition, Jan., 1864, 7 Miss., 188; naval battle, July 15, 1864, 7 Miss., 75; 12, 64.  
 Yell, James, 10 Ark., 17.  
 Yellow Bayou, La., action, May, 1864, 10 La., 155; 11 Tex., 208.  
 Yellow Bluff, Fla., expedition from, July, 1864, 11 Fla., 96.  
 Yellow Tavern, Va., battle, May, 1864, 3, 455.  
 York, Zebulon, 10 La., 275, 220.  
 Yorktown, Va., assault, April 16, 1862, 3, 270; 6, 159; campaign, 4, 48; evacuation of, 3, 270; operations about, 1861, 3, 129-51; retreat from, May, 1862, 5, 43-7; siege of, 3, 260.  
 Yost, P. A., 1, 413.  
 Young, Alexander, 2 Md., 121.  
 — Pierce M. B., 6, 458.  
 — W. F., 8, 120.  
 — William H., biog., 11 Tex., 266.  
 Yulee, David L., 11 Fla., 21.  
 Zachry, Charles T., 6, 162.  
 Zollcofer, Felix K., 8, 9, 15-8, 346-8; 9 Ky., 44, 54.  
 Yellow Bayou, La., action, May, 1864, 10 La., 155; 11 Tex., 208.  
 Yellow Bluff, Fla., expedition from, July, 1864, 11 Fla., 96.  
 Yellow Tavern, Va., battle, May, 1864, 3, 455.  
 York, Zebulon, 10 La., 275, 220.  
 Yorktown, Va., assault, April 16, 1862, 3, 270; 6, 159; campaign, 4, 48; evacuation of, 3, 270; operations about, 1861, 3, 129-51; retreat from, May, 1862, 5, 43-7; siege of, 3, 260.  
 Yost, P. A., 1, 413.  
 Young, Alexander, 2 Md., 121.  
 — Pierce M. B., 6, 458.  
 — W. F., 8, 120.  
 — William H., biog., 11 Tex., 266.  
 Yulee, David L., 11 Fla., 21.  
 Zachry, Charles T., 6, 162.  
 Zollcofer, Felix K., 8, 9, 15-8, 346-8; 9 Ky., 44, 54.

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

- Adams, John, 8, 288.  
 — Wirt, 7 Miss., 236.  
 Alabama, map of, 7 Ala., between pages 382 and 383.  
 Alcorn, James L., 7 Miss., 236.  
 Alexander, E. Porter, 6, 438.  
 Allen, Henry W., 10 La., 237.  
 — William W., 7 Ala., 412.  
 Anderson, George B., 4, 206.  
 — George T., 6, 396.  
 — J. Patton, 11 Fla., 205.  
 — Joseph R., 3, 576.  
 — Richard H., 1, 697.  
 — Robert H., 6, 366.  
 — Samuel R., 8, 288.  
 Archer, James J., 2 Md., 168.  
 Arkansas and Louisiana, parts of (map), 10 La., 141.  
 Arkansas, map of, 10 Ark., between pages 188 and 349.  
 Armistead, Lewis A., 3, 576.  
 Armstrong, Frank C., 8, 288.  
 Army of Virginia, position of troops, Aug. 27, 1862, 3, 321.  
 Ashby, Turner, 3, 576.  
 Atlanta, Ga. (map), 6, 323.  
 Aversboro, map of battlefield, 4, 280.  
 Bagby, Arthur P., 11 Tex., 252.  
 Baker, Alpheus, 7 Ala., 392.  
 — Lawrence S., 4, 206.  
 Baker's Creek, battlefield of (map), 7 Miss., 144.  
 Baldwin, William E., 7 Miss., 236.  
 Barksdale, William, 7 Miss., 252.  
 Barringer, Rufus, 4, 296.  
 Barron, Samuel, 12, 112.  
 Barton, Seth M., 3, 576.  
 Bartow, Francis S., 6, 216.  
 Bate, William B., 8, 288.  
 Battle, Cullen A., 7 Ala., 490.  
 Beale, Richard L. T., 3, 576.  
 Beall, William N. R., 10 Ark., 397.  
 Beauregard, Pierre G. T., 1, 623.  
 Bee, Barnard E., 5, 392.  
 — Hamilton P., 11 Tex., 225.  
 Bell, Tyree H., 8, 288.  
 Benjamin, J. P., 1, 592.  
 Benning, Henry L., 6, 428.  
 Benton, Samuel, 7 Miss., 252.  
 Bentonville, map of battlefield, 4, 380.  
 Bethel, battle of (map), 3, 156.  
 Blanchard, Albert G., 10 La., 297.  
 Boggs, William R., 6, 396.  
 Bonham, M. L., 5, 392.  
 Boonsboro, battle of (map), 3, facing page 312.  
 Bowen, John S., 9 Mo., 216.  
 Bowles, Pinckney D., 7 Ala., 392.  
 Bragg, Braxton, 1, 656.  
 Branch, Lawrence O'B., 4, 317.  
 Brandon, William L., 7 Miss., 252.  
 Brantly, William F., 7 Miss., 236.  
 Bratton, John, 5, 392.  
 Breckinridge, J. C., 1, 592.  
 Brent, Joseph L., 2 Md., 168.  
 Brevard, Theodore W., 11 Fla., 205.  
 Brice's Cross-Roads (map), 7 Miss., 197.  
 Brooke, John M., 12, 112.  
 Brown, I. N., 12, 112.  
 — John Calvin, 8, 288.  
 Browne, William M., 6, 416.  
 Bryan, Goode, 6, 396.  
 Buchanan, Franklin, 12, 112.  
 Buckner, Simon B., 1, 697.  
 Buford, A., 9 Ky., 236.  
 Bulger, Michael J., 7 Ala., 412.  
 Bullock, Robert, 11 Fla., 295.  
 Burnside expedition (map), 4, 32.



- Butler, M. C., 5, 380, 392.  
 Cabell, William L., 10 Ark., 400.  
 Campbell, Alexander W., 8, 336.  
 Cantey, James, 7 Ala., 400.  
 Capers, Ellison, 5, 1, 400.  
 Carroll, William H., 8, 288.  
 Carter, John C., 8, 336.  
 Chalmers, James R., 7 Miss., 236.  
 Chambliss, John R., 3, 576.  
 Chancellorsville, Salem Church and  
 Fredericksburg (map), 3, between  
 pages 384 and 385.  
 Charleston defenses (map), 5, between  
 pages 296 and 297.  
 Chattanooga, map of battlefields about,  
 8, 121.  
 Cheatham, Benjamin F., 8, 326.  
 Chestnut, James, 5, 392.  
 Chickamauga, battle of (map), 6, 248.  
 Chickamauga campaign (map), 6, be-  
 tween pages 260 and 261.  
 Chilton, Robert H., 3, 576.  
 Churchill, Thomas J., 10 Ark., 400.  
 Clanton, James H., 7 Ala., 400.  
 Clark, Charles, 7 Miss., 252.  
 — I. B., 9 Mo., 216.  
 Clayton, Henry D., 7 Ala., 392.  
 Cleburne, Patrick R., 10 Ark., 397.  
 Clingman, Thomas L., 4, 296.  
 Cobb, Howell, 6, 428.  
 — Thomas R., 6, 428.  
 Cocke, P. St. George, 3, 576.  
 Cockrell, F. M., 9 Mo., 216.  
 Colquitt, Alfred H., 6, 428.  
 Colston, Raleigh E., 3, 576.  
 Connor, James, 5, 416.  
 Cook, Philip, 6, 396.  
 Cooke, John R., 4, 296.  
 — J. W., 12, 112.  
 Cooper, Douglas H., 7 Miss., 252.  
 — Samuel, 1, 633.  
 Corse, Montgomery D., 3, 576.  
 Cosby, George B., 9 Ky., 243.  
 Cox, William R., 4, 240.  
 Crampton's Gap, battle of (map), 3,  
 facing page 312.  
 Crews, Charles C., 6, 416.  
 Crittenden, George B., 9 Ky., 236.  
 Cumming, Alfred, 6, 296.  
 Curry, J. L. M., 1, 1.  
 Dalton to Jonesboro, Atlanta campaign  
 (map), 6, 296.  
 Daniel, Junius, 4, 296.  
 Davidson, Henry B., 8, 326.  
 Davis, Jefferson, 1, frontispiece.  
 — Joseph R., 7 Miss., 236.  
 — Reuben, 7 Miss., 252.  
 — W. G. M., 11 Fla., 265.  
 Dearing, James, 3, 576.  
 Deas, Zachariah C., 7 Ala., 400.  
 Debray, Xavier B., 11 Tex., 233.  
 DeLagnel, Julius A., 3, 610.  
 Berry, Joseph T., 6, 1.  
 Deshler, James, 7 Ala., 400.  
 Detrell, George C., 8, 288.  
 Dickison, J. J., 11 Fla., 1.  
 Dimitry, John, 10 La., 1.  
 Dockery, Thomas P., 10 Ark., 297.  
 Doles, George, 6, 396.  
 Donelson, Daniel S., 8, 326.  
 Drayton, Thomas F., 5, 392.  
 Droop Mountain, battle (map), 2 W.  
 Va., 84.  
 DuBose, Dudley M., 6, 428.  
 Duke, Basil W., 9 Ky., 243.  
 Duncan, Johnson K., 10 La., 297.  
 Dunovant, John, 5, 392.  
 Early, Jubal A., 1, 697.  
 Echols, John, 3, 576.  
 Ector, Matthew D., 11 Tex., 252.  
 Elliott, Stephen, Jr., 5, 392.  
 Elzey, Arnold, 2 Md., 168.  
 Evans, Clement A., 1, 247.  
 — Clement A., 6, 416.  
 — N. G., 5, 392.  
 Ewell, Richard S., 1, 681.  
 Fagan, James F., 10 Ark., 397.  
 Featherston, Winfield S., 7 Miss., 252.  
 Ferguson, S. W., 5, 416.  
 Field, Charles W., 9 Ky., 236.  
 Finegan, Joseph, 11 Fla., 265.  
 Finley, Jesse J., 11 Fla., 265.  
 First Maryland at Cold Harbor, 2 Md., 85.  
 First Maryland Regiment, Charge of,  
 June 6, 1862, 2 Md., 80.  
 Flags, Confederate, 12, 399.  
 Florida, map of, 11 Fla., between pages  
 192 and 193.  
 Floyd, John B., 3, 626.  
 Forney, John H., 7 Ala., 412.  
 — William H., 7 Ala., 392.  
 Forrest, Nathan B., 1, 688.  
 Franklin, map of the battlefield, 8, 153.  
 Frazer, John W., 8, 288.  
 Fredericksburg, map of battle, 3, 369.  
 French, Samuel G., 7 Miss., 236.  
 Frost, D. M., 9 Mo., 216.  
 Fry, Birkett D., 7 Ala., 400.  
 Gano, Richard M., 11 Tex., 233.  
 Gardner, Franklin, 10 La., 297.  
 — William M., 6, 396.  
 Garland, Samuel, 3, 674.  
 Garnett, Richard B., 3, 612.  
 — Robert S., 3, 642.  
 Garrett, William R., 1, 59.  
 Garrott, Isham W., 7 Ala., 400.  
 Gartrell, Lucius J., 6, 428.  
 Gary, M. W., 5, 392.  
 Gatlin, Richard C., 4, 340.  
 Gauley Bridge, vicinity of (map), 2 W.  
 Va., facing page 64.  
 Georgia (map), 6, between pages 386  
 and 387.  
 Gettysburg, map of battlefield, 3, 416.  
 Gholson, Samuel J., 7 Miss., 236.  
 Gibson, Randall L., 10 La., 297.  
 Gilmer, Jeremy F., 4, 340.  
 Girardey, Victor J. B., 6, 396.  
 Gist, S. R., 5, 416.  
 Gladden, Adley H., 10 La., 297.  
 Godwin, Archibald C., 4, 217.  
 Gordon, George W., 8, 236.  
 — James B., 4, 340.  
 — John B., 1, 688.  
 Gorgas, Josiah, 7 Ala., 400.  
 Govan, Daniel C., 10 Ark., 297.  
 Gracie, Archibald, 7 Ala., 412.  
 Granbury, Hiram B., 11 Tex., 252.  
 Gray, Henry, 10 La., 297.  
 Green, M. E., 9 Mo., 216.  
 — Thomas, 11 Tex., 233.  
 Greer, Elkanah, 11 Tex., 233.  
 Gregg, John, 11 Tex., 252.  
 — Maxcy, 5, 416.  
 Griffith, Richard, 7 Miss., 252.  
 Grimes, Bryan, 4, 296.  
 Hagan, James, 7 Ala., 392.  
 Hagood, Johnson, 5, 416.





- Hampton, Wade, 1, 697.  
 Hanson, R. W., 9 Ky., 248.  
 Hardee, William J., 1, 665.  
 Hardeman, W. P., 11 Tex., 233.  
 Harrell, John M., 10 Ark., 1.  
 Harris, David B., 3, 642.  
 — Nathaniel H., 7 Miss., 252.  
 Harrisburg, Battlefield of (map), 7 Miss., 201.  
 Harrison, George P., 6, 416.  
 — James E., 11 Tex., 252.  
 — Thomas, 11 Tex., 252.  
 Hatton, Robert, 8, 336.  
 Hawes, J. M., 9 Ky., 236.  
 Hawthorn, Alexander T., 10 Ark., 409.  
 Hays, Harry T., 10 La., 312.  
 Hébert, Louis, 10 La., 312.  
 — Paul O., 10 La., 312.  
 Helena, Ark. (map), 10 Ark., 184.  
 Helm, B. H., 9 Ky., 248.  
 Heth, Henry, 3, 610.  
 Higgins, Edward, 10 La., 312.  
 Hill, Ambrose P., 1, 651.  
 — Benjamin J., 8, 336.  
 — Daniel H., 1, 651.  
 — D. H., Jr., 4, 1.  
 Hindman, Thomas C., 10 Ark., 409.  
 Hodge, G. B., 9 Ky., 248.  
 Hogg, Joseph L., 11 Tex., 233.  
 Hoke, Robert F., 4, 317.  
 Hollins, George N., 12, 112.  
 Holmes, Theophilus H., 1, 665.  
 Holtzclaw, James T., 7 Ala., 392.  
 Honey Hill, battle (map), 5, 356.  
 Hood, John B., 1, 656.  
 Hooker, Charles E., 7 Miss., 1.  
 Hotchkiss, Jed, 3, 1.  
 Huger, Benjamin, 5, 409.  
 Humes, W. Y. C., 8, 336.  
 Humphreys, Benjamin G., 7 Miss., 252.  
 Hunter, R. M. T., 1, 592.  
 Hunton, Eppa, 3, 626.  
 Imboden, John D., 3, 626.  
 Ingraham, D. N., 12, 112.  
 Iverson, Alfred, 6, 428.  
 Jackson, Alfred E., 8, 288.  
 — Henry R., 6, 416.  
 — John K., 6, 416.  
 — Thomas J., 1, 665.  
 — William H., 8, 336.  
 — William L., 3, 610.  
 Jenkins, Albert G., 3, 674.  
 — Micah, 5, 416.  
 Johnson, Bradley T., 2 Md., 1.  
 — Bradley T., 2 Md., 168.  
 — Bushrod, 8, 304.  
 — Edward, 3, 658.  
 Johnston, Albert Sidney, 1, 633.  
 — George D., 7 Ala., 392.  
 — Joseph E., 1, 656.  
 — J. S., 9 Ky., 1.  
 — Robert D., 4, 296.  
 Jones, David R., 6, 416.  
 — John M., 3, 642.  
 — John R., 3, 610.  
 — J. William, 12, 117.  
 — Samuel, 3, 626.  
 — William E., 3, 658.  
 Jordan, Thomas, 3, 610.  
 Kemper, James L., 3, 642.  
 Kennedy, John D., 6, 416.  
 Kentucky, State (map), 9 Ky., between pages 221 and 225.  
 Kershaw, J. B., 5, 400.  
 Kirkland, W. W., 4, 296.  
 Lane, James H., 4, 340.  
 — Walter P., 11 Tex., 233.  
 Law, Evander M., 7 Ala., 392.  
 Lawton, Alexander R., 6, 428.  
 Leadbetter, Danville, 7 Ala., 392.  
 Lee, Edwin G., 3, 658.  
 — Fitzhugh, 3, 642.  
 — George W. C., 3, 658.  
 — Robert E., 1, 571, 633.  
 — Stephen D., 1, 688.  
 — Stephen D., 12, 267.  
 — William H. F., 3, 658.  
 Leventhorpe, Callett, 4, 310.  
 Lewis, Joseph H., 9 Ky., 226.  
 — William G., 4, 296.  
 Liddell, St. John R., 10 La., 297.  
 Lilley, R. D., 3, 626.  
 Little, Henry, 2 Md., 168.  
 Logan, J. M., 5, 416.  
 Lomax, Lunsford L., 3, 626.  
 Long, Armistead L., 3, 612.  
 Longstreet, James, 1, 665.  
 Loring, William W., 11 Fla., 205.  
 Louisiana, map of, 10 La., 288.  
 Lovell, Mansfield, 2 Md., 168.  
 Lowrey, Mark P., 7 Miss., 236.  
 Lowry, Robert, 7 Miss., 273.  
 Lyon, H. B., 9 Ky., 236.  
 McCausland, John, 3, 610.  
 McComb, William, 8, 304.  
 McCown, John P., 8, 304.  
 McCulloch, Ben, 11 Tex., 233.  
 — Henry E., 11 Tex., 233.  
 McGowan, Samuel, 5, 409.  
 McIntosh, James, 10 Ark., 409.  
 McLaws, Lafayette, 6, 416.  
 McNair, Evander, 10 Ark., 397.  
 McKae, Dandridge, 10 Ark., 397.  
 — William, 4, 317.  
 Mackall, W. W., 2 Md., 168.  
 Maffitt, J. N., 12, 112.  
 Magruder, John B., 3, 674.  
 Mahone, William, 3, 658.  
 Major, James P., 10 La., 312.  
 Mallory, Stephen R., 1, 592.  
 Manassas, map of first battle, 3, between pages 96 and 97.  
 Maney, George, 8, 304.  
 Manigault, A. M., 5, 409.  
 Marmaduke, J. S., 9 Mo., 216.  
 Marshall, Humphrey, 9 Ky., 218.  
 Martin, James G., 4, 296.  
 — Will T., 7 Miss., 236.  
 Maryland (map), 2 Md., between pages 152 and 153.  
 Maury, Dabney H., 3, 671.  
 Maxey, Samuel B., 11 Tex., 233.  
 Mechanicsville and Cold Harbor, map of battlefield, 3, 288.  
 Memminger, C. G., 1, 592.  
 Mercer, Hugh W., 6, 444.  
 Miller, William, 11 Fla., 205.  
 Mississippi, map of, 7 Miss., 232.  
 Missouri (map), 9 Mo., between pages 202 and 203.  
 Mobile, map of the defenses of, 7 Ala., 45.  
 Monocacy, battle of (map), 3, facing page 481.  
 Moody, Young M., 7 Ala., 400.  
 Moore, John C., 9 Mo., 1.  
 — John C., 11 Tex., 225.



- Moore, Patrick T., 3, 658.  
 Morgan, John H., 9 Ky., 236.  
 — John T., 7 Ala., 392.  
 Mouton, Alfred, 10 La., 297.  
 Munford, Thomas T., 3, 610.  
 Murfreesboro, plan of battle, 8, between pages 64 and 65.  
 Nashville, map of the battlefield, 8, 164.  
 New Bern, battlefield of (map), 4, 40.  
 New Bern to Goldsboro (map), 4, 144.  
 Nicholls, Francis T., 10 La., 312.  
 North Carolina, map of, 4, between pages 286 and 287.  
 Ocean Pond, battlefield of (map), 11 Fla., 65.  
 O'Neal, Edward A., 7 Ala., 400.  
 Operations near Vicksburg (map), 7 Miss., 104.  
 Original States and their cessions to the United States (map), 1, between pages 74 and 75.  
 Page, Richard L., 3, 626.  
 Palmer, Joseph B., 8, 328.  
 Parker, William H., 12, 1.  
 Parsons, M. M., 9 Mo., 216.  
 Paxton, Elisha F., 3, 610.  
 Payne, William H. F., 3, 642.  
 Pegram, John, 3, 674.  
 Pemberton, John C., 1, 681.  
 Pender, William D., 4, 317.  
 Pendleton, William N., 3, 674.  
 Perrin, Abner, 5, 109.  
 Perry, Edward A., 11 Fla., 205.  
 — William F., 7 Ala., 400.  
 Perryville, battle (map), 9 Ky., 110.  
 Pettigrew, James J., 4, 340.  
 Pettus, Edmond W., 7 Ala., 412.  
 Pickett, George E., 3, 658.  
 Pike, Albert, 10 Ark., 397.  
 Pillow, Gideon J., 8, 328.  
 Polignac, Camille J., 10 La., 312.  
 Polk, Leonidas, 1, 665.  
 — Lucius E., 10 Ark., 397.  
 Porter, James D., 8, 1.  
 Posey, Carnot, 7 Miss., 273.  
 Preston, John S., 5, 416.  
 — William, 9 Ky., 236.  
 Price, Sterling, 9 Mo., 216.  
 Pryor, Roger A., 3, 610.  
 Quarles, William A., 8, 327.  
 Rains, Gabriel J., 4, 296.  
 — James E., 8, 304.  
 Ramseur, Stephen D., 4, 340.  
 Randolph, G. W., 1, 592.  
 Ransom, Matthew W., 4, 317.  
 — Robert, Jr., 4, 340.  
 Reagan, J. H., 1, 592.  
 Reynolds, Alexander W., 3, 626.  
 — Daniel H., 10 Ark., 397.  
 Richmond and Petersburg (map of), 3, between pages 528 and 529.  
 Ripley, Roswell S., 6, 499.  
 Roane, John S., 10 Ark., 109.  
 Roberts, Orin M., 11 Tex., 1.  
 — William P., 4, 317.  
 Robertson, Beverly H., 3, 674.  
 — Felix H., 11 Tex., 235.  
 — Jerome B., 11 Tex., 233.  
 Roddey, Phillip D., 7 Ala., 392.  
 Rodes, Robert E., 7 Ala., 412.  
 Ross, Lawrence S., 11 Tex., 233.  
 Rosser, Thomas L., 3, 674.  
 Ruggles, Daniel, 3, 658.  
 Rust, Albert, 10 Ark., 109.  
 St. John, Isaac M., 6, 444.  
 Sanders, John C. C., 7 Ala., 412.  
 Savannah, Ga. (map), 6, between pages 368 and 369.  
 Scales, Alfred M., 4, 340.  
 Scott, Thomas M., 10 La., 312.  
 Scurry, William R., 11 Tex., 225.  
 Sears, Claudius W., 7 Miss., 273.  
 Seddon, James A., 1, 592.  
 Semmes, Paul J., 6, 444.  
 — Raphael, 12, 112.  
 Sharp, Jacob H., 7 Miss., 273.  
 Sharpsburg, field of (map), 3, facing page 352.  
 Shelby, J. O., 9 Mo., 216.  
 Shelley, Charles M., 7 Ala., 400, 414.  
 Shiloh, map of the battlefield, 8, 41.  
 — map of the field of, near Pittsburg Landing, 8, 33.  
 Shoup, Francis A., 11 Fla., 205.  
 Sibley, Henry H., 10 La., 297.  
 Simms, James P., 6, 416.  
 Slack, W. Y., 9 Mo., 216.  
 Slaughter, James E., 3, 674.  
 Smith, Edmund Kirby, 1, 656.  
 — Gustavus W., 9 Ky., 248.  
 — James A., 7 Miss., 273.  
 — Martin L., 11 Fla., 205.  
 — Preston, 8, 238.  
 — Thomas B., 8, 304.  
 — William, 3, 626.  
 — William D., 6, 414.  
 Sorrel, G. Moxley, 1, 416.  
 South Carolina (map), 5, between pages 372 and 373.  
 Starke, Peter B., 7 Miss., 273.  
 — William E., 3, 642.  
 Steele, William, 11 Tex., 225.  
 Stephens, Alexander H., 1, 589.  
 Steuart, George H., 2 Md., 163.  
 Stevens, C. H., 5, 409.  
 — Walter H., 3, 610.  
 Stevenson, Carter L., 3, 658.  
 Stewart, Alexander P., 1, 697.  
 Stovall, Marcellus A., 1, 444.  
 Strahl, Otho F., 8, 328.  
 Stuart, James E. B., 3, 626.  
 Stubbs' plantation (map), 7 Miss., 197.  
 Taliaferro, William B., 3, 674.  
 Tappan, J. C., 10 Ark., 409.  
 Tattnell, Josiah, 12, 112.  
 Taylor, Richard, 1, 681.  
 Tennessee, map of, 8, between pages 282 and 283.  
 Terrill, James B., 3, 674.  
 Territorial acquisitions of the United States (map), 1, between pages 204 and 205.  
 Terry, William, 3, 674.  
 Texas and Trans-Mississippi (map), 11 Tex., between pages 222 and 224.  
 Thomas, Allen, 10 La., 312.  
 — Bryan M., 6, 428.  
 — Edward L., 6, 416.  
 Thompson, M. J., 9 Mo., 216.  
 Tishomingo Creek, or Breece's Cross-Roads (map), 7 Miss., 197.  
 Toombs, Robert, 1, 592.  
 Toon, Thomas F., 4, 317.  
 Tracy, Edward D., 7 Ala., 412.  
 Trenholm, George A., 1, 592.  
 Trimble, Isaac R., 2 Md., 168.  
 Tucker, John R., 12, 112.  
 — William F., 7 Miss., 273.



- Twiggs, David E., 6, 444.  
 Tyler, Robert C., 8, 304.  
 Van Dorn, Earl, 7 Miss., 273.  
 Vance, Robert B., 4, 317.  
 Vaughan, Alfred J., 8, 304.  
 Vaughn, John C., 8, 328.  
 Vicksburg campaign, map of, 7 Miss., 160.  
 Villepigue, J. B., 5, 409.  
   pages 572 and 573.  
 Virginia, map of battlefields, 3, between  
 Walker, Henry H., 3, 626.  
   — James A., 3, 610.  
   — J. G., 9 Mo., 216.  
   — L. M., 8, 328.  
   — Leroy Pope, 1, 592.  
   — R. Lindsay, 3, 658.  
   — William H. T., 6, 411.  
 Wallace, W. H., 5, 409.  
 Walter, William S., 11 Fla., 205.  
 Walthall, Edward C., 7 Miss., 273.  
 Waterhouse, Richard, 11 Tex., 252.  
 Watie, Stand, 10 Ark., 469.  
 Watts, Thomas H., 1, 592.  
 Waul, Thomas N., 11 Tex., 252.  
 Wayne, Harry C., 6, 441.  
 Weisiger, Daniel A., 8, 658.  
 West Virginia and Virginia, parts of  
   (map), 2 W. Va., facing page 96.  
 West Virginia, part of (map), 2 W. Va.,  
   facing page 20.  
 West Virginia, part of (map), 2 W. Va.,  
   facing page 56.  
 West Virginia, part of (map), 2 W. Va.,  
   facing page 76.  
 Wharton, G. C., 3, 642.  
   — John A., 11 Tex., 225.  
 Wheeler, Joseph, 1, 688.  
   — Joseph, 7 Ala., 1.  
 White, Robert, 2 W. Va., facing page 1.  
 White Sulphur Springs, battle (map),  
   2 W. Va., 84.  
 Whitfield, John W., 11 Tex., 252.  
 Whiting, William H. C., 4, 317.  
 Wickham, Williams C., 3, 636.  
 Wigfall, Louis T., 11 Tex., 252.  
 Wileox, Cadmus M., 8, 328.  
 Wilderness and Spottsylvania, map of  
   battles, 3, 440.  
 Williams, John S., 9 Ky., 218.  
 Willis, Edward, 6, 441.  
 Wilmington, N. C., front of (map), 4,  
   276.  
 Wilson, Claudius C., 6, 444.  
 Wilson's Creek, battle (map), 9 Mo., 60.  
 Winchester, battle of (map of route  
   to), 3, 240.  
 Winder, Charles S., 2 Md., 168.  
   — John H., 2 Md., 168.  
 Wise, Henry A., 3, 610.  
 Withers, Jones M., 7 Ala., 392.  
 Wofford, William T., 6, 444.  
 Wood, John T., 12, 112.  
   — S. A. M., 7 Ala., 112.  
 Wright, Ambrose R., 6, 444.  
   — Marcus J., 8, 328.  
 York, Zebulon, 10 La., 312.  
 Young, Pierce M. B., 6, 416.  
   — William H., 11 Tex., 225.  
 Zollicoffer, Felix K., 8, 328.

4834









